



M. L.

Gc  
974.8  
Eg5i  
pt.1  
1826745

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL  
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01753 1358

Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2010 with funding from  
Allen County Public Library Genealogy Center





AN ILLUSTRATED HISTORY

OF THE

COMMONWEALTH

OF

PENNSYLVANIA,

CIVIL, POLITICAL, AND MILITARY,

*FROM ITS EARLIEST SETTLEMENT TO THE PRESENT TIME,*

INCLUDING

*pt. 1*

*Historical Descriptions*

OF

EACH COUNTY IN THE STATE,

THEIR TOWNS, AND INDUSTRIAL RESOURCES.

BY

WILLIAM H. EGLE, M.D.,

*Member of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania.*

---

SOLD ONLY BY SUBSCRIPTION.

---

HARRISBURG:

DE WITT C. GOODRICH & CO.

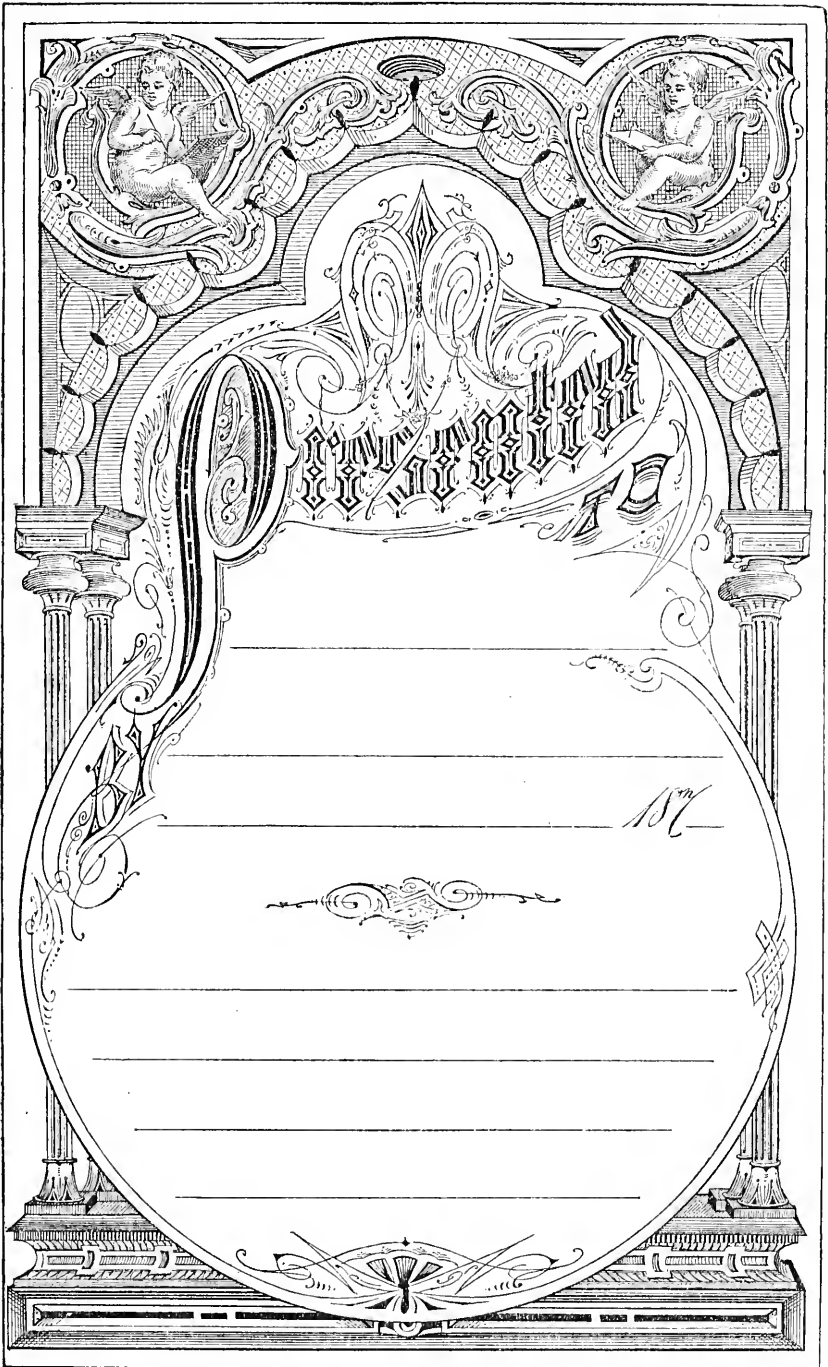
—  
1876.

494

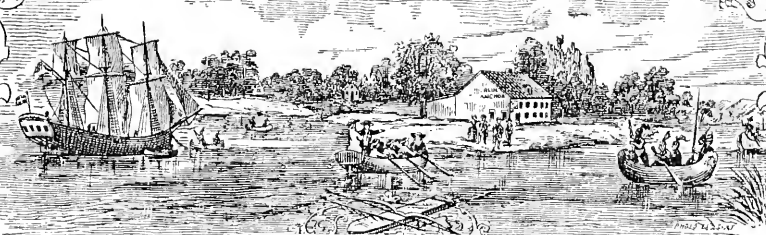




1826745







THE DELAWARE RIVER, PHILA. AS PENN. FIRST SAW IT.

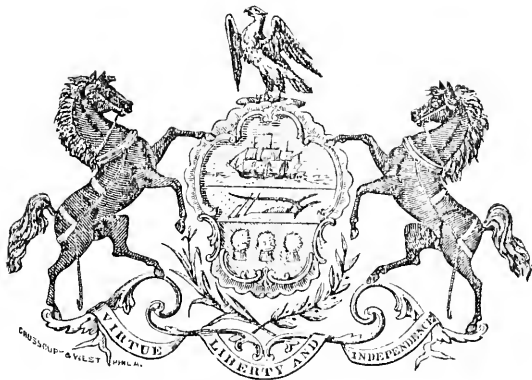


*Wm. Penn*



THE DELAWARE, PHILA., 1876.





OFFICIAL COAT OF ARMS OF PENNSYLVANIA.

---

Copyright secured.  
1876.

D. O. GOODRICH & COMPANY.

---

---

BENJAMIN SINGERLY,  
Printer, Stereotyper, &c.,  
HARRISBURG, PA.

---



## PREFATORY.

TO WRITE the History of an Empire State, which Pennsylvania now is, should properly be the work of a lifetime, since the startling events of three centuries crowd its pages. For a long period we have been collecting material for such an undertaking, in the hope that as the years sped on we might present *our* contribution to the bibliography of this great Commonwealth. Believing, however, that the present time is opportune for the publication of a faithful *resumé* of the transactions, local and general, which have transpired in the Past, after several years of labor we have essayed to offer to the good people of our native State the result. While the volume may not be as comprehensive in its details as some may desire, yet for general and popular perusal and information, we trust it will supply a want felt everywhere, containing as it does the complete story of the Commonwealth and the County, briefly and simply rehearsed.

Following in the footsteps of ACRELIUS, CAMPANIUS, THOMAS, SMITH, EBELING, PROUD, GORDON, SCOTT, DAY, BURROWES, TREGO, and SYPIER, whose volumes relating to the History of Pennsylvania are of inestimable value, and of that glittering array of local historiographers, of whom the venerable RUPP heads the list, we have endeavored to give a fair and accurate representation of the History, the Resources, the Progress, and the Development of the Colonies on the Delaware, of the Province, and of the Commonwealth.

To the many kind friends who have aided us by their pen in the preparation of this volume, we tender at this time our warm acknowledgments, and in doing so, crave their pardon in the liberty we were compelled to take in limiting their sketches. In doing so, we endeavored not to omit more important matters than those given. When it is recollected there are sixty-six counties in the State, and that an average of ten pages to each would make of themselves, a formidable volume, our friends, we trust, will fully appreciate our position when we also inform them that the MSS. in our possession would have made almost thrice the number of pages required. As it is, the Histories of the Counties have exceeded in length by two hundred pages the space originally assigned for that portion of the work, and the volume thereby increased in size. The enterprising Publishers, in their determination to send forth a thorough, full, and complete sketch of every county, notwithstanding the additional expense, deserve the patronage of the reading public of Pennsylvania.

In the matter of engravings, the great difficulty has been in several Counties to secure subjects for illustration. In a few cases, after a great deal of





trouble and expense, we have failed. It was the intention of the Publishers to fully illustrate every County, and yet, when the entire number of engravings are taken into consideration, it must be acknowledged that this volume is unequalled in that respect by any historical publication ever issued. To the photographers and others who have rendered us their assistance, we can only say "thank you." The Photo-engraving Company of New York, to whose care most of the local views have been committed, have, by their (the Moss) process, given accurate representations of the photographs and designs sent us; while Messrs. Crossenp & West, of Philadelphia, to whom the portraits of the Governors have especially been confided, in the main have succeeded in their portion of the work.

It may not be out of place, in this connection, to state that we have endeavored to preserve a uniformity in the orthography of the Indian names. The admirable work of the devoted HECKEWELDER has been taken as authority. Scarcely two authors write the same names alike. For instance, *Moshannon* is spelled *Meshannon*, *Mushannon*, and *Moshannin*. In the neighborhood of Pittsburgh, *Allegheny* is thus written, but in the northern part of the State, it is given *Allegany* and *Alleghany*. Although *Kilttochtinny* is undoubtedly far more correct than *Kittatinny*, yet the latter is so frequently used that we have adhered to it. Attention is called to the tendency there is in many instances in destroying the orthography of the names of streams, etc. Most writers call the *Tonoloway* creek, in Fulton county, *Conolloway*, while *Quinn's* run, in Centre and Clinton, is denominated *Queen's*. These errors should be carefully guarded against, not only by the historian but by writers generally. If our friends object to the alterations we have made in this respect, we can only refer them to the works of one who made the Indian language a study, and whose authority on such matters is unquestioned. It is proper to state that we have omitted the given meanings of streams in certain instances, and inserted those furnished by the Indian lexicographer referred to.

In conclusion, we commit the work to the general reading public of the State of Pennsylvania. If it will give the young especially an incentive to learn more of the history of our old Commonwealth,—if it will stimulate all to search among the archives of the Past and gather up the records that none be lost,—if it enable every citizen to appreciate the greatness of the Keystone State of the Union, it will have served its purpose. The volume should be viewed as an entirety, and not simply regarded as a sketch of this or that county, but as covering the whole State;—subjects purely local giving place to facts in which the general reader should be properly interested. Realizing fully the responsibility resting upon him, the author has avoided in the main thrusting his opinion in preference to facts. Where, however, material difference as to date or intention existed, he has endeavored to diffuse light and correct error. With the objects heretofore expressed, and in the hope, briefly set forth, we present this contribution to the bibliography of our State to the candid appreciation of the citizens of Pennsylvania.

WILLIAM H. EGLE.

HARRISBURG, PENN'A, JULY 4, 1876.



# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

## GENERAL HISTORY

### CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
The Aborigines. The Susquehannas. The Delawares. The Shawanese. Indian Characteristics.....	17

### CHAPTER II.

Discovery of the Delaware by Hudson. Settlement of the Dutch and Swedes. 1609-1681.....	28
--	----

### CHAPTER III.

The Province of Pennsylvania granted to William Penn. The Proprietary Rule, until the Death of the Founder. 1681-1718.....	45
---	----

### CHAPTER IV.

Proprietary Rule. Administrations of Lieutenant Governors Keith, Gordon, Logan, Thomas, Palmer, and Hamilton. 1718-1754.....	67
---	----

### CHAPTER V.

Proprietary Rule. French and Indian War. Braddock's Expedition. In- dian Ravages on the Frontiers. 1754-1756.....	80
--	----

### CHAPTER VI.

Reward for Indian Scalps. Destruction of Kittanning. Expedition of General Forbes. Pontiac's Conspiracy. Bouquet's Expedition. 1756-1763.....	93
---	----

### CHAPTER VII.

Indian Depredations on the Frontiers. The Destruction of the Indians at Conestoga. The so-called Insurrection of the Paxtang Boys. Bouquet's Expedition to the Muskingum. 1763-1764.....	107
--	-----

### CHAPTER VIII.

Relations between England and the Colonies. Mason and Dixon's Line. The outset of the Revolution. Resolves and Instructions of the Pro- vincial Deputies. The Committee of Safety. 1765-1775.....	123
---	-----



## CHAPTER IX.

The Battle-Drum of the Revolution. The Pennsylvania Navy. The Provincial Conference. The Declaration of Independence. The Convention of 1776, and the end of Proprietary Rule. 1775-1776.....	PAGE 154
---	-------------

## CHAPTER X.

The Revolution. Battles of Trenton and Princeton. The Battle of Brandywine. Massacre at Paoli. British Occupation of Philadelphia. Battle of Germantown, and Reduction of Fort Mifflin. 1776-1777.....	168
--	-----

## CHAPTER XI.

The Revolution. The Cantonment at Valley Forge. The Mischianza. Philadelphia Evacuated by the British. Indian Outrages. Sullivan's Expedition. Abolition of Slavery in Pennsylvania. 1776-1780.....	181
---	-----

## CHAPTER XII.

The Revolution. The Treason of Arnold. Revolt of the Pennsylvania Line. Surrender of Cornwallis. Declaration of Peace. 1780-1783...	196
---	-----

## CHAPTER XIII.

Trouble in the Settlement of the Claims of the Soldiers. Council of Censors. Treaty at Fort Stanwix. Convention to revise the Constitution. 1783-1790.....	206
--	-----

## CHAPTER XIV.

Administration of Governor Mifflin. The Yellow Fever in Philadelphia. The Presqu'Isle Establishment. The Whiskey Insurrection. Defence of the Frontiers. 1790-1794.....	213
---	-----

## CHAPTER XV.

Jay's Treaty. The Fries' Insurrection. Removal of the Seat of Government. Administrations of Governors M'Kean and Snyder. War of 1812-14. 1795-1817.....	232
--	-----

## CHAPTER XVI.

Administrations of Governors Findlay, Hiester, Schulze, Wolf, and Ritner. Internal Improvements. The Common School System. 1817-1837...	242
---	-----

## CHAPTER XVII.

Constitutional Convention. "Buck-shot War." Administrations of Governors Porter, Shunk, Johnston, Pollock, and Packer. 1837-1861.....	249
---	-----

## CHAPTER XVIII.

The Civil War. Establishment of Camp Curtin. Pennsylvania Troops the First to reach the National Capital. Pennsylvania Invaded by the Confederates. Constitutional Convention of 1873. Administrations of Governors Curtin, Geary, and Hartranft. 1861-1876.....	259
--	-----



COUNTY HISTORIES.

[To those marked \* credit is due for revision or data.]

	PAGE
ADAMS . . . . . Aaron Sheely, Gettysburg . . . . .	279
ALLEGHENY . . . . . Wm. M. Darlington* and Thos. J. Bigham* . . . . .	314
ARMSTRONG . . . . . A. D. Glenn, Eddyville . . . . .	330
BEAVER . . . . . James Patterson, Beaver Falls . . . . .	340
BEDFORD . . . . . Charles N. Hickok, Bedford . . . . .	361
BERKS . . . . . J. Lawrence Getz, Reading . . . . .	378
BLAIR . . . . . Rev. A. K. Bell, D.D., Hollidaysburg . . . . .	396
BRADFORD . . . . . Rev. David Craft, Wyalusing . . . . .	405
BUCKS . . . . . Joseph Thomas, M.D.,* Quakertown . . . . .	438
BUTLER . . . . . Jacob Ziegler, Butler . . . . .	454
CAMBRIA . . . . . Robert L. Johnston, Ebensburg . . . . .	461
CAMERON . . . . . John Brooks, Sinnemahoning . . . . .	479
CARBON . . . . . Robert Klotz,* Mauch Chunk . . . . .	486
CENTRE . . . . . John Blair Linn, Bellefonte . . . . .	508
CHESTER . . . . . J. Smith Futhey and Gilbert Cope, West Chester . . . . .	517
CLARION . . . . . Rev. James S. Elder, Clarion . . . . .	547
CLEARFIELD . . . . . William D. Bigler, Clearfield . . . . .	557
CLINTON . . . . . D. S. Maynard, Lock Haven . . . . .	569
COLUMBIA . . . . . John G. Freeze, Bloomsburg . . . . .	584
CRAWFORD . . . . . Samuel P. Bates, LL.D., Meadville . . . . .	597
CUMBERLAND . . . . . I. Daniel Rupp and others* . . . . .	612
DAUPHIN . . . . . A. Boyd Hamilton, Harrisburg . . . . .	636
DELAWARE . . . . . H. G. Ashmead, Chester . . . . .	654
ELK . . . . . Charles R. Earley, M.D.,* and others, Ridgway . . . . .	682
ERIE . . . . . Isaac Moorhead, Erie . . . . .	692
FAYETTE . . . . . James Veech,* Emsworth, Allegheny county . . . . .	724
FOREST . . . . . Samuel D. Irwin, Tionesta . . . . .	733
FRANKLIN . . . . . Benjamin M. Nead, Chambersburg . . . . .	739
FULTON . . . . . James Pott, McConnellsburg . . . . .	760
GREENE . . . . . Alf. Creigh, LL.D.,* and W. J. Bayard,* Waynesburg . . . . .	769
HUNTINGDON . . . . . J. Simpson Africa, Huntingdon . . . . .	775
INDIANA . . . . . A. W. Taylor* and J. M. Robinson,* Indiana . . . . .	790
JEFFERSON . . . . . G. Ament Blose, Hamilton . . . . .	798
JUNIATA . . . . . Silas Wright* . . . . .	806
LANCASTER . . . . . Samuel Evans, Columbia . . . . .	814





## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
LAWRENCE . . . . .	854
LEBANON . . . . .	862
LEHIGH . . . . .	871
LUZERNE . . . . .	880
LYCOMING . . . . .	913
M'KEAN . . . . .	923
MERCER . . . . .	931
MIFFLIN . . . . .	939
MONROE . . . . .	946
MONTGOMERY . . . . .	950
MONTOUR . . . . .	961
NORTHAMPTON . . . . .	967
NORTHUMBERLAND . . . . .	997
PERRY . . . . .	1006
PHILADELPHIA . . . . .	1015
PIKE . . . . .	1049
POTTER . . . . .	1056
SCHUYLKILL . . . . .	1064
SNYDER . . . . .	1072
SOMERSET . . . . .	1077
SULLIVAN . . . . .	1081
SUSQUEHANNA . . . . .	1086
TIOGA . . . . .	1101
UNION . . . . .	1110
VENANGO . . . . .	1117
WARREN . . . . .	1132
WASHINGTON . . . . .	1140
WAYNE . . . . .	1145
WESTMORELAND . . . . .	1152
WYOMING . . . . .	1163
YORK . . . . .	1169
GENERAL INDEX . . . . .	1181



# ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE		PAGE
ALLEGHENY county court house, Pittsburgh.....	315	Fall-Brook, northern view of, from the centre.....	1108
Allighenles, distant view of.....	339	Findlay, William, portrait of.....	242
Alleghippis, scene at, on Pennsylvania railroad.....	491	Fort Bedford house, Bedford.....	363
Amber cascade, Glen Thomas.....	499	Fort, Deshler's, on Cophy creek.....	876
Anthracite coal trade, progress of.....	1662	Fort Forty, 1778.....	962
Armstrong county public buildings.....	330	Fort Hunter, near Harrisburg.....	619
Arnot, coal schutes at.....	1105	Fort Lyttleton, plan of, 1755.....	765
Arnot, incline at.....	965	Fort Pitt, plan of, 1760.....	718
Bald Eagle's Nest, on Spring creek.....	508	Fort Pitt, redoubt at, 1763.....	104
Beaver college.....	348	Fort's, French and English, at Venango.....	1123
Beaver Falls borough, view of.....	351	Franklin and Marshall college, Lancaster.....	825
Bedford, Provincial court house at.....	362	Franklin, Benjamin, portrait of.....	299
Bedford Springs, view at.....	368	Franklin, town of, in 1840.....	1128
Bellefonte borough, view of.....	562	Franklin, street view, in 1876.....	1117
Bellefonte, view of gap near.....	513	Fulton county court house.....	700
Berg (hill) kirche, Lebanon county.....	378	Gallatin, Albert, residence of.....	731
Berks county court house.....	569	Garry, John W., portrait of.....	273
Bethlehem, first house built in.....	393	German-town academy.....	1046
Bethlehem, married brothers' and sisters' house at, Bethlehem, old Crown Inn at.....	379	Gettysburg, plan of battle of.....	295
Bethlehem, old mill at.....	392	Gettysburg, national monument at.....	307
Bethlehem, Schantz house at.....	392	Gettysburg, theological seminary at.....	303
Bigger, William, portrait of.....	255	Grard college, Philadelphia.....	1044
Birmingham Friends meeting-house.....	531	Great North York county, 1752.....	1172
Blair county court house, Hollidaysburg.....	337	Glen Momypheny, Wyoming county.....	1166
Bloomburg, State Normal school at.....	592	Glen of Glenolden, Ridley park.....	665
Bradlock's route, 1755.....	84	Gordon, Patrick, portrait of.....	70
Bradlock surprised by the Indians.....	87	Great or Big island, map of.....	572
Brookside, view near.....	1065	Green county court house, Waynesburg.....	789
Brownsville borough, view of.....	724	Hamilton, James, portrait of.....	99
Bucks county court house, Doylestown.....	495	Hanover church, Dauphin county.....	616
Buckingham Friends meeting-house.....	450	Hanover, York county, public fountain.....	1179
Butler borough, view of.....	438	Hain's church, near Wernetsville.....	389
Butler county court house.....	454	Harmont church, at Economy.....	368
Butler public school building.....	459	Harrisburg city, view of, from the west.....	636
Camp Curtin, general hospital at, 1864.....	268	Harrisburg, State Capitol at.....	244
Carbon county court house, Mauch Chunk.....	496	Harrisburg, first German church at.....	647
Carlisle, soldiers' monument at.....	628	Harrisburg, first English church at.....	647
Carpenters' hall, Philadelphia, 1771.....	441	Harris, John, grave of.....	649
Carrolltown, church and convent at.....	476	Harrismanston, built 1760.....	637
Carrier female seminary at Carlboro.....	552	Hartman, John P., portrait of.....	275
Casadeo, Glen Onoko.....	497	Hester, Joseph, portrait of.....	719
Catawissa, ancient Friends meeting-house at.....	524	Homesdale borough, view of.....	1115
Chambersburg, before the burning, 1861.....	754	Huntingdon borough, seal of.....	759
Chambersburg, after the burning, 1861.....	756	Huntingdon borough, view of.....	775
Chamelon falls, Glen Onoko.....	485	Horse-shoe curve, Allegheny mountains.....	306
Chester, old town hall at.....	655	Independence Hall, 1876.....	1639
Chester county court house, West Chester.....	517	Independence Hall, rear view.....	167
Chester, first meeting-house of Friends at.....	664	Indiana county court house.....	997
Chester or Great valley, view of.....	519	Indian chapel at Bethlehem, 1765.....	790
Chew manshon, Gettysburg.....	178	Indian depredations on the frontiers.....	108
Christ church, Philadelphia.....	1025	Indian dog rock, Venango county.....	1121
Clarion county court house, Clarion.....	547	Indian dog rock, inscriptions on.....	1122
Clarion county prison, Clarion.....	542	Indian inscriptions on rocks at Safe Harbor.....	839
Clearfield borough, view of.....	557	Indian relics found near Safe Harbor.....	864
Clinton county court house.....	569	Insane, State hospital for, at Waynesburg.....	1130
Clond Point, view of.....	560	Internal improvements, vignette.....	789
Columbia county court house, Bloomsburg.....	584	Irying female college, Mechanicsburg.....	632
Columbia borough, town hall in.....	831	Jack's Narrows, near Mapleton, Penn'a railroad.....	751
Conemaugh, scene on, near Bolivar, Penn'a R. R.....	1152	Jellerson county court house, Brookville.....	793
Cornwall mines, Lebanon county.....	864	Johnston, William P., portrait of.....	251
Crawford county court house, Meadville.....	567	Johnston, and Cambria iron works.....	464
Cresson Springs, Allegheny mountains.....	466	Juniata county court house, Millintown.....	806
Crozer theological seminary at Upland.....	651	Keith, Sir William, portrait of.....	65
Cumberland county court house.....	612	Keokhville borough, Cohanese valley.....	1101
Curtin, Andrew G., portrait of.....	259	Lackawanna falls.....	884
Delaware, view on the.....	Inset	Lafayette college, Pardee hall, Easton.....	827
Delaware county court house, Media.....	678	Lancaster county court house, Lancaster.....	844
Derficks, cable group of, at Pleasantville.....	1131	Lancaster county court house, old.....	847
Dickinson college, Carlisle.....	630	Lancaster county hospital.....	851
Derry church, Dauphin county.....	644	Lancaster county soldiers' monument.....	829
Derry church, interior view of.....	645	Lancaster high school.....	825
Dickinson, John, portrait of.....	216	Lawrence county court house, New Castle.....	314
Doylestown, soldiers' monument at.....	446	Leadon plate buried by the French, 1743.....	316
Dryke's Pioneer oil well, Venango county.....	1119	Leadon borough, view of.....	862
Economy, assembly house at.....	356	Lebanon county court house, Lebanon.....	863
Emigh's Gap, Tyone and Clearfield railroad.....	564	Lee's head-quarters at Gettysburg.....	283
Emporium borough, view of.....	479	Lehigh county court house, Allentown.....	871
Ephrata, brothers' and sisters' house at.....	855		
Eric city, view of from the lake.....	693		
Eric, old block-house at.....	693		
Eric, soldiers' and sailors' monument at.....	720		



	PAGE		PAGE
Lehigh university, Bethlehem.....	980	Reading, cemetery gate at.....	395
Lewisburg borough, view of.....	1114	Reading, Provincial court house at.....	393
Lewisburg university.....	1115	Reading, Trinity Lutheran church at.....	394
Lewistown borough, view of.....	943	Reed, Joseph, portrait of.....	109
Lewistown narrows, Pennsylvania railroad.....	941	Renova station, Philadelphia and Erie railroad.....	582
Liberty bell, Independence hall.....	556	Reynolds, General John, monument to.....	310
Lititz, spring and walk at.....	838	Ridgway borough, view of.....	682
Logan, James, portrait of.....	976	Ridley park lake.....	666
Lower Merion Friends meeting-house.....	956	Ridley park station.....	679
Loyal Sock, head-waters of.....	1061	Ritner, Joseph, portrait of.....	247
Lutheran missionary institute, Selingsgrove.....	1074	St. Aloysius college, Loretto.....	477
Luzerne county court house, Wilkes-Barre.....	881	St. Clair, General, home of, on Chestnut ridge.....	1156
Luzerne county prison, Wilkes-Barre.....	908	St. Clair, monument to, at Greensburg.....	1161
Lyconing county court house, Williamsport.....	916	Schuylkill river, view on.....	218
M'Kean county court house, Smethport.....	923	Seal of Assembly, 1776.....	148
M'Kean county prison, Smethport.....	923	Seal of Committee of Safety, 1775.....	148
M'Kean, Thomas, portrait of.....	234	Seal of Proprietary.....	27
Mansfield, Episcopal church at.....	1104	Shulze, John Andrew, portrait of.....	245
Mansfield, Methodist church at.....	1107	Shunk, Francis R., portrait of.....	252
Mansfield, State normal school at.....	Inset	Slat-roof house, Philadelphia.....	1016
Meade's headquarters at Gettysburg.....	285	Snyder county court house, Middleburg.....	1072
Meadville city, view of.....	607	Snyder mansion, Selingsgrove.....	1075
Mexico, Pennsylvania monument to heroes of.....	274	Snyder, Simon, portrait of.....	236
Mifflin county court house, Lewistown.....	939	Solebury Friends meeting-house.....	441
Mifflin, Thomas, portrait of.....	213	Somerset county court house, Somerset.....	1077
Mont, United States, at Philadelphia.....	412	South-western college, California.....	1113
Millersville, State normal school at.....	842	Spring Creek tunnel, Pennsylvania railroad.....	786
Military academy at Chester.....	672	State (Agricultural) college, Centre county.....	511
Montgomery county court house, Norristown.....	950	Stewart's block-house, Wyoming.....	805
Montour county court house, Danville.....	961	Stevens, Thaddeus, grave of, at Lancaster.....	830
Montrose borough, view of.....	1095	Susquehanna county court house, Montrose.....	1067
Moore, William, portrait of.....	234	Susquehanna county, plan of townships in.....	1066
Moravian monument at Wyandung.....	415	Susquehanna river, above Milton.....	908
Mount Pisgah inclined plane.....	496	Susquehanna river, near Lewisburg.....	1112
Nazareth Hall, Nazareth.....	990	Susquehanna, junction of North and West branches, Swarthmore college, Delaware county.....	1062
Nesquehoning bridge.....	501	Swedes' church, Philadelphia.....	1021
New Brighton, view of.....	350	Taylor, Abiah, house of, built 1721.....	57
New Castle, Disciples' church at.....	861	Tionesta borough, view of.....	733
New Castle, public school building at.....	859	Towanda borough, view of.....	405
New Sweden, map of.....	43	Trappe, ancient Lutheran church at.....	960
Newport borough, view of.....	1069	Union county court house, Lewisburg.....	1110
Norristown five company.....	957	Union League house, Philadelphia.....	258
Onoko falls, Glen Onoko.....	498	Valley Forge, view at.....	955
Osterhout mansion, Wyoming county.....	1167	Warren borough, view of.....	1133
Packer, William F., portrait of.....	257	Washington and Jefferson college.....	1110
Paxtang church, Dauphin county.....	646	Washington female seminary.....	478
Penitentiary, western, at Allegheny City.....	326	Washington's head-quarters at Bedford, 1791.....	371
Penn, John, portrait of.....	131	Washington's head-quarters at Valley Forge.....	182
Penn, Richard, portrait of.....	131	Wharton house.....	185
Penn, William, portrait of.....	Inset	Wharton, Thomas, Jr., portrait of.....	170
Penn's book plate.....	66	Wayne, General, birth-place and residence of.....	550
Penn's chair.....	106	Wayne county soldiers' monument, Honesdale.....	1150
Penn's residence at Chester.....	639	Westmoreland county court house, Greensburg.....	1153
Penn's treaty with the Indians, 1682.....	50	Wheaton, First Swedes' church at.....	1045
Penn's treaty monument.....	49	Wicox borough, view of.....	689
Penn's valley, from Nittany mountain.....	505	Wissahickon, view on.....	635
Pennsylvania college at Gettysburg.....	305	Wolf, George, portrait of.....	216
Pennsylvania, map of, 1685.....	52	Wright's Ferry mansion, Columbia.....	853
Pennsylvania, map of, 1739.....	92	Wyoming battle-ground, plan of.....	898
Pennsylvania, map of, showing Indian purchases.....	208	Wyoming county court house, Tamkhanock.....	1163
Pennsylvania, university of, dep. of science and arts.....	1034	Wyoming, Indian massacre at.....	880
Pennsylvania, university of, medical department.....	1036	Wyoming, incident in history of.....	Inset
Perry county court house, New Bloomfield.....	1067	Wyoming seminary, at Kingston.....	911
Perry's flag ship Lawrence.....	706	Wyoming valley, first glimpse of.....	882
Philadelphia, city buildings in.....	1018	York county court house, York.....	1170
Philadelphia, view on the Delaware at.....	1043	York, Provincial court house at.....	1173
Philadelphia, old navy yard at.....	1041	York, Reformed church at.....	1176
Pike county court house, Mifflord.....	1049	Ziesberger reaching to the Indians, 1767.....	735
Pine street church, Philadelphia.....	732	Centennial Exhibition at Philadelphia, 1876.....	
Pittsburgh city, from down the Ohio.....	314	Bird's-eye view of the Centennial buildings, Inset.....	
Pittsburgh city hall.....	325	Memorial hall.....	774
Pollock, James, portrait of.....	256	Agricultural building.....	653
Portage road, view on.....	471	Horticultural hall.....	467
Porter, David R., portrait of.....	250	Main Exhibition building.....	506
Potter county court house, Condersport.....	1033	Women's pavilion.....	813
Pottstown, cottage seminary at.....	Inset	Machinery hall.....	861
Pottsville borough, view of.....	1058	Exhibition medal, obverse.....	369
President's house, erected by Pennsylvania.....	232	Exhibition medal, reverse.....	332
Provincial State house, in 1731.....	71	Eagle, Centennial—vignette.....	583
Provincial State house, in 1778.....	187	Eagle, National—vignette.....	738
Pulpit rocks, Round Island, Phila. & Erie railroad.....	580		
Punxsutawney borough, view of.....	803		
Ralston inclined plane.....	922		





PART I.

---

GENERAL HISTORY.





# GOVERNORS

OF THE COLONIES ON THE DELAWARE, OF THE PROVINCE, AND OF  
THE COMMONWEALTH.

GOVERNORS OF NEW NETHERLANDS AND OF THE DUTCH ON THE DELAWARE.	GOVERNORS OF THE SWEDES ON THE DELAWARE.
PETER MINUIT..... 1624-1632	PETER MINUIT..... 1638-1641
WOUTER VAN TWILLER..... 1633-1638	PETER HOLLANDARE..... 1641-1643
SIR WILLIAM KIEFT..... 1638-1647	JOHN PRINTZ..... 1643-1653
PETER STUYVESANT..... 1647-1664	JOHN PAPPEGOYA..... 1653-1651
	JOHN CLAUDIUS RYSINGH..... 1651-1655
	[Captured by Peter Stuyvesant, 1655.]

## DOMINION OF THE DUTCH.

PETER STUYVESANT, Governor of New Netherlands and of the settlements on  
the Delaware..... 1655-1664

ANDREAS HUDDE, Commissary..... 1655-1657

JOHN PAUL JACQUET..... 1655-1657

[The Colony divided into that of the City and Company, 1657.]

COLONY OF THE CITY.	COLONY OF THE COMPANY.
JACOB ALRICKS..... 1657-1659	GOERAN VAN DYKE..... 1657-1658
ALEXANDER D'HINOYOSSA... 1659-1662	WILLIAM BEEKMAN..... 1658-1662
WILLIAM BEEKMAN..... 1663-1664	
ALEXANDER D'HINOYOSSA..... 1663-1664	
[Settlements captured by the English, 1664.]	

## DOMINION OF THE DUKE OF YORK.

COLONEL RICHARD NICOLLS, Governor..... 1664-1667

ROBERT CARR, Deputy Governor..... 1664-1667

COLONEL FRANCIS LOVELACE..... 1667-1673

[Colonies captured by the Dutch, 1673.]

## DOMINION OF THE DUTCH.

ANTHONY COLVE, Governor of New Netherlands ..... 1673-1674

PETER ALRICKS, Deputy Governor of the Colonies on the west side of the  
Delaware..... 1673-1674

[Colonies re-captured by the English, 1674.]

## DOMINION OF THE ENGLISH.

SIR EDMUND ANDROSS..... 1674-1681



## PROPRIETARY GOVERNMENT.

WILLIAM PENN, Proprietary.....	1681-1693
WILLIAM MARKHAM, Deputy Governor... ..	June, 1681-Oct., 1682
WILLIAM PENN, Proprietary.....	Oct., 1682-June, 1684
The Council (THOMAS LLOYD, President).....	June, 1684-Feb., 1688
1. THOMAS LLOYD,	} Five Commissioners appointed by Penn, Feb., 1688-Dec., 1688.
2. ROBERT TURNER,	
3. ARTHUR COOK,	
4. JOHN SYMCOCK,	
5. JOHN ECKLEY,	
Captain JOHN BLACKWELL, Deputy Governor.....	Dec., 1688-Jan., 1690
The Council (THOMAS LLOYD, President).....	Jan., 1690-Mar., 1691
THOMAS LLOYD, Deputy Governor of Province,	} ... Mar., 1691-Apr., 1693
WILLIAM MARKHAM, Deputy Governor of Lower Counties,	
CROWN OF ENGLAND.....	1693-1695
BENJAMIN FLETCHER, Governor of New York, Governor.....	Apr., 1693-Mar., 1695
WILLIAM MARKHAM, Lieutenant Governor.....	Apr., 1693-Mar., 1695
WILLIAM PENN, Proprietary.....	1695-1718
WILLIAM MARKHAM, Deputy Governor.....	Mar., 1695-Dec., 1699
WILLIAM PENN, Proprietary.....	Dec., 1699-Nov., 1701
ANDREW HAMILTON, Deputy Governor (died).....	Nov., 1701-Apr., 1703
The Council (EDWARD SHIPPEN, President).....	Apr., 1703-Feb., 1704
JOHN EVANS, Deputy Governor.....	Feb., 1704-Feb., 1709
CHARLES GOOKIN, Deputy Governor.....	Feb., 1709-May, 1717
SIR WILLIAM KEITH, Deputy Governor.....	May, 1717-July, 1718
JOHN PENN, RICHARD PENN, and THOMAS PENN, Proprietaries.....	1718-1746
SIR WILLIAM KEITH, Deputy Governor.....	July, 1718-Aug., 1726
PATRICK GORDON, Deputy Governor.....	Aug., 1726-Aug., 1736
The Council (JAMES LOGAN, President).....	Aug., 1736-Aug., 1738
GEORGE THOMAS, Deputy Governor.....	Aug., 1738-May, 1746
[JOHN PENN died 1746; RICHARD PENN died 1771, when JOHN PENN, his son, together with THOMAS PENN, became sole Proprietaries.].....	1746-1776
GEORGE THOMAS, Deputy Governor.....	May, 1746-May, 1747
The Council (ANTHONY PALMER, President).....	May, 1747-Nov., 1748
JAMES HAMILTON, Deputy Governor.....	Nov., 1748-Oct., 1754
ROBERT HUNTER MORRIS, Deputy Governor.....	Oct., 1754-Aug., 1756
WILLIAM DENNY, Deputy Governor.....	Aug. 1756-Oct., 1759
JAMES HAMILTON, Deputy Governor.....	Oct., 1759-Nov., 1763
JOHN PENN (son of Richard Penn), Lieutenant Governor.....	Nov., 1763-Apr., 1771
The Council (JAMES HAMILTON, President).....	Apr., 1771-Oct., 1771
RICHARD PENN (brother of John Penn), Lieutenant Governor.....	Oct., 1771-Sept., 1773
JOHN PENN, Lieutenant Governor.....	Sept., 1773-Sept., 1776

## IN THE REVOLUTION.

THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY (BENJAMIN FRANKLIN, Chairman).... Sept., 1776-Mar., 1777

## PRESIDENTS OF THE SUPREME EXECUTIVE COUNCIL.

THOMAS WHARTON, JR. ....	Mar. 5, 1777-May 23, 1778
GEO. BRYAN, V. P., acting, vice President Wharton, deceased....	May 23, 1778-Dec. 22, 1778
JOSEPH REED.....	Dec. 22, 1778-Nov. 15, 1781
WILLIAM MOORE.....	Nov. 15, 1781-Nov. 7, 1782
JOHN DICKINSON.....	Nov. 7, 1782-Oct. 18, 1785
BENJAMIN FRANKLIN.....	Oct. 18, 1785-Nov. 5, 1788
THOMAS MIFFLIN.....	Nov. 5, 1788-Dec. 21, 1790



## GOVERNORS.

## VICE PRESIDENTS.

GEORGE BRYAN (resigned).....	Mar. 5, 1777-Oct. 11, 1779
MATTHEW SMITH (resigned).....	Oct. 11, 1779-Nov. 15, 1779
WILLIAM MOORE.....	Nov. 15, 1779-Nov. 15, 1781
JAMES POTTER.....	Nov. 15, 1781-Nov. 7, 1782
JAMES EWING.....	Nov. 7, 1782-Nov. 6, 1784
JAMES IRVINE (resigned).....	Nov. 6, 1784-Oct. 10, 1785
CHARLES BIDDLE.....	Oct. 10, 1785-Oct. 31, 1787
PETER MUHLENBERG (resigned).....	Oct. 31, 1787-Oct. 14, 1788
DAVID REDICK.....	Oct. 14, 1788-Nov. 5, 1788
GEORGE ROSS.....	Nov. 5, 1788-Dec. 21, 1790

## GOVERNORS UNDER THE CONSTITUTION OF 1790.

THOMAS MIFFLIN.....	Dec. 21, 1790-Dec. 17, 1799
THOMAS M'KEAN.....	Dec. 17, 1799-Dec. 20, 1808
SIMON SNYDER.....	Dec. 20, 1808-Dec. 16, 1817
WILLIAM FINDLAY.....	Dec. 16, 1817-Dec. 19, 1820
JOSEPH HLESTER.....	Dec. 19, 1820-Dec. 16, 1823
JOHN ANDREW SHULZE.....	Dec. 16, 1823-Dec. 15, 1829
GEORGE WOLF.....	Dec. 15, 1829-Dec. 15, 1835
JOSEPH RITNER.....	Dec. 15, 1835-Jan. 15, 1839

## GOVERNORS UNDER THE CONSTITUTION OF 1838.

DAVID RITTENHOUSE PORTER.....	Jan. 15, 1839-Jan. 21, 1845
FRANCIS RAWN SHUNK.....	Jan. 21, 1845-July 9, 1848
WILLIAM FREAME JOHNSTON ( <i>vice</i> Shunk, deceased).....	July 9, 1848-Jan. 20, 1852
WILLIAM BIGLER.....	Jan. 20, 1852-Jan. 16, 1855
JAMES POLLOCK.....	Jan. 16, 1855-Jan. 19, 1858
WILLIAM FISHER PACKER.....	Jan. 19, 1858-Jan. 15, 1861
ANDREW GREGG CURTIN.....	Jan. 15, 1861-Jan. 15, 1867
JOHN WHITE GEARY.....	Jan. 15, 1867-Jan. 21, 1873
JOHN FREDERICK HARTRANFT.....	Jan. 21, 1873-Jan. 18, 1876

## GOVERNOR UNDER THE CONSTITUTION OF 1873.

JOHN FREDERICK HARTRANFT.....	January 18, 1876.
-------------------------------	-------------------

## LIEUTENANT GOVERNOR UNDER THE CONSTITUTION OF 1873.

JOHN LATTA.....	January 19, 1876.
-----------------	-------------------



## CHAPTER I.

THE ABORIGINES. THE SUSQUEHANNAS. THE DELAWARES. THE SHAWANESE.  
INDIAN CHARACTERISTICS.



O the Moravian and Jesuit missionaries of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries we are chiefly indebted for the information we have of the aborigines who inhabited Pennsylvania on the advent of the European, and in our account we shall make free use of Hecke-welder, Charlevoix, and others of that band of God-fearing men. At this period the territory embraced between the great lakes and the St. Lawrence to the northward, and the Chesapeake Bay and the Potomac to the southward, was occupied by two families of tribes—the Algonquin and the Huron Iroquois. The former, which included the Micmacs, Mohegans, Illinois, Chippewas, Ottawas, Pottawatamies, Sacs, Foxes, Miamies, the Delawares of Pennsylvania, and many of the Maryland and Virginia tribes, surrounded the more powerful and civilized tribes, who have been called the Huron Iroquois, from the names of the two most powerful nations of the group—the Hurons or Wyandots of Upper Canada, and the Iroquois or Five Nations of New York. Besides these, the group included the Neuters, on the Niagara; the Dinondadies, in Upper Canada; the Eries, south of the lake of that name; the Andastogués or Susquehannas, on that river; the Nottaways and some other Virginian tribes; and finally, the Tuscaroras in North Carolina, and perhaps the Cherokees, whose language presents many striking points of similarity.

Both these groups claimed a western origin, and seem in their progress east to have driven out of Ohio the Quappas, called by the Algonquins, Alkansas or Allegewi, who retreated down the Ohio and Mississippi to the district which has preserved the name given them by the Algonquins.

After planting themselves on the Atlantic border, the various tribes seem to have soon divided and become embroiled in war. The Iroquois, at first inferior to the Algonquins, were driven out of the valley of the St. Lawrence into the lake region of New York, where, by greater cultivation, valor, and union, they soon became superior to the Algonquins of Canada and New York, as the Susquehannas, who settled on the Susquehanna, did over the tribes of New Jersey, Maryland, and Virginia. Prior to 1600, says the *Relation de la Nouvelle France*, the Susquehannas and the Mohawks, the most eastern Iroquois tribe, came into collision, and the former nearly exterminated their enemy in a war which lasted ten years. In 1608, Captain Smith, in exploring the Chesapeake and its tributaries, met a party of these Sasquesahanocks, as he calls them, and he states that they were still at war with the Massawomekes, or Mohawks.

De Vries, in his *Voyages*, found them in 1633 at war with the Armewamen and Sankiekans—Algonquin tribes on the Delaware—maintaining their supremacy by butchery. They were friendly to the Dutch. When the Swedes arrived in 1638,





they renewed the friendly intercourse begun by the Dutch. According to Hazard, they purchased lands of the ruling tribe, and thus secured their friendship. Southward, also, they carried the terror of their arms, and from 1634 to 1644, says Bozman, they waged war on the Yaomacoes, the Piscataways, and Patuxents, and were so troublesome that in 1642 Governor Calvert, by proclamation, declared them public enemies.

When the Hurons, in Upper Canada, in 1647, began to sink under the fearful blows dealt by the Five Nations, the Susquehannas sent an embassy to offer them aid against the common enemy. Nor was the offer one of little value, for the Susquehannas could put into the field one thousand three hundred warriors, trained, says Proud, to the use of fire-arms and European modes of war by three Swedish soldiers, whom they had obtained to instruct them. Before interposing, however, they began a negotiation, and sent an embassy to Onondaga to urge the cantons to peace. The Iroquois refused, and the Hurons, sunk in apathy, took no active steps to secure the aid of the friendly Susquehannas. That tribe, however, maintained its friendly intercourse with its European neighbors, and in 1652, Sawahegeh, and other sachems, in presence of a Swedish deputy, ceded to Maryland all the territory from the Patuxent river to Palmer's Island, and from the Choptauk to the north-east branch north of Elk river.

Four years later, the Iroquois, grown insolent by their success in almost annihilating their kindred tribes north and south of Lake Erie, provoked a war with the Susquehannas, plundering their hunters on Lake Ontario. During that year the small-pox, that terrible scourge of the aborigines, broke out in their town, sweeping off many, and seriously enfeebling the nation. War had now begun in earnest with the Five Nations, and though the Susquehannas had some of their people killed near their town, they in turn pressed the Cayugas so hard that some of them retreated across Lake Ontario to Canada. They also kept the Senecas in such alarm that they no longer ventured to carry their peltries to New York, except in caravans escorted by six hundred men, who even took a most circuitous route. A law of Maryland, passed May 1, 1661, authorized the Governor of that Province to aid the Susquehannas.

Smarting under constant defeat, the Five Nations solicited French aid, but in April, 1663, the Western cantons raised an army of eight hundred men to invest and storm the fort of the Susquehannas. This fort was located about fifty miles from the mouth of the river. The enemy embarked on Lake Ontario, according to the French account, and then went overland to the Susquehanna. On reaching the fort, however, they found it well defended on the river side, and on the land side with two bastions in European style, with cannon mounted and connected by a double curtain of large trees. After some trifling skirmishes the Iroquois had recourse to stratagem. They sent in a party of twenty-five men to treat of peace, and ask provisions to enable them to return. The Susquehannas admitted them, but immediately burned them all alive before the eyes of their countrymen. The force of the Iroquois, according to Proud and Hazard, consisted of one thousand six hundred warriors, while that of the Susquehannas only one hundred. On the retreat of the Iroquois, the Susquehannas pursued them with considerable slaughter.

After this the war was carried on in small parties, and Susquehanna prisoners



were from time to time burned at Oneida, Onondaga, Seneca, and Cayuga. In the fall of 1669, the Susquehannas, after defeating the Cayugas, offered peace, but the Cayugas put their ambassador and his nephew to death, after retaining him five or six months—the Oneidas having taken nine Susquehannas, and sent some to Cayuga, with forty wampum belts to maintain the war.

At this time the great war chief of the Susquehannas was one styled Hochitageté, or Barefoot, and raving women and crafty medicine men deluded the Iroquois with promises of his capture and execution at the stake, and a famous medicine man of Oneida appeared after death to order his body to be taken up and interred on the trail leading to the Susquehannas, as the only means of saving that canton from ruin. Toward the summer of 1672 a body of forty Cayugas descended the Susquehanna in canoes, and twenty Senecas went by land to attack the enemy in their fields; but a band of sixty Andasté, or Susquehanna boys, the oldest not over sixteen, attacked the Senecas and routed them, killing one brave and taking another. Flushed with victory, they pushed on to attack the Cayugas, and defeated them also, killing eight, and wounding with arrow, knife, and hatchet fifteen or sixteen more, losing, however, fifteen or sixteen of their gallant band. At this time the Susquehannas were so reduced by war and pestilence that they could muster only three hundred warriors.

In 1675, according to the *Relations Inédites* and Colden, the tribe was completely overthrown, but unfortunately we have no details whatever as to the forces which effected it, or the time or manner of their utter defeat. The remnant, too proud to yield to those with whom they had long contended as equals, and, by holding the land of their fathers by sufferance, to acknowledge themselves subdued, yet too weak to withstand the victorious Iroquois, forsook the river bearing their name, taking up a position on the western borders of Maryland, near the Piscataways. Shortly after they were accused of the murder of some settlers, apparently slain by the Senecas; they sent five of their chiefs to the Maryland and Virginia troops, under Col. John Washington, great-grandfather of General George Washington, and Major Thomas Truman, who went out in pursuit. Although coming as deputies, and showing the Baltimore medal and certificate of friendship, these chiefs were cruelly put to death. The enraged Susquehannas then began a terrible border war, which was kept up until their utter destruction.

Having thus followed the fortunes of the aborigines in the centre of Pennsylvania, we turn our attention to the two tribes residing therein upon the arrival of the Founder—and whose important connection with the subsequent history of the State deserves more than a passing notice. We refer to the Delawares and Shawanese.

The Lenni Lenape, or the original people, as they called themselves, inhabited principally the shores of the river Delaware, thence their name. The Lenape were of western origin; and nearly forty tribes, according to Heckewelder, acknowledged them as their “grandfathers” or parent stock. It was related by the braves of the Delawares, that many centuries previous their ancestors dwelt far in the western wilds of the American continent, but emigrating eastwardly, arrived after many years on the *Namæsi Sîpu* (the Mississippi), or river of fish, where they fell in with the Mengwe (Iroquois), who had also emigrated from a



distant country, and approached this river somewhat nearer its source. The spies of the Lenape reported the country on the east of the Mississippi to be inhabited by a powerful nation, dwelling in large towns erected upon their principal rivers.

This people, tall and stout, some of whom, as tradition reports, were of gigantic mould, bore the name of Allegewi, and from them were derived the names of the Allegheny river and mountains. Their towns were defended by regular fortifications or intrenchments of earth, vestiges of which are yet shown in greater or less preservation. The Lenape requested permission to establish themselves in their vicinity. This was refused, but leave was given them to pass the river, and seek a country farther to the eastward. But, whilst the Lenape were crossing the river, the Allegewi, becoming alarmed at their number, assailed and destroyed many of those who had reached the eastern shore, and threatened a like fate to the others should they attempt the stream. Fired at the loss they had sustained, the Lenape eagerly accepted a proposition from the Mengwe, who had hitherto been spectators only of their enterprise, to conquer and divide the country. A war of many years duration was waged by the united nations, marked by great havoc on both sides, which eventuated in the conquest and expulsion of the Allegewi, who fled by the way of the Mississippi, never to return. Their devastated country was apportioned among the conquerors; the Iroquois choosing their residence in the neighborhood of the great lakes, and the Lenape possessing themselves of the lands to the south.

After many ages, during which the conquerors lived together in great harmony, the enterprising hunters of the Lenape crossed the Allegheny mountains, and discovered the great rivers Susquehanna and Delaware, and their respective bays. Exploring the *Sheyichbi* country (New Jersey), they arrived on the Hudson, to which they subsequently gave the name of the *Mohicannittuck* river. Returning to their nation, after a long absence, they reported their discoveries, describing the country they had visited as abounding in game and fruits, fish and fowl, and destitute of inhabitants. Concluding this to be the country destined for them by the Great Spirit, the Lenape proceeded to establish themselves upon the principal rivers of the east, making the Delaware, to which they gave the name of *Lenape-wihittuck* (the river or stream of the Lenape), the centre of their possessions.

They say, however, that all of their nation who crossed the Mississippi did not reach this country; a part remaining behind to assist that portion of their people who, frightened by the reception which the Allegewi had given to their countrymen, fled far to the west of the *Namæsi Sipu*. They were finally divided into three great bodies; the larger, one-half of the whole, settled on the Atlantic; the other half was separated into two parts, the stronger continued beyond the Mississippi, the other remained on its eastern bank.

Those on the Atlantic were subdivided into three tribes—the Turtle or *Unamis*, the Turkey or *Unalachtgo*, and the Wolf or *Minsi*. The two former inhabited the coast from the Hudson to the Potomac, settling in small bodies in towns and villages upon the larger streams, under the chiefs subordinate to the great council of the nation. The Minsi, called by the English Monseys, the most warlike of the three tribes, dwelt in the interior, forming a barrier between their



nation and the Mengwe. They extended themselves from the Minisink, on the Delaware, where they held their council seat, to the Hudson on the east, to the Susquehannah on the southwest, to the head waters of the Delaware and Susquehannah rivers on the north, and to that range of hills now known in New Jersey by the name of the Muskenecun, and by those of Lehigh and Conewago in Pennsylvania.

Many subordinate tribes proceeded from these, who received names from their places of residence, or from some accidental circumstance, at the time of its occurrence remarkable, but now forgotten. Such probably were the Shawanese, the Nanticokes, the Susquehannas, heretofore referred to, the Neshamines, and other tribes, resident in or near the Province of Pennsylvania at the time of its settlement.

The Mengwe hovered for some time on the borders of the lakes, with their canoes in readiness to fly should the Allegewi return. Having grown bolder, and their numbers increasing, they stretched themselves along the St. Lawrence, and became, on the north, near neighbors to the Lenape tribes.

The Mengwe and the Lenape, in the progress of time, became enemies. The latter represent the former as treacherous and cruel, pursuing pertinaciously an insidious and destructive policy toward their more generous neighbors. Dreading the power of the Lenape, the Mengwe resolved to involve them in war with their distant tribes, to reduce their strength. They committed murders upon the members of one tribe, and induced the injured party to believe they were perpetrated by another. They stole into the country of the Delawares, surprised them in their hunting parties, slaughtered the hunters, and escaped with the plunder.

Each nation or tribe had a particular mark upon its war clubs, which, left beside a murdered person, denoted the aggressor. The Mengwe perpetrated a murder in the Cherokee country, and left with the dead body a war club bearing the insignia of the Lenape. The Cherokees, in revenge, fell suddenly upon the latter, and commenced a long and bloody war. The treachery of the Mengwe was at length discovered, and the Delawares turned upon them with the determination utterly to extirpate them. They were the more strongly induced to take this resolution, as the cannibal propensities of the Mengwe, according to Hecke-welder, had reduced them, in the estimation of the Delawares, below the rank of human beings.

Hitherto each tribe of the Mengwe had acted under the direction of its particular chiefs; and, although the nation could not control the conduct of its members, it was made responsible for their outrages. Pressed by the Lenape, they resolved to form a confederation which might enable them better to concentrate their force in war, and to regulate their affairs in peace. Thannawage, an aged Mohawk, was the projector of this alliance. Under his auspices, five nations, the Mohawks, Oneidas, Onondagoes, Cayugas, and Senecas, formed a species of republic, governed by the united councils of their aged and experienced chiefs. To these a sixth nation, the Tuscaroras, was added in 1712. This last originally dwelt in the western parts of North Carolina, but having formed a deep and general conspiracy to exterminate the whites, were, as stated in Smith's History of New York, driven from their country, and adopted by the Iroquois confederacy.





The beneficial effects of this system early displayed themselves. The Lenape were checked, and the Mengwe, whose warlike disposition soon familiarized them with fire arms procured from the Dutch, were enabled, at the same time, to contend with them and to resist the French, who now attempted the settlement of Canada, and to extend their conquests over a large portion of the country between the Atlantic and the Mississippi.

But, being pressed hard by their new, they became desirous of reconciliation with their old enemies; and, for this purpose, if the tradition of the Delawares be credited, they effected one of the most extraordinary strokes of policy which history has recorded.

The mediators between the Indian nations at war are the women. The men, however weary of the contest, hold it cowardly and disgraceful to seek reconciliation. They deem it inconsistent in a warrior to speak of peace with bloody weapons in his hands. He must maintain a determined courage, and appear at all times as ready and willing to fight as at the commencement of hostilities. With such dispositions, Indian wars would be interminable, if the women did not interfere and persuade the combatants to bury the hatchet and make peace with each other. On these occasions, the women pleaded their cause with much eloquence. "Not a warrior," they would say, "but laments the loss of a son, a brother, or a friend. And mothers, who have borne with cheerfulness the pangs of child-birth, and the anxieties that wait upon the infancy and adolescence of their sons, behold their promised blessings crushed in the field of battle, or perishing at the stake in unutterable torments. In the depth of their grief they curse their wretched existence, and shudder at the idea of bearing children." They conjured the warriors, therefore, by their suffering wives, their helpless children, their homes, and their friends, to interchange forgiveness, to cast away their arms, and, smoking together the pipe of amity and peace, to embrace as friends those whom they had learned to esteem as enemies.

Prayers thus urged seldom failed of their desired effect. The function of the peace-maker was honorable and dignified, and its assumption by a courageous and powerful nation could not be inglorious. This station the Mengwe urged upon the Lenape. "They had reflected," they said, "upon the state of the Indian race, and were convinced that no means remained to preserve it unless some magnanimous nation would assume the character of the *woman*. It could not be given to a weak and contemptible tribe; such would not be listened to; but the Lenape and their allies would at once possess influence and command respect."

The facts upon which these arguments were founded were known to the Delawares, and, in a moment of blind confidence in the sincerity of the Iroquois, they acceded to the proposition, and assumed the petticoat. The ceremony of the metamorphosis was performed with great rejoicings at Albany, in 1617, in the presence of the Dutch, whom the Lenape charged with having conspired with the Mengwe for their destruction.

Having thus disarmed the Delawares, the Iroquois assumed over them the rights of protection and command. But still dreading their strength, they artfully involved them again in war with the Cherokees, promised to fight their battles, led them into an ambush of their foes, and deserted them. The Delawares, at length, comprehended the treachery of their arch enemy, and resolved to resume



their arms, and, being still superior in numbers, to crush them. But it was too late. The Europeans were now making their way into the country in every direction, and gave ample employment to the astonished Lenape.

The Mengwe denied these machinations. They averred that they conquered the Delawares by force of arms, and made them a subject people. And, though it was said they were unable to detail the circumstance of this conquest, it is more rational to suppose it true, than that a brave, numerous, and warlike nation should have voluntarily suffered themselves to be disarmed and enslaved by a shallow artifice; or that, discovering the fraud practised upon them, they should unresistingly have submitted to its consequences. This conquest was not an empty acquisition to the Mengwe. They claimed dominion over all the lands occupied by the Delawares, and, in many instances, their claims were distinctly acknowledged. Parties of the Five Nations occasionally occupied the Lenape country, and wandered over it at all times at their pleasure.

Eventually, in 1756, Tedyuseung, the noted Delaware chief, seems to have compelled the Iroquois to acknowledge the independence of his tribe, but the claim of superiority was often afterwards revived.

The origin of the Shawanese was southern. They probably belonged to the Algonquins, as they spoke the same language. From the most authentic information, Harvey informs us, it appears that the basin of the Cumberland river was the residence of the Shawanese before the settlement of the Europeans on the continent, and that they connected the different sections of the Algonquin families.

At the celebrated treaty of 1682, the Shawanese were a party to that covenant, and they must have been considered a very prominent band, from the fact of their having preserved the treaty in their own possession or keeping, as we are informed that, at a conference held many years after, that nation produced this treaty on parchment to the Governor of the Province. It was the custom with the Indian tribes who made a joint treaty with the whites to commit the preservation of the papers containing the treaty, etc., to such of the bands as were considered most to be trusted. From the best authority, it appears that as early as 1673 upwards of seventy families of that nation removed from the Carolinas and occupied some of the deserted posts of the Susquehannas. Others of the tribe soon followed.

In the year 1698, some Shawanese applied to the Proprietary Government of Pennsylvania for permission to settle on the Conestoga and Pequea creeks, under Opessah, their principal chief. Here they remained a quarter of a century, when, with other families settled on the Swatara, Paxtang, and the Susquehanna streams on the east, they branched off to the westward. As early as 1728 we find the Shawanese as far west as the Ohio, and by the middle of the eighteenth century the entire tribe had settled on the branches of that river. In the year 1732 the number of fighting braves of that nation in Pennsylvania amounted to seven hundred. The Shawanese, says Colden, were the most restless of all the Indian tribes. In 1745, he says, one tribe of them had gone to New Spain. This band of four hundred and fifty, who located themselves on the head-waters of the Mobile river, probably never returned to Pennsylvania.

As it is difficult to disentangle the web of conflicting evidence respecting the nationality of the Indians who from time to time occupied the soil of Pennsyl-



vania, we shall content ourselves with the foregoing reference to the three principal nations, the most important of whom were the Delawares and Shawanese, as for almost a century and a half they were the principal parties to all treaties.

The language of the aborigines, says Gordon, was said to be rich, sonorous, plastic, and comprehensive in the highest degree. It varied from the European idioms chiefly in the conjugation of the verbs, with which not only the agent and patient were compounded, in every possible case, but the adverbs were also blended, and one word was made to express the agent, the action, with its accidents of time, place, and quantity, and the object effected by them. And, though greatly pliant, it was subjected to rules, from which there were few exceptions. It had the power of expressing every idea, even the most abstract. The Old and New Testaments were translated into it, and the Christian missionaries had no difficulty, as they asserted, of making themselves understood on all subjects by the Indians. As a specimen, we give the following translation of the *Jubilate Deo* in the language of the Six Nations:

O Sewatnvharen ne Rawenniioke, nise ne TSIONWENTSIAGWEON; hetsisewawenniostak ne Rawenniio, *nok tsi etho nensewaiere* sewatshemnonihak; nok gasewe tsi nonwe nihenteron, nok tetsisewariwagwas ne Rawenniio.

Agwa sewerhek ne Rawenniio raonha ne Niioh; nok raonha songwaiatison; nok iah i-i ne tiongwe teiongwatatiatison; nok raonha rahongweta ni-i ne tiongwehohon.

Wasene tsit honnhogaronte, etho tetsisewanonweraton; nok ne rahononsagon tetsisewariwagwas: Tetsisewanonweraton, nok hetsisewasennanonst nonen wesewatati.

Roianere na-ah ne Rawenniio, tsinihotennitenraskon iah tiaiehewe; nok ne rahoriwatokenti toitkon tontatie, tsimahe tsontagawatsiratatie nongwe.

A cultivated language usually denotes great civilization. But our aborigines seem to have confined their efforts to the improvement of their speech. This was a consequence naturally flowing from their form of government and political institutions, in which the most absolute liberty prevailed. The public welfare was confided to the aged and experienced chiefs, whose resolutions were obeyed in full conviction of their wisdom. They had no law but public opinion, and the redress of injuries belonged to the injured. Among such a people, particularly, eloquence is the handmaid of ambition, and all power must depend upon the talent of persuasion. To this cause we may ascribe the cultivation and the many beauties which are said to mark the Indian tongues of North America.

In other respects, these tribes had advanced little beyond the rudest state of nature. They had no written language, unless rude drawings may be thus considered. Their intercourse with each other was regulated by a few simple rules of justice and courtesy. Their passions generally preserved an even and moderate tenor; but, occasionally becoming intense, they produced enormous crimes, or deeds of heroism. In the commerce of the sexes, love, as a sentiment, was almost unknown. Marriage was a physical convenience, continued by the will of the parties, either sex having the power to dissolve it at pleasure. The treatment of the women, however, if not marked by tenderness, was not cruel. A full proportion of labor, it is true, was imposed upon them, but it was of that



kind which necessarily falls to their lot, where the men are absent from their homes in search of sustenance for their families. It consisted of domestic and agricultural services. Children were educated with care in the knowledge of the duties and employments of their future life. Their lessons were taught in a kind and familiar manner, their attention awakened by the hope of distinction, and their efforts rewarded by general praise. Threats nor stripes were ever used. Lands and agricultural returns were common property; peltries and the other acquisitions of the chase belonged to individuals.

It is well known they were very much averse to European religion and customs, unless in such things as they could comprehend and clearly understand were for their real benefit. Yet, in this, sometimes, their passions prevailed over their better understanding; instance, their drunkenness, &c. But though the hoped and desired success did not so fully attend the labors bestowed on them, and the means used, both by William Penn himself, in person, and by divers others of the more pious and early settlers, whose good example was very remarkable, with the later endeavors since continued, to inform the judgment of the *Indians* in regard to religious affairs, to acquaint them with the principles and advantages of *Christianity*, to restrain them from some things acknowledged by themselves to be manifestly pernicious, particularly from abusing themselves with *strong liquor*, by law, as well as advice, &c., so much as might reasonably have been wished or expected; yet these very labors and means were far from being useless, or entirely without good effect; for the consequence declared that the *Indians*, in general, were sensible of the kind regard paid them and of the good intended thereby, which they showed and proved by their future conduct and steady friendship, though they generally refused in a formal manner to embrace *European manners, religion, and opinions*: "For, governed by their own customs, and not by laws, creeds, &c., they greatly revered those of their ancestors, and followed them so implicitly that a new thought or action seldom took place among them."

"They are thought," says William Penn, "to have believed in a God and immortality; and seemed to aim at a public worship: in performing this, they sometimes sat in several circles, one within another: the action consisted of singing, jumping, shouting, and dancing; which they are said to have used mostly as a tradition from their ancestors, rather than from any knowledge or inquiry of their own into the serious parts of its origin.

"They said the great King, who made them, dwelt in a glorious country to the southward; and that the spirits of the blest should go thither and live again. Their most solemn worship was a sacrifice of the *first fruits*, in which they burned the first and fattest buck, and feasted together upon what else they had collected. In this sacrifice they broke no bones of any creature which they ate; but after they had done they gathered them together and burned them very carefully. They distinguished between a *good and evil Manito*, or *Spirit*; worshipping the former for the good they hoped; and, it is said, some of them, the latter, that they might not be afflicted with the *evil* which they feared; so slavishly dark were some of them represented to have been in their understandings! But whether this last was true, in a general sense, or peculiar only to some parts, it was certainly not the case at all among the *Indians* within the limits of these





provinces, or, at least, very much concealed from the first and early settlers of them.

“But in late years it was less to be admired that the *Indians*, in these provinces and their vicinity, had shown so little regard to the *Christian* religion, but rather treated it, as well as its professors, with contempt and abhorrence, when it was duly considered what kind of *Christians* those generally were, with whom they mostly dealt and conversed; as, the *Indian* traders, and most of the inhabitants of the back counties of this and the neighboring provinces, who had chiefly represented the professors of *Christianity* among them, for many years *viz.*, such of the lowest rank, and least informed, of mankind, who had flowed in from *Germany, Ireland*, and the *jails of Great Britain*, and settled next them, as well as those who fled from justice in the settled, or better inhabited parts of the country, and retired among them, that they might be out of the reach of the laws, &c., the least qualified to exhibit favorable ideas of this kind; but it was most certain they have done the contrary; insomuch that, it were to be wished the cause of the late unhappy *Indian war* within the limits of these provinces, did not take its rise, in no small degree, from the want of common justice, in the conduct of too many of these people towards them; for notwithstanding the general ignorance of the *Indians* in many things, especially of *European* arts and inventions, yet in things of this kind they relied more on experience than theory; and they mostly formed their judgment of the *English*, or *Europeans*, and of their *religion* and *customs*, not from the words, but from the actions and *manners* of those with whom they most conversed and transacted business.

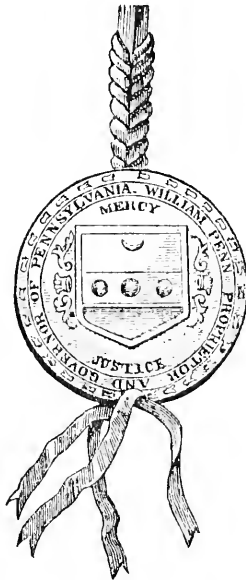
“For, however ignorant and averse to *European* refinement and ways of thinking, on religious subjects, the *Indians*, in general, might appear to have been, yet, as in all other nations of mankind, it is most certain there were some among them of a more exalted way of thinking, and enlightened understandings, who, notwithstanding the great absurdities among the generality, were not without some degree of a just sense and acknowledgment of the providential care and regard of the *Almighty Creator* over the human race, both in a general and particular capacity, and, even, of divine *grace* and influence on the human mind, and that independent of foreign information, or instruction: of this their immediate sense and understanding of mental objects, which it is most manifest many of them possessed, even of the highest nature, and very demonstrative; besides, part at least of their traditions, from their ancestors, whose prime original, so far as it is founded on truth, must necessarily have first arisen from the divine intelligence, though communicated in different degree to different parts of the human race, and though much of such tradition may be mixed with imagination and absurdity.”

The strongest passion of an Indian's soul was revenge. To gratify it, distance, danger, and toil were held as nothing. But there was no manliness in his vengeance. He loved to steal upon his enemy in the silence of the forest, or in his midnight slumbers, and to glut himself, like a ravenous wolf, in undistinguished slaughter. In war, not even the captive was spared, unless he were adopted to supply the place of a deceased member of the capturing nation. If not thus preserved, he was destined to perish, in protracted torture, under the hands of women and chil



dren. On the other hand, hospitality and respect for the property of others were their distinguishing virtues. Strangers were treated with great attention and kindness, their wants liberally supplied, and their persons considered sacred. To the needy and suffering of their own tribes they cheerfully gave; dividing with them their last morsel. Theft in their communities was rare, and is said to have been almost unknown before their acquaintance with the whites.

Such are, in brief, the peculiar characteristics of the aborigines. With the exception of a mere handful in the northern part of Warren county, all have disappeared from the limits of our State, and only the names of our streams and our mountains are left to remind us of the native red man, although the revengeful Delawares and perfidious Shawanese hold a prominent place in the history of the State for at least an entire century.



PROPRIETARY SEAL.



## CHAPTER II.

DISCOVERY OF THE DELAWARE BY HUDSON. SETTLEMENT OF THE DUTCH AND SWEDES. 1609—1681.



SEVERAL years subsequent to the first settlement of Virginia, Henry Hudson, while in the service of the Dutch East India Company, made his celebrated voyage that resulted in the discovery of the great river which most justly bears his name. He sailed from Amsterdam in the Half-Moon, on the 4th of April, 1609, with the view of discovering a northwest passage to China. He arrived off the Banks of New Foundland in July, continued his course westwardly, and, after some delay, entered Penobscot Bay, on the coast of Maine. After making some slight repairs, Hudson continued southwest along the coast until the 18th of August, when he arrived at the mouth of the Chesapeake Bay.

Reversing his course, on the 28th of August, 1609, in latitude thirty-nine degrees and five minutes north, Hudson discovered "a great bay," which, after having made a very careful examination of the shoals and soundings at its mouth, he entered. According to Juet, he soon came to the over-cautious conclusion that "he that will thoroughly discover this great bay must have a small pinnace, that must draw but four or five feet water, to sound before him." To this great bay the name of Delaware has been given, in honor of Lord Delaware, who is said to have entered it one year subsequently to the visit of Hudson, although this has been denied by Mr. Broadhead and other historians.

Coasting along the Eastern shore of New Jersey, Hudson, on the third day of September, anchored his ship within Sandy Hook. On the twelfth he entered New York Bay through the Narrows. The time between the 11th and 19th of September was employed in exploring the North River. He ascended with his ship as high as the spot on which Albany now stands. Satisfied that he could not reach the South Sea by this route, he retraced his steps.

On the 4th of October he reached the ocean, and on the 7th of November following arrived on the English coast. Though an Englishman, Hudson was in the employ of the Dutch, and his visit to the Delaware, however transient it may have been, is rendered important from the fact that on it principally, if not wholly, rested the claim of that Government to the bay and river, so far as it was based on the ground of prior discovery. This claim is now fully conceded; for although the bay was known in Virginia by its present name as early as 1612, no evidence exists of its discovery by Lord Delaware, or any other Englishman, prior to 1610, when it is said that navigator "touched at Delaware Bay on his passage to Virginia." Plantagenet—very doubtful authority—in his "Description of New Albion," gives Sir Samuel Argall the credit of being the first European who entered its waters after its discovery by Hudson. An official Dutch document, drawn up in 1644, claims that New Netherland "was visited by



inhabitants of that country in the year 1598," and that "two little forts were built on the South and North Rivers." This assertion, made by an interested party after the lapse of half a century, is also to be doubted.

The various names by which the Delaware River and Bay have been known, are: by the Indians—Pautaxat, Marisqueton, Makerisk-kisken, and Lenape Wilhittuck; by the Dutch—Zuydt or South River, Nassau River, Prince Hendrick River, and Charles River; by the Swedes—New Swedeland Stream; and by the English, Delaware River.

In 1614 a general charter was granted by the States General of Holland, securing the exclusive privilege of trade during four voyages with "any new courses, havens, countries, and places" to the discoverer, and subjecting any persons who should act in violation thereof to a forfeiture of their vessel, in addition to a heavy pecuniary penalty. Stimulated by this edict, the merchants of Amsterdam fitted out five vessels to engage in voyages, in pursuance thereof. Among them was the *Fortune*, commanded by Captain Cornelis Jacobsen Mey.

With more enterprise and industry than his predecessors, this navigator visited the shores from Cape Cod to the South, or Delaware River, examining and mapping as he went along the numerous inlets and islands. From him the bay of the Delaware was called New Port Mey, its northern cape, Cape Mey, and the southern, Cape Cornelis. To a cape still further south he gave the name of Hindlopen, after a town of Friesland. Returning to Holland, and making report of his discoveries, in connection with the other skippers, the exclusive privileges of trade were granted to the United Company of Merchants of the cities of Amsterdam and Hoorn, by whose means the expedition had been fitted out. It was limited, however, to "newly discovered lands situate in America between New France and Virginia, whereof the sea coasts lie between the fortieth and forty-fifth degrees of latitude, now named New Netherland," and was to extend to four voyages, to be made within three years, from the first of January, 1615. It will be seen that the Delaware Bay is not included in this grant, a circumstance that would suggest that the discoveries in that quarter by Captain Mey had not been appreciated.

To Skipper Cornelis Hendrickson is due the credit of the first exploration of the Delaware river as high up, probably, as the mouth of the Schuylkill, in the year 1616. His report, furnished by his employers to the States General, was not considered, however, as furnishing additional proof that the discoveries made by him went much beyond what had been previously made, for the application for trading privileges was refused. In anticipation of the formation of a Dutch West India Company, these privileges were not again granted under the general charter of 1614, except in a very few instances. The trade to New Netherland, regarded by the Dutch as extending beyond the Delaware, was thrown open, in a measure, to individual competition. This did not last long, for on the third of June, 1621, the West India Company was incorporated.

This company having, by virtue of the charter, taken possession of the country, they dispatched the ship *New Netherland*, with a number of people, thereto, under the direction of Captains Cornelis Jacobsen Mey and Adrien Joriz





Tienpont. Mey proceeded to the Delaware, or South, River, on the eastern bank of which, fifteen leagues from its mouth, he erected Fort Nassau, at a place called by the natives Techaacho, supposed to be on the Sassackon, now Little Timber Creek, a short distance below the present town of Gloucester, in New Jersey. It was the first settlement, if it can so be regarded, on the Delaware.

The administration of the affairs of New Netherland was confided by the West India Company to Peter Minuit, who arrived at Manhattan Island in 1624. He was assisted in his government by a council of five members and a

1624. "Scout Fiscal," whose duties embraced those now usually performed by a sheriff and district attorney. The authority vested in the Director, as he was styled, and his council, was ample, being executive, legislative, and judicial, and extended to the South as well as the North River.

The commencement of the Directorship of Minuit is fixed by Wassenaer, in his History of Europe, in the year 1626, and he assigns him two predecessors in that office, viz., William Van Hulst, for the year 1625, and Cornelis Mey, for the year 1624. These men, in conjunction with Adrien Joriz Tienpont, appear, however, to have been merely directors of an expedition, and it would seem that the government of the country, of which the territory embraced within the limits of that portion of the State on the Delaware constituted a part, commenced with the administration of Minuit. According to the authority last quoted, the effort at a settlement on the Delaware seems to have been abandoned before the expiration of a single year, in order to strengthen the colony at Manhattan. It is not remarkable that this policy should have been adopted, as the whole colony at that place scarcely numbered two hundred souls. The fort, therefore, at the South River, was abandoned to the Indians, who did not fail to occupy it as their occasions required; and the country again passed into their possession as completely as it was on the day Hudson touched at the capes.

In 1629, the West India Company granted, by charter, special privileges to all persons who should plant any colony in New Netherland. They adopted certain articles termed "FREEDOMS AND EXEMPTIONS," under which scheme the feudal tenure of lands was to be introduced into America, south of Canada, where settlements on an analogous plan had already commenced.

Thus encouraged, several of the directors of the company, among whom were Samuel Godyn and Samuel Bloemaert, resolved to make vast territorial acquisitions, and by their agents had purchased a large tract of land at the mouth of the Delaware Bay. This grant was confirmed to the purchasers by

Peter Minuit, the Director, and his council, on the 16th of July, 1630. The land embraced in the grant, thus confirmed, was "situate on the south side of the aforesaid bay of the South River, extending in length from cape Hinlopen off into the mouth of the aforesaid South River, about eight leagues, and half a league in breadth into the interior, extending to a certain marsh or valley through which these limits can be clearly enough distinguished." Samuel Godyn had previously given notice of his intention to make the above purchase, and to occupy the bay of the South River as "Patroon" on the conditions set forth in the "Freedoms and Exemptions." Meeting with



David Pieterszen De Vries, of Hoorn, "a bold and skilful seaman," who had been "a master of artillery in the service of the United Provinces," he made him acquainted with the design of himself and associates, of forming a colony. The bay of the South River was held up to De Vries as a point at which a whale fishery could be profitably established, as Godyn represented "that there were many whales" which kept before the bay, and the oil, at sixty guilders a hog-head, he thought, would realize a good profit. De Vries, declining to accept a subordinate position in connection with the colony, he was at once admitted, on perfect equality, into a company of "Patroons," who associated themselves together on the 16th day of October, 1630.

On the 12th of December following, a ship and a yacht for the South River were dispatched from the Texel, "with a number of people, and a large stock of cattle," the object being, says De Vries, "as well to carry on a whale fishery in that region, as to plant a colony for the cultivation of all sorts of grain, for which the country is well adapted, and of tobacco."

Swanendael (valley of swans) was the name given to the tract of land purchased by Godyn for his colony on the "South River, in New Netherland." From him the bay was named in the Dutch records, "Godyn's Bay." This was in midwinter, 1630-1, but the date of the arrival of the colonists is not known. Skipper Heyes, who commanded the Walrus, for that appears to have been the name of the ship that brought out this little colony, purchased of the Indians a tract of land sixteen English miles square, at Cape May, and extending sixteen miles on the bay. This document, duly reported and recorded, is still in existence.

A house, "well beset with palisades in place of breastworks," was erected on the northwest side of Hoorn-kill (Lewes creek), a short distance from its mouth. It was called "Fort Optlandt," and appears to have served the colony, which consisted of thirty-two persons, as a place of defence, a dwelling, and a storehouse. This colony, the most unfortunate that settled on the bay or river, was left under the charge of Giles Osset.

Commissary Osset set upon a post or pillar the arms of Holland painted on tin, in evidence of its claim and profession. An Indian, ignorant of the object of this exhibition, and perchance unconscious of the right of exclusive property, appropriated to his own use this honored symbol. The folly of Osset considered this offence not only as a larceny, but as a national insult, and he urged his complaints and demands for redress with so much vehemence and importunity that the harrassed and perplexed tribe brought him the head of the offender. This was a punishment which Osset neither wished nor had foreseen, and he ought justly to have dreaded its consequences. In vain he reprehended the severity of the Indians, and told them, had they brought the delinquent to him, he would have been dismissed with a reprimand. The love of vengeance, inseparable from the Indian character, sought a dire gratification; and, though the death of the culprit was doomed and executed by his own tribe, still they beheld its cause in the exaction of the strangers. Availing themselves of the season in which a greater part of the Dutch were engaged in the cultivation of the fields, at a distance from their house, the Indians entered it, under the amicable pretence of trade, and murdered the unsuspecting Osset, with a single sentinel who



attended him. Thence proceeding to the fields, they fell upon the laborers, in the moment of exchanging friendly salutations, and massacred every individual. This conduct of the Indians, with its extenuating circumstances, as related by themselves to De Vries, is sufficiently atrocious; but it is neither improbable nor inconsistent with the disposition the aborigines had frequently displayed towards foreigners, that the desire of possessing the white man's wealth was as powerful a stimulant to violence as the thirst for vengeance.

In December, 1631, De Vries again arrived from Holland. He found no vestiges of his colonists, save the ashes of their dwelling and their unburied carcasses. Attracted by the firing of a cannon, the savages approached his vessel with guilty hesitation. But having at length summoned courage to venture on board, they gave a circumstantial narrative of the destruction of his people. De Vries deemed it politic to pardon what he could not safely punish; and was, moreover, induced, by the pacific disposition of his employers, to seek reconciliation. He made a new treaty with the Indians, and afterwards, with a view to obtain provisions, ascended the river above Fort Nassau. He had nearly fallen a victim here to the perfidy of the natives. Pretending to comply with his request, they directed him to enter the Timmerkill (Timber Creek), which furnished a convenient place for an attack, but warned by a female of the tribe of their design, and that a crew of a vessel, which had been sent from Virginia to explore the river the September previous, had been there murdered, he returned to Fort Nassau, which he found filled with savages. They attempted to surprise him, more than forty entering his vessel; but, aware of their intention, he ordered them ashore with threats, declaring that their Manito, or Great Spirit, had revealed their wickedness. But subsequently, pursuing the humane and pacific policy which had hitherto distinguished him, he consented to the wishes they expressed, of forming a treaty of amity, which was confirmed with the customary presents on their part; but they declined his gifts, saying they did not now receive presents that they might give others in return.

Failing to procure the necessary provisions, De Vries, leaving part of his crew in the bay to prosecute the whale fishery, sailed to Virginia, where, as the first visitor from New Netherland, he was kindly received, and his wants supplied. Upon his return to the Delaware, in April following, finding the whale fishery unsuccessful, he hastened his departure, and, with the other colonists, returned to Holland, visiting Fort Amsterdam on his way. Thus, at the expiration of twenty-five years from the discovery of the Delaware by Hudson, not a single European remained upon its shores.

Director Minuit, suspected to have favored the claims of the Patroons, having been recalled, left the now flourishing colony of New Amsterdam 1632. in the spring of 1632. He was succeeded by Wouter Van Twiller, who arrived at Fort Amsterdam early the following year.

The same year, Lord Baltimore obtained a grant for Maryland, under which he claimed the lands on the west side of Delaware river, the fruitful source of continual controversies between him and the Dutch, and later with the Pennsylvania proprietaries, which were not settled for more than one hundred and thirty years. After his death, the patent was confirmed to his son. The extent of the grant will be seen from the following proceedings and description, but had it not



been for the occupancy of the Dutch thus narrated, Delaware as a separate State would have had no existence. Therefore "the voyage of De Vries," says Bancroft, "was the cradling of a State. According to English rule, occupancy was necessary to complete a title to the wilderness. The Dutch now occupied Delaware, and Harvey, the governor of Virginia, in a grant of commercial privileges to Claiborne, recognised the adjoining plantations of the Dutch."

"By letters patent of this date, reciting the petition of Cecilius, Lord Baltimore, for a certain country thereafter described, not then cultivated and planted, though in some parts thereof inhabited by certain barbarous people, having no knowledge of Almighty God, his Majesty granted to said Lord Baltimore:

"All that part of a peninsula lying in the parts of America between the ocean on the east, and the bay of Chesapeake on the west, and divided from the other part thereof by a right line drawn from the promontory or cape of land called Watkins' Point (situate in the aforesaid bay, near the river of Wigheo), on the west, unto the main ocean on the east; and between that bound on the south, unto that part of Delaware bay on the north, which lieth under the 40th degree of north latitude from the equinoctial, where New England ends; and all that tract of land between the bounds aforesaid; *i. e.*, passing from the aforesaid bay called Delaware bay, in a right line by the degrees aforesaid, unto the true meridian of the first fountain of the river of Pattowmack, and from thence trending towards the south unto the further bank of the aforesaid river, and following the west and south side thereof, unto a certain place called Cinquack, situate near the mouth of the said river, where it falls into the bay of Chesapeake, and from thence by a straight line unto the aforesaid promontory and place called Watkins' Point."

It does not appear that actual steps towards the settling of the banks of the Delaware were taken until 1638, and the authentic notices of transactions belonging to the interval which have come down to us are not of sufficient moment to be chronicled in this place.

Peter Minuit, after his return to Holland, went to Sweden and succeeded in reviving the plan of colonizing the Delaware, abandoned by Usselinx, who is supposed to have died at the Hague, in 1647. Towards the close of 1637, Minuit, under the patronage of Queen Christina, at the head of an expedition consisting of the ship of war *Key of Kalmar*, and the transport *Griffin*, and carrying a clergyman, an engineer, about fifty settlers, with the necessary provisions, merchandise for trade and presents to the Indians, left Gottenberg, and after calling at Jamestown, in Virginia, for wood and water, reached the Delaware about May, 1638. Purchasing the soil on the western shore, from the

1638. capes to the falls of Saunthikan, opposite to the present city of Trenton, from the Indians, he erected the fort and town of Christina, on the north bank of the Minquas-kill, or Minquas creek, almost three miles above its mouth. The Rev. Reorus Torkillus, who accompanied Minuit, was the first Swedish clergyman in America; he died in 1643, aged 35. The establishment of the Swedes led to remonstrances on the part of Kieft, then director-general of New Netherland, which were unheeded by Minuit, whose intercourse with the Indians was of an amicable character. Minuit died at Christina several years afterwards.





While it is conceded that the Dutch had for a long time traded on the river, that they had there erected forts, or trading posts, one of which had been occupied from time to time since 1624, that they had purchased lands from the Indians on both sides of the bay near its mouth, and had made an unsuccessful attempt to plant a colony at Swanendael, yet it cannot be denied that the colony of Minit constituted the first permanent settlement on the Delaware. While the Swedish government may claim the distinction of planting this colony, it is really entitled to very little credit on account of any immediate care and attention bestowed on it. "The whole number of emigrants," says Hazard, "did not exceed fifty souls, and a portion of these, according to Van der Donk, were criminals." Though well supplied in the beginning, they were left a long time without aid or succor from Sweden, and but for the experience and energy of the commander, a Dutchman, the permanency of the colony could not have been maintained. As it was, but a single day intervened between the time appointed for its dissolution, and the arrival of supplies that saved it from that catastrophe.

Peter Hollandare, a Swede, appointed to succeed Peter Minit as Governor of New Sweden, arrived in one of the vessels sent for the relief and  
**1641.** reinforcement of the colony at Christina. His administration continued for a year and a half, when he returned to occupy a military post in his native country.

John Printz, appointed Governor, accompanied by Rev. John Campanius with another colony, on board the *Stork* and the *Renown*, arrived in the  
**1643.** Delaware on February 15, 1643, at Fort Christina, after a passage of one hundred and fifty days. Agreeably to his instructions, he erected on the island of Tenakong, or Tinicum, a fort called New Gottenberg, a handsome residence which he named Printz Hall, and, subsequently, a church. A mill was also built on Cobb's creek. The principal inhabitants had their dwellings and plantations on this island. Printz's instructions acknowledged the right of soil in the Indians; directed him to confirm the contract made by Minit; to maintain a just, upright, and amicable intercourse with them, and, if possible, also with the Dutch. Still, in case of hostile interference on their part, he was to "repel force by force."

During the same year, Printz is said to have erected on or near the present Salem creek, another fort called *Elftsborg*, or *Elsingborg*, for the purpose of shutting up the river, a matter which greatly exasperated the Dutch, whose ships, when passing, had to lower their colors and were boarded by the Swedes. Report says that the latter had, however, soon to vacate the fort on account of the mosquitoes, and that they called it *Myggenborg*, or *Mosquito Fort*.

Two years previous, against the anxious admonition of Director General Kieft, a company of emigrants from New Haven proceeded to the Delaware, located themselves at Salem creek and on the Schuylkill. This intrusion, in the estimation of the Dutch, was an affair of "ominous consequence," that might eventually result in the ruin of their trade on the South River; accordingly, no time was to be lost in getting rid of these dangerous rivals. In effecting their removal the Swedes have the credit of lending a helping hand to the Dutch. The only measures in which the Dutch and Swedes could unite harmoniously in



carrying out, were such as would keep the English from gaining a footing on the river.

In 1645, when Andreas Hudde, the Dutch commissary on the Delaware, made his examination of the river preparatory to making his report to the 1645. government, there were on the same side of the river with Fort Christina, and about two (Dutch) miles higher up, "some plantations," which, in the language of the report, "are continued nearly a mile; but few houses only are built, and these at considerable distances from each other. The farthest of these is not far from Tenakong. . . . Farther on, at the same side, till you come to the Schuylkill, being about two miles, there is not a single plantation at Tenakong, because near the river nothing is to be met but underwood and valley lands." After Tinicum, according to Hudde, Chester, Marcus Hook, and one or two points above and below, may claim a priority of settlement to any part of the Province of Pennsylvania.

Though the Swedes had erected a fort on the New Jersey side of the river they never placed so high an estimate on their title to the land on that side as to that on the western shore. As a consequence, most of their settlements were at first made on that side of the Delaware, up which, and the Schuylkill, they were gradually extended. These rivers, and the numerous tide-water creeks, constituted the highways of the Swedish settlers, and it was in close 1646. proximity with these streams their habitations were erected. In 1646 they constructed and consecrated a church on Tinicum island.

As to the social and domestic condition of the settlers on the Delaware, at the time of the arrival of Governor Printz, no satisfactory conclusion can be arrived at. The Swedes were of three classes, "The company's servants," those who came "to better their fortunes," and were called freemen; and a third class, consisting of "vagabonds and malefactors," who were to remain in slavery, and were employed "in digging earth, thinning up trenches, and erecting walls and other fortifications."

Fort Nassau was merely a military establishment to maintain a trading post. The fort was occupied by the soldiers and servants of the Dutch West India Company, and there is reason to believe that, at times, some of the latter were negro slaves. But little is known of the early doings of the Hollanders under Swedish authority on the river and bay below Christina.

Governor Printz possessed many qualifications that fitted him for the position he occupied. His plans were laid with good judgment, and were executed with energy. He managed the trade of the river with the natives so as to monopolize nearly the whole; yet succeeded during his entire administration in avoiding an open rupture with the Dutch authorities, whose jealousy was said to be excessive.

The settlement of the country, however, proceeded very slowly under the Swedish dynasty, while trade was pushed to an extent never before known upon the river. This, as before remarked, was a source of great annoyance to the Dutch, as the trade of the river was lost to them in proportion as it was acquired by the Swedes. On account of the progress made by the latter, Governor Kieft sent Hudde to keep a watch on the proceedings of Governor Printz, and to resist his supposed innovations. Hudde, at this time, estimated



the whole force of the Swedish governor at from eighty to ninety men. But the Dutch force on the river, at the same time and for some years afterwards, was utterly insignificant, even when compared with that of the Swedes. As late as 1648 they had but six able-bodied men on the river.

It was not long ere Hudde and Governor Printz got into an angry controversy, which, through the negotiation of Rev. Campanius, an amicable arrangement was entered into between the Swedes and the Dutch about the trade of the Schuylkill. Nevertheless the planting of a Dutch settlement on the western shore of the Delaware was now the policy of the authorities at Manhattan. To this Governor Printz entered a sharp protest.

Governor Kieft having been recalled, the administration of affairs 1647. upon Dutch account on the Delaware passed into the hands of Peter Stuyvesant. His administration commenced on the 27th of May, 1647. and continued till 1664, when the American interests of the Dutch passed into the hands of the English.

The disagreements between the Swedes and the Dutch continued, giving rise to a mutual hatred and jealousy. Stuyvesant in a letter complains of the encroachments of the former, while they in turn suggest plans to interfere with the Dutch to and on the North River. Each party steadily 1648. pursued the policy of obtaining additional grants of lands from the Indians as the one most likely to strengthen its claims upon the Delaware. The Swedes, however, maintained their supremacy.

Governor Stuyvesant's troubles were not alone with the Swedes on the Delaware. He was constantly embroiled with his own people, and his New England neighbors gave him much uneasiness. The directors of the West India Company intended to apply to the Government of Sweden for the establishment of limits between the two colonies on the South River. Stuyvesant made a visit to the Delaware, and at once, without waiting for a personal interview with Governor Printz, conducted negotiations by means of "letters and messengers," but no satisfactory conclusion was arrived at. Before he left the river, he secured from an Indian sachem, by "a free donation and gift," lands he had refused to sell to the Swedes. Certain other suspicious negotiations were conducted with the Indians, by which their title to the land from Christina-kill to Bombay Hook the Dutch pretended to have extinguished.

Having thus acquired "*an Indian title*" to the west bank of the river, Governor Stuyvesant at once determined to erect another fort, and to raze Fort Nassau, which "lay too high up." This new fort, named Casimir, was erected about a league from Fort Christina, and its site was within the limits of the present town of New Castle.

Governor Printz, having been accustomed to an active military life, became wearied of his position, and requested permission to return to Sweden. 1653. Not waiting for the arrival of his successor, he sailed for his native country in October, 1653, leaving his son-in-law, John Pappegoya, in charge of the government. The interval between the departure of the old Governor and the arrival of the new one did not exceed five or six months, and Pappegoya also returned to Sweden the following year.

The commission of John Claudius Rysingh, the successor of Printz, bears



date the 12th December, 1653. Arriving in New Sweden towards the end of May, on board the ship *Aren*, Rysingh commenced his administration by capturing the Dutch Fort Casimir, in direct violation of his instructions. With its capture, the authority of the Dutch on the river, for the time being, was suspended. The engineer, Peter Lindstrom, who constructed the first map of New Sweden, and who came to the country with Rysingh, caused this fort to be greatly strengthened. He also laid out the town of Christina, back of the fort of that name.

On the 17th of June, a great convocation of Indians was held at Printz Hall, on Tinicum, at which it was offered, on behalf of the Queen of Sweden, 1654. to renew the ancient league of friendship that subsisted between them and the Swedes, who had purchased from them the lands they occupied. The Indians complained that the Swedes had brought much evil upon them, for many of them had died since their coming into the country; whereupon a considerable number of presents were distributed among the Indians, which brought about a conference among themselves. The result was a speech from one of their chiefs, Naaman, in which he rebuked his companions for having spoken evil of the Swedes, and told them he hoped they would do so no more, for the Swedes were very good people.

"Look," said he, pointing to the presents, "what they have brought to us, for which they desire our friendship." "Afterwards he thanked the Swedes for their presents, and promised that friendship should be observed more strictly between them than it had been before; that if any one should attempt to do any harm to the Indians, the Swedes should immediately inform them of it; and, on the other hand, the Indians would give immediate notice to the Christians of any plot against them, even if it were in the middle of the night. On this they were answered, that that would be, indeed, a true and lasting friendship, if every one would agree to it; on which they gave a general shout in token of consent. Immediately on this the great guns were fired, which highly delighted the natives. After advising that some Swedes should be settled at Passyuuk, where there lived a great number of Indians, they expressed the wish that the title to the land which the Swedes purchased should be confirmed, on which the agreements were read to them, word for word. When those who had signed the deeds heard their names they appeared to rejoice, but when the names were read of those who were dead they hung their heads in sorrow."

The recorded proceedings of this treaty with the aborigines have come down to us through Campanius, and it is conclusive evidence that the Swedes had purchased from the Indians the lands then occupied by them; and the fact that one of the principal chiefs was a party to this transaction, renders it a certainty that the former purchase of the Swedes had been made from "the right owners," the pretensions of Stuyvesant to the contrary. Campanius informs us that the treaty thus so solemnly made between the Swedes and Indians "has ever been faithfully observed by both sides."

The affairs of the Swedes on the Delaware were now approaching a crisis, but nothing had occurred to arouse the suspicions of the home government. The triumph of Rysingh was regarded as a re-conquest of usurped territory, and no other means to reclaim it by the Dutch were apprehended. This was a fatal





delusion ; for at the close of 1654, while estimates were being made in Sweden for the support of their colony during the ensuing year, on a peace basis, an armament was being fitted out in Holland, not only sufficient "to replace matters on the Delaware in their former position," but "to drive out the Swedes from every side of the river."

In the spring of 1655, five armed vessels, well equipped, were forwarded to Stuyvesant, with authority to charter others. The armament, when  
**1655.** completed at New Amsterdam, consisted of seven vessels and about six hundred men. The expedition was commanded by Governor Stuyvesant in person, and arrived at the bay of South River on the afternoon of Monday, the 5th of September. The deserted Fort Elsingborg was visited the following day, but it was not until Friday that the fleet reached Fort Casimir, now christened Trefalldigheit, or Trinity. This post was under the immediate command of Swen Schute, "the brave and courageous lieutenant" of the Swedes, while Governor Rysingh, in person, had charge of Christina. To prevent a communication between the two forts, Stuyvesant had landed fifty men. The demand made by the Dutch was a "direct restitution of their own property," to which Commander Schute, after having had an interview with Stuyvesant, reluctantly yielded on the following day, upon very favorable terms of capitulation. The Dutch Governor then proceeded to Fort Christina, and, after a siege of fourteen days, it also was surrendered by Rysingh ; articles of capitulation were signed, according to which the Swedes were suffered to vacate the fort with flying colors, and the Governor and as many persons as might choose to accompany him, besides being allowed their private property, were offered a free passage to Sweden, whither they ultimately returned. Agreeably to special instructions from the home government, an offer was made to restore the possession of Fort Christina to Rysingh, but he declined the offer, preferring to abide by the articles of capitulation. Thus ended, on September 25, 1655, the short career of Governor Rysingh, and with him fell the whole Swedish Colony.

The hardships of the Swedes, though they were not protracted under the Dutch government, did not terminate with the capture of their forts. We are informed by Acrelius, that the "flower of their troops were picked out and sent to New Amsterdam. Under the pretext of their free choice, the men were forcibly carried on board the ships. The women were ill-treated in their houses, the goods pillaged, and the cattle killed."

Many improvements were made by the Swedes, from Henlopen to the Falls of Alumingh or Santhikans. They laid the foundation of Uplandt, the present Chester ; Korsholm Fort was built at Passayung ; Manayung Fort was placed at the mouth of the Schuylkill ; they marked the sites of Nya Wasa and Gripsholm, somewhere near the confluence of the Delaware and Schuylkill Rivers ; Straws Wijk, and Nieu Causeland (the present New Castle) ; and forts were erected at Kingessing, Wicacoa (Southwark), Finlandt, Menlendael, and Lapanael. On the eastern shore the Swedes had settlements at Swedesborough and other places.

The government of the Dutch on the river was established by the appointment of John Paul Jacquet as vice-director and commander-in-chief, and Andreas Hudde, as secretary and surveyor, keeper of the keys of the fort, etc.



As evidence that the Swedish government had been kept in ignorance of the intended conquest of New Sweden by the Dutch, was the arrival, on the **1656.** 24th of March, 1656, of the Swedish ship *Mercury*, with one hundred and thirty souls on board, intended as a reinforcement to the colony. They were forbidden to pass the fort, but a party of Indians joined the crew and conducted the ship up the river, the Dutch not venturing to fire a gun against them. Although the Dutch government never yielded its assent to the landing of the immigrant passengers, they all did land, and probably most of them remained in the country.

The Dutch West India companies had become greatly embarrassed by the large amount of their debts, which had been increased by the aid **1657.** afforded the City of Amsterdam, towards the conquest of the Swedes on the Delaware, and to liquidate this debt, that part of the South River extending from the west side of Christina-kill to the mouth of the bay, "and so far as the Minquas land extended," was transferred to that City. The colony thus established took the name of *Nieuw Amstel*. The government of the City colony was organized by the establishment of a board of commissioners to reside in the City of Amsterdam. Forty soldiers were enlisted and placed under the command of Captain Martin Krygier and Lieutenant Alexander D'Hiinoyossa, and one hundred and fifty emigrants, freemen, and hoors, were forthwith dispatched to settle in the new colony. Jacob Alricks accompanied the expedition as Director of *New Amstel*. Alricks assumed the government of the colony towards the close of April, 1657, when Hudde was appointed to the command at Fort Christina, the name of which was changed to *Altona*, and also of *New Gottenberg*.

Over the Swedes and Fins, who were exclusively the inhabitants of the river above the colony of the City of Amsterdam, Goeran Van Dyck had been appointed with the title of "schout fiscoal," and under him Anders Jurgen. Van Dyck suggested to Stuyvesant the necessity of concentrating the Swedish inhabitants, and procured from him a proclamation inviting them to assemble in one settlement. The invitation was not accepted.

In May, 1658, Governor Stuyvesant made a visit to South River to examine into affairs there. Finding some irregularities concerning the customs, **1658.** he appointed William Beekman, with the title of commissary and vice-director, to superintend the revenue. Outside of the district of *New Amstel*, Beekman was charged with the administration of civil and criminal justice, and the superintendence of military affairs. Within that district the authority was vested in Alricks.

The prosperous commencement of the City colony was soon followed by evils that almost threatened its dissolution. Sickness, a scarcity of provisions and failure of crops, followed by a severe winter, spread dismay and discontent among the people. Added to these distresses were news of a threatened invasion by the English, and the arrival of commissioners from Maryland to command the Dutch to leave, or to acknowledge themselves subjects of Lord Baltimore. In regard to the latter a protracted conference ensued, in which the Dutch title to the lands on the Delaware river and bay was defended with considerable ability. The land from *Bombay Hook* to *Cape Henlopen* was secured by



purchase from the savages, and a fort erected at Hoern-kill as a further security against the English claim. It was attached to the district of New Amstel.

The clashing of interests between the City and the Company, taken in connection with the adverse circumstances with which he was surrounded, rendered Director Alrick's position one of great difficulty. Towards the close of 1659. the year 1659 he departed this life. Previous to his death Alricks nominated D'Hinoyossa as his successor, and Gerit Van Gezel as Secretary.

While the City and Company occupied the country jointly, the seat of justice of the latter jurisdiction was at Altona. The Swedes did not resort voluntarily to the court held there, preferring to settle their differences among themselves, and in one or two instances they wilfully disregarded its processes.

The time had now arrived when the dominion of Pennsylvania was to be wrested from the Dutch, and, with the exception of a short interval, for ever. The crown of Great Britain having been restored to Charles II., he granted to his brother James, Duke of York, the territory embracing the whole of New York and New Jersey, and, by a subsequent grant, that which now comprises the State of Delaware. To secure the possession of his newly acquired territory, the Duke fitted out an expedition consisting of four men-of-war and four hundred and fifty men, which he placed under the command of Sir Richard 1664. Nicolls. Associated with the commander were Sir Robert Carr, Sir George Cartwright, and Samuel Maverick, Esq., as commissioners.

The expedition reached the mouth of the Hudson in the latter end of August, 1664. The formidable force and the favorable terms offered to the inhabitants disposed them to capitulate, notwithstanding the efforts of the Governor to excite resistance. After a few days of fruitless negotiation, during which Stuyvesant pleaded in vain the justice of the title of the States General, and the peace existing between them and the English nation, a capitulation was signed, August 27, 1664, and, immediately afterwards, a force was dispatched to reduce Fort Orange. In honor of the Duke of York, the city of New Amsterdam received the name of New York, and Fort Orange that of Albany. The greater part of the inhabitants submitted cheerfully to the new government, and Governor Stuyvesant retained his property and closed his life in New York.

Matters being thus arranged at New Amsterdam, the reduction of the colony on the Delaware having been determined, Sir Robert Carr, with two frigates, the *Guinea*, and the *William and Nicholas*, and the troops not needed at New York, sailed thither and accomplished his mission with the expenditure of two barrels of powder and twenty shot. The capitulation took place on October 1, 1664, and stipulated that "the burgesses and magistrates submitting to his majesty should be protected in their persons and estates; that the present magistrates should be continued in office; that permission to leave the country within six months should be given to any one desirous so to do; that all persons should enjoy liberty of conscience as formerly; that any person taking the oath of allegiance should become a free denizen, and enjoy all the privileges of trading into any of His Majesty's dominions, as freely as any Englishman."

The whole country being thus reduced without bloodshed, Colonel Nicolls, by virtue of a commission of the Duke of York, assumed the government of New York, and on November 3rd was commissioned by his colleagues, Cart-



wright and Maverick, to proceed to Delaware, "to take special care for the good government of said place, and to depute such officer or officers therein as he shall think fit for the management of his Majesty's affairs, both civil and military, until his Majesty's pleasure be further known." Colonel Robert Carr was appointed Deputy Governor.

New Amstel was now called New Castle. The capture of New York and its dependencies led to an European war between Great Britain and Holland, ending in the treaty of Breda, at which the right of the former to their newly-acquired territories in America was acknowledged.

Colonel Nicolls governed for nearly three years with justice and good sense. He settled the boundaries with the Connecticut Colony, which, yielding all claim to Long Island, obtained great advantages on the main, pushing its line to Mamaroneck river, about thirty miles from New York; he prescribed the mode of purchasing lands from the Indians, making the consent of the governor requisite to the validity of all contracts with them for  
1665. the soil, and directing such contracts to be entered in the public registry; he incorporated the city of New York, under a mayor, five aldermen, and a sheriff, in 1665, and, although he reserved to himself all judicial authority, his administration was so wise and impartial, that it enforced universal praise.

Colonel Francis Lovelace succeeded Colonel Nicolls, in May, 1667. By proclamation he required that all patents granted by the Dutch, for  
1667. lands upon the Delaware, should be renewed, and that persons holding lands, without patent, should take out titles under the English authority. Power was given to the officers on the Delaware to grant lands, and the commission of surveyor-general, of all the lands under the government of the Duke of York, on the west side of the Delaware, was issued to Walter Wharton. Governor Lovelace also renewed the duty of ten per cent. imposed on goods imported by the Delaware, which had been ordained by the Dutch, and repealed by his predecessor; but it was found so oppressive, that he also was compelled to revoke the order by which it was established.

In the Spring of the year 1672, the town of New Castle was, by the  
1672. government of New York, made a corporation; to be governed by a bailiff and six associates; after the first year, four old to go out and four others to be chosen. The bailiff was president and had a double vote; the constable was chosen by the bench. They had power to try causes, as far as ten pounds, without appeal. The English laws were established in the town, and among the inhabitants, on both sides of Delaware. The office of scout was converted into that of sheriff, for the corporation and river, annually chosen. And they were to have free trade, without being obliged to make entry at New York, as before.

The fears of the government of Maryland, says Gordon, lest the title of Lord Baltimore to the country on Delaware Bay should be weakened by non-claim, produced occasional irruptions of a very hostile character. An act of violence was committed at Hoarkill [1672], by a party of Marylanders led by one Jones, who seized the magistrates and other inhabitants, plundered them, and carried





off the booty. They were joined by one Daniel Brown, a planter of Hoarkill. Brown was soon taken, sent to New York, and there tried and convicted; but on promise of amendment, and security given for his good behavior in future, was dismissed.

Governor Lovelace wrote a letter to Governor Calvert of Maryland, on this aggression, and instructed Captain Carr, his deputy at Delaware, to resist future encroachments.

Charles II. having declared war against the States General of Holland, Dutch privateers soon infested the American coasts, and plundered the inhabitants of New Castle and Hoarkill. With a view to repairing their losses, permission was granted to them by the government to impose, for one year, a duty of four guilders, payable in wampum, on each anker of strong rum imported or sold there. Wampum being the chief currency of the country and scarce, the governor and council of New York issued a proclamation increasing its value, whereby "instead of eight white and four black, six white and three black should pass for a stiver: and three times so much the value in silver." This was the Indian money, by them called wampum; by the Dutch, sewant. It was worked out of shells, into the form of beads, and perforated to string on leather. Six beads were valued at a stiver; twenty stivers made what they called a guilder, which was about sixpence currency, or fourpence sterling. The white wampum was worked out of the inside of the great conques. The black, or purple, was formed out of the inside of the mussle, or clam-shell. These, being strung on leather, were sometimes formed into belts, about four inches broad and thirty in length, and were given and received at treaties, as seals of friendship.

A squadron of Dutch ships, under command of Evertse and Benke, arrived on July 30, 1673, and recaptured New York without opposition. The commander of the fort at the Narrows, John Manning, treacherously made peace with the enemy and delivered up the fort without giving or receiving a shot, and the major part of the magistrates and constables swore allegiance to the States General and the Prince of Orange. Thus New York and New Jersey came again under Dutch rule. Deputies were also sent by the people inhabiting the country as far west as Delaware, who, in the name of their principals, made a declaration of their submission, and Delaware again reverted to the Dutch in that year. Anthony Colve was appointed governor, with Peter Alricks Deputy, who held the offices until the country was restored to England by the Treaty of Westminster, concluded the 19th February, 1674.

The Duke of York, says Proud, on June 29, 1674, obtained a new royal patent confirming the land granted him in 1664, and two days after appointed Major, afterwards Sir, Edmund Andross, governor of his territories in America, which were surrendered to him by the Dutch on October 31 following. Andross authorized Captain Edmund Cantwell and William Tonn to take possession of the forts and stores at New Castle for the King's use, and directed them to adopt measures for the establishment of order and tranquility on the Delaware.

On June 24, 1674, the Duke of York granted to John, Lord Berkley, and Sir George Carteret, "the Province of New Jersey, bounded on the east by the

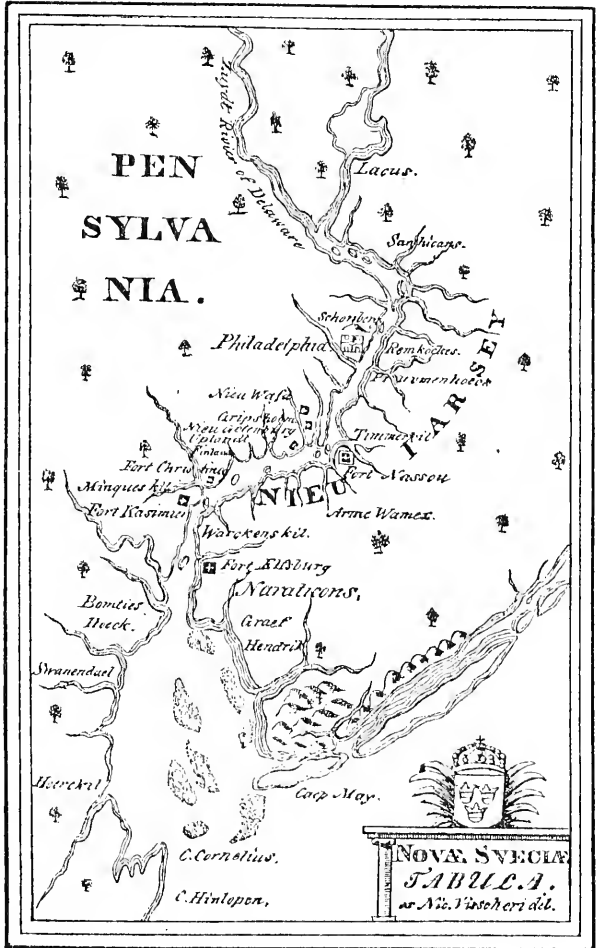


Atlantic ocean, on the west by Delaware Bay and river, on the north by a line drawn from the Delaware river at forty-one degrees forty minutes, to the Hudson River, in forty-one degrees northern latitude."

Lord Berkley, in 1675, sold his half of the province of New Jersey to a person named John Fenwicke, in trust for Edward Byllinge and his assigns, in consequence of which the former, this year, arrived with a number of passengers, in a ship called the Griffith, from London, on a visit to his new purchase. He landed at a place, in West Jersey, situated upon a creek, or small river, which runs into the river Delaware, to which place he gave the name of Salem, a name which both the place and creek still retain. Byllinge being pecuniarily involved, conveyed his interest in the Province to William Penn, Gawen Lawrie, and Nicholas Lucas, in trust for his creditors. The trustees sold proprietary rights to several other persons, and having made, with Sir George Carteret, a division of the Province, proceeded to frame a

constitution for their moiety under the title "concessions and agreements of the proprietors and free-holders of West Jersey, in America."

According to Gordon, in June, 1677, Thomas Olive, Daniel Wills, John Kinsey, John Penford, Joseph Helmsley, Robert Stacey, Benjamin Scott, Thomas Foulke, and Richard Guy, commissioners, appointed by the Proprietaries to superintend their interests in the Province, arrived at New Castle, with two hundred and thirty settlers, principally Quakers. Having explored the country for many miles along the shores of the Delaware, they made allotments of land among the adventurers at several miles distance



MAP OF NEW SWEDEN.



from each other. But fear of the natives finally induced the emigrants to settle together, in and about a town plot, laid out by the commissioners, first called Beverly, then Budlington, and afterwards Burlington. In the same year two ships arrived, bearing many families of great respectability. The quiet of the colonists was undisturbed, except by the duty again levied upon their commerce at the Hoarkill, by the New York government. This was vexatious as a tax, and insulting to the sovereignty of the proprietaries, who remonstrated for some time in vain with the agents of the Duke of York; but finally, after an investigation, by commissioners appointed for the purpose, the duty was repealed.

Dispensing with their executive of commissioners, the Proprietaries appointed Edward Byllinge Governor, who, soon after his arrival in the Province, commissioned Samuel Jennings as his deputy. In November, 1681, Jennings called the first Assembly, and, in conjunction with them, adopted certain articles, defining and circumscribing the power of the Governor, and enacted such laws as the wants of the colony required.

Sir George Carteret, the proprietor of East Jersey, died in 1679, having in his last will ordered the sale of that country to pay his debts. His

1681. heirs sold it, by indenture of lease and release, bearing date February 1 and 2, 1681-82, to William Penn and eleven other persons. These twelve proprietors added twelve more to their number, and to these the Duke of York made a fresh grant of East Jersey under date March 14, 1682.

William Penn, as one of the trustees of Byllinge, became thus intimately connected with the colonization of West Jersey, and subsequently as a purchaser with that of East Jersey. Under these circumstances he became familiar with the affairs of the new world, and conceived the design of founding a commonwealth on principles of perfect equality, and of universal toleration of religious faith, on the west side of the Delaware.





## CHAPTER III.

THE PROVINCE OF PENNSYLVANIA GRANTED TO WILLIAM PENN. THE PROPRIETARY RULE, UNTIL THE DEATH OF THE FOUNDERS. 1681-1718.



ADMIRAL SIR WILLIAM PENN, renowned in English history by his martial valor as an officer of the British Navy, left to his son a claim against the government for sixteen thousand pounds, consisting to a great extent of money advanced by him in the sea service, and of arrearages in his pay. In 1680 William Penn\* petitioned Charles II. to grant him in lieu of said sum "letters-patent for a tract of land in America, lying north of Maryland, on the east bounded with Delaware river, on the west limited as Maryland, and northward to extend as far as plantable." This petition was referred to the "Committee of the Privy Council for the Affairs of Trade and Plantations," who ordered copies to be sent to Sir John Werden, the Duke of York's agent, and to the agents of Lord Baltimore, "to the end that they may report how far the pretensions of Mr. Penn may consist with the boundaries of Maryland, or the Duke's propriety of New York, and his possessions in those parts." The Duke of York desired to retain the three lower counties, that is, the State of Delaware, as an appendage to New York, but his objection was finally withdrawn, being the result of an interview between him and Mr.

---

\* WILLIAM PENN, the founder of Pennsylvania, was born in London, October 14, 1644. While a student at Oxford he became deeply impressed by the preaching of a celebrated Quaker, Thomas Lee. He studied law at Lincoln's Inn, but in 1663 went to Ireland to manage an estate of his father's. He acquired military renown as a soldier at the siege of Carrickfergus, and caused himself to be painted in military costume. This is considered to be the only genuine portrait of the great "Apostle of Peace." He soon after joined the Quakers, and at a meeting at Cork, in 1667, was arrested and put into prison. Released through the efforts of the Earl of Orrery, he began to preach, and for writing "The Sandy Foundation Shaken," was imprisoned in the Tower, where he wrote his celebrated work, "No Cross, No Crown." Liberated by the influence of his father, he was, in 1670, arrested for street preaching, and committed to Newgate. At the trial he pleaded his own cause, was acquitted, but detained in prison, and the jury were fined. While in Newgate he wrote several religious tracts. In 1674 he wrote "England's Present Interest Considered," an able defence of freedom of conscience and the rights of Englishmen. In 1672 he married Gulielma Maria Springett. In 1677 Penn, with Barclay and others, preached in Holland and Germany. In 1676 he became concerned in the settlement of West Jersey. In 1681 he obtained from the king a charter for Pennsylvania. He then published "A Brief Account of the Province of Pennsylvania," proposing the easy purchase of lands and good terms for settlers. On the 27th of October, 1682, he arrived in the Delaware. Returned to England in 1684. Secured, in 1686, the liberation of over 1,200 imprisoned Quakers, and the passage of the "Toleration Act" in 1687. In 1688 he was tried for treason, but acquitted. In 1689 made a second visit to his Province, returning in 1701. In 1708 was committed to prison for debt, but released by the intervention of friends. He died of paralysis, at Rushcombe, July 30, 1718. His enduring monument is the great State founded by him "in deeds of peace."





Penn. Lord Baltimore's agent wanted the grant, if made to Penn, to be expressed as "land that shall be north of Susquehanna Fort, also north of all lands in a direct line westward from said fort, for said fort is the boundary of Maryland northward."

After sundry conferences and discussions concerning the boundary lines and other matters of minor importance, the committee finally sent in a favorable report and presented the draft of a charter, constituting William Penn, Esq., absolute Proprietary of a tract of land in America, therein mentioned, to the King for his approbation, and leaving to him also the naming of the Province. The King

affixed his signature on March 4, 1681, naming the Province Pennsylvania, for reasons explained in the subjoined extract from a letter of William

1681. Penn to his friend Robert Turner, dated 5th of 1st month, 1681: "This day my country was confirmed to me under the great seal of England, with large powers and privileges, by the name of Pennsylvania; *a name the King would give it* in honor of my father. I chose New Wales, being, as this, a pretty hilly country, but Penn being Welsh for *a head*, as Penmaunioire in Wales, and Penrith in Cumberland, and Penn in Buckinghamshire, the highest land in England, called this Pennsylvania, which is, *the high or head woodlands*, for I proposed, when the Secretary, a Welshman, refused to have it called New Wales, *Sylvania*, and they added *Penn* to it, and though I much opposed it, and went to the King to have it struck out and altered, he said it was past, and would take it upon him; nor could twenty guineas move the under-secretary to vary the name, for I fear lest it be looked on as vanity in me, and not as a respect in the King, as it truly was, to my father, whom he often mentions with praise."

This charter, under date March 4, 1681, exists in the office of the Secretary of the Commonwealth, and is written on three pieces of strong parchment, in the old English handwriting, with each line under-scored with lines of red ink, that give it a curious appearance. The borders are gorgeously decorated with heraldic devices, and the top of the first page exhibits a finely-executed likeness of his Majesty, in good preservation.

Nearly a month after the signing of the charter, the King, on the second day of April, issued a declaration informing the inhabitants and planters of the Province that William Penn, their absolute Proprietary, was clothed with all the powers and preëminences necessary for the government. A few days later, on 8th of April, the Proprietary addressed the following proclamation to the inhabitants of Pennsylvania:

"MY FRIENDS: I wish you all happiness here and hereafter. These are to let you know that it hath pleased God, in his providence, to cast you within my lot and care. It is a business that, though I never undertook before, yet God hath given me an understanding of my duty, and an honest mind to do it uprightly. I hope you will not be troubled at your change, and the King's choice, for you are now fixed, at the mercy of no governor that comes to make his fortune great. You shall be governed by laws of your own making, and live a free, and, if you will, a sober and industrious people. I shall not usurp the right of any, or oppress his person. God has furnished me with a better resolution, and has given me his grace to keep it. In short, whatever sober and free men can reasonably desire for the security and improvement of their happiness, I shall



heartily comply with, and in five months resolve, if it please God, to see you. In the meantime, pray submit to the commands of my deputy, so far as they are consistent with the law, and pay him those dues that formerly you paid to the order of the Governor of New York, for my use and benefit; and so I beseech God to direct you in the way of righteousness, and therein prosper you and your children after you.

“WILLIAM PENN.”

Captain William Markham, a cousin of William Penn, was the deputy referred to in the preceding proclamation, whose commission, bearing date April 10, 1681, contained the following directions:

1. To call a council, consisting of nine, he to preside.
2. To read his letter and the King's declaration to the inhabitants, and to take their acknowledgment of his authority and propriety.
3. To settle boundaries between Penn and his neighbors; to survey, set out, rent, or sell lands according to instructions given.
4. To erect courts, appoint sheriffs, justices of the peace, etc.
5. To call to his aid any of the inhabitants, for the legal suppression of tumult, etc.

Governor Markham carried also letters from Penn and the King to Lord Baltimore, authorizing him to adjust boundaries. He arrived at New York on June 21, 1681, and Lord Baltimore, being in the Province, had an interview with Markham, at Upland, which resulted in discovering, from actual observation, that Upland itself was at least twelve miles south of 40 degrees, and that boundaries claimed by Lord Baltimore would extend to the Schuylkill. This discovery ended the conference, and gave fresh incentives to Penn to obtain from the Duke of York a grant of the Delaware settlements, as without such grant he had now reason to fear the loss of the whole peninsula.

Penn soon after published an account of his Province, with the royal charter and other documents connected with it, offering easy terms of sale for lands, viz., forty shillings sterling for one hundred acres, subject to a quit rent of one shilling per annum for ever.

Many persons from London, Liverpool, and Bristol embarked in his enterprise; and an association, called the “Free Traders' Society of Pennsylvania,” purchased large tracts of land.

In the autumn of the same year Penn appointed three commissioners, viz., Wm. Crispin, John Bezar, and Nathaniel Allen, to proceed to the Province, arrange for a settlement, lay out a town, and treat with the Indians. To these commissioners, says Westcott, was added afterwards William Haige. They set sail from London probably near the end of October, but it is not known at what date they arrived.

In the beginning of the year following, Penn published his frame of government, and certain laws, agreed on in England by himself and the  
 1682. purchasers under him, entitled “*The frame of the government of the Province of Pennsylvania, in America; together with certain laws, agreed upon in England by the Governor and Divers of the Free-Men of the aforesaid Province. To be further Explained and Confirmed there, by the first Provincial Council and General Assembly that shall be held, if they see meet.*”



South of the Province lay the territories or counties on Delaware, stretching one hundred and fifty miles along the bay, to the Atlantic Ocean. The possessor of this country, commanding the entrance and course of the river, would have power to harass the commerce, and in other respects to affect the welfare of the neighboring colony. Penn was desirous, says Gordon, to possess these territories, as well on account of the security they afforded, as of the advantages to be derived from a hardy and laborious population. The Duke of York held them as an appendage to his government, and, though reluctant to cede them, he could not resist the solicitations of the Proprietary. He executed three deeds to Penn in August, 1682. The first, dated the twenty-first, releasing his right to the Province; the others, dated the twenty-fourth, granting the town of New Castle and the land lying within a circle of twelve miles about it; and the tract of land beginning at twelve miles south of New Castle, and extending southward to Cape Henlopen. For the last tract, Penn covenanted to pay the Duke and his heirs one-half of all the rents and profits received from it. These grants conveyed to the Proprietary a fee-simple estate in the soil, but no political right whatever. Holding in socage as of the Duke's castle at New York, he owed fealty to, and was a subject of that government. Whether he ever obtained from the crown political power over this country is questionable. It is certain that, when the right he assumed became the subject of controversy among the inhabitants of the Province and territories, no grant of this nature was exhibited. These deeds were duly recorded in New York, and, by proclamation of the commander there, twenty-first November, 1682, to the magistrates on the west side of the Delaware, the rights of Penn under them were publicly recognized.

Penn having completed all arrangements for his voyage to America, after writing an affectionate letter to his wife and children, and another "to all faithful friends in England," accompanied by about one hundred passengers, mostly friends from Sussex, after a passage of about two months on board the ship *Welcome*, of three hundred tons burthen, came in sight of the American coast about Egg-Harbor, in New Jersey, on the 24th of October, and reached New Castle on the 27th. On the following day he produced his deeds from the Duke of York, and received possession by the solemn "delivery of turf, and twig, and water, and soyle, of the River Delaware." He was received with demonstrations of gladness by the inhabitants, and at the Court House, at New Castle, says Clarkson, made a speech to the old magistrates, in which he explained to them the design of his coming, the nature and end of government, and of that more particularly which he came to establish.

To form some idea of the proportion of the different sorts of people, observes Proud, on the west side of Delaware, about this time, or prior to William Penn's arrival, on the lands granted him, it may be noted, that the Dutch then had a meeting place, for religious worship, at New Castle; the Swedes, three—one at Christina, one at Tinicum, and one at Wicacoa. The Quakers had three—one at Upland, or Chester, one at Shakamaxon, and one near the lower falls of Delaware.

Penn went to Upland, on the 29th of October, 1682. On his arrival there he changed its name. This was a memorable event, says Clarkson, and to be



distinguished by some marked circumstance. He determined, therefore, to change the name of the place. Turning around to his friend Pearson, one of his own society, who had accompanied him in the ship *Welcome*, he said: "Providence has brought us here safe. Thou hast been the companion of my perils. What wilt thou that I should call this place?" Pearson said, "Chester," in remembrance of the city from whence he came. William Penn replied, that it should be called Chester, and that when he divided the land into counties, one of them should be called by the same name.

From Chester Penn is said to have proceeded with some of his friends in an open barge, in the earliest days of November, to a place about four miles above the mouth of the Schuylkill, called Coaquannock, "where there was a high, bold shore, covered with lofty pines. Here the site of the infant city of Philadelphia had been established, and we may be assured, writes Janney, his approach was hailed with joy by the whole population: the old inhabitants, Swedes and Dutch, eager to catch a glimpse of their future governor; and the Friends, who had gone before him, anxiously awaiting his arrival."

Penn immediately after his arrival dispatched two persons to Lord Baltimore, to ask of his health, offer kind neighborhood, and agree upon a time of meeting, the better to establish it. While they were gone on this errand he went to New York to pay his duty to the Duke, in the visit of his government and colony. He returned from New York towards the end of November.

To this period belongs the "Great Treaty," which took place at Shakamaxon. It seems to have been a place of resort for the Indians of different nations to consult together and settle their mutual differences, and on this account it was probably selected by Markham, and Penn after him, as the place for holding their successive treaties.

Thompson Westcott, whose researches have exceeded perhaps those of any other historian, says there is no evidence that a treaty of peace or of purchase of lands ever was held under the great elm tree at Shakamaxon, in 1682, by William Penn, and yet tradition is very positive upon the subject, and such antiquaries as Watson and Fisher, with the graphic descriptions of earlier writers, have so fully engrafted this pleasing transaction on Pennsylvania history, that we almost hesitate to dispel the illusion. The site of the great elm tree is marked by a monument, erected in 1827. It contains the following inscriptions.

North side.—Treaty Ground of William Penn and the Indian Nations.

South side.—William Penn, born 1644, died 1718.

East side.—Pennsylvania Founded, 1681, by deeds of Peace.

West side.—Placed by the Penn Society, A.D. 1827, to mark the site of the Great Elm Tree.



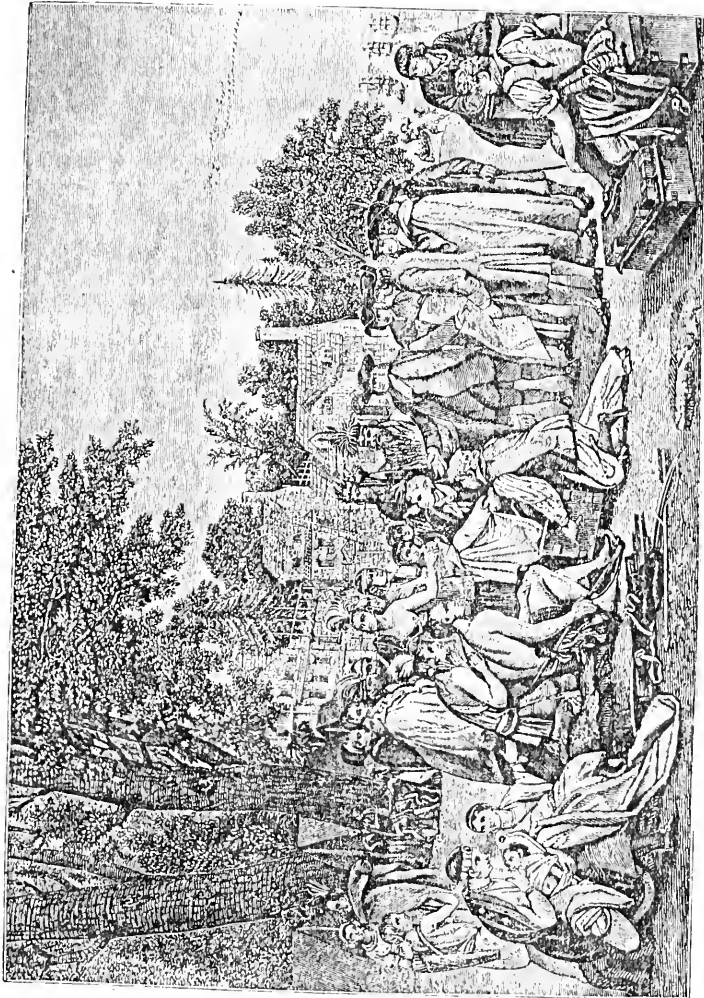
PENN TREATY MONUMENT.

If the treaty was not held at the Shakamaxon, Penn undoubtedly met the





representatives of the Indian tribes at other localities, for the aborigines themselves alluded to the treaty of amity and peace held with the great and good Onas, on all public occasions—and true it is that for a period of forty, if not fifty years, it was not broken, and the Land of Penn was preserved during all that time from the reeking scalping-knife and the deadly tomahawk.



PENN'S TREATY WITH THE INDIANS—1682.  
(After the painting by Benjamin West.)

William Penn, on the fourth of December following, convened a General Assembly at Chester, of which Nicholas Moore, president of the Society of Free Traders, was chosen Speaker. During a session of four days this Assembly enacted three laws: 1. An act for the union of the Province and Territories; 2. An act of naturalization; and 3. The great law, or code of laws, consisting of sixty-nine sections, and embracing most of the laws agreed upon in England and several others afterwards suggested.



On the 19th of the same month, Penn, by appointment, met Lord Baltimore at West River, but their interview led to no solution of the vexatious question of boundary.

About this time the Province and territories were divided by the Proprietary each into three counties; those of the former were called Bucks, Philadelphia, and Chester; those of the latter, New Castle, Kent, and Sussex. Sheriffs and other officers having been duly appointed for the several counties, writs for the election of members of Council and Assembly were issued conformable with the Constitution, and on the 10th day of the first month, 1683, Penn met the Council at Philadelphia, and the Assembly two days later. The number of members for both the Council and Assembly was twelve for each county, viz., three for the Council and nine for the Assembly, making in all seventy-two.

At this time Penn was probably renewing his negotiations with the Indians, as would appear from two deeds on record for land purchased. The 1683. first, dated June 23, 1683, between William Penn and Kings Tamanen and Metamequan, conveys their land near Neshemanah (Neshaminy) Creek, and thence to Pennapecka (Pennypack). The second, dated July 14, 1683, is for lands lying between the Schuylkill and Chester Rivers.

During the spring or summer of this year, the Proprietary visited the interior of the Province, going as far west as the Susquehanna. The result of his trip he embodied in a letter to the "Society of Free Traders," in London, but its length precludes its insertion here. His description of the aborigines is full and interesting. It was while on this expedition that William Penn planned the founding of a great city on the Susquehanna, an idea never realized by himself.

The controversy with Lord Baltimore concerning boundaries became a subject of great anxiety to Penn, who resisted the high-handed and 1684. aggressive measures of the former with gentle and courteous firmness.

In the beginning of 1684, a number of people from Maryland made a forcible entry on several plantations in the Lower Counties, whereupon the Governor and Council at Philadelphia sent a written remonstrance to Lord Baltimore's demand, with orders to William Welsh to use his influence to reinstate the persons who had been dispossessed, and in case mild measures should prove unavailing, legally to prosecute the invaders. The remonstrances had, temporarily, the desired effect, but some inhabitants were threatened the next month with similar outrages, if they should persist in refusing to be under Lord Baltimore. The Governor issued a declaration showing Penn's title, and such other requisites as were thought most likely to prevent such illegal proceedings in future.

The important interests involved in this controversy and other weighty matters requiring Penn's presence in England, he provided for the administration of the government. The executive power was lodged with the Provincial Council, of which Thomas Lloyd, a Quaker from Wales, was made president—to whom the charge of the great seal was specially committed. Markham was created secretary of the Province and the territories; Thomas Hohnes, surveyor-general; Thomas Lloyd, James Claypoole, and Robert Turner, commissioners of the land office; and Nicholas Moore, William Welsh, William Wood, Robert



Turner, and John Eckley, Provincial judges for two years. The Proprietary sailed for Europe on the 12th of June.

At his departure, the Province and territories were divided into twenty-two townships, containing seven thousand inhabitants, of whom two thousand five hundred resided in Philadelphia, which comprised already three hundred houses. Penn wrote a farewell letter to his Province, from on board the vessel, couched in the most endearing terms.

After a voyage of seven weeks he reached England. Charles II. died the 12th of December following, and was succeeded by James, Duke of York, whose accession was greatly dreaded by the Protestants, who apprehended a revival of the persecutions during the reign of Mary. Penn might have taken advantage

of these apprehensions to induce more emigrants to settle in Pennsylvania, but he was disinterested, and used his influence with the King to grant liberty of conscience to all religionists, and more especially to the Quakers. Penn had stood high in the King's favor long before he ascended the throne, for the friendship which James entertained for the father, who had bravely fought under his flag, was enjoyed in a still higher degree by the son, who by that means succeeded in obtaining from the King's Council a favorable



MAP OF PENNSYLVANIA—1685.

deed in his dispute with Lord Baltimore.

On the first day of the second month, 1685, the lines of separation between the county of Philadelphia and those of Bucks and Chester, were confirmed by the Council.

“The county of Chester was to begin at the mouth, or entrance of Bough creek, upon Delaware river, being the upper end of Tenicum island; and so up that creek, dividing the said island from the land of Andrew Boone and company; from thence along the several courses thereof, to a large crook called Mill creek; from thence, along the several courses of the said creek to a west-south-west line; which line divides the liberty lines of Philadelphia from several tracts of land, belonging to the Welsh and other inhabitants; and from thence east-north-east, by a line of marked trees one hundred and twenty perches, more or less; from thence north-north-west by Haverford township, one thousand perches, more or less; from thence east-north-east by the land belonging to John Humphrey, one hundred and ten perches, more or less; from thence north-north-west by the land of John Eckley, eight hundred and eighty perches, more or less; from thence continuing said course to the bounds of Senkill river; which said Senkill river afterward to the natural bounds.”



The period of William Penn's absence from the Province is marked chiefly by unhappy differences between the legislature and the executive, and between the members from the territories and those of the Province proper. Our limits, however, will compel us to give merely a resumé of the more important events and incidents.

In 1685, the Proprietary appointed Nicholas Moore, from London a lawyer, and president of the Company of Free Traders, and a member of the Assembly, to the office of chief justice. The Assembly, jealous of its prerogatives, disregarded the fundamental laws of the Province in enacting statutes without previously publishing them as required by the constitution. Moore, by opposing some of the measures of the Assembly, and more particularly their attempt to alter the organization of the courts of justice, had incurred the enmity of the House, which proceeded to impeach him. He was charged, says Ebeling, with violence, partiality, and negligence, in a cause in which the Society of Free Traders was interested. Ten articles were preferred against him, which he refused to answer, though frequently summoned by the Council, and he was saved from conviction by some technical obstacle in the form of proceeding. But this did not protect him from punishment. He was expelled from the Assembly, and was interdicted all places of trust by the Council, until he should be tried upon the articles of impeachment or should give satisfaction to the board. His offence was not of a heinous character, since he retained the confidence of the Proprietary; and, in noticing his punishment, it should be remarked, that he had incurred the displeasure of the House by having entered thrice in one day his single protest upon its minutes against the passage of bills which had been introduced without the publication directed by the charter. The anger of the Assembly was extended to Patrick Robinson, clerk of the provincial court, who had refused to produce before them the minutes of that court. They voted him to be a public enemy and a violator of their privileges, and ordered him into the custody of the sheriff. When brought before the House he complained of arbitrary and illegal treatment, refused to answer the questions put to him, and in a fit of sullenness cast himself at full length upon the floor. An address was presented to the Council requesting that the prisoner might be disqualified to hold any public office within the Province or territories; but this punishment was not inflicted, as Robinson subsequently held the clerkship of the Council and other offices. Neither Moore nor Robinson were Quakers; they were charged with enmity to that sect, or, in the language of Penn, "were esteemed the most unquiet and cross to Friends." There were other disturbances at this time in the Province. A certain John Curtis, a justice of the peace, was charged with uttering treasonable and dangerous words against the King. He was ordered to be tried by commissioners from the Council, and, though no bill was found against him, he was dismissed from his office and compelled to give surety of the peace, in the sum of three hundred pounds. Charges were made against several officers of government for extortion; and gross immoralities were practiced among the lower class of people inhabiting the caves on the banks of the Delaware. These things were reported with great exaggeration in England, by the enemies of Penn and the Quakers; they prevented emigration, and greatly affected the reputation of the Society of Friends and the Proprietary.





Penn, however, in 1686, changed the form of executive government to a board of five commissioners, any three of whom were empowered to act. The board consisted of Thomas Lloyd, Nicholas Moore, James Claypoole, Robert Turner, and John Eckley.

The next session of the Assembly was marked by the usual want of unanimity and the objectionable act of laying on its members a solemn injunction of secrecy. This measure was not without an exhibition of indignified violence, resisted by the Council, and the lack of harmony greatly obstructed legislation. Lloyd, in consequence, requested to be released from the public affairs of government. His request was reluctantly granted, and on his recommendation, the Proprietary changed the plural executive into a single deputy, making choice of Captain John Blackwell, formerly an officer of Cromwell, under whom he had earned a distinguished reputation in England and Ireland. He was in New England when he received his commission, dated July 25, 1688.

Governor Blackwell met the Assembly in the third month, 1689; but, by reason of some misunderstanding or dissension between him and some of the Council, the public affairs were not managed with harmony and satisfaction; and but little done during his administration, which continued only till the twelfth month this year, when he returned to England, and the government of the Province, according to charter, devolved again on the Council, Thomas Lloyd, president. The appointment of Captain John Blackwell, who was no Quaker, to be Deputy Governor, appears, by the Proprietary's letters to his friends in the Province, "to have been because no suitable person, who was of that society, would undertake the office."

By the Revolution of 1688, which drove James from the throne, the Proprietary lost all influence at the English court. His intimacy with that unhappy monarch covered him with dark suspicion. His religious and political principles were misrepresented; he was denounced as a Catholic, a Jesuit of St. Omers, and a self-devoted slave to despotism, and was charged with conspiring the restoration of James. It is now unnecessary to disprove these accusations; for though his enemies caused him to be thrice examined before the privy council, and to give bail for his appearance in the King's Bench, he was discharged by that court, no evidence appearing against him. The ties which bound him to Europe having been thus broken, he prepared to revisit his Province, accompanied by another colony of five hundred persons, which he had assembled by publication of new proposals. A convoy was appointed by government for his protection, and he was on the eve of sailing, when his enterprise was marred by another persecution. A wretch, named Fuller, subsequently declared infamous by parliament, and pilloried, accused him, on oath, with being engaged in a conspiracy of the Papists in Lancashire to raise a rebellion, and restore James to the crown. He narrowly escaped arrest on his return from the funeral of George Fox, the celebrated founder of the Society of Friends. Hitherto he had met his accusers with a courage worthy of his character and his innocence, yet such was his dread of the profligacy of the witness who now appeared against him, that he deemed it prudent to seek retirement and privacy. His contemplated colony failed, and the expenses of its outfit were lost.



After Blackwell's departure, in 1690, the Council elected Thomas Lloyd their president, and according to the constitution, assumed executive functions; but, six councillors from the Lower Counties, without the knowledge of the president, formed themselves into a separate Council, in 1691, appointed judges for those counties, and made ordinances.

The President and Council of Pennsylvania forthwith published a proclamation declaring all the acts of the six seceding members illegal. The latter made proposals towards an accommodation, in which they principally required that the judges and all officers of the government should be appointed by the nine councillors from the Lower Counties. But this was not allowed them. On the other hand, Penn tried to restore a good understanding between the two sections of the Province, between whom the breach was widening, by giving them the choice of three modes of executive government, viz., by a joint council, by five commissioners, or by a lieutenant-governor. The majority favored the last mode, but seven of the members for the Lower Counties protested against it, and declared for the commissioners, which form of government, in case the members for Pennsylvania should persist in favor of a lieutenant-governor, they meant to introduce into their territories until the will of the Proprietary should be known. Their principal objections against a lieutenant-governor were the expense of his support and the fear lest the officers should be arbitrarily dismissed. The efforts on the part of the Council of Pennsylvania to effect a good understanding proving fruitless, the three Upper Counties chose Lloyd for their Governor, while the Lower Counties rejected him. Penn, therefore, perceiving it impossible to bring about a union, confirmed the appointment of Lloyd, and conferred the government of the lower counties on William Markham, the former Secretary of the Province, who had joined with the protesting members. This was done by William Penn much against his will, and had the consequence he predicted, viz., that the King, as will presently appear, annexed the two colonies to the government of New York.

William Penn foresaw that these dissensions would furnish the crown a pretext for depriving him of his Province. His fears were soon verified. William and Mary seized with avidity this opportunity to punish him for his attachment to the late King; and they were well pleased to clothe an act of naked power with such justification as the disorders of the Province presented.

Their Majesties' commission to Benjamin Fletcher, Governor-General of New York, constituting him Governor of Pennsylvania and the territories, was notified to Thomas Lloyd on the 19th of April, 1693. There was no

1693. notice in this commission, of William Penn, nor of the Provincial constitution. Governor Fletcher was empowered to summon the General Assembly elected by the freeholders, to require its members to take the oaths and subscribe the tests prescribed by act of parliament, and to make laws in conjunction with the Assembly, he having a veto upon their acts; and was directed to transmit copies of such laws, for the approbation of the crown, within three months from their enactment. Official information of this change was not given to the constituted authorities of the Province, either by the King or Proprietary; yet, on the arrival of Colonel Fletcher at Philadelphia, the government was surrendered to him without objection; but most of the Quaker



magistrates refused to accept from him the renewal of their commissions. The Proprietary condemned this ready abandonment of his rights, and addressed a cautionary letter to Fletcher, warning him of the illegality of his appointment, which might have restrained the latter from exercising his authority had it been timely received, as he was attached to Penn by personal favors.

At the very beginning a misunderstanding arose between the Governor and the Assembly, who attempted the introduction of a mode of summoning and electing the representatives at variance with the fundamental laws of the Province, which he was bound to observe. The Assembly, consisting of members from the Upper and Lower Counties, but reduced to about sixteen in number, on convening, took steps to maintain their own and the peoples' rights. The Governor, on the majority of the members refusing to take the oaths, honored their conscientious scruples in permitting them simply to subscribe, but told them that this was an *act of grace and not of right*, which must not be used as a precedent.

In this Assembly two important subjects were considered; the confirmation of the old laws, and a grant of aid in men or money to the King for the then existing war with France. The Assembly used the latter in order to secure the former, hoping that Fletcher would yield this point for the sake of obtaining the other, as his Province of New York was much exposed to the Indians, who were supported by the French in Canada. Fletcher maintained a firm attitude, insisting upon the rejection of eight of the old laws, chiefly penal, as in conflict with and less rigorous than the laws of England. Long negotiations ensued, but he finally confirmed them all (one concerning shipwrecks excepted), subject to the King's pleasure. The Assembly, on their part, granted the required subsidy, after considerable delay, they insisting that their grievances should first be redressed. Fletcher claimed the right of altering the new laws, even without the deliberations of the Assembly. This was strenuously resisted by a party in the Assembly, which, though in the minority, had their protest against Fletcher's pretensions entered upon the journal of the House. The Governor threatened to annex the Province to New York, and then the moderate party, rather than submit to this, preferred receiving the confirmation of their rights and liberties as a favor at the hands of the Governor.

Prior to his departure for New York, in 1694, Fletcher appointed

1694. William Markham, the Proprietary's kinsman, Lieutenant-Governor.

Governor Fletcher, being engaged at New York, did not meet the Assembly at its first session of this year. At the second he earnestly solicited them to make further appropriations for the public defence. He endeavored to excite their emulation by the example of New Jersey, which had freely contributed troops and money, and tried to engage their compassion by describing the sufferings of the inhabitants about Albany, from whence "fourscore families," he said, "had been driven, rather by the negligence of their friends, than by the force of their enemies." Experience having taught him that it was vain to ask men, whose religion forbade the use of arms, to organize a military force, or appropriate funds for its support, he sought to frame his demands in a less questionable shape. Putting out of view all warlike intentions, he solicited their charity "to feed the hungry and clothe the naked," by supplying the Indian



nations with such necessaries as might influence them to continue their friendship to the Province. But even these instances proved powerless. For, although another tax, similar to the last, was voted, no part of it was appropriated to the war or relief of the Indians. As a considerable sum had been given to Governor Fletcher, justice demanded that the services of the Proprietary deputies should also be rewarded. The Assembly, therefore, directed two hundred pounds each should be given to Markham and Lloyd, and that the balance to be raised by the bill should defray the general expenses of the government. Fletcher rejected their bill, because the whole sum was not granted to their Majesties, with a request that they would appropriate it to the use of the deputies, and to the defence of New York and Albany; and the Assembly, refusing to modify it, and asserting their right to appropriate their money at their pleasure, was dissolved.

The Proprietary, whose political views were rarely obscured by his religious principles, reprehended strongly this resolute refusal; nor was he blind to the effects which such opposition to the wishes of the crown might have upon his particular interests.

The clouds of suspicion, which had long enveloped William Penn, were at length broken. He had many friends among the nobles who surrounded the King, and his true character was at last made known. He was heard before the privy council, and was honorably acquitted, and was restored to his Proprietary rights by patent, dated August, 1694, in which the disorders in the Province were ascribed solely to his absence. Shortly before his reinstatement, Penn lost his wife, Gulielma Maria, in the twelfth month of the preceding year.

Penn appointed William Markham his Lieutenant-Governor of Pennsylvania and territories, on the 24th of September, 1694.

The restoration of the former government, however, did not bring with it contentment and a good understanding between the different branches of the legislature. Governor Fletcher was disliked because he had innovated upon the legislative forms, but the Assembly, summoned by Markham, in September, 1695, was as much dissatisfied with him, although he had summoned them according to forms prescribed by the charter. The great bone of contention still being the subsidy to be granted to the King, Penn's letter shows that he disapproved of their conduct. Markham presented to the Assembly a new act of settlement, which was readily agreed to, but not finally adopted until the following year, because the Governor, no doubt on account of their obstinacy in refusing to pass the subsidy act, unexpectedly dissolved the Assembly. After a long remonstrance to the Governor had been found without effect, the proposal of a joint committee of the two branches of the Legislature was acceded to, by which it was agreed to accept the new constitution, provided Penn should approve of it, and immediately a new subsidy of £300 was granted for the support of the royal government and of the suffering Indians. This was done by a tax of one penny on the pound on all assessed property.

The new Constitution was more democratic than the former one. The Council, chosen biennially, consisted of two, and the Assembly, elected annually, of four members from each county. The right of the latter to originate bills, to sit on its own adjournments, and to be indissoluble during the term for which it





was elected, was explicitly established; and the powers and duties of the several officers were accurately defined. This instrument was never formally sanctioned by the Proprietary, and it continued in force only until his arrival in the Province, in 1699, or rather until 1701, when a new and more lasting one was substituted in its place. Under it the people were content, and calmly and industriously applied themselves to the improvement of the country.

William Penn, accompanied by his second wife and children, sailed from England in the ship *Canterbury* in September, and after a tedious  
 1699. voyage of more than three months, arrived in the Delaware on the 1st day of December, 1699. Penn was cordially welcomed, it being generally believed that he had come resolved to spend the remainder of his life in the Province. Still he did not encounter that warm affection and unbounded confidence among the colonists which on his first visit had enabled him to lead them entirely according to his will.

The Proprietary, believing everything ready for the introduction of a new form of government, free from the defects of the former ones, and  
 1700. calculated to impart strength and unity to the administration, called an extraordinary meeting of the Assembly in May following, which consisted of a larger number of members than those which preceded it, and held a session of unusual length. The new charter, although frequently discussed by the two houses jointly and separately, was not carried through at this and the next General Assembly, which was held in October of the same year at New Castle. The formation of a code of laws securing the titles to landed property, and a grant for the support of the government in addition to the new charter, were the chief objects of said Assembly. Its enactment failed to be accomplished, chiefly on account of the exacting and unreasonable conditions stipulated by the Lower Counties.

The Proprietary endeavored, though unsuccessfully, to obtain additional legislative restrictions upon the intercourse with the Indians, in order to protect them from the arts of the whites. Nor was he more happy in his renewed exertions to instruct the aborigines in the doctrines of Christianity—their language, according to the report of the interpreter, not affording terms to convey its mysteries. This reason, however, was not well founded, and was the subterfuge of the agent to cover his own ignorance or indolence. The success of the venerable Elliot, and of the Moravian missionaries, has proven that the Indian language is competent for the communication of the most abstract ideas. But, resolute to improve their temporal condition, Penn conferred frequently with the several nations of the Province and its vicinity, visiting them familiarly in their forests, participating in their festivals, and entertaining them with much hospitality and state at his mansion at *Pennsbury*. He formed a new treaty with the tribes located  
 on the *Susquehanna* and its tributaries, as also with the *Five Nations*.

1701. This treaty was one of peace. In the Spring of 1701, William Penn took a second journey into the interior of the Province.

The Proprietary's situation becoming uncomfortable, in consequence of mischief to his government brewing in England, he made preparation for a speedy return. Since the Revolution, it had been a favorite measure of the crown to purchase the Proprietary governments in America. Jealousy of the power of



these governments, says Gordon, had grown with their growth, and a bill was now before the Lords to change them into regal ones. The friends of Penn, and others interested in the Province, had succeeded with difficulty in obtaining a postponement of the bill until his return, which they earnestly represented to him should be immediate.

Penn forthwith convened the Assembly on September 16, 1701. The completion of a new constitution, and the enactment of such laws as required his special sanction, made the session important and laborious. The address of the Proprietary was most frank and conciliatory. He apologized for having summoned them before the customary time, expressed his regret at being so unseasonably called away, and assured them of his unceasing love and regard. "Think," said he, "therefore (since all men are mortal), of some suitable expedient and provision for your safety, as well in your privileges as property, and you will find me ready to comply with whatever may render us happy by a nearer union of our interest." Yet actuated by his duty to the crown, he again drew their attention to the King's demand for money, and mentioned a late treaty of peace, concluded with the Indians by the Governor of New York in behalf of all the Provinces, as worthy of their acknowledgments. The House replied to the address with grateful thanks, but refused the war contribution for the reasons already given.

The Assembly then prepared an address detailing their wants and wishes, which related particularly to the appointment of a Lieutenant-Governor in his absence, the security of their land-titles, and the allowance of ten for every hundred acres connected with them, which they claimed by virtue of the Governor's promise. They proposed the establishment of a patent office, and that the quit-rents should be made redeemable. The Lower Counties, in the twenty-one articles of which the address consisted, had asked much for themselves in direct opposition to the Proprietary's interest, yet he granted the most of what was asked, refusing only some unjust demands and others of a private character, with which the Legislature had no right to interfere. The Assembly, on the other hand, pressed their demands, although Penn's complaisance went so far as to invite them to nominate his Lieutenant, which, however, they modestly declined.

While they were debating on a bill to confirm the laws at New Castle, and the majority seemed to be in favor of its passage, the misunderstanding between the representatives of the Province and the Lower Counties was again revived, with more violence than ever, so that several of the members for the Lower Counties left the House. It needed all of Penn's weight of character and earnest interposition to prevent an open rupture. He promised to agree to the separation of the two colonies. But then, continued the Proprietary, it must be upon amicable terms, and a good understanding. That they must first *resolve* to settle the laws; and that, as the interest of the Province and that of those Lower Counties would be inseparably the same, they should both use a conduct consistent with that relation. Matters were adjusted temporarily with the provision for a conditional separation, if they chose it, within the space of three years.

The constitution, which had been under consideration for more than eighteen months, was finally adopted on the twenty-eighth of October, six parts in seven of the Assembly having formally surrendered the previous charter granted by Penn. The new charter was as comprehensive on the subject of civil and reli-



gious liberty as the former ones. Whilst it secured, by general provisions, the most important of human rights, it left minor subjects to be detailed and enforced by the laws.

Penn likewise, by letters-patent, under the great seal, established a Council of State, composed of ten members, chiefly Quakers and his intimate friends, of whom four made a quorum, who were empowered "to consult and assist, with the best of their advice, the Proprietary himself or his deputies, in all public affairs and matters relating to the government." And, in his absence, or on the death or incapacity of his deputy, they, or any five of them, were authorized to execute all the Proprietary powers in the administration of the government. The members of the Council were removable at the will of the Governor, who might increase their numbers at pleasure.

Andrew Hamilton,\* one of the Proprietaries of East Jersey, and formerly Governor of East and West Jersey, having been appointed Deputy Governor, and James Logan Provincial Secretary and Clerk of the Council, William Penn sailed for England in the ship *Dalmahoy*, and arrived at Portsmouth about the middle of December. The bill for reducing the Proprietary into regal governments, pending in Parliament, was entirely dropped. King

1702. William died on the 18th of the first month, 1701-2, and was succeeded by the Princess Anne of Denmark, with whom William Penn was in great favor.

Governor Hamilton's administration was very brief, for he died in the month of April, 1703. His chief efforts had been unsuccessfully directed to the consummation of a union between the Province and territories. Upon his death the government devolved upon the Council, Edward Shippen being President.

During this time of dispute, or endeavors for an union between the representatives of the Province and territories, not much other public business of importance appears to have been transacted in the affairs of the government. The latter persisted in an absolute refusal to join with the former, in legislation, till it was finally, in the year 1703, agreed and settled between them, that they should compose different and distinct Assemblies, entirely independent of each other, pursuant to the liberty allowed by the clause in the charter for that purpose; which clause was said to have been there inserted by the particular and special request of the representatives of the territories, with previous full intention of the separation which ensued; and in this capacity they had ever acted since that time.

The Proprietary's choice of a successor to Governor Hamilton fell on Mr. John Evans, a young man of six and twenty years of age, and of Welsh extraction. He was earnestly recommended to Secretary Logan, under whose direction he

---

\* ANDREW HAMILTON was a native of Scotland. Originally a merchant of Edinburgh, he emigrated to America in 1685; was one of the Council of Lord Neil Campbell, whom he succeeded as Deputy Governor of New Jersey, in 1686. In 1689, while on a voyage to England, was made prisoner and detained some time in France. He devised the scheme for the establishment of post-offices in the Colonies, and received the appointment, April 4, 1692, of Deputy Postmaster-General for all the plantations. He was Governor of New Jersey from 1692 to 1698, and again from 1699 to 1701, when he received the appointment of Deputy Governor of Pennsylvania. He died while on a visit to Amboy, April 20, 1703.



had promised to place himself. He arrived in the Province in February, and soon after increased the number of the Council, calling to that board, with others, William Penn the younger, who had accompanied him to the Province. Pursuant to the instructions of the Proprietary, he earnestly applied himself to re-unite the Province and territories; and his want of success in this measure produced an unfavorable disposition towards the former, which embittered his whole administration.

John Evans\* was a young man, uncommonly zealous and active in whatever affected the Proprietary's interests; deficient neither in wit nor talents, he lacked experience, prudence, and tact; his private life was, moreover, highly offensive to the steady and quiet ways of the sober and moral Quakers. He early attached himself to the interests of the Lower Counties, and induced their Assembly to pass laws manifestly designed to produce unpleasant effects in the Province. England being then at war with France and Spain, he had been ordered by

the Queen to raise an armed force in Pennsylvania, but his efforts 1706. proved unsuccessful. He affected to treat the peaceful of the

Quakers with contempt, and, unable to argue them out of their principles, endeavored to gain his object by a stratagem, which completely failed, and tended to make him odious to the people of Philadelphia, which occurred almost simultaneously with an unwise and unlawful measure, greatly offending the merchants of the Province. He had authorized the Assembly at New Castle to erect a fort near the town, where it could be of little use to the safety of the two Provinces. For the maintenance of this fort, inward bound ships, not owned by residents, were obliged to deliver their half a pound of powder for each ton measurement. The provincialists remonstrated against this abuse in vain. At length Richard Hill, William Fishbourne, and Samuel Preston, three spirited Quakers, resolved to remove the nuisance by a method different from any that had yet been attempted. Hill and his companions, on board the Philadelphia, a vessel belonging to the former, dropped down the river and anchored above the fort. Two of them went ashore and informed French, the commander, that their vessel was regularly cleared, demanding to pass uninterruptedly. This being refused, Hill, who had been bred to the sea, stood to the helm and passed the fort with no other injury than a shot through the mainsail. French pursued in an armed boat, was taken alone on board, while his boat, cut from the vessel, fell astern, and was led prisoner to the cabin. Governor Evans, apprized of the matter, followed their vessel by land to New Castle, and after she had passed the fort, pursued her in a boat to Salem, where he boarded her in great anger, and behaved with great intemperance. Lord Cornbury, Governor of New Jersey, who claimed to be vice-admiral of the Delaware, being then at Salem, the prisoners were taken before him, and having, together with Governor Evans, been severely reprimanded, and giving promise of future good behavior, was dismissed with the jeers of the captors. After this spirited action, the fort no longer impeded the navigation of the Delaware.

---

\* JOHN EVANS, though of Welsh descent, was born at London in 1678. At the time of his appointment as Deputy Governor of the Province he was an officer of the Queen's household. His administration, from 1701 to 1709 was not a successful one. Of his subsequent career little is known. He returned to England, and died there about 1730.





On the 27th of June, 1707, it is narrated in the Provincial Records, the Governor, in company of several friends and servants, set out on a journey to the Indians, occasioned by a message from the Conestoga and other Indians, 1707. upon the Nanticokes' designed journey to the Five Nations. He visited in turn the following places: Pequehan, on the Pequea, Dekonoagah, on the Susquehanna, about nine miles distant from Pequehan, Conestogoe, and Peixtang, had friendly intercourse with them, and seized one Nicolé, a French Indian trader, against whom heavy complaints had been made. His capture was attended with difficulties, but he was finally secured and mounted upon a horse with his legs tied. From the articles of remonstrance, addressed to the Proprietary by the Assembly, subsequently, it seems that the Governor's conduct among the Indians was not free from censure, it being described as "abominable and unwarrantable."

The unhappy misunderstanding between the Governor and his secretary, Logan, on the one hand, and the Assembly on the other, almost paralyzed legislative action, and led to the most lamentable exhibition of ill-temper on the part of the latter, which first produced articles of impeachment against Logan, and afterwards, determined to have Evans removed, a remonstrance against both addressed to William Penn. The language of that instrument was intemperate, many of its charges exaggerated, and some unfounded. This remonstrance was not only unjust, but also unwise and inconsiderate, for it tended to produce the very steps which they were desirous to guard against, by provoking the Governor to relinquish a troublesome and ungrateful Province to the crown of England, which had long wished to repossess it.

In the beginning of this year, 1709, Governor Evans was removed, and Charles Gookin\* appointed his successor. Gookin was an officer in the army, but, in the language of Penn, a man of pure morals, mild temper, and moderate disposition. 1709. When he arrived, the Assembly was in session. That body, instead of waiting for the propositions of the Governor, hastened to present to him a statement of grievances, in which they repeated the weightiest of their complaints against his predecessor, and demanded immediate satisfaction. In vain Gookin endeavored to convince them that he had no right to sit in judgment over the acts of his predecessor. These beginnings were not promising. Lloyd was almost always at the head of the Assembly, and Logan had as much influence on Gookin as on his predecessor. The spirit of discontent which reigned in the Assembly probably originated in the embarrassment of Penn, whose means were now greatly curtailed by his generosity towards his Province and the cause of the Quakers. Already, in 1707, he was involved in a heavy lawsuit with the executors of his former steward, who preferred large claims against him, the injustice of which he could not sufficiently prove, since even the Court of Chancery could not liberate him from imprisonment until he had satisfied the complainants. The income of his European estate was inadequate to pay his other debts, and he had to borrow £6,600 sterling, for which he mortgaged his Province. The knowledge of his situation may have prompted

\* CHARLES GOOKIN, a captain in Earle's Royal Regiment, was born in Ireland in 1760. He was well advanced in years on being appointed Provincial Governor, in 1709, an office he held for eight years, although not to the satisfaction of the Assembly. He returned to England, and died in London about 1725.



the Assembly to extort more privileges from him, and to limit his prerogative. On the other hand, necessity compelled him to be attentive to the collection of his revenue from the Province, and to increase it as much as possible. This conduct of the Assembly, however, contributed not a little to disgust him with the whole undertaking. Repeatedly urged to restore the Province to the crown, but long struggling against the abandonment of the brilliant hopes he had cherished to found a religious nation and a model of true freedom, his growing necessities and the constant opposition of the Legislature of Pennsylvania, finally compelled him to take that step. Several circumstances which occurred during the administration of Gookin contributed to produce this resolution. The Queen required the aid of the Province towards the conquest of Canada, in which the New England colonies assisted her with zeal. Pennsylvania was required to furnish and support 150 men, at an estimated expense of £4,000. The Assembly voted a free gift to the Queen of £800. To this was added the Governor's salary of £200, which, however, they would not allow until he should have passed the bills presented to him, and redressed their grievances, which bore chiefly on the retention of Logan. The latter being about to visit England on the Proprietary's business, at the next sitting of the Assembly demanded a trial, instead of granting which, the Assembly ordered the sheriff to take him into custody; the Governor prevented his arrest by issuing a *supersedeas*. This put the Assembly quite out of temper and arrested all business, besides the entering on their minutes of a protest against the Governor's illegal and arbitrary measures. Logan went to London, fully justified his conduct, and returned to the Province confirmed in his office, and enjoying more than ever the favor of the Proprietary.

Penn addressed a touching letter to the Assembly, in which he detailed and described their unjust and illegal pretensions, taxed them with ingratitude, took the part of Logan, and finally informed them that if they should persist in their opposition to his government, he must seriously consider what he should do with regard to his Province, and his determination should be governed by the conduct of the future Assembly.

This letter effected an instantaneous change in the minds of the people. A new Assembly was chosen in 1710. Harmony of action ensued between it and Governor Gookin. They completed by their laws the organization of the courts of justice, and voted to the Queen the sum of £2,000, although they were well informed of her determination to go to war with France.

The expedition to Canada, says Gordon, proved most disastrous. Colonel Nicholson, under whom served Colonels Schuyler, Whiting, and Ingoldsby, mustered at Albany two thousand colonists, one thousand Germans from the Palatinate, and one thousand of the Five Nation Indians, who commenced their march towards Canada on the twenty-eighth of August. The troops from

1712. Boston, composed of seven veteran regiments, of the Duke of Marlborough's army, one battallion of marines, and two provincial regiments, amounting to six thousand four hundred men, sailed on board of sixty-eight vessels, the 30th of July, and arrived off the St. Lawrence on the 14th of August. In ascending the river, the fleet, by the unskillfulness of the pilots, or the obstinancy and distrust of the Admiral, was entangled amid



rocks and islands on the northern shore, and ran imminent hazard of total destruction. Several transports, and near a thousand men, perished. Upon this disaster the remainder bore away for Cape Breton, and the expedition, by the advice of a council of naval and military officers, was abandoned, on the ground of the want of provisions, and the impossibility of procuring a seasonable supply. The Admiral sailed directly for England, and the colonists returned to Boston, whilst Colonel Nicholson, thus deserted, was compelled to retreat from Fort George. Want of skill, fortitude, and perseverance were eminently conspicuous in the British commanders of this enterprise.

In 1712, William Penn entered into an agreement with Queen Anne to cede to her the Province of Pennsylvania and the Lower Counties, for the sum of £12,000 sterling. But before the legal forms were completed, an apoplectic stroke prostrated his vigorous mind and reduced him to the

feebleness of infancy. The Queen died on the first of August, 1714, and was succeeded by George the First.

Two years subsequent, Governor Gookin arrayed against himself all the Quaker interest in the Province, in consequence of construing a provision in the statute of 7 and 8 William III., "that no Quaker, *by virtue thereof*, could be qualified or permitted to give evidence in any criminal case, or serve

on juries, or hold any place or office of profit in the government."

This act had been made perpetual in Great Britain, and was extended to the colonies for five years by an act of Parliament of 1 George I. In the opinion of Gookin, the extension of this act to the Provinces repealed the provincial law, and disqualified the Quakers from giving testimony in criminal cases, from sitting on juries, and from holding any office. Notwithstanding the desertion of his Council, and the remonstrances of the Assembly, Gookin tenaciously adhered to his construction of the statute. His good genius had now entirely abandoned him, for he now charged Richard Hill, Speaker of the Assembly, Isaac Norris, and James Logan, with disloyalty to the King and devotion to the Pretender. These allegations were utterly unfounded, and the Assembly, whither the parties charged had carried their complaint, completely exonerated them. Expostulation with Gookin having proved

vain, his Council unanimously joined in an address to William Penn, praying his recall. He met the Assembly for the last time in March, 1717, and extorted from their compassion the sum of £200, a valedictory donation.

Sir William Keith,\* on the first of May, 1717, superseded Governor Gookin,

---

\* SIR WILLIAM KEITH, son of a Scottish baronet of the same name, was born in the North of Scotland about 1669. He long held a position under the royal government, and was appointed Lieutenant-Governor of the Province of Pennsylvania in 1717. One of the most successful of the Proprietary executives, on being superseded in 1726, he was immediately thereafter chosen to the Assembly. His course, however, in creating dissensions between the legislative and executive branches of the government, served to alienate his friends. He died in obscurity, in London, November 17, 1749. Lady Ann Keith had deceased in Philadelphia, July 31, 1740, at the age of sixty-five, and lies entombed at Christ Church graveyard. Governor Keith published a "History of the British Plantations in America, Part I.," containing the History of Virginia, 1738; and "Collections of Papers and Tracts," 1749.



having held for some time the office of the King's surveyor of the customs for the Southern Provinces, and on his occasional visits to Philadelphia manifested much interest in the political discussions of the Province, and acquired the good will of Logan, Norris, and other prominent inhabitants. He was strongly recommended for the position of Lieutenant-Governor by the Provincial Council and chief inhabitants, by their friends in London, by William Penn, Jr., Mr. Logan, and others. Keith was the first Governor who ventured to espouse the side of the popular party and to support its interests with the Proprietary and the Crown, on disputed subjects. He arrived at Philadelphia on the 31st of May, and convened an Assembly on the 19th of June. Having thoroughly studied the errors of his predecessors, he sought to benefit by their experience.



SIR WILLIAM KEITH.

Governor Keith displayed the policy he meant to pursue in his first address to the Assembly. The Assembly testified their satisfaction with his address, and his kind and conciliatory manners, by an immediate grant of five hundred and fifty pounds, payable from the first moneys received in the treasury, which they replenished by an additional bill of supply. In return, Keith framed an address to the Throne on the interesting subject of affirmation, which had the good fortune to please the House in all respects, save that the plural number was used instead of the singular.

On the 30th day of July, 1718, William Penn died at Ruscombe, near Twyford, in Buckinghamshire, England, aged seventy-four. As the  
**1718.** honorable Proprietary and founder of the Province of Pennsylvania, his loss was a severe one to the Province. He discovered and adored the great truths, that happiness of society is the true object of civil power, and that freedom exists only *"where the laws rule, and the people are parties to the laws."* On these foundations, says Gordon, was his Province erected. His merit will be the more justly appreciated by adverting to the state of the American colonies planted antecedently to the year 1680. These were Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Rhode Island, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Maryland, Virginia, and South Carolina. The New England colonies sprang from the natural and selfish desires of their founders to withdraw themselves from power and oppression. Religious toleration and civil liberty were not appreciated by them as rights essential to the happiness of the human race. The rights of conscience the Puritans of those Provinces demanded, were such as protected themselves from the gibbet and lash, which they applied to force the consciences of others. Their civil rights they regarded as exclusive property, acquired by purchase, the evidence of which was in their charter. Whilst Penn was offering to the world a communion of religious and civil freedom, the saints of Massachusetts excluded from the benefits of their government all who were not members of their church, and piously flagellated or hanged those who were





not convinced of its infallibility. Roger Williams, proscribed and expelled for his own opinions, was the first to teach that the civil magistrate might not interfere in religious matters, and that to punish men for opinion was persecution. New York, without a charter or an Assembly, was subject to the caprice of its governors, in civil as in ecclesiastical matters. New Jersey had a free, a liberal, but an impracticable constitution. The attempt to establish in that Province the basis of a free government, though unsuccessful, and throwing the administration into the hands of the Crown, was not useless. The people were introduced to the knowledge of sound political principles, which were never altogether abandoned. Maryland, possessing the most liberal and the best digested constitution that had emanated from a British monarch, and the most independent of the royal power, had been involved in civil war and religious persecutions during the Revolution, and was then reduced to order and good government, by the resumption of executive power by the Calverts. But the Roman Catholic faith of its governors and principal inhabitants rendered its policy suspected by Protestants. Carolina was the subject of a most fanciful experiment of the renowned Locke, who framed for it an aristocratical constitution, totally inconsistent with the light of the age in which he lived; establishing an hereditary nobility, with large and unalienable landed estates, and the Church of England as the religion of the State. Penn wisely modelled the royal charter for his Province as closely as possible upon the Maryland grant; and, though at the first institution of the government, he was doubtful of the propriety of giving the Assembly the power to originate laws, experience soon taught him the wisdom of this measure. His government secured the blessings of property and personal freedom alike to Christian and to infidel; placed all persons on an equality before the laws, and admitted Christians of every denomination to a full participation of political rights. The experience of almost two hundred years, during which political science has been widely extended, has added nothing essential to human happiness which his system had not provided; unless it be found in those constitutions which make no discrimination in the religious faith of the citizens.



PENN'S BOOK PLATE.



## CHAPTER IV.

PROPRIETARY RULE. ADMINISTRATIONS OF LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KEITH, GORDON, LOGAN, THOMAS, PALMER, AND HAMILTON. 1718-1754.



PECUNIARILY involved at his death, the Province was encumbered by the Proprietary's mortgage of 1708 and his contract with the Crown for the sale of the government. His will, dated 1712, was made antecedently to, but in contemplation of, this contract. He provided for the issue of his first marriage by the devise of his English and Irish estates; which, producing fifteen hundred pounds sterling per annum, were estimated of greater value than his American possessions. From the latter he made provision for the payment of his debts, and for his widow and her children. The government of the Province and territories he devised to the Earls of Oxford, Mortimer, and Pawlet, in trust, to sell to the Queen, or any other person. His estate in the soil he devised to other trustees, in trust, to sell so much as should be necessary for the payment of his debts; to assign to his daughter Letitia, and the three children of his son William, ten thousand acres each, and to convey the remainder, at the discretion of his widow, to her children, subject to an annuity to herself of three hundred pounds sterling per annum. He appointed her sole executrix and legatee of his personal estate.

Three questions arose on his devise of the government: 1, Whether it was valid against the heir-at-law, who claimed by descent? 2, Whether the object of the trust had not been already effected, by the contract of the Proprietary with the Queen? 3, Whether, by consequence, his interest was not converted into personality? In which case it passed in absolute property to the widow. From their doubts on these points, the trustees refused to act, unless under a decree of the Court of Chancery, whose interposition was also required by the commissioners of the treasury, before payment of the balance due on the purchase, to the executrix. A suit in this court was accordingly instituted, which kept the family property in a state of great uncertainty for many years; during which Mrs. Penn, as executrix and trustee, assumed the superintendance of provincial affairs. In the year 1727, the family disputes, the Proprietary's will having been established in the Exchequer, were compromised; and the crown lawyers and ministry concurring in opinion, that the Proprietary's agreement was void, from his inability to make a proper surrender of the government, it devolved, on the death of William Penn the younger, and his son Springett, to John, Thomas, and Richard Penn.

The almost unbounded confidence of the Province in Keith enabled him, in 1720, to establish two measures hitherto repugnant to the Assembly, an equity court, dependent on the Governor's will, of which he was chancellor, and a militia organized by like authority.

The great influx of foreigners alarmed the Assembly, who dreaded their settle-



ment on the frontier. Attempts to naturalize them were treated with coldness. Even the Germans, whose industry and utility were proverbial, could not remove the prevailing jealousy. Many Palatines, long resident in the Province, applied for naturalization in 1721, but not until 1724 was leave granted to bring in a bill, provided they should individually obtain from a justice of the peace a certificate of the value of their property and nature of their religious faith. A bill to that effect, presented to the Governor in the following year, was forthwith returned by him on the ground that in a country where English liberty and law prevailed, a scrutiny into the private conversation and faith of the citizens, and particularly into their estates, was unjust and dangerous in precedent. The House yielded to the force of his reasons, and did not insist upon their bill, but it was not until some time afterwards that the privileges of subjects were granted to the Palatines. Indeed, the timidity of the Assembly induced them to check the importation of foreigners by a duty on all coming to reside in the Province.

A disagreement relating to hunting-grounds, between the Southern and Pennsylvania Indians, threatened to disturb the peace of the Province. To avert this, says Proud, Keith paid a visit to the Governor of Virginia, with  
1721. whom he framed a convention, confining the Indians on the north and south of the Potomac to their respective sides of that river; which the Pennsylvania and Five Nation Indians, at a general conference, held at Conestoga, on the 6th of July, 1721, fully ratified. This visit was made with much state. Keith was attended by a suit of seventy horsemen, many of them well armed, and was welcomed on his return, at the upper ferry on the Schuylkill, by the mayor and aldermen of Philadelphia, accompanied by two hundred of the most respectable citizens.

The Governor of Maryland proposed at this time to make surveys on the Susquehanna, within the bounds claimed by Pennsylvania, and within the present county of York. Keith resolved to resist this attempt by force, and ordered out a militia company from New Castle. His Council, however, discouraged every resort to violence, even should the Marylanders employ force to effect their object. The Indians became alarmed at the proposed encroachment from Maryland, and after much hesitation, consented to convey to Keith, that he might have a better title to resist the Marylanders, a large tract of land for the use of Springett Penn, the grandson of William Penn, afterwards known by the name of Springettsbury Manor.

The fears of the Province were soon after again awakened by a quarrel between two brothers named Cartlidge and an Indian near Conestoga, in which the latter was killed, with many circumstances of cruelty. The known principles of revenge professed by the Indians gave reason to apprehend severe retaliation. Policy and justice required a rigid inquiry, and the infliction of exemplary punishment on the murderers. The Assembly commanded a coroner's inquest to be holden on the body, though two months buried in the interior of the country, and the arrest of the accused. Messengers were dispatched to the Five Nations to deprecate hostilities, and, to prevent further irregularities, the prohibition of the sale of spirituous liquors to the Indians was re-enacted, with additional penalties. The Indians invited Keith to meet them, with the Governors of Virginia, New York, and the New England Colonies, in



council at Albany, where, with great magnanimity, they pardoned the offence of the Cartlidges, and requested they might be discharged without further punishment. The address of the King merits a place here: "The great King of the Five Nations," said the reporter, "is sorry for the death of the Indian that was killed, for he was of his own flesh and blood; he believes the Governor is also sorry; but, now that it is done, there is no help for it, and he desires that Cartlidge may not be put to death, nor that he should be spared for a time and afterwards executed; one life is enough to be lost; there should not two die. The King's heart is good to the Governor, and all the English." The Governor was attended on his journey to Albany by Messrs. Hill, Norris, and Hamilton, of his Council.

A part of the emigration to the colonies was composed of servants, who were of two classes. The first and larger, poor and oppressed in the land of their nativity, sometimes the victims of political changes or religious intolerance, submitted to a temporary servitude, as the price of freedom, plenty, and peace. The second, vagrants and felons, the dregs of the British populace, were cast by the mother country upon her colonies, with the most selfish disregard of the feelings she outraged. From this moral pestilence the first settler shrunk with horror. In 1682 the Pennsylvania Council proposed to prohibit the introduction of convicts, but the evil was then prospective to them only, and no law was enacted. But an act was now passed, which, though not prohibitory in terms, was such in effect. A duty of five pounds was imposed upon every convicted felon brought into the Province, and the importer was required to give surety for the good behavior of the convict for one year; and to render these provisions effectual, the owner or master was bound, under a penalty of twenty pounds, to render, on oath or affirmation, within twenty-four hours after the arrival of the vessel, an account to the collector of the names of the servants and passengers. But such account was not required when bond was given conditioned for the re-exportation of such servants within six months.

In the year 1722, owing to various circumstances, but chiefly by a deficiency in the circulating medium, commercial embarrassments ensued.

1722. Governor Keith proposed to overcome this difficulty by the introduction of paper money. The Assembly proceeded, with the utmost caution and circumspection, in this important affair, for, with full knowledge of the examples and mistakes of the other colonies, they felt it chiefly incumbent upon them to prevent the depreciation of their bills, "which nothing could so much effect as an over-quantity, defect of solid security, and of proper provisions to recall and cancel them," so in this, their first experiment of the kind, they only issued £15,000 on such terms as appeared most likely to be effectual to keep up their credit, and gradually to reduce and sink them. For which purpose the act, among several others, was passed by the Governor on the second of March following. But from the advantage which was

1723. soon experienced by this emission, together with the insufficiency of the sum, the government was induced, in the latter end of the same year, to emit £30,000 more on the same terms.

Governor Keith, in espousing the popular cause, secured the approbation and confidence of the Assembly, but unfortunately incurred the displeasure of the





Proprietary party and its leader, James Logan. Complications arose, which eventuated in the triumph of the latter and the deposition of the former, who was decidedly the best of the Proprietary deputies. "Differing," wrote Franklin, "from the great body of the people whom he governed, in religion and manners, he acquired their esteem and confidence. If he sought popularity, he promoted the public happiness; and his courage in resisting the demands of the family may be ascribed to a higher motive than private interest. The conduct of the Assembly towards him was neither honorable nor politic; for his sins against his principals were virtues to the people, with whom he was deservedly a favorite; and the House should have given him such substantial marks of their gratitude as would have tempted his successors to walk in his steps. But fear of further offence to the Proprietary family, the influence of Logan, and a quarrel between the Governor and Lloyd, turned their attention from him to his successor." After his removal, Sir William Keith resided some time in the Province, and was elected to the Assembly. He shortly afterwards returned to England, where he died.

Patrick Gordon\* was appointed successor of Governor Keith by the family, and formally proposed to the Crown, by

1726. Springett Penn, their heir-at-law. He

seems to have first met the Assembly in the beginning of the 6th month, 1726, though he arrived in the Province, with his family, some time before.



PATRICK GORDON.

The increase of foreigners, particularly of Germans, from the Palatinate, again produced serious apprehensions in the Province, even the mother country fearing that Pennsylvania was about to become a colony of aliens. Under instructions from the ministry, the Assembly passed "an impolitic act," imposing a duty of forty shillings per head on all foreigners. The rapid immigration, however, of the Scotch-

Irish, changed the course of the Quaker opposition to the Swiss  
1727. and Germans, for the interests and dispositions of the former being ever antagonistic to the Friends, the "foreigners" were more enjoined, and the odious law repealed. By this stroke of policy the Quakers retained their supremacy in the legislative councils of the Province far longer, for we have it on the authority of Mr. Sypher, that prior to 1727 over fifty thousand persons, mostly Germans, had found new homes in Pennsylvania.

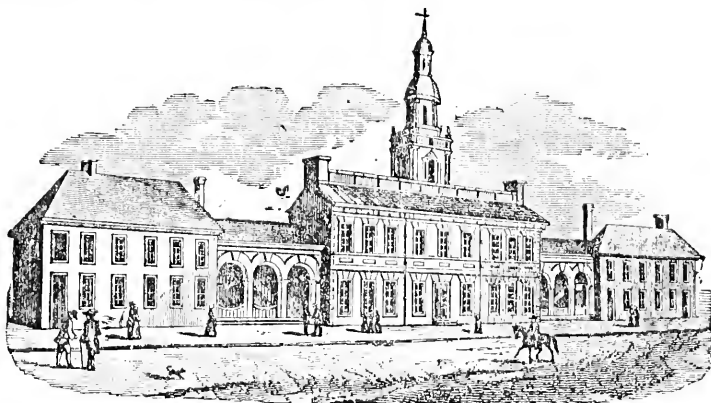
In May, 1729, the county of Lancaster was set off from that of Chester. It  
was the first move towards that rapid division of the Province, which,  
1729. in the present days of the Commonwealth, comprises sixty-six counties.

Although the population of the new county was nearly as great as

\* PATRICK GORDON, born in England in 1664, was bred to arms, and served from his youth to near the close of Queen Anne's reign, with a high reputation. He was Lieutenant-Governor under the Proprietaries, from 1726 to 1736. He died at Philadelphia, August 5, 1736. He published "Two Indian Treaties at Conestogoe," 1728.



Bucks or Chester, it was allowed one-half the number of representatives in the Assembly. During this year the old State House, or Independence Hall, was commenced, although not completed before 1734.



THE OLD PROVINCIAL STATE HOUSE.

The enterprising public spirit of Benjamin Franklin, says Sherman Day, now began to display itself, by founding one of those monuments which will perpetuate his memory long after the plain marble slab that covers his grave shall have decayed. The promotion of literature had been little attended to in Pennsylvania. Most of the inhabitants were too much immersed in business to

1731. think of scientific pursuits; and those few whose inclinations led them to study, found it difficult to gratify them, for the want of libraries sufficiently large. The establishment of a public library was an important event. This was first set on foot by Franklin, about the year 1731. Fifty persons subscribed forty shillings each, and agreed to pay ten shillings annually. The number increased, and in 1742 the company was incorporated by the name of the Library Company of Philadelphia. The Penn family distinguished themselves by donations to it.

In 1732 Thomas Penn, and in 1734 John Penn, his elder brother, both Proprietaries, arrived in the Province, and received from the colonists and

1732. the Assembly those marks of respect due to their station, and to the sons of the illustrious founder. John Penn returned to England in 1735, to oppose the pretensions of Lord Baltimore; but Thomas Penn remained for some years in the Province, spending his time much after the manner of an English country gentleman. He was cold and distant in his intercourse with society, and consequently unpopular. On his departure for Europe, in 1741, the Assembly presented him with an affectionate address, for which he returned them his warmest thanks.

This year, 1733, the Provincial government first became apprehensive of the designs of the French in the western country, by establishing trading

1733. posts on the head waters of the Allegheny and Ohio, claiming, by virtue of some treaty, all the lands lying on those rivers. With a view to frustrate their designs, which obviously tended to alienate the Indians from the



English, James Logan proposed that a treaty should be holden with the Shawanese and other tribes, and that they should be invited to remove nearer the English settlements. According to his suggestion a treaty was held at Philadelphia with the Six Nations, who confirmed the designs of the French, and promised perpetual friendship with the English.

In the minutes of the Provincial Council we find the following record of violent transactions on the Maryland frontier west of the Susquehanna:

“At a council, held at Philadelphia, May, 14, 1734, the Proprietary (Thomas Penn) informed the Board of some very unneighborly proceedings of 1734. the Province of Maryland in not only harassing some of the inhabitants of this Province who live on the borders, but likewise in extending their claims much farther than had ever heretofore been pretended to by Maryland, and carrying off several persons and imprisoning them; that some time since they carried off John Hendricks and Joshua Minshall from their settlements on Susquehanna, and still detain them in the Goal of Annapolis; that of late two others have been taken from the borders of New Castle County, and carried likewise to Annapolis; that as these men will probably be brought to a trial at the ensuing Provincial Court of Maryland, he had spoke to Andrew Hamilton, Esq., to appear for them, but as these violent proceedings tend manifestly to the breach of his Majesty's peace, and rendering all the borderers insecure, both in their persons and estates, he was now to advise with the Council on such measures as are most fit to be proposed, for maintaining peace between his Majesty's subjects of both Provinces.

“Then was read a letter from the Lieutenant-Governor of Maryland to the Lieutenant-Governor of this Province, dated the 24th of February last, with an answer of the latter thereto, dated the 8th of March following, on which some observations being made, the Proprietor said that he intended to make use of the opportunity of Mr. Hamilton's going to Annapolis, to press the Lieutenant-Governor of Maryland to enter into such measures as should be most advisable, for preventing such irregular proceedings for the future, and as he designed that his secretary, Mr. Georges, should accompany Mr. Hamilton, he had drawn up instructions for them, which being laid before the Board, were read, as was likewise a draught of a letter from the Lieutenant-Governor of this Province to the Lieutenant-Governor of Maryland. On consideration thereof had, the Board are of opinion that the proposed measures are absolutely necessary at this time, for securing the peace of his Majesty's subjects, and the said instructions, together with the foregoing draught, being approved and ordered to be entered on the Records of Council, the Governor is desired to grant such credentials to the persons entrusted with the negotiations, as may show them fully authorized by this government for the purposes in the said instructions contained.”

Messrs. Hamilton and Georges, the persons named in the preceding paragraph, having been appointed commissioners for the Proprietaries to execute certain articles of agreement concluded between the said Proprietaries and Lord Baltimore, bearing date May 10, 1732, for the running, marking, and laying out the lines, limits, and boundaries between the two Provinces, visited Annapolis, and on their return presented the report of their negotiations, which was far from satisfactory. Thereupon, in consequence of a representation addressed



to him by the Assembly, the Governor, under date August 19th, 1734, wrote to the justices of the counties of Chester, Lancaster, and of New Castle, Kent, and Sussex, on Delaware, as follows: "You are not, I believe, insensible how much the whole country has been disappointed in the just hopes which had been entertained of seeing a final period put to those long depending disputes between this government and that of Maryland, touching their respective boundaries, by the execution of the solemn agreement concluded between the Proprietaries of each. It is, however, no small satisfaction to me, that I can now acquaint you that this agreement, with the proceedings of the commissioners thereon, having been laid before his Majesty's attorney and solicitor general, we have had the pleasure of lately receiving their opinion, that the agreement still remains valid and binding on both Proprietaries, although their commissioners, by reason of difference in sentiments, have not carried it into execution. Now, as the northern bounds, formerly set by the Lord Baltimore to himself, differ not much from those lately agreed upon, I know not how we can judge better or with more certainty, of any bounds by which we can limit our present jurisdiction, than near the place where it is known they will fall when the lines shall be actually run.

"In the meantime, that a stop may be put to any further insults on the people of this government, and encroachments on lands within the bounds of the same, I am again to renew to you those pressing instances I have repeatedly made, that agreeable to the duty of your stations, you exert your utmost endeavors for preserving peace throughout your county, and protecting all the inhabitants in their just and right possessions, in the legal and necessary defence of which every person ought to be encouraged to appear with boldness, and to be assured of receiving all the countenance that lawful authority can give. And as the late disturbances have been in a great measure owing to the unjust attempts of those who, pretending right to, or claiming disputed lands, under that pretence, have come many miles into this Province, and with force possessed themselves of lands for which they can have no lawful grant from any other persons but our Honorable Proprietors only, and have likewise committed very great violences upon sundry of our inhabitants, you are to give strict orders for apprehending and securing all such who have been principals or accessories therein, as well as those who hereafter shall presume to offer any injury to the persons or professions of his Majesty's peaceable subjects, or encroach on any lands within the known and reputed limits of your county, that they may be brought to condign punishment. But as in the year 1724, it was agreed 'that for avoiding all manner of contention or difference between the inhabitants of the two Provinces, no person or persons should be disturbed or molested in their possessions they then held on either side,' you are desired still to have a particular regard to those entitled to the benefit of that agreement, while they behave themselves peaceably.

"And to the end that these directions be punctually observed and complied with, you are to order the sheriff of the county, with his officers, frequently to visit your borders, and those parts where either late disturbances have happened, or anything to the prejudice of the people is li. to be attempted, giving all needful assistance wherever it may be requisite. I should likewise promise my-





self much good from some of your number making a progress through these parts, when your conveniency would admit, or any exigency may require it, depending on your prudence that whatever measures you shall take for the defence of the inhabitants, and for seizing and securing offenders, will be such as that we may be at no loss whenever called upon to justify them."

The intercourse with the Indians at this period continued to be of an amicable nature, notwithstanding occasional disturbances, almost uniformly caused by the too liberal distribution of rum. A specimen of the kindness with which the children of the forest turned to the white man is furnished in the following extract from a speech of Hetaquantagechty: "That he comes hither from the Six Nations, on business relating to the last Treaty held between them and this Government; that on his road hither he heard the melancholy news of the Governor's loss, by the death of his spouse; that he once resolved to turn back lest the Governor's affliction should prevent him from attending to business, but thinking it better to proceed forward, he is pleased to find the Governor present with them; that he takes part in his grief, and if he had a handkerchief good and fine enough to present to the Governor, he would give it to wipe away his tears;" then presenting some strings of wampum to the Governor, he desired that the Governor would "lay aside his grief and turn his thoughts to business, as he had done before."

By the death of Springett Penn and Mrs. Hannah Penn, the Assembly conceived that Governor Gordon's authority was determined, and accordingly refused to act upon a message which he had sent them, and adjourned themselves to the last day of their term. But a new commission, signed by John, Thomas, and Richard Penn, in whom the government was now vested, was received in October. In the approbation given to this appointment by the King there is an express reservation of the right of the Crown to the government of the Lower Counties on the Delaware.

In August, 1736, Governor Gordon died. "His administration,"

1736. says Gordon, "was in all respects a happy one. No circumstance occurred requiring him to weigh in opposite scales his duty to the people and to the Proprietaries. The unanimity of the Assembly, the Council, and the Governor, gave an uninterrupted course to the prosperity of the Province. The wisdom which guided her counsels was strongly portrayed in her internal peace, increased population, improved morals, and thriving commerce."

On the 19th of September, 1737, the famous "Indian Walk" was performed by Edward Marshall, an account of which is given in the sketch of Bucks county. This walk, according to Charles Thomson, was the cause of jealousies and heart-burnings among the Indians, which eventually broke out in loud complaints of injustice and atrocious acts of savage vengeance. The very first murder committed by them after this transaction was on the very land they believed themselves cheated out of. The Indians always contended, says Mr. Buck, that the walk should be up the river by the nearest path, as was done in the first day and a half's walk by William Penn, and not by the compass across the country, as was done in this instance.

On the death of Governor Gordon, the administration of the government devolved on the Council, of which James Logan was president, 1738. which he held until August, 1738, when George Thomas, a planter of



Antigua, was appointed by the Proprietaries.\* Difficulties still ensuing between the people of Maryland and of Pennsylvania, consequent on the unsettled state of the boundary, Governor Thomas at once gave his attention to the question of jurisdiction over the disputed territory. It was mutually agreed, therefore, "that the respective Proprietaries should hold and exercise jurisdiction over the lands occupied by themselves and tenants at the date of the agreement, though such lands were beyond the limits thereafter prescribed, until the final settlement of the boundary lines, and that the tenants of the one should not interfere with the other."

The Proprietary land office having been closed from 1718 to the year 1732, during the minorities of Richard and Thomas Penn, emigrants seated themselves without title on such vacant lands as they found convenient. The number of settlers of this kind entitled them to great consideration. Their rights accruing by priority of settlement, were recognized by the public, and passed, with their improvements, through many hands, in confidence that they would receive the Proprietary sanction. Much agitation was produced when the Provincial proclamation required all who had not obtained and paid for warrants, to pay to the receiver-general, within four months, the sums due for their lands, under penalty of ejection. As a consequence, great difficulties arose; the Assembly sought to compromise the matter, payment of the purchase money being postponed for several years longer.

On the 23d of October, 1739, war was declared between Great Britain and Spain. Prior to this, Governor Thomas endeavored to stimulate his people to active measures of defence. To the solicitations of the Governor the Assembly "pleaded their charter and their consciences." Unfortunately, he ran a tilt with the religious opinions of a people who measured their merit by the extent of suffering for conscience sake. The communications which passed between the Governor and the Assembly show neither a forbearing spirit on one side, nor an even-tempered one on the other. At length the demand of the home government for troops compelled the Executive to raise by his own exertions the number of men required. Four hundred men was the entire quota, and these were raised in the space of three months, many of the recruits, however, being bond-servants, willing to exchange their service and freedom dues, for nominal liberty and soldier's pay.

The year 1740 is remarkable in the annals of Pennsylvania, by the labors of the renowned Whitfield. He landed at Lewes, early in November, 1739, and came thence to Philadelphia. His arrival, says Gordon, disturbed the religious harmony which had prevailed for so many years. He drew to himself many followers from all denominations, who, influenced by the energy of his manner, the thunder of his voice, and his flowing eloquence, were ready to subscribe his unnatural and incomprehensible faith. Especially in the Scotch-Irish sections of the Province, between the Delaware and the Susquehanna,

---

\* SIR GEORGE THOMAS, the son of a wealthy planter, was born at Antigua, about 1700. He was a member of the Council of that island at the time of his appointment of Governor of the Province of Pennsylvania, a position he held from 1738 to 1747. From 1752 to 1766, he was governor of the Leeward and Carribee Islands. In 1766, he was created a baronet. He died in London, January 11, 1775.



were the numbers of his hearers immense. At Fagg's Manor, it is stated that twelve thousand people were congregated at one time to listen to this great revivalist of the eighteenth century. For a while, no one opposed the wild extravagance of Whitfield and his converts, until at the location named, the Rev. John Roan boldly stood up and controverted the doctrines of the enthusiasts.

In March, 1744, hostilities were openly declared between France and Great Britain. The peaceful era of Pennsylvania was now at an end, and 1744. the dark clond of savage warfare began to gather on the western frontier. The lands acquired by the Indian walk, and by purchasing the Shawanese lands without their consent, were now to be paid for by the blood of the colonists. The Delawares refused to leave the Forks of Delaware. The Six Nations were called on to order them off, which they did, in the overbearing tone of conquerors and masters. They retired to Wyoming, with the repeated wrongs rankling in their breasts.

Benjamin Franklin now became prominent as a public man, and published his "Plain Truth," to endeavor to conciliate the Executive and Assembly, and awaken them both to the importance of military preparations. He was appointed a colonel, but declined; he preferred to wield the pen. James Logan,\* too, who justified *defensive* war, assisted the cause with his means.



JAMES LOGAN.

A battery was erected below the city of Philadelphia, from funds raised by lottery, in which many of the Quakers were adventurers. "These military preparations were necessary to intimidate a foreign enemy, and to curb the hostile disposition of the Indians. On the eve of a war with France, the alienation of the natives was greatly to be dreaded. Governor Thomas dispatched a messenger to Conrad Weiser, the Provincial interpreter, directing

him to proceed to Shamokin, to renew the assurances of friendship, and to propose his mediation between the Indians and the government of Virginia, occasioned by an unpleasant rencontre between some Onondagas and Oneidas with the English, while on an excursion against the Tallapoosas, resident in

\* JAMES LOGAN was born at Lurgan, Ireland, October 29, 1674, of Scottish parentage. At the age of thirteen he had acquired Latin, Greek, and some Hebrew, and afterwards mastered mathematics, and the French, Spanish, and Italian languages. While engaged in trade between Dublin and Bristol, William Penn made proposals to him to accompany him to America as his secretary, which he accepted, and landed at Philadelphia in December, 1699. By Penn he was invested with many important trusts, which he discharged with fidelity. Although he never received the appointment of governor of the Province, on several occasions he assumed the executive functions. He filled the offices of provincial secretary, commissioner of property, and chief justice. He was the warm friend of the Indians, possessed uncommon abilities, great wisdom, and moderation. He died at his country seat, near Philadelphia, October 31, 1751. He was the author of "Experimenta Meletematia Plantarum Generatione," 1739; of two other Latin treatises of a scientific character, published in Holland; of an English translation of Cicero's "De Senectute," 1741; and of Cato's "Distichs," besides a variety of papers on ethics.



that colony. Happily this attention induced them to hold a treaty the ensuing spring, and to refrain from hostility in the meantime.

A conference was held with the Deputies of the Six Nations at Lancaster, commencing on the 22d of June, 1744, and ending on the 4th of July following, which was attended by Governor Thomas in person, and by the Commissioners of Virginia and Maryland. All matters of dispute were satisfactorily settled, and the Iroquois engaged to prevent the French and their Indian allies from marching through their country to attack the English settlements.

This conference, however, did not remove causes of future disquiet. These lay in the encroachments of the settlers and in the conduct of the traders.

The attempt of Governor Shirley, of Massachusetts, to enlist the other colonies in a design for attacking the French settlements at Cape Breton, found no favor in Pennsylvania, the Assembly refusing assistance, upon the specious plea that they had not been consulted. The plan, however, having been approved by the British Ministry, directions were sent to the Provincial authorities to furnish men, provisions, and shipping for the expedition. The Assembly acting upon the matter, resolved to grant the sum of four thousand pounds to be expended in the purchase of bread, beef, pork, flour, wheat, or other grain. The enterprise against Louisburg terminated honorably for those who had projected and executed it.

The Shawanese Indians on the Ohio, who had long shown symptoms of disaffection to the English, and subserviency to the French cause, now  
 1745. openly assumed a hostile character. The policy of the French had been long directed to seduce all the Indian tribes from the English interest, and their efforts at this juncture upon the Six Nations produced great alarm in Pennsylvania. Commissioners were dispatched to a convention at Albany, held in October, 1745, by the Governor of New York, and commissioners from the Province of Pennsylvania and Colonies of Massachusetts and Connecticut, with the Indians of the Six Nations, to induce the latter, if possible, to take up the hatchet against the French and become parties in the war. The Six Nations showed no disposition to enter the contest, and the result of the conference was far from satisfactory.

In May, 1746, instructions were forwarded to the Provincial Government to raise forces to attempt the conquest of Canada. Governor Thomas  
 1746. forthwith summoned the Assembly, who, after considerable delay, voted five thousand pounds. The Governor raised four companies of over one hundred men each, commanded by Captains William Trent, John Shannon, Samuel Perry, and John Deimer, which were forwarded at once to Albany. Though the attempt on Canada was abandoned, the troops were retained nearly eighteen months on the Hudson River, with the view of over-awing the Indians.

On the 5th of May, 1747, the Governor communicated to the  
 1747. Assembly the death of John Penn, one of the Proprietaries, and his own resolution, on account of ill-health, to resign the government.

On the departure of Governor Thomas, the executive administration devolved on the Council, of which Anthony Palmer was president, until the  
 1749. arrival of James Hamilton, son of Andrew Hamilton, former Speaker of the Assembly, as Lieutenant-Governor, November 23, 1749.





The cereal crops were very abundant in 1751 and 1752. An extract, translated from the German in the *Chron. Ephrat.*, 190, is quite a curiosity: "The years 1751 and 1752 have been so fruitful in wheat and other grain, that men in wanton carelessness sought to waste the supply; for the precious wheat, which might have supported many poor, they used to fatten hogs, which afterwards they consumed in their sumptuousness. Besides, distilleries were erected everywhere, and thus this great blessing was turned into strong drink, which gave rise to much disorder."

These years of plenty were followed by a season of scarceness, covering the years 1753-1755, and on the heels of it came Indian hostilities.

The progress of the white population, says Gordon, towards the west continued to alarm and irritate the Indians. The new settlers, impatient of the delays of the land office, or unable or unwilling to pay for their lands, or in search of richer soils, sought homes in districts to which the Indian title had not been extinguished. Especially was this the case with the Scotch-Irish, who seated themselves on the west of the Susquehanna, on the Juniata and its tributary streams, in the Tuscarora Valley, in the Great and Little Coves formed by the Kittatinny and the Tuscarora hills, and at the Big and Little Connolloways. Some of these settlements were commenced prior to 1740, and rapidly increased, in despite of the complaints of the Indians, the laws of the Province, or the proclamations of the Governor.

An alarming crisis was at hand. The French, now hovering around the great lakes, sedulously applied themselves to seduce the Indians from their allegiance to the English. The Shawanese had already joined them; the Delawares waited only for an opportunity to revenge their wrongs; and of the Six Nations, the Onondagas, Cayugas, and Senecas, were wavering. To keep the Indians in favor of the Province required much cunning diplomacy and expensive presents. In this alarming juncture the old flame of civil dissension burst out with increased force. The presents to the Indians, with the erection of a line of forts along the frontier, and the maintenance of a military force, drew heavily upon the provincial purse. The Assembly, the popular branch, urged that the Proprietary estates should be taxed, as well as those of humble individuals. The Proprietaries, through their deputies, refused, and pleaded prerogative, charter, and law; the Assembly in turn pleaded equity, common danger, and common benefit, requiring a common expense. The Proprietaries offered bounties in lands yet to be conquered from the Indians, and the privilege of issuing more paper money; the Assembly wanted something more tangible. The Assembly passed laws, laying taxes, and granting supplies, but annexing conditions; the Governors opposed the conditions, but were willing to aid the Assembly in taxing the people, but not the Proprietaries. Here were the germs of revolution, not fully matured until twenty years later. In the meantime, the frontiers were left exposed, while these frivolous disputes continued. The pacific principles, too, of the Quakers, and Dunkards, and Mennonists, and Schwenckfelders, came in to complicate the strife; but as the danger increased, they prudently kept aloof from public office, leaving the management of the war to sects less scrupulous. The pulpit and the press, says Armor, were deeply involved in the discussion, and the population was divided into opposing factions upon this question.



The treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle was scarcely regarded more than a truce by the French in America. Eager to extend their territories, and to connect their northern possessions with Louisiana, they had projected a line of forts and military posts from the one to the other along the Mississippi and the Ohio. They explored and occupied the land upon the latter stream, buried in many places leaden plates with inscriptions declaratory of their claims to that river and the lands adjacent thereto.

Establishing themselves at Presqu'Isle, the French proceeded southward, erected a fort at Au Bœuf, and one at the mouth of French Creek, known as Fort Machault. This intention being communicated to Governor Dinwiddie, of Virginia, he dispatched George Washington, in the autumn of 1753, to inquire by what right these encroachments were made. Having performed his journey, which took about two months to accomplish, he reported the answer of Legardeau St. Pierre, the commandant upon the Ohio, dated at the fort on Le Bœuf River, which was evasive.

The English government having learned the designs and operations of the French, who pretended they derived their claims to the Ohio River and its appurtenances from the discovery of La Salle sixty years previous, remonstrated with the Court of Versailles, but to no purpose. Deceived, they resolved to oppose force with force.

Accordingly, to combine the efforts of the colonies, if possible, a conference was ordered by the ministry at Albany, in July, 1754, to which the Six Nations were invited. Governor Hamilton, unable to be present, commissioned Messrs. John Penn and Richard Peters, of the Council, and Isaac Norris and Benjamin Franklin, of the Assembly, who carried with them £500 as the Provincial present to the Indians.

Although not satisfactory in its results to the confederated council, the Pennsylvania commissioners secured a great part of the land in the Province, to which the Indian title was not extinct, comprehending the lands lying southwest of a line beginning one mile above the mouth of Penn's Creek, and running northwest by west "to the western boundary of the State." So far, however, from striking the western, it struck the northern boundary a little west of Conewingo Creek. The Shawanese, Delawares, and Monseys, on the Susquehanna, Juniata, Allegheny, and Ohio rivers, thus found their lands "sold from under their feet," which the Six Nations had guaranteed to them on their removal from the eastern waters. It was highly dissatisfactory to these tribes, and was a partial cause of their alienation from the English interest.

In this convention, however, a plan was proposed for a political union, and adopted on the 4th of July. It was subsequently submitted to the home government and the Provincial Assemblies. The former condemned it, says Franklin, as too democratic; the latter rejected it, as containing too much prerogative. In Pennsylvania it was negatived without discussion.



## CHAPTER V.

PROPRIETARY RULE. FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR. BRADDOCK'S EXPEDITION.  
INDIAN RAVAGES ON THE FRONTIER. 1754-1756.



ENSIGN WARD, while engaged in completing a stockade at the forks of the Ohio, was surprised by the appearance of a large French force, under Contrecoeur. The Ensign was obliged to surrender his position and retreat. The driving of the Virginia troops from the Ohio and the erection of Fort Duquesne by the French force, aroused the Virginia authorities, and Governor Hamilton strongly urged the Pennsylvania Assembly to organize the militia in aid of Governor Dinwiddie's preparations against the French. This body, always factious, evaded the subject, by questioning the invasion of the Province, declaring the action of the Governor as imprudent, and adjourned.

Virginia, however, raised a force of three hundred men, under command of Colonel Fry and Lieutenant-Colonel Washington, and near the Great Meadows, a detachment of the French force, under Jumonville, sent to intercept the Virginians, was defeated, and their commander killed. Near that point Fort Necessity was erected by Colonel Washington, who succeeded to the command by the death of Colonel Fry, being reinforced by two companies of regulars. Marching out with his little band to dislodge the French from Fort Duquesne, recently erected by them, the advance of a large force of the enemy compelled the young commander to fall back to his stockade, which they immediately prepared to strengthen. Before it was completed they were attacked by the French under M. de Villier. Notwithstanding an obstinate defence, Washington was obliged to capitulate. His courage and conduct, however, were greatly applauded.

On receiving the news of Washington's defeat, Governor Hamilton convened the Assembly in special session on the 6th of August, but unpleasant altercations between the executive and legislative were produced, "and their labors were nugatory."

Robert Hunter Morris\* succeeded Governor Hamilton in October, the latter having requested to be relieved from his duties. A new Assembly had been elected about the time of his arrival. At its session in December, the Governor communicated to it the royal order for a concert with the other colonies, commanding them not only to act vigorously in defence of their own government, but to aid the other colonies to repel every hostile attempt. This body were well aware of the progress of the French, of their completion of Fort Duquesne, and their preparations to occupy the country of the Twightwees with numerous settlers. The

---

\* ROBERT HUNTER MORRIS was the eldest son of Lewis Morris, Chief Justice of New York and New Jersey, born about 1699. On the appointment of his father to the governorship of New Jersey, in 1731, the son succeeded him as Chief Justice of that State, a position he held until 1757, when he resigned the office. He was Lieutenant-Governor of the Province of Pennsylvania from 1754 to 1756. He died the 20th of February, 1764.



Six Nation Indians, now more numerous on the western waters than in their ancient seats, cold to the English cause, and divided among themselves, barely maintained their neutrality. The small body of English troops, collected on the frontiers, was weakened by desertion and corrupted by insubordination. The Indians who still adhered to the Province, and had retired before the French, were seated at Aughwick. They admired the courage of the enemy, contemned the pacific temper of the Assembly, and were scarcely kept in quiet by the liberality of the Province to their families, and its forbearance towards the license of their chiefs.

The Assembly prepared a bill for the issue of forty thousand pounds currency, appropriating twenty thousand pounds to the use of the King, redeemable by the excise in twelve years, and the balance to supply the torn and defaced bills of former issues. But the Governor objected the royal instructions, so often urged by his predecessor, yet conceded, that, as he might dispense with the suspending clause in extraordinary cases, he would venture to sanction the bill, if the sum granted to the King were made redeemable within five years. This proposition was unhesitatingly rejected.

The government of Great Britain had at length determined to oppose energetically the growing power of the French in America. Two regiments of foot from Ireland, under the command of Colonels Dunbar and Halkett, were ordered to Virginia, to be there reinforced; and Governor Shirley and Sir William Pepperell were directed to raise two regiments of a thousand men each, to be officered from New England, and commanded by themselves. Pennsylvania was required to collect three thousand men for enlistment, to be placed at the disposal of a commander-in-chief of rank and capacity, who would be appointed to command all the King's forces in America; to supply the troops on their arrival with provisions, and to furnish all necessaries for the soldiers landed or raised within the Province; to provide the officers with means for traveling; for impressing carriages, and quartering troops. And, as these were "local matters, arising entirely within her government, his Majesty expected the charges thereof to be borne by his subjects within the Province; whilst articles of more general concern would be charged upon a common fund, to be raised from all the colonies of North America." Toward this fund the Governor was directed to urge the Assembly to contribute liberally, until a union of the northern colonies for general defence could be effected.

In answer to a message of the Governor, based on these requisitions, the House referred him to the money bill they had sent him; and, after a recapitulation of their arguments against his objections, they intimated an opinion, that his refusal to pass the bill was occasioned by the Proprietary instructions, which they requested might be shown to them. He evaded a direct answer to this request, but assured them that his instructions were designed to promote the real happiness of the inhabitants, and contained nothing which his duty would not have required had they never been given. And, though it was indecorous and unprecedented for the House to demand their exhibition, still he would communicate them when necessary for the public service; it was sufficient now, to say that he was instructed by the Proprietaries earnestly to recommend to them the defence of the Province, not only by the grant of money to the King, but by





the establishment of a regular militia, the purchase of arms and military stores, and the erection of magazines. He would add, he said, to his former reasons for negating their bill, the present state of the treasury, which did, or ought to, contain fifteen thousand pounds, and had an annual revenue of seven thousand per annum. With these resources, and a rich and numerous population, he deemed it unpardonable to disobey the royal instructions.

The Assembly now seized on the Governor's denial of a precedent to the call for Proprietary instructions. They adverted to the right of Parliament to ask from the Crown such information as they deemed necessary, and thence inferred their own right to inspect his instructions, which they supported by examples from the administrations of Sir William Keith and Colonel Thomas. Then, assuming his instructions to be inconsistent with their views, they declined to proceed further in their public labors until, by a knowledge of the Proprietary designs, they might be enabled to labor successfully. The public service now required this; and, as they were about to address the King in support of their civil and religious liberties, the Proprietary instructions, their force, and validity, would form the great burden of their petition, unless satisfied by the Governor that remonstrance on that subject was unnecessary. But this threat availed not. Mr. Morris denied their right, and persisted in his refusal.

The pertinacity of the Governor, says Gordon, produced from the House a long address, in which they reviewed all the objections that had been made to their money bills, and dwelt with much earnestness upon the injustice and tyranny of administering the government by Proprietary instructions, kept secret from the people, instead of their constitution. "These instructions," they said, "as they have occasionally been made a part of the public records, have been judged by Governor, council, and representatives, either—1, Inconsistent with the legal prerogative of the Crown, settled by act of Parliament; 2, or a positive breach of the charter of privileges to the people; 3, or absurd in their conclusions, and, therefore, impracticable; 4, or void in themselves: therefore, if, after exhibition of his instructions, the Governor, finding them to be such as had heretofore been given, should find reason, notwithstanding the bonds he may have given to follow them, to disobey them, they would cheerfully grant such further sums for the King's use as the circumstances of the country would bear, and in a manner least burdensome to the inhabitants."

But that no doubt might exist of their disposition to obey the orders of the Crown in all things not forbidden by their consciences, the Assembly unanimously resolved to borrow, on the credit of the House, the sum of £5,000, to be expended in the purchase of fresh provisions, for the use of the King's troops on their arrival, and appointed a committee to negotiate the loan.

A series of long and angry messages and replies resulted in a determination on the part of the Assembly to address the King, in testimony of their loyalty and affection, and to represent to him the difficulties produced by Proprietary instructions.

On the 14th of January, Major-General Edward Braddock, Sir John St. Clair, Adjutant-General, and the regiments of Dunbar and Halkett sailed  
**1755.** from Cork; and they arrived early in March at Alexandria, in Virginia, whence they marched to Fredericktown, in Maryland. The place of



debarkation was selected with that ignorance and want of judgment which distinguished the British ministry. The country could furnish neither provisions nor carriages for the army; while Pennsylvania, rich in grain, and well stocked with wagons, could readily supply food, and the means to transport the army to any point. The Assembly, apprehending the General to be prejudiced against them, sent Mr. Franklin to undeceive him, with instructions, however, not to assume the character of their agent, but to present himself as Postmaster-General, disposed to make his office subservient to the General's plans. While Franklin was with the army the return of the wagons obtainable was made, from which it appeared that there were not more than twenty-five, and not all of those serviceable. Braddock, says Gordon, was surprised, declared the expedition at an end, and exclaimed against the ministers for having sent them into a country destitute of the means of transportation. On Franklin expressing his regret that the army had not been landed in Pennsylvania, where such means abounded, Braddock seized eagerly on his words, and commissioned him, on liberal terms, to procure one hundred and fifty wagons, and fifteen hundred pack-horses. Franklin, on his return, circulated advertisements through the counties of York, Lancaster, and Cumberland, and by an artful address obtained, in two weeks, all the wagons, two hundred and fifty pack-horses, and much popularity for himself.

He stated in his address that he found the General incensed at the delay of the horses and carriages he had expected from Philadelphia, and disposed to send an armed force to seize the carriages, horses, and drivers necessary for the service. But that he, apprehending the visit of British soldiers, in their present temper, would be very inconvenient to the inhabitants, was desirous to try what might be done by fair and equitable means; and that an opportunity was now presented of obtaining £30,000 in silver and gold, which would supply the deficiency of the Provincial currency. He expended £800 received from the General, advanced £200 himself, and gave his bonds for the payment of the value of such horses as should be lost in the service, the owners refusing to rely upon Braddock's promise, alleging that he was unknown to them. The claims made against him in consequence of this engagement amounted to £20,000, and were not settled by the government until after much delay and trouble.

The Adjutant-General, immediately on the arrival of the troops, required of Governor Morris that roads should be cut to facilitate their march and the supply of provisions. General Braddock demanded the establishment of a post between Philadelphia and Winchester, the Pennsylvania quota of men, and her portion of the general fund directed to be raised for the public service.

The Assembly, specially summoned, met on the 17th of March, and immediately provided for the expense of a mail and the opening of the roads; and though they gave no direct encouragement to the raising of troops, they applied themselves assiduously to establish the necessary funds.

As the French drew a considerable portion of their supplies from the English colonies, it became expedient to prohibit the export of provisions to French ports. This measure was adopted by the Assembly of Pennsylvania with great cheerfulness.

A council of the Governors of New York, Massachusetts, Pennsylvania,







successor to the Half-King of the Senecas, and Monacatootha, whose acquaintance Washington had made on the Ohio on his mission to Le Bœuf, with about one hundred and fifty Indians, Senecas and Delawares, accompanied him. George Croghan, the Indian agent of Pennsylvania, and a frontiersman of great value called the "Wild Hunter" or Captain Jack, were also with him. The first brigade, under Sir Peter Halkett, led the way, and on the 9th the main body followed. They spent the third night only five miles from the first. A large spring, bearing Braddock's name, marks the place of encampment at the present day. The route continued up Braddock's run to the forks of the stream nine miles from Cumberland, when it turned to the left in order to reach a point on the ridge favorable to an easy descent into the valley of George's Creek. "It is surprising," says Mr. Atkinson, who faithfully surveyed the route trodden by that unfortunate army, "that having reached this high ground, the favorable spur by which the national road accomplishes the ascent of the Great Savage Mountain, did not strike the attention of Braddock's engineers, as the labor necessary to surmount the barrier from the deep valley of George's Creek must have contributed greatly to those bitter complaints which the General made against the Provincial government of Pennsylvania in particular, for their failure to assist him more effectively in the transportation department."

Passing a mile to the south of Frostburg, the road approaches the east foot of Savage Mountain, which it crosses about one mile south of the national road, and thence by very favorable ground, through the dense forests of white pine peculiar to that region, it got to the north of the national road, near the gloomy tract called the Shades of Death. This was the 15th of June, when the gloom of the summer woods and the favorable shelter which these enormous pines would give an Indian enemy, must have made a most sensible impression on the minds of that devoted army of the insecurity of their mode of advance. This, doubtless, had its share in causing the council of war held at the Little Meadows on the day following. To this place, distant only twenty miles from Cumberland, Sir John St. Clair and Major Chapman had been dispatched on the 27th of May to build a fort.

The conclusion of the council was to push on with a picked force of 1,200 men and twelve pieces of cannon, and the line of march, now more compact, was resumed on the 19th. Passing over ground to the south of the Little Crossings, the army spent the night of the 21st at the Bear Camp, supposed to be about midway to the Great Crossings, which it reached on the 23d. The route thence to the Great Meadows, or Fort Necessity, was well chosen, though over a mountainous tract, conforming very nearly to the ground now occupied by the national road, and keeping on the dividing ridge between the waters flowing into the Youghiogheny on the one hand and the Cheat River on the other. On the 30th of June, the army forded the former river at Stewart's Crossings, and thence passed a rough road over a mountain. A few miles onward they came to a great swamp, which detained them part of a day in clearing a road. They next advanced to Salt Lick Creek, now called Jacob's Creek, where a council of war was held, on the 3d of July, to consider a suggestion of Sir John St. Clair, that Colonel Dunbar's detachment should be ordered to join the main body. This proposal was rejected, on the ground that Dunbar could





not join them in less than thirteen days; that this would cause such a consumption of provisions as to render it necessary to bring forward another convoy from Fort Cumberland; and that in the meantime the French might be strengthened by a reinforcement which was daily expected at Fort Duquesne, and moreover, the two divisions could not move together after their junction.

On the 4th the army again marched, and advanced to Turtle Creek, about twelve miles from its mouth, where they arrived on the 7th. This was the name of the eastern branch of Bushy Run, and the place of encampment was a short distance northerly of the present village of Stewartsville, Westmoreland County. It was General Braddock's intention to cross Turtle Creek, and approach Fort Duquesne, on the other side; but the banks were so precipitous, and presented such obstacles to crossing with his artillery and heavy baggage, that he hesitated, and Sir John St. Clair went out with a party to reconnoitre. On his return before night, he reported that he had found the ridge which led to Fort Duquesne, but that considerable work would be necessary to prepare a road for crossing Turtle Creek. This route was finally abandoned, and on the 8th the army marched eight miles, and encamped not far from the Monongahela, west of the Youghiogheny, and near what is called, on Scull's map, "Sugar Run." When Braddock reached this place, it was his design to pass through the narrows, but he was informed by the guide, who had been sent out to explore, that the passage was very difficult, about two miles in length, with a river on the left, and a high mountain on the right, and that much work must be done to make it passable for carriages. At the same time he was told that there were two good fords across the Monongahela, where the water was shallow, and the banks not steep. With these views of the case, he determined to cross the ford the next morning. The order of march was given out, and all the arrangements were made for an early movement.

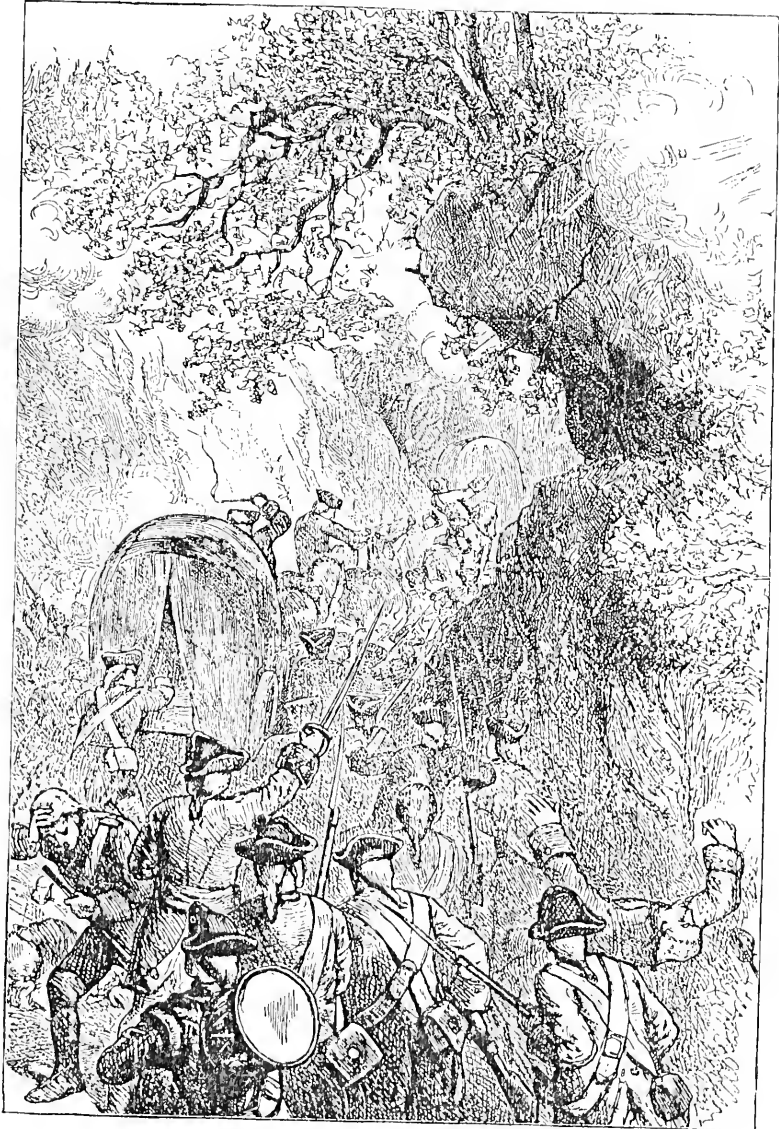
About eight o'clock on the morning of the 9th, the advanced division, under Colonel Gage, crossed the ford and pushed forward. After the whole army had crossed and marched about a mile, Braddock received a note from Colonel Gage, giving notice that he had passed the second ford without difficulty. A little before two o'clock the whole army had crossed this ford, and was arranged in the order of march on the river plateau. Colonel Gage, with the advanced party, was then ordered to march, and while the main body was yet standing on the plain, the action began near the river. Not a single man of the enemy had before been seen.

To the brave grenadiers, says Patterson, who had stood firm on the plains of Europe, amid tempests of cannon balls cutting down whole platoons of their comrades, this new species of warfare was perfectly appalling, and unable longer to breast the girdle of fire which enveloped them, they gave way in confusion, involving the whole army in distress, dismay, and disorder.

In such a dilemma, with hundreds of his men falling at every discharge, his ranks converted into a wild and reckless multitude, unable to rally and too proud to retreat, Braddock obstinately refused to allow the provincial troops, according to Watson, to fight the Indians in their own way, but with a madness incomprehensible, did his utmost to form the men into platoons and wheel them into close columns. The result was horrible, and the sacrifice of life without a



parallel at that time, in Indian warfare. The Provincial regiments, unable to keep together, spread through the surrounding wood, and by this means did all the execution that was effected. Every man fought for himself, and rushing to



BRADDOCK'S FORCES SURPRISED BY AN AMBUSCADE.

the trees from behind which gleamed the flash of the rifle, the brave frontiersmen often bayoneted the savage at his post. This perilous enterprise, however, was attended with a terrible sacrifice. Out of three full companies of Virginia troops, but thirty men were left.



This appalling scene lasted three hours, during which the army stood exposed to the steady fire of a concealed but most deadly foe, and men fell on every side like grass before the sweep of the sickle. Finally, General Braddock, after having five horses killed under him, fell mortally wounded by the hand of an outraged American named Faucett. At his fall all order gave way, and what remained of that so lately proud army, rushed heedlessly into the river, abandoning all to the fury of the savages and French. Artillery, ammunition, baggage, including the camp chest of General Braddock, all fell into the hands of the victorious enemy.

The retreating army rushed wildly forward, and did not stop until coming up to the rear division. So appalled were the latter at the terrible disaster, that the entire army retreated with disgraceful precipitancy to Fort Cumberland. This, according to Smollett, "was the most extraordinary victory ever obtained, and the farthest flight ever made."

It was the most disastrous defeat ever sustained by any European army in America. Sixty-three officers and seven hundred and fourteen privates were killed or dangerously wounded. There is, perhaps, no instance upon record, where so great a proportion of officers were killed. Out of the eighty-six composing the regiment, but twenty-three escaped unhurt. Their brilliant uniform seemed sure marks for the deadly aim of the savage.

On that disastrous day the military genius of Washington shone forth with much of that splendor which afterwards made him so illustrious. His courage, energy, bravery, and skill displayed on this occasion marked him as possessed of the highest order of military talents. After the fall of Braddock with his Provincial troops, he covered the retreat, and saved the remnant of the army from annihilation.

General Braddock was taken to Dunbar's Camp, on the summit of Laurel Hill, where he breathed his last, on the fourth day after the battle. His body was interred in the centre of the road, and the entire army marched over the spot in order that the remains of the unfortunate General might not be desecrated by savage hands.

In 1802, according to the Hon. Andrew Stewart, while repairing the old military road, the remains of General Braddock were re-interred at the foot of a large white oak tree, except a few which found their way into the possession of Mr. Peale, of Philadelphia, and in the conflagration of his museum were finally destroyed.

In the correspondence of General Braddock with his government, from the time of his arrival in Virginia to his defeat, he complains that Pennsylvania and Virginia would not give the aid he demanded. The disputes at that period in the Proprietary government, says Duponceau, account in some degree but not sufficiently for these results. The Quaker spirit in Pennsylvania may be supposed to have produced them, but it was used as a means instead of a primary cause. It is certain that at that time a leading Quaker, who was speaker of the Assembly, said in debate: "I had rather see Philadelphia sacked three times by the French than vote a single copper for the war." It is easy to see from this the difficulties Braddock had to contend with. Had he received the earnest support of the Province, his success would have been assured. The Scotch-



Irish, who settled on the frontiers, were busy protecting their own homes, and although several companies offered their services to General Braddock, he did not accept them, not from the motives ascribed to him by most historians, but from the fact that they were actually required at their own firesides, which had already been invaded by the savage foe.

After the retreat of the army, the savages, unwilling to follow the French in pursuit, fell upon the field and preyed on the rich plunder which lay before them. Three years after [1758], by direction of General Forbes, the remains of many of the slain in Braddock's army were gathered up and buried.

The number of French and Indians engaged in this affair has never been fully ascertained, but variously estimated at from four to eight hundred. The commander of the French-Indian force was Captain Beaujeu. Contrecoeur has generally been credited with the victory, but among the records of baptisms and deaths at Fort Duquesne during the years 1754 and '55, is this entry: "L'an mille sept cinquante cinq le neuf de Julliet a esté tué en combat donné contre les Anglois et le mesme jour que dessus, Mr. Léonard Daniel, escuyer, Sieur de Beaujeux capitaine d'infenterie commandant du Fort Duquesne et de L'armée, lequel estoit agé d'environ de quarente cinq ans ayant esté en confesse et fait ses devotions le mesme jour, son corps a esté inhumé le douze du mesme mois dans le cimitière du Fort Duquesne sous le titre de l'Assomption de la Ste Vierge à la belle Rivière et cela avec les ceremonies ordinaires par nous pre Recolet soussigné aumonier du Roy au susdit fort en foy de quoy avons signé."\*

Really it matters little to us at the present who was in command of the French and Indians, but in the light of history, "honor be to him to whom honor is due."

Dunbar proposed to return with his army, yet strong enough to meet the enemy, to Philadelphia; but consented, on the remonstrance of the Assembly of Pennsylvania, to keep on the frontiers. He requested a conference with Governor Morris, at Shippensburg; but Governor Shirley having succeeded to the chief command of the forces in America, though at first he directed Dunbar to renew the enterprise on Fort Duquesne, and to draw upon the neighboring Provinces for men and munitions, changed his mind, and determined to employ his troops elsewhere, leaving to the populous Provinces of Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia, the care of their own defence.

The consternation at Braddock's defeat was very great in Pennsylvania. The retreat of Dunbar left the whole frontier uncovered; whilst the inhabitants, unarmed and undisciplined, were compelled hastily to seek the means of defence or of flight. In describing the exposed state of the Province, and the miseries which threatened it, the Governor had occasion to be entirely satisfied with his own eloquence; and had his resolution to defend it equalled the earnestness of his appeal to the Assembly, the people might have been spared much suffering.

---

\* *Translation.*—"M. Leonard Daniel, Esqr., Sieur de Beaujeux, captain of infantry, commander of the Fort Duquesne, and of the army, on the 9th day of July, in the year 1755, and in the forty-fifth year of his age. The same day, after having confessed and said his devotions, he was killed in battle with the English. His body was interred on the twelfth of the same month, in the cemetery of the Fort Duquesne, at the Beautiful River."





The Assembly immediately voted fifty thousand pounds to the King's use, to be raised by a tax of twelve pence per pound, and twenty shillings per head, yearly, for two years, on all estates, real and personal, throughout the Province, the Proprietary estate not excepted. This was not in accordance with the Proprietary instructions, and therefore returned by the Governor. In the long discussions which ensued between the two branches of government, the people began to become alarmed, as they beheld with dread the procrastination of the measures for defence, and earnestly demanded arms and ammunition.

The enemy, long restrained by fear of another attack, and scarce crediting his senses when he discovered the defenceless state of the frontiers, now roamed unmolested and fearlessly along the western lines of Virginia, Maryland, and Pennsylvania, committing the most appalling outrages and wanton cruelties which the cupidity and ferocity of the savage could dictate. The first inroads into Pennsylvania were into Cumberland county, whence they were soon extended to the Susquehanna. The inhabitants, dwelling at the distance of from one to three miles apart, fell unresistingly, were captured, or fled in terror to the interior settlements. The main body of the enemy encamped on the Susquehanna, thirty miles above Harris' Ferry, whence they extended themselves on both sides the river, below the Kittatinny Mountains. The settlements at the Great Cove in Cumberland county, now Fulton, were destroyed, and many of the inhabitants slaughtered or made captives, and the same fate fell upon Tulpehocken, upon Mahanoy, and Gnadenhutzen.

Under date of October 29, John Harris wrote to the Governor: "We expect the enemy upon us every day, and the inhabitants are abandoning their plantations, being greatly discouraged at the approach of such a number of cruel savages, and no sign of assistance. The Indians are cutting us off every day, and I had a certain account of about fifteen hundred Indians, besides French, being on their march against us and Virginia, and now close on our borders, their scouts scalping our families on our frontiers daily. Andrew Montour and others at Shamokin desired me to take care; that there was forty Indians out many days, and intended to burn my house and destroy myself and family. I have this day cut holes in my house, and is determined to hold out to the last extremity if I can get some men to stand by me, few of which I yet can at present, every one being in fear of their own families being cut off every hour (such is our situation). I am informed that a French officer was expected at Shamokin this week with a party of Delawares and Shawanese, no doubt to take possession of our river; and, as to the state of the Susquehanna Indians, a great part of them are actually in the French interest; but if we should raise a number of men immediately as will be able to take possession of some convenient place up Susquehanna, and build a strong fort in spite of French or Indians, perhaps some Indians may join us, but it is trusting to uncertainty to depend upon them in my opinion. We ought to insist on the Indians declaring either for or against us. As soon as we are prepared for them, we must bid up for scalps and keep the woods full of our people hunting them, or they will ruin our Province, for they are a dreadful enemy. We impatiently look for assistance. I have sent out two Indian spies to Shamokin, they are Mohawks, and I expect they will return in a day or two. Consider our situation, and rouse your



people downwards, and not let about fifteen hundred villains distress such a number of inhabitants as is in Pennsylvania, which actually they will, if they possess our provisions and frontiers long, as they now have many thousands of bushels of our corn and wheat in possession already, for the inhabitants goes off and leaves all."

In consequence of these melancholy tidings, the Governor summoned the Assembly for the 3d of November, when he laid before them an account of the proceedings of the enemy, and demanded money and a militia law. Petitions were poured in from all parts of the Province; from the frontier counties, praying for arms and munitions; from the middle counties, deprecating further resistance to the views of the Governor, and requiring, if it were necessary, a partial sacrifice of the property of the citizens for the defence of their lives; and that the religious scruples of the members of the Assembly might no longer prevent the defence of the country.

By the middle of the month, the savages had "entered the passes o. the Blue Mountains, broke into the counties of Lancaster, Berks, and Northampton, committing murder, devastations, and other kind of horrid mischief," to use the language of Governor Morris, and yet the Assembly delayed the measures of defence required of them. The Governor, astonished at the obstinacy of the Assembly, for such he characterized it, again sent a message requesting that body to strengthen his hands and afford assistance to the back inhabitants, but they pled in excuse that they feared the alienating the affections of the Indians, and in a measure refused to grant the means necessary for the protection of the frontiers.

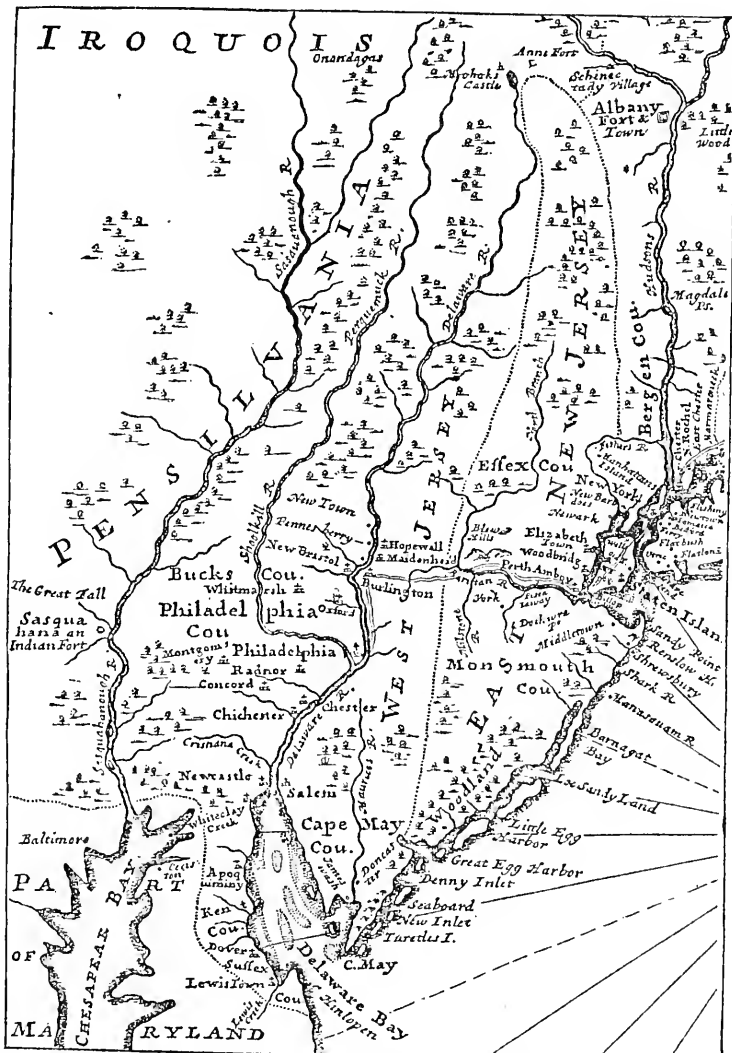
In the meantime, the Proprietaries, alarmed by Braddock's defeat, now came forward and offered a donation for defence of £5,000, to be collected from arrears of quit-rents; but they refused to grant it on any other ground than as a free gift. The Assembly waived their rights for a time, in consideration of the distressed state of the Province, and passed a bill to strike £30,000 in bills of credit, based upon the excise. This was approved by the Governor.

The cold indifference of the Assembly at such a crisis awoke the deepest indignation throughout the Province. Public meetings were held in various parts of Lancaster and in the frontier counties, at which it was resolved that they would "repair to Philadelphia and compel the provincial authorities to pass proper laws to defend the country and oppose the enemy." In addition, the dead bodies of some of the murdered and mangled were sent to that city and hauled about the streets, with placards announcing that these were victims of the Quaker policy of non-resistance. A large and threatening mob surrounded the House of Assembly, placed the dead bodies in the doorway, and demanded immediate relief for the people of the frontiers. Such indeed were the desperate measures resorted to for self-defence.

To guard against the Indian devastations, a chain of forts and block-houses were erected at an expense of eighty-five thousand pounds, by the Province of Pennsylvania, along the Kittatinny hills, from the river Delaware to the Maryland line, commanding the principal passes of the mountains, garrisoned with from twenty to seventy-five provincials, as the situation and importance of the places respectively required. The Moravians of Bethlehem cheerfully fortified



their town and took up arms in self-defence. Franklin took up the sword, and, with his son William, raised without difficulty over five hundred men, proceeded to the frontier, and assisted in erecting and garrisoning the line of forts.



EARLY MAP OF THE PROVINCE OF PENNSYLVANIA.  
(From Humphrey's Account of the Missions.)



## CHAPTER VI.

REWARD FOR INDIAN SCALPS. DESTRUCTION OF KITTANNING. EXPEDITION OF GENERAL FORBES. PONTIAC'S CONSPIRACY. BOUQUET'S EXPEDITION. 1756-1763.



So aggravating had the enemy's conduct become, so terribly desolated the homes of the frontiersmen, that Governor Morris issued a proclamation on the 14th of April, offering the following bounties, hoping thereby to incite not only the energies of the soldiers, but to alarm those Indians who were still friendly: "For every male Indian enemy above twelve years old who shall be taken prisoner and delivered at any forts, garrisoned by the troops in pay of this Province, or at any of the county towns to the keepers of the common jails there, the sum of one hundred and fifty Spanish dollars or pieces of eight; for the scalp of every male Indian enemy above the age of twelve years, produced as evidence of their being killed, the sum of one hundred and thirty pieces of eight; for every female Indian taken prisoner and brought in as aforesaid, and for every male Indian prisoner under the age of twelve years, taken and brought in as aforesaid, one hundred and thirty pieces of eight; for the scalp of every Indian woman, produced as evidence of their being killed, the sum of fifty pieces of eight; and for every English subject that has been taken and carried from this Province into captivity that shall be recovered and brought in and delivered at the city of Philadelphia to the Governor of this Province, the sum of one hundred and fifty pieces of eight, but nothing for their scalps; and that there shall be paid to every officer or soldier as are or shall be in the pay of this Province who shall redeem and deliver any English subject carried into captivity as aforesaid, or shall take, bring in, and produce any enemy prisoner, or scalp as aforesaid, one-half of the said several and respective premiums and bounties."

This proclamation gave great offence to the Assembly, but the times were perilous, and the bounties were absolutely necessary to secure the protection of the borders. To the credit of the hardy pioneers of Pennsylvania be it said, no Indian was wantonly killed for the sake of the reward.

On the 20th of August, William Denny\* arrived in the Province, superseding Governor Morris. He was hailed with joy by the Assembly, who flattered themselves that with a change of government there would be a change of measures. Upon making known the Proprietary instructions, to which he stated he was compelled to adhere, all friendly feeling was at an end, and there was a renewal of the old discord.

Before Governor Morris was superseded, he concerted with Colonel John

---

\* WILLIAM DENNY, a native of England, born September, 1718, was well educated and in high favor at Court. He was Lieutenant-Governor of Pennsylvania from August, 1756, to October, 1759. Returning to England on his removal from office, he spent the remainder of his days in retirement on an annuity from the Crown. He died previous to the War of Independence.





Armstrong an expedition against the Indian town of Kittanning, on the Allegheny, the stronghold of Captains Jacobs and Shingas, the most active Indian chiefs, and from whence they distributed their war parties along the frontier. On the arrival of Governor Denny, Morris communicated the plan of his enterprise to him and his Council.

Colonel Armstrong marched from Fort Shirley on the 30th of August, with three hundred men, having with him, besides other officers, Captains Hamilton, Mercer, Ward, and Potter. On the 2d of September he joined an advance party at the Beaver dams, near Frankstown. On the 7th, in the evening, within six miles of Kittanning, the scouts discovered a fire in the road, and around it, as they reported, three, or at most, four, Indians. It was deemed prudent not to attack this party; but lest some of them should escape and alarm the town, Lieutenant Hogg and twelve men were left to watch them, with orders to fall upon them at day-break. The main body, making a circuit, proceeded to the village. Guided by the whooping of the Indians at a dance, the army approached the place by the river, about one hundred perches below the town, at three o'clock in the morning, near a cornfield, in which a number of the enemy were lodged, out of their cabins, on account of the heat of the weather. As soon as the dawn of day made the town visible the troops attacked it through the cornfield, killing several of the enemy. Captain Jacobs, their principal chief, sounded the war-whoop, and defended his house bravely through loop-holes in the logs; and the Indians generally refused quarter, which was offered them, declaring that they were men, and would not be prisoners. Colonel Armstrong, who had received a musket ball in his shoulder, ordered their houses to be set on fire over their heads. Again the Indians were required to surrender, and again refused, one of them declaring that he did not care for death, as he could kill four or five before he died, and as the heat approached some of them began to sing. Others burst from their houses and attempted to reach the river, but were instantly shot down. Captain Jacobs, in getting out of a window, was shot, as also a squaw, and a lad called the king's son. The Indians had a number of small arms in their houses, loaded, which went off in quick succession as the fire came to them; and quantities of gunpowder, which were stored in every house, blew up from time to time, throwing some of the bodies of the enemy a great height in the air. A party of Indians on the opposite side of the river fired on the troops, and were seen to cross the river at a distance, as if to surround them; but they contented themselves with collecting some horses which were near the town to carry off their wounded, and then retreated without attempting to take from the cornfield those who were killed there in the beginning of the action. Several of the enemy were killed in the river as they attempted to escape by fording it, and between thirty and forty in the whole were destroyed. Eleven English prisoners were released, who informed that, besides the powder, of which the Indians boasted they had enough for ten years' war with the English, there was a great quantity of goods burned, which the French had presented to them but ten days before; that two batteaux of French Indians were to join Captain Jacobs to make an attack upon Fort Shirley, and that twenty-four warriors had set out before them on the preceding evening. These proved to be the party discovered around the fire, as the troops approached Kittanning.



Pursuant to his orders, and relying upon the report made by the scouts, Lieutenant Hogg had attacked them, and killed three at the first fire. He, however, found them too strong for his force, and having lost some of his best men, the others fled, leaving him wounded, overlooked by the enemy in their pursuit of the fugitives. He was saved by the army on their return. Captain, afterwards General, Mercer was wounded in the action at Kittanning, but was carried off safely by his men.

The corporation of Philadelphia, on occasion of this victory, on the 5th of January following, addressed a complimentary letter to Colonel Armstrong, thanking him and his officers for their gallant conduct, and presented him with a piece of plate. A medal was also struck, having for device an officer followed by two soldiers, the officer pointing to a soldier shooting from behind a tree, and an Indian prostrate before him; in the back-ground Indian houses in flames. *Legend*: Kittanning destroyed by Colonel Armstrong, September the 8th, 1756. *Reverse Device*: The arms of the corporation. *Legend*: The gift of the corporation of Philadelphia.

The destruction of the town of Kittanning, and the Indian families there, was a severe stroke on the savages. Hitherto the English had not assailed them in their towns, and they fancied that they would not venture to approach them. But now, though urged by an unquenchable thirst of vengeance to retaliate the blow they had received, they dreaded that in their absence on war parties, their wigwams might be reduced to ashes. Such of them as belonged to Kittanning, and had escaped the carnage, refused to settle again on the east of Fort Duquesne, and resolved to place that fortress and the French garrison between them and the English.

On the 8th of November, 1756, began the Grand Council at Easton, between Governor Denny and the Delaware King Teedyuscung and other chiefs and warriors. Teedyuscung was the chief speaker on this occasion, and with an eloquence unsurpassed by any Indian chieftain, supported the rights of his nation with great dignity and spirit. Unfortunately he was not correctly reported, the Commissioners of the Council and Assembly striking out so much of his address as reflected upon certain transactions of the Provincial Government of Pennsylvania. The conference lasted nine days. All matters of difference were inquired into, particularly in relation to the "Indian Walk," and the purchase of lands on the West Branch and Penn's Creek at the Treaty of Albany in 1754.

The necessity of a militia law was, in a great measure, obviated by the forces raised by the Governor and Provincial Commissioners. They consisted of twenty-five companies, amounting to fourteen hundred men. Eight companies, under the command of Major James Burd, called the Augusta regiment, were stationed at Fort Augusta; eight companies on the west side of the Susquehanna, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Armstrong, called the second battalion of the Pennsylvania regiment, were thus divided: Two companies at Fort Lyttleton, on Aughwick Creek, which empties into the Juniata River; two companies on Conococheague Creek, which communicates with the Potomac; two companies at Fort Morris, in Shippensburg, and two companies at Carlisle. Nine companies, called the second battalion of the Pennsylvania regiment,



commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Conrad Weiser, were thus distributed: One company at Fort Augusta; one at Hunter's mill, seven miles above Harris' Ferry, on the Susquehanna; one-half company on the Swatara, at the foot of the North Mountain; one company and a half at Fort Henry, close to the gap of the mountain called the Tolihea Gap; one company at Fort William, near the forks of the Schuylkill River, six miles beyond the mountain; one company at Fort Allen, at Gnadenbutten, on the Lehigh; the other three companies were scattered between the rivers Lehigh and Delaware, at the disposition of the captains, some at farm houses, others at mills, from three to twenty in a place.

In May of the following year, a conference was held at Lancaster, 1757. with deputies from the Six Nations, at which were present Governor Denny, Colonel Stanwix, and quite a number of the Council and Assembly.

The negotiations for peace, which had been commenced with Teedyuscung, were not accelerated by this recent council, and the Province was still exposed to continued devastation from the French and the western Indians, who roamed in small parties over the country, avoiding or attacking the forts and armed provincialists as they judged most safe. The counties of Cumberland, Berks, Northampton, and Lancaster, were, during the spring and summer months of 1757, kept in continual alarm, and some of the savage scalping parties were pushed on to within thirty miles of Philadelphia. Many of these wretches paid, with their lives, the just penalty of their temerity. But their sufferings bore no comparison with those of the unfortunate inhabitants. Incessant anxiety pervaded every family in the counties we have mentioned; their slumbers were broken by the yell of demons, or by the dread of an attack, scarce less horrid than their actual presence. The ground was plowed, the seed sown, and the harvest gathered, under the fear of the tomahawk and rifle. Scarce any outdoor labor was safely executed, unless protected by arms in the hands of the laborers, or by Provincial troops. Women visiting their sick neighbors were shot or captured; children driving home cattle from the field were killed and scalped; whilst the enemy, dastardly as cruel, shrunk from every equality of force. Many of the richest neighborhoods were deserted, and property of every kind given up to the foe. Many instances of heroism were displayed by men, women, and children in the defence of themselves and their homes, and in pursuing and combating the enemy. According to Gordon there was certainly a great want of ability and energy in the constituted authorities and the people of the Province. United councils and well-directed efforts might have driven the barbarians to their savage haunts, and repeated the chastisement they received at Kittanning, until they sued for peace. But imbecility distinguished the British ministers and officers, and discord paralyzed the efforts of the Provinces, especially that of Pennsylvania.

Despite the warlike attitude of England, nothing was done to annoy the French or to check the depredations of the savages, until a change of 1758. ministry, and the master mind of William Pitt, Earl of Chatham, assumed control of government. Endowed with a high order of intellect, eloquent, profound, and patriotic, it seemed as though the "heavens began to brighten and the storm to lose its power," the moment his mighty hand laid



hold of the helm of state. He seemed to possess in an eminent degree the full confidence of the nation and the command of all its resources. His plans of operations were grand, his policy bold, liberal, and enlightened, all which seemed greatly to animate the colonists and inspire them with renewed hopes. They resolved to make every effort and sacrifice which the occasion might require. A circular from the Premier assured the colonial governments that he was determined to repair past losses, and would immediately send to America a force sufficient to accomplish the purpose. He called upon the different governments to raise as many men as possible, promising to send over all the necessary munitions of war, and pledging himself to pay liberally all soldiers who enlisted.

Pennsylvania equipped two thousand seven hundred men, while the neighboring Provinces contributed large quotas. Three expeditions were determined upon, and the most active measures taken to bring them to the field.

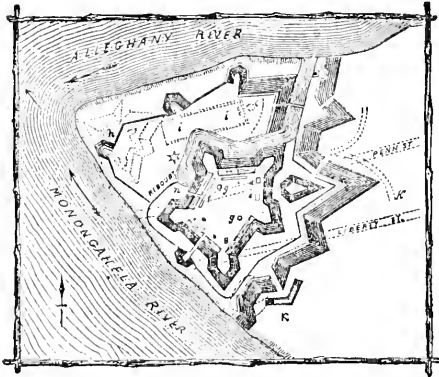
The Western expedition, more properly connected with the history of Pennsylvania, is the only one to which we shall refer. It was placed under the command of General John Forbes, an officer of great skill, energy, and resolution. His army consisted of nearly nine thousand men, embracing British regulars, and provincials from Pennsylvania and the Lower Counties, Virginia, Maryland, and North Carolina. The troops from the latter governments rendezvoused at Winchester, while the Pennsylvanians, under Colonel Bouquet, assembled at Raystown. The Commander-in-Chief, with the regulars, marched from Philadelphia to effect a junction with the force at Raystown, but in consequence of severe indisposition, General Forbes did not get farther than Carlisle, when he was compelled to stop. He marched to Bedford about the middle of September (1758), where he met the provincial troops under Colonel Washington. At the suggestion of Bouquet and the Pennsylvania officers, a new road was cut direct from Raystown to Loyal-hanna, a distance of forty-five miles, where Colonel Bouquet erected a fort. From this point Major Grant, with a select body of eight hundred men, was sent forward to ascertain the situation of affairs at the Forks, and to gain information as to the best mode of attack. During the night of the 20th of September he reached the hill near the junction of the two rivers now known by his name, and, at early dawn on the 21st, marched towards the fort. Presently, the French and Indians outrushed in great numbers, and ere the commander had time to press his men to the conflict, or even before they could bring their guns to bear, the foe were upon them, dealing death at every blow. Major Lewis, with his detachment of the rear guard, hearing the sound of battle, hurried to the relief of Major Grant, but this accession of strength was insufficient to check the headlong rush of the enemy, and both officers were taken prisoners. But a handful escaped to the camp of Colonel Bouquet.

On the 1st of November, General Forbes reached Loyal-hanna, and with as little delay as possible pushed on toward Fort Duquesne. When within a few miles of the fort, the General was chagrined to learn that the French, becoming alarmed at the augmented force of the English, and having lost most of their Indian allies, determined to abandon their position. Unwilling to leave to their successors anything to rejoice over, the former fired all the buildings and placed a slow-match to their magazine. The whole party then descended the Ohio by water. About midnight, as the army of Forbes lay at Turtle Creek,





"a tremendous explosion," says Ormsby in his narrative, "was heard from the westward, upon which the old General swore that the French magazine was blown up, either by accident or design." On the 25th of November the army took peaceable possession of the place, the blackened walls and charred out-posts alone remaining of that once proud fortress. On its ruins rose Fort Pitt.



PLAN OF FORT PITT.

With the fall of Fort Duquesne terminated the struggle between France and England in the valley of the Ohio. The posts on French Creek still remained, but it was deemed unnecessary to proceed against them, as the character of the war in the North left very little doubt that the contest would soon cease, by the complete overthrow of the French. In 1759, Ticonderoga, Crown Point, Niagara, and Quebec, yielded to the British arms, and on the 8th of September of the following year (1760), Montreal, Detroit,

and all of Canada were surrendered by the French. The Treaty of Fontainebleau, in November, 1762, put an end to the war.

Another council was held in Easton, in October, 1758, at which the chiefs, both of the Six Nations and the Delawares, were present, and met the agents of Pennsylvania and New Jersey, and George Croghan, the agent of Sir William Johnson. The causes of the late war were fully discussed, complaints of the Indians concerning land were listened to, and all differences amicably adjusted; and a message was sent by the Six Nations ordering the Shawanese and Twigtwees, on the Ohio, to desist from their hostilities, on penalty of being attacked by them. Teedyuscung, at this treaty, received one of those insulting taunts from the Six Nations by which they too often exhibited their national superiority; taunts, however, which were deeply revenged upon the whites in after years, when the Delawares had thrown off the galling yoke. Teedyuscung supported his station with dignity and firmness, and refused to succumb; and the different Indian tribes at length became reconciled to each other.

The capture of Quebec in 1759, by the force under the command of 1759. the lamented General Wolfe, created, not only in England, but in the Provinces, "a delirium of joy."

Franklin, who was in England as the agent of Pennsylvania, amidst the excitement occasioned by the victory for the British arms, was necessitated to correct the misrepresentation of the motives and conduct of the Assembly and inhabitants of Pennsylvania. While there he published an "Historical Review of Pennsylvania," but, written for party purposes, it contains party views, and, of consequence, violations of truth.

In October, 1759, Governor Denny was superseded by James Hamilton. The removal of the former was in consequence of yielding to the demands of the Assembly and passing their money bill.



The results of the late campaign, whilst they inspirited the Provinces to new exertions, brought peace and security to the middle colonies. The  
**1760.** impoverished and exiled agriculturists, to the number of four thousand, returned to their labors, which, prosecuted in security, brought contentment and competence, whilst the merchant again found sources of wealth in the Indian trade. Pennsylvania, oppressed by taxes, and largely indebted to the soldiery, gladly seized the occasion to reduce her force to one hundred and fifty men, officers included, against the remonstrances of the Governor, and the Generals Amherst and Stanwix. But, on command of the Crown to furnish a like number of troops as for the last campaign, the Assembly voted twenty-seven hundred men, and reported a bill, granting to his Majesty's use one hundred thousand pounds, for levying, paying, and clothing them.

The town of Boston having been afflicted by a grievous conflagration, the Assembly of Pennsylvania, on the application of Governor Pownall, of Massachusetts, and at the instance of Governor Hamilton, \* generously granted to the sufferers the sum of fifteen hundred pounds.



JAMES HAMILTON.

During the winter the French attempted to retrieve their affairs in Canada. A large force was concentrated at Montreal, but General Amherst, Commander-in-Chief of the British forces in America, had an army competent to the utter annihilation of the French, and too ambitious to effect this object, moved simultaneously the armies of Quebec, Lake Champlain, and Lake Ontario, on Montreal. With this corps, composed of ten thousand British and Provincials, and one thousand Indians under Sir William Johnson, resistance was in vain, and in September every French post had capitulated. Thus fell forever the great power of France in America.

The whole of the forces raised by the Province of Pennsylvania had  
**1761.** been discharged at the close of the last campaign, except one hundred and fifty men, a part of whom were employed in transporting provisions from Niagara, and in garrison at Presqu'Isle and Le Bœuf. These were detained until they should be relieved by a detachment of the Royal Americans, but such was the weakness of that regiment that this had hitherto been impracticable. The remainder was in garrison at Forts Allen and Augusta. The latter, situated at the forks of the Susquehanna, commanded both branches of that river, which

---

\* JAMES HAMILTON was the son of Andrew Hamilton, and a native of Philadelphia, born about 1711. At the death of his father, in 1741, he was left in possession of a handsome fortune, and in the appointment of prothonotary, then the most lucrative office in the Province. He was appointed Lieutenant Governor in 1748, serving to October, 1754. He filled the same office from 1759 to 1763. He held several other offices of distinction in the Province, and enjoyed the confidence and esteem of the people, but his loyal feelings to the Crown caused him to be unfriendly to the Revolution. He died at New York, August 14, 1783.



rendered its preservation highly important. The Governor urged the Assembly to provide means to pay the troops for the time they had remained in service beyond their contract, and to maintain Fort Augusta. To the latter the House assented after much debate, voting a guard of thirty men; but the former they promptly refused, referring the men for payment to the Crown, by which they were employed.

The Province of Pennsylvania now looked for the enjoyment of a long and undisturbed peace, since her mild and forbearing policy had conciliated the Indians, and their dangerous neighbors, the French, were removed. But the sources in which they sought for safety were fruitful of dangers. The unprotected state of the frontiers, consequent on the discharge of the forces of the middle and southern colonies, held forth irresistible temptations to the whetted appetite of the border savages for plunder. Their hostility had been rewarded rather than chastised by Pennsylvania; every treaty of peace was accompanied by rich presents, and their detention of the prisoners was overlooked upon slight apologies, though obviously done to afford opportunities for new treaties and additional gifts. The mistaken and perverted humanity of the Quakers had softened down their offences, and its apologies gave them confidence in their allegations of injuries received from the whites. These reasons, however, are insufficient to account for the wide extension of the Indian confederacy, which was probably caused by motives of profound policy. The aborigines beheld the French driven out of their whole country, themselves threatened by forts commanding the great lakes and rivers, and they felt that an immediate and mighty effort was necessary to restrain the tide, which now, unimpeded, would spread itself over the continent.

War with Spain was declared on the 4th of January, 1762. This created a greater alarm for the safety of the Province, and especially for Philadelphia, than had previously existed, as Spain was then in possession of a powerful navy.

The Governor forthwith convened the Assembly, and the members being sensible of the weakness of the Province, the House immediately appropriated £23,500, which appears to have been the parliamentary allotment for 1759. Five thousand pounds were also appropriated for the erection of a fort mounting twenty cannon, on Mud Island, near the mouth of the Schuylkill. The fortification, hurriedly erected during this period of alarm, and which bore the name of the island upon which it was erected, has been supplied by the respectable fortress known as Fort Mifflin, being so named in honor of Governor Thomas Mifflin.

The large number of negroes imported about this time became alarming to the people. The Assembly of Pennsylvania had enacted a law imposing a prohibitory duty on their introduction, which was repealed by the Crown. Other colonies, including Virginia and South Carolina, had enacted laws to restrain the importation of slaves, but the enactments failed to receive the royal sanction. Bancroft says, "never before had England pursued the traffic in negroes with such eager avarice." Pitt resigned his position as head of the British Ministry, and was succeeded by the Earl of Egremont—a most unfortunate change for colonial independence. A treaty of peace between England and



France was concluded towards the close of this year, but was not proclaimed in Philadelphia until the 26th of January, 1763. Peace with Spain soon followed, leaving our ancestors none but Indian enemies to contend with.

For boldness of attempt and depth of design, the Kiyasuta and Pontiac war, so named by the frontier inhabitants, was perhaps unsurpassed in 1763. the annals of border warfare. Schemed by such renowned chiefs, Kiyasuta, head of the Senecas, and Pontiac, of the Ottawas, the numerous tribes lying within the reach of their influence were easily commanded for the prosecution of any new project. Not only in possession of these grand facilities to engage numerous warriors for the present purpose, they availed themselves still of additional means to secure a powerful confederacy, by calling in aid their eloquence to represent the necessity there was for defence of their own rights, in making a deadly repulse against the encroachments of the English colonies, which they represented as having finally in view the hostile displacement or extermination of every western tribe from the region they now occupied. With such means to stimulate them to action, while the recompense of their services, by the acquisition of spoil and the more inviting reward, the renown of the warrior, were related to them in the most seductive colors, it may not be wondered that the plan of those cunning chieftains was immediately approved of, and a zealous interest manifested.

The grand scheme projected by these Napoleons of the western wilderness seems to have been to arouse the tribes severally of the country, and all those they could reach by their eloquence, to join in striking a decisive blow on the frontiers, and, as it were, throw terror into the very heart of the colonies, and thereby effectually and for ever repulse them from encroachments into the valley of the West. A certain day was set apart, it seems, for making the general assault, while the scheme was to be kept in profound silence, that they might come upon their victims in an unguarded hour. All the forts were to be simultaneously attacked as well as the settlements, and all individuals whom they could come upon, and with one bold sweep, as it were, raze to the earth everything bearing the mark of their doomed enemies. The season of harvest was chosen, that the attention of the people might at the time be drawn to their crops, as well as the work of havoc then be greater by their destruction of them.

When the attack was made it was found not to be simultaneous. That on Fort Pitt and vicinity was made almost two or three days before the time agreed upon for the general attack, although it was done with the belief at the time that the day had arrived. The misunderstanding was said to proceed from the officiousness of a Delaware squaw, who was desirous that their plans might be deranged. At the grand council held by all the tribes for the appointment of the day for the general attack and making the necessary arrangements for it, a bundle of rods had been put into the hands of every tribe, each bundle containing as many rods as there were days till the day when the general attack was to be made. One rod was to be drawn from the bundle every morning, and when a single one remained, it was the signal for the outbreak. The squaw spoken of had purposely extracted two or three rods unknowingly to the others, thinking it might materially disconcert, if not defeat, their project. From this circum-





stance was said to arise the untimely action of the Indians about Fort Pitt. But everywhere else the attack had been simultaneous, so correct and in such concert had they moved.

The Shawanese and Delawares appear to have been the most active, and in pursuance of their bold and bloody project, the moment arriving for the general assault, the first intelligence their fated enemies had of the preconceived work of death was a murderous attack made upon them without discrimination wherever met with. The frontier settlements of Pennsylvania, and the neighboring provinces of Maryland and Virginia, were immediately overrun with scalping parties, "marking their way with blood and devastation wherever they went, and all the examples of savage cruelty which never fail to accompany an Indian war."

Almost every fort along the lakes and the Ohio was instantly attacked, and those that did not fall under the first assault were surrounded, and a resolute siege commenced. In a short time, so vigorous were the savages, that eight out of eleven forts were taken—Venango, Le Bœuf, Presqu'Isle, with the chain of stockades west of the Ohio; Fort Pitt, Detroit, and Niagara alone maintaining. These being better garrisoned, were prepared to withstand an attack with but little danger.

After the first panic had passed away, the refugee settlers associated themselves together, and, under the care of divisions of the regular troops and militia, succeeded in collecting and saving the remnant of their crops.

In the latter end of August, a party of volunteers from Lancaster county, one hundred and ten in number, intercepted at Muncy Creek Hill a number of Indians proceeding from Great Island, in the Susquehanna, to the frontier settlements of the Province. The Indians, who were about fifty in number, were compelled to fly, after a half hour's sharp firing. They renewed the attack, however, twice on the next day, but without success. In these skirmishes the Indians lost twelve killed, and many wounded; the provincials, four killed, and as many wounded.

Colonel Armstrong collected a force of about three hundred volunteers from the vicinity of Shippensburg, Bedford, and Carlisle, under Captains Laughlin, Patterson, Hamilton, Crawford, Sharp, and others, for the purpose of attacking the settlements of Muncy and the Great Island. This little army left Fort Shirley, on the Aughwick, on the 30th of September, in high hopes of surprising the enemy, and inflicting upon them a severe punishment. But on their arrival they discovered that the Indians had left their settlement some days before. Colonel Armstrong having learned that there was a small village called Myonaghquia, to which it was supposed the savages had retired, pushed on with a party of one hundred and fifty men, and traveled with such expedition and secrecy, that the enemy, a few only in number, were scarce able to escape, leaving their food hot upon their bark tables, which was prepared for dinner. The army destroyed at this village, and at Great Island, a large quantity of grain and other provisions.

During this time Fort Pitt remained in the most hazardous condition. And what may have been its situation already, apprehensions for the worst were entertained, for no accounts from it had been received of late, and in fact nothing



definite since it had been attacked, when it had been surrounded by the Indians, and "all communication cut off from it even by message." Placed at so great a distance from the inhabited portions of the Province, and rendered still more inaccessible from the then almost impassible mountains that intercepted the way, it could not be conveniently heard from, nor could assistance be rendered it without great expense of labor and time; and a considerable force being requisite for their own safety, to undertake a march so distant, some delay could not be avoided. Endeavors in the Province to raise men proving nearly abortive, although the Assembly at the first outbreak of the savages had ordered seven hundred men to be raised for the protection of the frontiers during harvest, yet all attempts now seemed to have little effect. The delay which had thus been occasioned increased the alarm for those at Fort Pitt, from whom no intelligence still was had, while the audacity of depredating parties was increased, as they discovered the settlers fleeing before them, and no very apparent effort being made to check them.

All exertions proving fruitless to raise the requisite forces, General Amherst, Commander-in-Chief of the army in America, promptly dispatched Colonel Bouquet to the relief of Fort Pitt. Gathering together "the shattered remnants of the Forty-second and Seventy-second Regiments, lately returned from the West Indies," comprising in all scarcely five hundred men, the gallant Bouquet set out for a long and tedious march through the forests. His little army were indeed invalids, "reinforced with the last man that could be removed from the hospital," and many were so infirm that about sixty were conveyed in wagons; but these had been brought along more with a view of being left as reinforcements at the small posts by the way. Accompanying this little force, however, were six companies of rangers from Lancaster and Cumberland counties, amounting to two hundred, all that could possibly be spared from the Provincial volunteers, who were guarding their own homes from the inroads of the enemy.

Reaching Carlisle, Colonel Bouquet found nothing had been done to carry out the orders which had been given to prepare a convoy of provisions on the frontiers. All was terror and consternation; the greatest part of Cumberland county, through which the army had to pass, was deserted; and the roads were covered with distressed families, flying from their settlements, and destitute of all the necessaries of life. In the midst of this confusion, says Bouquet in his journal, the supplies required for the expedition became very precarious; nor was it less difficult to procure horses and wagons for the use of the troops. However, in about two weeks after his arrival at Carlisle, by the prudent and active measures pursued by the commander, joined to his knowledge of the country and the diligence of those he employed, the requisite provisions and articles of conveyance were procured, and the army proceeded.

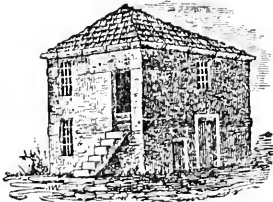
Considerable anxiety had been felt for the safety of Fort Ligonier. It had been surrounded and attacked by the savages, and fears were entertained of its falling into their hands. There being a large quantity of military stores within it, it became a matter of great moment to keep it from falling into the hands of the Indians. Captain Currie, who commanded at Fort Bedford, apprehensive of this, had early sent twenty volunteers, good marksmen, to its aid. The perilous situation of Fort Ligonier coming to Colonel Bouquet's knowledge after he left



Carlisle, and fearing the savages might carry it, and thereby enabled, from the munitions of war that would fall into their hands, to make a more vigorous attack on Fort Pitt, and likely demolish it before he could reach it, he determined to send a small detachment ahead to its relief. A party of thirty men was dispatched with proper guides, who, with skillful and forced marches, succeeded in making their way through the woods, undiscovered by the enemy till they came within sight of the Fort, where they were intercepted by the Indians, but by making a sally, reached the Fort amidst some random shots unhurt.

Fort Bedford also, at this time, was in rather a ruinous condition and weakly garrisoned, although it had been strengthened by the two small intermediate posts, Forts Loudoun and Lyttleton, which had been abandoned for that purpose. The families for twenty and thirty miles around had collected themselves here for safety so soon as the alarm had reached them; and many had not yet reached the Fort when they found themselves pursued by the merciless enemy, with whose hands some forty persons fell, those not being scalped and killed carried into hopeless captivity. Satisfied with their slaughter, they made no attack on the Fort, happily for those within it, for the attempt might have proved successful, there being but a few volunteers to defend it, until two companies of infantry detached from the approaching army had reached it.

On the 25th of July the rear of the army reached Bedford, but nothing satisfactory could be gathered respecting the enemy nor the situation of Fort Pitt. The force moved forward with some difficulty across the mountains to Ligonier. Everything was yet in uncertainty, and the army again continued their route. Before them lay the Turtle Creek hills, a deep and dangerous defile. Colonel Bouquet concluded to pass these during the night, by a forced march, as an advantageous position there might be chosen by the savages to waylay the troops. Approaching these hills the 5th of August, after a march of seventeen miles, and



REDOUBT AT FORT PITT, 1763.

it being yet early in the afternoon, it was determined to halt at Bushy Run, a short distance ahead, and there rest the troops till towards evening, and pass the Turtle Creek defile during the ensuing night; but when within about a half-mile from the creek, the advanced guard of the army was suddenly surprised by an ambuscade of Indians opening a brisk fire of musketry upon them. Being speedily and firmly supported, by bringing up the rear, a charge of bayonets was ordered, which effectually routed the savages, when they were pursued a short distance. But no sooner was the pursuit given up than they returned and renewed the attack with redoubled vigor, while at the same moment a most galling fire was opened by the parties who had been concealed on some high ground that skirted the flanks of the army. A general charge with the whole line was now made, which proved effective, and the savages were obliged to give way; but withal to no purpose, for no sooner was the pursuit again given up than the Indians renewed the attack with their wonted ferocity. The action continued without intermission the whole afternoon—a confused and irregular attack by the forces of both parties. The enemy, routed from one



skulking place, would retreat to another. But Colonel Bouquet made it an object as much as possible to keep his troops collected, that they might not be broken in upon and dispersed by the enemy. The battle ended with the day without any decided advantage to either.

With the first dawn of morning the war-whoop was again raised, and in a moment there seemed a thousand startling yells to break in every direction around. At this signal a rush was made by the Indians on all sides, but the lines ready formed were not to be taken by surprise, and effectually repulsed the savages in every attempt. Betaking themselves to the trees, the Indians poured an incessant fire with great precision into the little army. Fatigued with the previous day's march and the battle of the preceding evening, combined with the exposure to a hot August sun, with no water within their reach, the troops began indeed to be dispirited. Attacked with a dogged determination, and fired upon without intercession, they could neither retreat nor proceed. It became obvious, therefore, that a desperate effort must be made to save the army from total destruction. The commander happily bethought himself of a stratagem that might prove successful, which, as the troops were still disposed in a circle from the previous night, consisted in making a manœuvre of the appearance of a precipitate retreat from one side, so as to entrap the assailants in pursuit, who would rush as thoughtless within the enclosure of lines which lay in ambushade.

The snare was set in direction of the enemy's deadliest fire, and most happily succeeded in enticing them from their places of concealment. Before aware, they were under a most destructive fire of the troops; and ere they could retreat, they received so deadly a charge from the regulars, that they fled with the utmost precipitation. This secured the victory. The woods around were immediately abandoned by the others, and the conflict ceased.

This had been the whole Indian force from Fort Pitt, remarks Patterson in his "Backwoods," who, after lying around that place for three months, keeping up a vigorous siege, and being on the alert for a force to come against them from the settlements, early became apprised of the approach of Colonel Bouquet, and informed duly by their spies of the movement of the enemy, they determined, as was expected, to await them on the most advantageous ground, aware that if they succeeded in defeating the troops, the extent of country they had already gained sway over, by their sudden and bold movements, would not only be maintained, but a probability follow that they might strike consternation into the very heart of the settlements. It is indeed impossible to say what influence might have been exerted over the settlements of Pennsylvania in particular, had this little army been cut off. It is certain, possession of the country might not have been regained till the work of destruction had been completed west of the mountains. But so stunning were the results of this battle to the savages, dismay at once siezed them and confidence was lost. Though looked upon as a small engagement, there doubtless hung upon it results nigh as important to the colonies as the issue of the more renowned battle on the Plains of Abraham, when a Wolfe and a Montcalm met to decide the destinies of their respective nations.

The little battle of Bushy Run was the means of disheartening the Indians and causing them to abandon designs which, if they had continued to execute

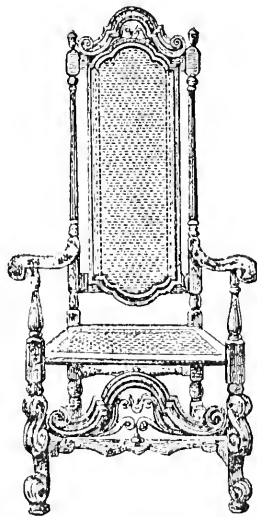




with the same rigor that had characterized them for a little more than three months since they had commenced the assault, might have effected much that would be fearful to relate.

In this engagement Colonel Bouquet lost about fifty men, and had sixty wounded, the savages about sixty of their best warriors and many of their most distinguished chiefs. Their forces were made up with warriors from the Delaware, Shawanese, Mingo, Wyandot, Mohickan, Miami, and Ottawa tribes, and doubtless the flower of their nations, for the importance of the issue of the first decisive engagement had most likely been well weighed by them, and therefore an effort made for the victory.

The army again pursued their route, and in four days reached Fort Pitt, with but little interruption except "a few scattering shots from a disheartened and flying enemy." The Indians immediately withdrew and retired beyond the Ohio. Fort Pitt relieved, found its little group of inhabitants again breathing the open air, after a constant siege of more than three months.



THE OLD PENN CHAIR.



## CHAPTER VII.

INDIAN DEPREDEATIONS ON THE FRONTIERS. THE DESTRUCTION OF THE INDIANS AT CONESTOGA. THE SO-CALLED INSURRECTION OF THE PAXTANG BOYS. BOUQUET'S EXPEDITION TO THE MUSKINGUM. 1763-1764.



THE expedition of Bouquet served, in a great measure, to check the depredations of the Indians, and for a few months the frontiers of Pennsylvania were quiet. Had the Assembly acted promptly in the matter, an effectual defence could have been provided.

As the winter approached, and the dread of the regular forces subsided, the savages commenced and prosecuted their outrages on the northern and western frontier, and, occasionally, penetrated the interior counties. They seldom appeared in force, and when they did, were uniformly defeated and routed by the rangers, or parties of the inhabitants; but in small squads, stealing through the woods, they attacked the settlers in their homes in the dead of the night, or whilst engaged in their occupations in the fields, burning houses and barns, and slaughtering men, women, and children. Sometimes these parties were discovered and pursued, and, when overtaken, shot and bayoneted without mercy.

The road to Fort Pitt was again interrupted. A supply of provisions, under a convoy of sixty men, was forwarded from Bedford to Fort Pitt, but, on gaining the foot of the Allegheny mountains, was compelled to return, having learned that the passages were occupied by the savages. Some fragments of the Delaware and Six Nation tribes remained at their settlements in the interior, refusing to join their brethren in arms, professing affection to the colonists, and avowing a determination to continue neutral. But the neutrality of a part, at least, of these Indians, was very doubtful. Many outrages were committed in consequence, as was generally believed, of the information and advice they gave to the invaders; and some murders were perpetrated, which the public voice ascribed to a party under the protection of the Moravian Brethren. The situation of the frontiers was truly deplorable, principally owing to the supineness of the Provincial authorities, for the Quakers, who controlled the government, were, to use the language of Lazarus Stewart, "more solicitous for the welfare of the blood-thirsty Indian than for the lives of the frontiersmen." In their blind partiality, bigotry, and political prejudice, they would not readily accede to the demands of those of a different religious faith. To them, therefore, was greatly attributable the reign of horror and devastation in the border counties. The government was deaf to all entreaties, and General Amherst, commander of the British forces in America, did not hesitate to give his feelings an emphatic expression. "*The conduct of the Pennsylvania Assembly,*" he wrote, "*is altogether so infatuated and stupidly obstinate, that I want words to express my indignation thereat.*" Nevertheless, the sturdy Scotch-Irish and Germans of the frontiers rallied for



their own defence, and the entire force of Col. Bouquet was composed of them. The inhabitants of Paxtang, then Lancaster, now Dauphin, at the outset of "Pontiac's conspiracy," enrolled themselves into several companies, the Rev.



INDIAN DEPRIDATIONS ON THE FRONTIERS.

John Elder being their colonel Lazarus Stewart, Matthew Smith, and Asher Clayton, men of acknowledged military ability and prowess, commanded distinct companies of "rangers." These brave men were ever on the alert, watching



with eagle eye the Indian marauders, who, during Pontiac's war, swooped down upon the defenceless frontiers of Cumberland and Lancaster counties. "High mountains, swollen rivers, or great distances never deterred or appalled them. Their courage and fortitude were equal to every undertaking, and woe betide the red men when their blood-stained tracks once met their eyes." The Paxtang rangers were truly the terror of the Indians; swift on foot, excellent horsemen, good shots, skillful in pursuit or in escape, dexterous as scouts, and expert in manœuvring.

On the 4th of August, 1763, Col. Elder wrote to the Governor: "The service your honor was pleased to appoint me to I have performed to the best of my power, though not with success equal to my desires. However, both companies will, I imagine, be complete in a few days. There are now upwards of thirty men in each, exclusive of officers, who are now and have been employed since their enlistment in such service as is thought most safe and encouraging to the frontier inhabitants, who are, here and everywhere else in the back counties, quite sunk and dispirited, so that it 's to be feared that at any attack of the enemy a considerable part of the country will be evacuated, as all seem inclinable to seek safety rather in flight than in opposing the savage foe."

On the 9th of September, 1763, a few of the rangers who had encamped in Berks county were apprised of the approach of the Indians by their out-scouts. The Indians advanced cautiously, to take them by surprise. When near, with savage yells, they rushed forward; but the rangers, springing to their feet, shot the three in front. The rest fled into a thicket and escaped. The Indians were armed with guns and provided with ammunition. These Indians were on their way from the Moravian Indians, in Northampton county, to the Big Island. Runners were sent to the different parties of rangers with information, and others set out in pursuit of those who fled. The rangers who started in pursuit were baffled by the superior skill and artifice of the Indians. That they went to the Big Island was beyond a doubt. The Paxtang band were now determined to watch, with scrutinizing eyes, the Indians who visited Conestoga, and Nain, and Wichetunk, and ascertain the treacherous.

The Provincial commissioners, on being informed of the above particulars, subsequently inquired into the facts with the Governor, and reported the result to the Assembly on the 21st of October: "Upon inquiry made before the Governor into the late conduct of the Moravians and their Indians at Nain and Wichetunk, it was their opinion that the said Indians have been, and still are, secretly supplied by the *Brethren* with arms and ammunition, which they, the said Indians, having an intercourse with our enemies on the frontiers, do barter and exchange with them, to the great danger of the neighboring inhabitants, and that there is much reason to suspect the said Moravian Indians have also been principally concerned in the late murders committed near Bethlehem, in the county of Northampton, which renders it absolutely necessary to remove them into the interior parts of the Province, where their behavior may be more closely observed. It was ordered by the House of Assembly that the Indians be invited down and lodged at some convenient place, and supported at the public expense. Some were placed in the barracks, others on Province Island."

About the middle of October, when the murder of the Stinson family and





others reached the ears of the Paxtang men, they solicited their colonel, the Rev. Mr. Elder, to obtain permission of the Governor to allow them to make an excursion against the enemy. Another object had in view was "to destroy the immense quantities of corn *left* by the New England men at Wyoming, which if not consumed, would be a considerable magazine to the enemy, and enable them with more ease to distress the inhabitants." At the most earnest solicitation, therefore, of his men, Colonel Elder allowed the companies of Captains Stewart and Clayton to proceed to Wyoming. They marched in three days and a half one hundred and ten miles on foot. When they reached Wyoming they learned that the bloodthirsty savage had preceded them, entering the valley from the direction of Northampton county, and then taken their departure up the river, murdering all the settlers. Colonel Elder, in his letter to Governor Hamilton, was under the impression that owing to the exposed condition of that region of country, the New England men had fled from the valley. Dispirited and shocked at the Indian atrocities, the rangers, after burying the massacred, burned the Indian houses and a quantity of corn left standing, and returned to their homes. Such scenes as these frontiersmen beheld were calculated to rouse resentment in their breasts against all of the name of Indian, and we who live perfectly secure in this year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and seventy-six cannot form an adequate conception of the perils which encompassed the hearths and homes of our ancestors. One need not wonder at the desperation to which they were driven, when through the neglect of the Provincial authorities, the depredations of the savages grew more frequent. Governor Hamilton, it is true, called the attention of the Assembly to the sad condition of the settlers on the frontiers, of the houses destroyed, farms laid waste, barns, grain, fences, etc., burned to ashes, and numberless murders, but all to no purpose.

The murders in and around Paxtang, notwithstanding the vigilance of the rangers, became numerous, and many a family mourned for some of their number shot by the secret foe or carried away captive. The frontiersmen took their rifles with them to the field and to the sanctuary. Their colonel and pastor placed his trusty piece beside him in the pulpit. It is stated that at one time the meeting-house was surrounded while he was preaching; but their spies having counted the rifles, the Indians retired from their ambuscade without making an attack. Deed after deed was perpetrated by the savage Indians—but where these came from was a mystery.

Indians had been traced by the scouts to the wigwams of the friendly Indians at Conestoga and to those of the Moravian Indians in Northampton county. Suspicion was awakened; the questions, "Are these Christian Indians treacherous? Are their wigwams the harbors of our deadly foe? Do they conceal the nightly prowling assassin of the forest—the villain, who, with savage ferocity, tore the innocent babe from the bosom of its mother where it had been quietly reposing, and hurled it in the fire? The mangled bodies of our friends cry aloud for vengeance." Such were the questions, surmises, and expressions of the exasperated people. The Paxtang rangers were active in endeavoring to discover the perpetrators of those acts of violence.

The Quakers who controlled the government, as heretofore remarked, "seemed



resolved," says Parkman, "that they would neither defend the people of the frontier nor allow them to defend themselves, vehemently inveighed against all expeditions to cut off the Indian marauders. Their security was owing to their local situation, being confined to the eastern part of the Province." That such was the case, rather than to the kind feelings of the Indian towards them, is shown by the fact that of the very few living in exposed positions several were killed.

The people declared openly they no longer confided in the professions of the Governor or his advisers; numbers of volunteers joined the rangers of Northampton, Berks, Lancaster, York, and Cumberland, who were engaged in tracing the midnight assassins. On the Manor, a portion of land surveyed for the Proprietaries, situated in Lancaster county near where the borough of Columbia is located, was settled a band of squalid, miserable Indians—the refuse of sundry tribes. Time and again they were suspected of murder and thievery, and their movements at this crisis were closely watched. *Strange* Indians were constantly coming and going.

Colonel Elder, under date of September 13, 1763, thus wrote to Governor Hamilton: "I suggest to you the propriety of an immediate removal of the Indians from Conestoga, and placing a garrison in their room. *In case this is done, I pledge myself for the future security of the frontiers.*"

Subsequently, on taking charge of the executive affairs of the Province, in October, Governor John Penn\* replied as follows: "The Indians of Conestoga have been represented as innocent, helpless, and dependent on this government for support. The faith of this government is pledged for their protection. I cannot remove them without adequate cause. The contract made with William Penn was a private agreement, afterwards confirmed by several treaties. Care has been taken by the provincial committee that no Indians but our own visit Conestoga. Whatever can be faithfully executed under the laws, shall be as faithfully performed."

John Harris had previously made a similar request: "The Indians here I hope your honor will be pleased to cause to be removed to some other place, *as I don't like their company.*"

The rangers, finding appeals to the authorities useless, resolved on taking the law into their own hands. Several Indian murderers had been traced to Conestoga, and it was determined to take them prisoners. Captain Stewart, whose men



JOHN PENN.

\* JOHN PENN, the son of Richard and grandson of William Penn, was born in Philadelphia, in 1728, from which circumstance he was called the "American Penn." He was Governor of the Province from 1763 to 1771, and also from 1773 to the end of the Proprietary government in 1776. He continued in the country during the Revolution. In 1777, having refused to sign a parole, he was confined by the Whigs at Fredericksburg, Va. Governor Penn died at his country seat in Bucks county, in February, 1795.



ascertained this fact, acquainted his colonel of the object, who seemed rather to encourage his command to make the trial, as an example was necessary to be made for the safety of the frontier inhabitants. The destruction of the Conestogas was not then projected. That was the result of the attempted capture. Parkman and Webster, following Rupp, state that Colonel Elder, learning of an intent to destroy the entire tribe, as they were about to set off, rode after them commanding them to desist; that Stewart threatened to shoot his horse, and much more. Such was not the case. From a letter dated Paxtang, December 16, 1763, written to Governor Penn, he says: "On receiving intelligence, the 13th inst., that a number of persons were assembled on purpose to go and cut off the Conestoga Indians, in concert with Mr. Foster, the neighboring magistrate, I hurried off an express with a *written message* to that party, 'entreating them to desist from such an undertaking, representing to them the unlawfulness and barbarity of such an action, that it's cruel and unchristian in its nature, and would be fatal in its consequences to themselves and families; that private persons have no right to take the lives of any under the protection of the legislature; that they must, if they proceeded in that affair, lay their accounts to meet with a severe prosecution, and become liable even to capital punishment; that they need not expect that the country would endeavor to conceal or screen them from punishment, but that they would be detected and given up to the resentment of the government.' These things I urged in the warmest terms in order to prevail with them to drop the enterprise, but to no purpose."

Not to be deterred, the rangers reached the Indian settlement before daylight. The barking of some dogs discovered them, and a number of *strange Indians* rushed from their wigwams, brandishing their tomahawks. This show of resistance was sufficient inducement for the rangers to make use of their arms. In a few moments every Indian present fell before the unerring fire of the brave frontiersmen. The act accomplished, they mounted their horses and returned severally to their homes. Unfortunately a number of the Indians were absent from Conestoga, prowling about the neighboring settlements, doubtless on predatory incursions. The destruction at the Manor becoming known, they were placed in the Lancaster work-house for protection. Among these vagabonds were two well known to Parson Elder's scouts.

An express being sent to Philadelphia with the news, great excitement ensued, and Governor Penn issued a proclamation relative thereto. Notwithstanding its fine array of words, it fell upon the Province harmless. Outside of the Quaker settlements every one heartily approved of the measures taken by the Paxtang rangers.

The presence of the remaining Indians at Lancaster soon became a cause of great uneasiness to the magistrates and people, for as previously remarked, two or three were notorious scoundrels. It may be here related that several of the *strange Indians* harbored at Conestoga, who were also absent at the destruction of the village, made their escape and reached Philadelphia, where they joined the Moravian Indians from Nain and Wichetunk, and there secreted.

The removal of the Conestoga Indians from Lancaster was requested by the chief magistrate, Edward Shippen. Governor Penn proved very tardy, and we are of the opinion he cared little about them, or he would have acted promptly



Day after day passed by, and the excitement throughout the frontiers became greater. The rangers, who found that their work had been only half done, consulted as to what measures should be further proceeded with. Captain Stewart proposed to capture the principal Indian outlaw, who was confined in the Lancaster work-house, and take him to Carlisle jail, where he could be held for trial. This was heartily approved of, and accordingly a detachment of the rangers, variously estimated at from twenty to fifty, proceeded to Lancaster on the 27th of December, broke into the work-house, and but for the show of resistance would have effected their purpose. But the younger portion of the rangers, to whom was confided this work, were so enraged at the defiance of the Indians, that before their resentment could be repressed by Captain Stewart, the unerring rifle was employed, and the last of the so-called Conestogas had yielded up his life. In a few minutes thereafter, mounting their horses, the daring rangers were safe from pursuit. George Gibson, who, from his acquaintance with the principal frontiersmen of his time, in a letter written some years after, gives the most plausible account of this transaction, which bore such an important part in the early history of the Province. He says: "No murder has been committed since the removal of the friendly Indians and the destruction of Conestoga—a strong proof that the murders were committed under the cloak of the Moravian Indians. . . . A description of an Indian who had, with great barbarity, murdered a family on the Susquehanna, near Paxtang, was sent to Lazarus Stewart at Lancaster. This Indian had been traced to Conestoga. On the day of its destruction he was on a hunting expedition. When he heard that the rangers were in pursuit of him, he fled to Philadelphia. . . . The three or four who entered the work-house at Lancaster were directed by Stewart to seize on the murderer, and give him to his charge. When those outside heard the report of the guns within, several of the rangers alighted, thinking their friends in danger, and hastened to the door. The more active of the Indians, endeavoring to make their escape, were met by them and shot. No children were killed by the Paxtang boys. No act of savage butchery was committed."

If the excitement throughout the Province was great after the affair at Conestoga, this last transaction set everything in a ferment. "No language," says Rev. Dr. Wallace, "can describe the outcry which arose from the Quakers in Philadelphia, or the excitement which swayed to and fro in the frontiers and in the city." The Quakers blamed the Governor, the Governor the Assembly, and the latter censured everybody except their own inaction. Two proclamations were issued by the Provincial authorities offering rewards for the seizure of those concerned in the destruction of the Indians, but this was impossible, owing to the exasperation of the frontiersmen, who heartily approved of the action of the rangers.

On the 27th of December, the Rev. Mr. Elder hurriedly wrote to Governor Penn: "The storm, which had been so long gathering, has at length exploded. Had government removed the Indians from Conestoga, as was frequently urged without success, this painful catastrophe might have been avoided. What could I do with men heated to madness? All that I could do was done. I expostulated, but life and reason were set at defiance, and yet the men, in private life,





were virtuous and respectable—not cruel, but mild and merciful. . . . The time will arrive when each palliating circumstance will be calmly weighed. This deed, magnified into the blackest of crimes, shall be considered one of those youthful ebullitions of wrath caused by momentary excitement, to which human infirmity is subjected.”

To this extenuating and warm-hearted letter, came a reply, under date of December 29, 1763, from the Governor: “As it is absolutely necessary, for the preservation of peace and good order in the government, that an immediate stop be put to such riotous proceedings, I beg you will continue to use your best endeavors to discourage and suppress all insurrections that may appear among any of the people over whom you have an influence, and that you will be pleased to take all the pains in your power to learn the names of the ringleaders and perpetrators of those barbarities, and to acquaint me with everything you can discover concerning them. The Commissioners, not thinking it necessary any longer to keep in pay more than one person to command the troops on the east side of the Susquehanna, came yesterday to a resolution to discontinue the pay of yourself and Mr. Seeley as commanders of the companies in Lancaster and Berks counties, which are for the future to be put under the direction of Major Clayton, as well as those in Northampton. I, therefore, desire you will deliver over to him all the Provincial arms, accoutrements, ammunition, and other military stores remaining in your possession, with an exact account of those you have distributed among the two companies. I return you thanks for the good services you have performed, and for the care and prudence with which you have conducted your military command from the beginning.”

From the foregoing letter of Governor John Penn, it is evident that the commissioners, or rather the Provincial Council, intended to punish  
**1764.** both the frontier commanders, or that with the destruction of the Conestogas, there was little or no danger of Indian atrocities. The latter proved to be the case, but the authorities were cognizant of the fact that the Paxtang boys were correct in their surmising, and that peace would follow the removal of the friendly Indians. It shows, also, that believing thus, the Provincial authorities were culpable, to a great degree, in allowing the Indians to remain on the Manor, despite the representations of Colonel Elder, John Harris, and Edward Shippen. The Reverend Mr. Elder quietly laid by his sword, feeling confident that time would vindicate his course, whatever that may have been.

The different proclamations of Governor Penn, and the action of the Assembly relative to this transaction, created immense excitement on the frontiers of Lancaster, Berks, and Northampton, and meetings were held, at which the Provincial authorities were severely condemned. Representatives were appointed to proceed to Philadelphia and demand redress and protection. Accompanying these were large delegations from the “back inhabitants.”

The Moravian Indians who had been confined in the barracks at Philadelphia since November, were removed to Province Island, at the reported march of “a large body of rioters (?), who were bent on destroying them also.” This has been always denied, as merely a wild rumor, which, like many other reports, spread consternation and alarm in the city. The Assembly resolved to resist



any attempt to destroy the Indians, but the latter, frightened at the reports of their threatened destruction, petitioned the authorities to send them, a hundred and fifty in number, with their two ministers, to England. But this being impracticable, the Governor furnished them an escort, to proceed through New Jersey and New York, to Sir William Johnson, under whose protection they were desirous to place themselves. William Franklin, then Governor of New Jersey, granted them a passport; but Governor Colden, of New York, by advice of his Council, refused to admit them within his Province. The Council of New York were offended by Governor Penn sending so large a body of Indians into their colony without their consent; and professed themselves more disposed to punish than to protect the Indians from the east side of the Susquehanna, whom they considered as their worst enemies, composed of the rogues, thieves, and runaways from other Indian nations. They also condemned the policy which returned these men to strengthen their nation. The progress of the Indians being thus obstructed, General Gage, who had succeeded General Amherst in the chief command of the English forces in America, directed two companies of the Royal Americans to re-escort them to Philadelphia, where they were secured in the barracks.

The approach of the frontiersmen, about the time of the return of the Indians, renewed the excitement. The force of the former was magnified to many thousands, and six companies of foot, one of artillery, and two troops of horse, were formed to oppose them; and some thousands of the inhabitants, including many Quakers, were prepared to render assistance, in case an attempt should be made upon the town. The barracks, also, where the Indians were lodged, under the protection of the regular troops, were fortified, several works being thrown up about them, and eight pieces of cannon mounted. But the Governor would not venture to command his forces to attack the insurgents until he obtained indemnity for himself and them, by the extension to the Province of the English Riot Act. The bill extending it was passed very hastily through the House.

On arriving at Germantown, the Paxtang men were met by commissioners, to whom they made known their intentions, and Colonel Matthew Smith and James Gibson accompanied the former to Philadelphia, where they met the Governor and the Assembly presenting their grievances, which we here give in full, as a clear and candid statement of affairs at that period. In the meantime, with a few exceptions, the party who accompanied them returned to their homes—the inhabitants of the city to their peaceful avocations.

“We, Matthew Smith and James Gibson, in behalf of ourselves and his Majesty’s faithful and loyal subjects, the inhabitants of the frontier counties of Lancaster, York, Cumberland, Berks, and Northampton, humbly beg leave to remonstrate and lay before you the following grievances, which we submit to your wisdom for redress.

“First. We apprehend that as Freeman and English subjects, we have an indisputable title to the same privileges and immunities with his Majesty’s other subjects who reside in the interior counties of Philadelphia, Chester, and Bucks, and, therefore, ought not to be excluded from an equal share with them in the very important privilege of legislation; nevertheless, contrary to the



Proprietor's charter and the acknowledged principles of common justice and equity, our five counties are restrained from electing more than ten Representatives, viz., four for Lancaster, two for York, two for Cumberland, one for Berks, and one for Northampton, while the three counties and City of Philadelphia, Chester, and Bucks, elect twenty-six. This we humbly conceive is oppressive, unequal, and unjust, the cause of many of our grievances, and an infringement of our natural privileges of Freedom and equality; wherefore, we humbly pray that we may be no longer deprived of an equal number with the three aforesaid counties, to represent us in Assembly.

“Secondly. We understand that a bill is now before the House of Assembly, wherein it is provided that such persons as shall be charged with killing any Indians in Lancaster county, shall not be tried in the county where the fact was committed, but in the counties of Philadelphia, Chester, or Bucks. This is manifestly to deprive British subjects of their known privileges, to cast an eternal reproach upon whole counties, as if they were unfit to serve their country in the quality of jurymen, and to contradict the well-known laws of the British nation in a point whereon life, liberty, and security essentially depend, namely, that of being tried by their equals in the neighborhood where their own, their accusers, and the witnesses' character and credit, with the circumstances of the fact, are best known, and instead thereof putting their lives in the hands of strangers, who may as justly be suspected of partiality to as the frontier counties can be of prejudices against Indians; and this, too, in favor of Indians only, against his Majesty's faithful and loyal subjects. Besides, it is well known that the design of it is to comprehend a fact committed before such a law was thought of. And if such practices were tolerated, no man could be secure in his most valuable interest. We are also informed, to our great surprise, that this bill has actually received the assent of a majority of the House, which we are persuaded could not have been the case, had our frontier counties been equally represented in Assembly. However, we hope that the Legislature of this Province will never enact a law of so dangerous a tendency, or take away from his Majesty's good subjects a privilege so long esteemed sacred by Englishmen.

“Thirdly. During the late and present Indian War, the frontiers of this Province have been repeatedly attacked and ravaged by skulking parties of the Indians, who have with the most savage cruelty murdered men, women, and children, without distinction, and have reduced near a thousand families to the most extreme distress. It grieves us to the very heart to see such of our frontier inhabitants as have escaped savage fury with the loss of their parents, their children, their wives, or relatives, left destitute by the public, and exposed to the most cruel poverty and wretchedness, while upwards of an hundred and twenty of these savages, who are with great reason suspected of being guilty of these horrid barbarities, under the mask of friendship, have procured themselves to be taken under the protection of the Government, with a view to elude the fury of the brave relatives of the murdered, and are now maintained at the public expense. Some of these Indians, now in the barracks of Philadelphia, are confessedly a part of the Wyalusing Indians, which tribe is now at war with us, and the others are the Moravian Indians, who, living with us under the



cloak of friendship, carried on a correspondence with our known enemies on the Great Island. We cannot but observe, with sorrow and indignation, that some persons in this Province are at pains to extenuate the barbarous cruelties practised by these savages on our murdered brethren and relatives, which are shocking to human nature, and must pierce every heart but that of the hardened perpetrators or their abettors; nor is it less distressing to hear others pleading that although the Wyalusing tribe is at war with us, yet that part of it which is under the protection of the Government, may be friendly to the English, and innocent. In what nation under the sun was it ever the custom that when a neighboring nation took up arms, not an individual should be touched but only the persons that offered hostilities? Who ever proclaimed war with a part of a nation, and not with the whole? Had these Indians disapproved of the perfidy of their tribe, and been willing to cultivate and preserve friendship with us, why did they not give notice of the war before it happened, as it is known to be the result of long deliberations, and a preconcerted combination among them? Why did they not leave their tribe immediately, and come among us before there was ground to suspect them, or war was actually waged with their tribe? No, they stayed amongst them, were privy to their murders and revenges, until we had destroyed their provisions, and when they could no longer subsist at home, they come, not as deserters, but as friends, to be maintained through the winter, that they may be able to scalp and butcher us in the spring.

“And as to the Moravian Indians, there are strong grounds at least to suspect their friendship, as it is known they carried on a correspondence with our enemies on the Great Island. We killed three Indians going from Bethlehem to the Great Island with blankets, ammunition, and provisions, which is an undeniable proof that the Moravian Indians were in confederacy with our open enemies; and we cannot but be filled with indignation to hear this action of ours painted in the most odious and detestable colors, as if we had inhumanly murdered our guides, who preserved us from perishing in the woods, when we only killed three of our known enemies, who attempted to shoot us when we surprised them. And, besides all this, we understand that one of these very Indians is proved, by the oath of Stinson's widow, to be the very person that murdered her husband. How, then, comes it to pass that he alone, of all the Moravian Indians, should join the enemy to murder that family? Or can it be supposed that any enemy Indians, contrary to their known custom of making war, should penetrate into the heart of a settled country to burn, plunder, and murder the inhabitants, and not molest any houses in their return, or ever be seen or heard of? Or how can we account for it, that no ravages have been committed in Northampton county since the removal of the Moravian Indians, when the Great Cove has been struck since? These things put it beyond doubt with us that the Indians now at Philadelphia are his Majesty's perfidious enemies, and, therefore, to protect and maintain them at the public expense, while our suffering brethren on the frontiers are almost destitute of the necessaries of life, and are neglected by the public, is sufficient to make us mad with rage, and tempt us to do what nothing but the most violent necessity can vindicate. We humbly and earnestly pray,





therefore, that those enemies of his Majesty may be removed as soon as possible out of the Province.

"Fourthly. We humbly conceive that it is contrary to the maxims of good policy, and extremely dangerous to our frontiers, to suffer any Indians, of what tribe soever, to live within the inhabited parts of this Province while we are engaged in an Indian war, as experience has taught us that they are all perfidious, and their claim to freedom and independency puts it in their power to act as spies, to entertain and give intelligence to our enemies, and to furnish them with provisions and warlike stores. To this fatal intercourse between our pretended friends and open enemies, we must ascribe the greatest of the ravages and murders that have been committed in the course of this and the last Indian war. We, therefore, pray that this grievance be taken under consideration and remedied.

"Fifthly. We cannot help lamenting that no provision has been hitherto made, that such of our frontier inhabitants as have been wounded in defence of the Province, their lives and liberties, may be taken care of, and cured of their wounds at the public expense. We, therefore, pray that this grievance may be redressed.

"Sixthly. In the late Indian war, this Province, with others of his Majesty's colonies, gave rewards for Indian scalps, to encourage the seeking them in their own country, as the most likely means of destroying or reducing them to reason, but no such encouragement has been given in this war, which has damped the spirits of many brave men, who are willing to venture their lives in parties against the enemy. We, therefore, pray that public rewards may be proposed for Indian scalps, which may be adequate to the dangers attending enterprizes of this nature.

"Seventhly. We daily lament that numbers of our nearest and dearest relatives are still in captivity among the savage heathen, to be trained up in all their ignorance and barbarity, or to be tortured to death with all the contrivances of Indian cruelty, for attempting to make their escape from bondage; we see they pay no regard to the many solemn promises they have made to restore our friends who are in bondage amongst them. We, therefore, earnestly pray that no trade may hereafter be permitted to be carried on with them until our brethren and relatives are brought home to us.

"Eighthly. We complain that a certain society of people in this Province, in the late Indian war, and at several treaties held by the King's representatives, openly loaded the Indians with presents, and that J. P., a leader of the said society, in defiance of all government, not only abetted our Indian enemies, but kept up a private intelligence with them, and publicly received from them a belt of wampum, as if he had been our Governor, or authorized by the King to treat with his enemies. By this means the Indians have been taught to despise us as a weak and disunited people, and from this fatal source have arose many of our calamities under which we groan. We humbly pray, therefore, that this grievance may be redressed, and that no private subject be hereafter permitted to treat with, or carry on a correspondence with, our enemies.

"Ninthly. We cannot but observe with sorrow, that Fort Augusta, which has been very expensive to this Province, has afforded us but little assistance



during this or the last war. The men that were stationed at that place neither helped our distressed inhabitants to save their crops, nor did they attack our enemies in their towns, or patrol on our frontiers. We humbly request that proper measures may be taken to make that garrison more serviceable to us in our distress, if it can be done.

“N. B.—We are far from intending any reflection against the commanding officer stationed at Augusta, as we presume his conduct was always directed by those from whom he received his orders.

“Signed on behalf of ourselves, and by appointment of a great number of the frontier inhabitants.

“FEBRUARY 13th, 1764.”

“MATHEW SMITH,

“JAMES GIBSON.

The memorial of Gibson and Smith was sustained by another, having fifteen hundred signatures. The Assembly sent these memorials to a committee, which recommended a conference with the representatives of the back inhabitants, in order to convince them and the people that their complaints were unfounded. The House invited the Governor to participate in this conference, but he declined the measure, as incompatible with the dignity and subversive of the order of the government. He recommended them to investigate the merits of the petitions, and should any bill grow out of the investigation, he promised to give it due attention. The Assembly took no further steps. The bill directing persons charged with murdering an Indian in Lancaster county to be tried in Philadelphia, Bucks, or Chester, became a law, but no conviction for that offence was ever had.

Pamphlets, says Webster, without number, truth, or decency, poured like a torrent from the press. The Quakers took the pen to hold up the deed to execration; and many others seized the opportunity to defame the Irish Presbyterians as ignorant bigots and lawless marauders. A dialogue between Andrew Trueman and Thomas Zealot, speaks of “Saunders Kent, an elder these thirty years, that gaed to duty” just before the massacre, and while he “was saying grace till a pint of whiskey, a wild lad ran his gully (knife) through the wame of a heathen wean.” This, and much more that is worse, lacks the first requisite of a good lie; it does not look like truth; it makes the Irish Presbyterians talk like English churchmen, to whom the phrase “saying grace” is peculiar. “Gaeing to duty” is a thrust at family worship in use among Presbyterians, but highly ridiculous to godless “sayers of grace.”

The Presbyterians replied that Teedyuscung confessed that he would not have complained of the new settlers if he had not been encouraged by prominent Quakers. They produced affidavits that the Indians who were killed were drunken, debauched, insolent, quarrelsome, and dangerous; they refer to the Christian Indian, Renatus, as notoriously bad, and assert that the Indian who shot Stinson, in Allen township, while rising from his bed, was secured in Philadelphia from justice, and comforted in a good room, with a warm bed and stove. They also charged that the representation in the Assembly was unequal, and that Lancaster, with a larger population, was allowed fewer members than other counties.



Violent and bitter as were the attacks of the Quaker pamphleteers, Parson Elder was only casually alluded to. With the exception of the following, written to Colonel Burd, he made no attempt to reply to any of these, leaving his cause with God and posterity: "Lazarus Stewart is still threatened by the *Philadelphia party*; he and his friends talk of leaving. If they do, the Province will lose some of its best friends, and that by the *faults of others*, not their own; for if any cruelty was practised on the Indians at Conestoga or at Lancaster, it was not by his or their hands. There is great reason to believe that much injustice has been done to all concerned. In the *contrariness* of accounts we must infer that much rests for support on the *imagination* or *interest* of the witnesses. The characters of Stewart and his friends were well established Ruffians, nor brutal, they were not; but humane, liberal, and moral, nay, religious. It is evidently not the wish of the *party* to give Stewart a fair hearing. All *he* desires is to be put on trial at Lancaster, near the scenes of the horrible butcheries committed by the Indians at Tulpehocken, etc., where he can have the testimony of the *scouts* and *rangers*, men whose services can never be sufficiently rewarded. The pamphlet has been sent by my friends and *enemies*; it failed to inflict a wound; it is at least but a garbled statement; it carries with it the seeds of its own dissolution. That the hatchet was used is denied, and is it not reasonable to suppose that men, accustomed to the use of guns, would make use of their favorite weapons? . . . . .

The inference is plain, that the *bodies* of the Indians were thus *mangled* after death by certain persons, to excite a feeling against the Paxtang boys. This fact, Stewart says, he can and will establish in a fair trial at Lancaster, York, or Carlisle. At any rate we are all suffering at present by the secret influence of a faction—a faction who has shown their love to the Indians by not exposing themselves to its influence in the frontier settlements."

The "pamphlet" alluded to in the foregoing was the notorious article written by Benjamin Franklin for political effect. He acknowledged, in a letter to Lord Kames, that his object was a political one. As such, its tissue of falsehoods caused his defeat for member of the Assembly, a position he had held for fourteen years. Fortunately for him, the Revolution brought him into prominence, and the past was forgotten.

From several letters of Governor John Penn written during this period to his uncle Thomas Penn, we glean the following facts, which, when properly considered, will in a great measure remove the odium which prejudiced historians have thrown upon this transaction. In one, of the date of Nov. 11, 1763, he says: "I have had petitions every day from the frontier inhabitants requesting assistance against the Indians, who still continue their ravages in the most cruel manner." He alludes to the fact of the "Indians on the Manor" in Lancaster county being concerned in several murders in that county. In another: "It is beyond a doubt that many of the the Indians now in town [referring to the Moravian Indians confined in the Barracks] have also been concerned in committing murder among the back settlers. Many of the people have had their wives and children murdered and scalped, their houses burnt to the ground, their cattle destroyed, and from an easy plentiful life, are now become beggars.

"The Conestoga Indians, but also those that lived at Bethlehem and in other



parts of the Province, were all perfidious—were in the French interest and in combination with our open enemies.” These are some of the private views of the executive of the Province, who, to cajole the Assembly, like Franklin, deemed it policy to yield for a time to the popular clamor and misrepresentation, and publicly declare sentiments directly opposite to those he held and conceived. We have neither time nor inclination to give too much prominence to this affair; but desiring to palliate the transaction, we have presented our argument. In addition to all we have said—it is well known that an investigation was had into the matter, by the magistrate (Shippen), at Lancaster, but the evidence against the Indians was so condemnatory that it was *not only suppressed but destroyed*. All efforts, therefore, to carry into effect the proclamation of the Governor was really suspended, so far as his authority went, in regard to which grave complaints were made by the Assembly, who seemed to bend all their energies to persecute the offenders.

The march to Philadelphia, we again reiterate, was not to destroy the Indians protected there. In a subsequent letter, Governor Penn says: “We expect a thousand of the back inhabitants in town, to insist upon the Assembly granting their request with regard to the increase of representatives, to put them upon an equality with the rest of the counties. They have from time to time presented several petitions for the purpose, which have been always disregarded by the House; for which purpose they intend to come in person. I am of opinion they [the Assembly] will never come into, as it will be the means of lessening the power of the Governing few in this Province.” What more convincing proof is needed of the object of the Paxtang men in going to Philadelphia? Their motives obviously misconstrued—their actions vilified—their principles maligned, and for one hundred and twenty years they have rested under the obloquy “of murderers and rioters.” In the light of history, through recent research, it is time that their conduct be justified, and the wrong done them be righted. “Truth is a Divine attribute,” and history is truth, but unfortunately too much prejudice tinctures the records of the past, and he who would write truly, must compare the internal with the external history of every transaction. It is only by this means correct conclusions are arrived at, and impartial history written.

This transaction gave rise to these among other questions, and the pamphlets on the popular side may truly be said to have sown the seeds of the Revolution: “Was the destruction of the Indians in Lancaster county justifiable on the plea of necessity?” “Was the policy adopted by the Proprietary government in treating with Indians, judicious?”

Early in 1764, extensive measures were resolved upon for the reduction of the Indians. General Gage determined to attack them on two sides, and to force them from the frontiers by carrying the war into the heart of their own country. One corps was destined, under Colonel Bradstreet, to act against the Wyandots, Ottawas, Chippewas, and other nations living upon or near the lakes; whilst another, under the command of Colonel Bouquet, should attack the Delawares, Shawanese, Mingoes, Mohickans, and other nations between the Ohio and the lakes. These corps were to act in concert, and as that of Colonel Bradstreet would be first ready, he was directed to proceed to Detroit, Michilimackinack, and other places, and on his return to encamp and remain at Sandusky, to awe





from that position the numerous tribes of Western Indians, and prevent them from rendering aid to those on the Ohio, whilst Colonel Bouquet should attack the latter in the midst of their settlements.

Part of the Forty-second and Sixtieth Regiments were allotted to Colonel Bouquet, to be joined with two hundred friendly Indians, and troops from Virginia and Pennsylvania. The Indians never came, and Virginia could spare but few men, having already organized seven hundred for the defence of her own frontier. The quota of Pennsylvania was one thousand, and the Assembly, with great alacrity, resolved to raise this force, and to maintain it they voted fifty thousand pounds.

Bouquet's expedition to the Muskingum, in the autumn of 1764, overawed the Indians, who sued for peace. The Delawares, Shawanese, and Senecas agreed to cease hostilities, and surrender a great number of prisoners taken during the recent wars. The return of these prisoners, many of whom were children, carried joy to many an anxious heart in Pennsylvania. Some of the prisoners had formed attachments among the Indians which they were loath to break.

The first application to the Assembly for supplies revived the old controversy with the Proprietaries. Indeed, harmony was scarcely to be expected between one of the Proprietary family as Governor on one side, and the Assembly on the other. That the Proprietary estates were to be taxed, was a question settled; but how, and upon what basis they were to be assessed, was a subject of controversy, and the Proprietaries, as usual, leaned strongly to their own interests. The Assembly were compelled to yield to the necessities of the Province, and the supplies were granted; but the conduct of the Governor so incensed the Assembly, that they determined, by a large majority, to petition the King to purchase the jurisdiction of the Province from the Proprietaries, and vest the government directly in the Crown. And among the important questions which agitated and inflamed the public mind at this period was this: "Whether a Proprietary government or one with kingly powers was the government best adapted to this Province?"

To break down the feudal power, and bring the people and the Crown in direct communication, is in all countries the first great step towards popular freedom, and prepares the way for the next step, the direct conflict between the Crown and the people. It so happened, however, that in this case the avarice of the British ministry outran the anti-feudal propensities of the people, and brought the colonies at once to the last great struggle between the people and the Crown. There was much opposition from leading men in the Province against throwing off the Proprietary dominion. Isaac Norris, the venerable Speaker, John Dickinson, afterwards distinguished in the Revolution, and Rev. Gilbert Tennant, and Rev. Francis Allison, representing the Presbyterian interest, with William Allen, chief-justice, and afterwards father-in-law of Governor Penn, were strong in opposition to the measure. The Quakers, on the other hand, supported it, and were sustained by several successive assemblies. Benjamin Franklin was appointed provincial agent to urge the measure before the ministry in London. He sailed for England, November 1, 1764, and found on his arrival that he had to contend with a power far stronger and more obstinate than the Proprietaries themselves, even with the very power whose protection he had come to seek.



## CHAPTER VIII.

RELATIONS BETWEEN ENGLAND AND THE COLONIES. MASON AND DIXON'S LINE.  
THE OUTSET OF THE REVOLUTION. RESOLVES AND INSTRUCTIONS OF THE  
PROVINCIAL DEPUTIES. THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY. 1765-1775.



RIENDLY as were the relations between the colonies and the mother country, they would doubtless have continued, had the former not seen fit to pursue a new policy towards the latter with respect to revenue and taxation. The colonies, until then, had been permitted to tax themselves. The first act of Parliament aiming at the drawing of a revenue from the colonies, was passed September 29, 1764, the preamble running thus :

“ WHEREAS, it is just and necessary that a revenue be raised in America for defraying the expenses of defending, protecting, and securing the same, we, the Commons,” etc. This act imposed a duty on “clayed sugar, indigo, coffee, etc., etc., being the produce of a colony not under the dominion of his Majesty.”

On the subject of the right of the British Parliament to tax the colonies, it was asserted in the mother country “to be essential to the unity, and of course, to the prosperity of the empire, that the British Parliament should have a right of taxation over every part of the royal dominions.” In the colonies it was contended “that taxation and representation were inseparable, and that they could not be safe, if their property might be taken from them, without their consent.” This claim of the right of taxation on the one side, and the denial of it on the other, was *the very hinge on which the Revolution turned*.

In accordance with the policy to be observed towards America, the next year, 1765, the famous *Stamp Act* passed both houses of Parliament. This ordained that instruments of writing, such as deeds, bonds, notes, etc., among the colonies, should be null and void, unless executed on *stamped* paper, for which a duty should be paid to the Crown.

The efforts of the American colonies to stay the mad career of the English ministry proved unavailing. The Stamp Act was passed with slight opposition by the Commons, and with unanimity by the Lords. Dr. Franklin labored earnestly to avert a measure which his sagacity and extensive acquaintance with the American people taught him was pregnant with danger to the British empire; but he entertained not the idea that it would be forcibly resisted. He wrote to Mr. Charles Thomson, “*The sun of liberty is set, you must light up the candles of industry and economy.*” To which Mr. Thomson replied, “he was apprehensive that other lights would be the consequence.” To Mr. Ingersoll, Franklin said, “Go home and tell your people to get children as fast as they can,” intimating that the period for successful opposition had not yet arrived.

The opposition to the Stamp Act in America was so decided and universal



that Parliament had only the alternative to compel submission or to  
 1766. repeal the act. It was repealed on 18th of March, 1766, but accom-  
 panying it was one known as the *Declaratory Act*, more hostile to  
 American rights than any of its predecessors. The act affirmed "that Parlia-  
 ment have, and of right ought to have, *power to bind the colonies in all cases  
 whatsoever.*"

The news of the repeal reached America in May following, and caused  
 unbounded demonstrations of joy. Though the Quakers generally would not  
 have violently resisted the execution of the law, they shared with others the  
 joy produced by the tidings of the repeal. The French and Indian wars had  
 been happily terminated, and the controversy with the mother country appeared  
 now to be the only event that could again give rise to the "wars and fightings,"  
 which had already become a snare to many youthful members of the society.

During the year 1767 was run the so-called Mason and Dixon's  
 1767. line, and that every Pennsylvanian may know the interesting history  
 relating thereto, we give this resumé of that important transaction :

In 1632 Charles the First granted to Cecilius Calvert, Lord Baron of  
 Baltimore, "all that part of the peninsula, or Chersonese, lying in the parts  
 of America between the ocean on the east and the bay of Chesapeake on the  
 west, divided from the residue thereof by a right line drawn from the pro-  
 montory or headland, called Watkin's point, situated upon the bay aforesaid,  
 and near the river of Wigheo [*Wicomico?*] on the west, unto the main ocean  
 on the east, and between that boundary on the south, and that part of the  
 bay of Delaware on the north, which lieth under the fortieth degree of latitude,  
 where New England terminates."

Under this grant, Lord Baltimore and his descendants claimed the whole  
 Peninsula, from the above-mentioned "right line" to the 40th degree of latitude;  
 but his title, in strictness, only extended to that portion of it hitherto unsettled,  
 or uncultivated (*hactenus inculta*)—and the Dutch and Swedes had previously  
 settled on the western margin of the Delaware. The Duke of York subsequently  
 conquered not only the Dutch settlements east of the Delaware (now parts of  
 New York and New Jersey), but also those on the western shore, and exercised  
 sovereignty over them until 1682—when he transferred his claim on the western  
 shore and bay of Delaware to William Penn, who had early perceived the  
 importance of owning that side of the river all the way from his Province to the  
 ocean; and hence the annexation of the "three Lower Counties on *Delaware*"  
 now constituting the *State* of that name.

The title being contested, and the late owner being now King James the  
 Second, it was ordered by a decree of his Council, in 1685, "that for avoiding  
 further differences, the tract of land lying between the bay of Delaware and the  
 eastern sea on the one side, and the Chesapeake Bay on the other, be divided  
 into equal parts, by a line from the latitude of Cape Henlopen to the fortieth  
 degree of north latitude, the southern boundary of Pennsylvania by charter—  
 and that the one-half thereof lying toward the bay of Delaware and the eastern  
 sea, be adjudged to belong to his Majesty, and the other half to the Lord Balti-  
 more, as comprised in his charter."

The decrees of royalty not being as debatable, just then, as they have been



since, of course the recent conveyance of the eastern half of the Peninsula to William Penn by His Majesty, while Duke of York, was regarded as entirely valid. This decree, however, did not remove the difficulty existing between the Proprietaries; for the true situation of Cape Henlopen was still uncertain, and the middle of the Peninsula was yet to be ascertained.

The occurrence of death among the parties, and the existence of a litigious spirit, protracted the dispute until the 10th of May, 1732—when an agreement was entered into by the sons of William Penn and Charles Lord Baltimore, great grandson of the original patentee of Maryland. They mutually agreed “that a semi-circle should be drawn at twelve English statute miles around New Castle, agreeably to the deed of the Duke of York to William Penn, in 1682; that an east and west line should be drawn, beginning at Cape Henlopen—which was admitted to be below Cape Cornelius—and running westward to the exact middle of the Peninsula; that from the exact middle of the Peninsula, between the two bays of Chesapeake and Delaware, and the end of the line intersecting it in the latitude of Cape Henlopen, a line should be run northward, so as to form a tangent with the periphery of the semi-circle at New Castle, drawn with the radius of twelve English statute miles, whether such a line should take a due north course or not; that after the said northwardly line should touch the New Castle semi-circle, it should be run further northward until it reached the same latitude as fifteen English statute miles due south of the most southern part of the city of Philadelphia; that from the northern point of such line, a due west line should be run, at least for the present, across the Susquehanna river, and twenty-five miles beyond it—and to the western limits of Pennsylvania, when occasion and the improvements of the country should require; that that part of the due west line not actually run, though imaginary, should be considered to be the true boundary of Maryland and Pennsylvania;” . . . and “that the route should be well marked by trees and other natural objects, and designated by stone pillars, sculptured with the arms of the contracting parties, facing their respective possessions.”

This important document, though seemingly so free from ambiguity, was afterward the subject of much litigation; but was finally carried into complete effect, in all its parts. It accounts for the remarkable boundaries of the “three Lower Counties”—which counties, however, would not stay annexed to Pennsylvania, and at the Revolution, became the valiant little State of Delaware.

The quiet of the Provinces continuing to be interrupted by the conflicting claims of settlers along the border—both parties applied, in 1737, to the King’s Council, for some order which should lessen or allay these ferments. An amicable temporary arrangement, however, was in the meantime effected by the parties; and they agreed “that all the vacant land not now possessed by, or under either of them, on the east side of Susquehanna river down as far as fifteen miles and a quarter south of the latitude of the most southern part of the city of Philadelphia, and on the west side of Susquehanna, as far south as fourteen miles and three-quarters south of the latitude of the most southern part of the city of Philadelphia, should be subject to the temporary and provisional jurisdiction of Pennsylvania; and that all vacant land not possessed by or under either, on both sides of the Susquehanna, south of the said temporary limits,





should be subject to the jurisdiction of Maryland, until the boundaries were finally settled—but to be without prejudice to either party.” And when this Convention was reported to the Council, His Majesty was pleased to order, “that the Proprietaries of the said respective Provinces of Maryland and Pennsylvania do cause the said agreement to be carried into execution.”

The order was accordingly promulgated by proclamation in the Provinces, and commissioners were the following year appointed to run the temporary line: Richard Peters and Lawrence Growden, on the part of Pennsylvania, and Colonel Levi Gale and Samuel Chamberlain, on that of Maryland. These commissioners commenced their active operations in the spring of 1739 (their place of beginning does not appear)—and after proceeding as far as the eastern bank of the Susquehanna, were interrupted by the departure of Colonel Gale, on account of death and sickness in his family, and the declaration of Mr. Chamberlain, that he had no authority to continue operations without the attendance of his colleague.

The Pennsylvania commissioners, deeming their power to proceed limited to a joint operation with those of Maryland, were thereupon instructed by Governor Thomas to proceed alone. They accordingly did so; and ran the line westward of the Susquehanna, “to the most western of the Kittoctinny Hills,” which now forms the western boundary of the county of Franklin. The course run by these commissioners formed the famous “temporary line”—so well known to the lawyers and early settlers along the southern border of Pennsylvania.

The controversy, nevertheless, still continued; the cause got into chancery, on the construction of the agreement of May 10, 1732, and was not decided until 1750. On the hearing, Lord Baltimore’s counsel contended that it could not be carried into effect, by reason of its vagueness, uncertainty, &c. The Lord Chancellor (Hardwick), however, overcame all the objections—urged in a long-winded argument of five days duration—and decreed a performance of the articles of agreement. He directed that new commissioners should be appointed within three months after the decree, who should commence their operations in November following. He further ordered that the centre of the semi-circle should be fixed as near the centre of the town of New Castle as may be—that it should be described with a radius of twelve English statute miles, “so that no part of the town should be further than that distance from the periphery: and that Cape Henlopen should be taken to be situated as it was laid down in the chart accompanying the articles of agreement” (*i. e.* at Fenwick’s Island, about fifteen miles southward of the present Cape Henlopen).

The commissioners were appointed agreeably to the decree, and met at New Castle on the 15th of November, 1750. They fixed upon the court house in New Castle as the centre for drawing the semi-circle; but Lord Baltimore’s commissioners conjured up a new and unexpected difficulty, by insisting that the radii of the semi-circle should be measured superficially, without allowing for the inequalities of the ground—regardless of the absurd consequences resulting from such mode of measurement in creating inequality in the radii, and the consequent impossibility of describing any thing deserving the name of a semi-circle. Yet, as the objection was persisted in, the Proprietaries of Pennsylvania were again under the necessity of a further application to chancery; and, in 1751, obtained a decision in favor of horizontal measurement.



The commissioners again proceeded in their task. Having run the semi-circle in conformity with the Lord Chancellor's decree, and marked it on the ground, they commenced their operations at the point then known as Cape Henlopen.

The fixing of the southern boundary of the "three Lower Counties" at Fenwick's Island, requires explanation—inasmuch as the chart adopted by the Proprietaries in their agreement of 1732, gives to the cape opposite Cape May, at the mouth of the Delaware Bay, the name of Cape Cornelius (afterward, for a time, called Cape James), and to the point, or "false cape," at Fenwick's Island, the name of Cape Henlopen; while the charts of the present day transpose that order. How, or why the names become thus transposed on the charts and maps of our time, seems not to be clearly understood; but that they have changed positions since 1732, is an unquestionable fact,

As the Lord Chancellor had decided that Cape Henlopen should be taken to be where it had been agreed to be, nineteen years before—the ingenuity of the commissioners of Maryland could devise no further objections in that particular; and they proceeded, in conjunction with those of Pennsylvania, to run the line across the peninsula, and to ascertain "the exact middle," as a point from whence to run the northwardly line to form a tangent with the semi-circle at New Castle.

The line between the two bays, in the latitude of the Cape Henlopen of that time, was then run; and after some further delay, and cavilling about the distance, by his commissioners, Frederick Lord Baltimore—weary of the controversy—entered into articles of agreement with Thomas and Richard Penn, July 4, 1760, which at length effectually closed their tedious and irksome altercations. By this agreement it was covenanted that the semi-circle, as already run, should be adopted; that the distance across the Peninsula, in the latitude of Cape Henlopen, should be taken to have been rightly run, at 69 miles and  $298\frac{1}{2}$  perches from the stone pillar east of "the mulberry tree, at Fenwick's Island," marked with the arms of the contracting parties; that the middle of such line should be ascertained, and a stone pillar should be fixed at that point; that from such point a northwardly line should be run, whether the same should be due north or not, so as to form a tangent with the semi-circle at New Castle, drawn with a radius of twelve English statute horizontal miles from the court house in that place—and past the said point of contact further north till it reached the latitude of fifteen miles south of the most southern part of Philadelphia; that from said fifteen mile point, a line should be run due west—to the utmost longitude of Pennsylvania; that all claim should be released to the territory within those limits then to be ascertained, and that the Penns should appoint commissioners to run the lines as yet unfinished.

"The Commissioners appointed under the deed of 1760 addressed themselves, at once, to the completion of the peninsular east and west line, and to tracing the twelve mile circle—appointing to this end the best surveyors they could obtain. The mode of proceeding was to measure with the common chain, holding it as nearly horizontal as they could, the direction being kept by sighting along poles, set up in what they called *vistas*, cut by them through the forest. . . . But the progress made was very slow; and at the end of three



years, little more was accomplished than the peninsular line and the measurement of a radius." This left to be ascertained and established, "the tangent, from the middle point of the peninsular line to the tangent point—the meridian from thence to a point fifteen miles south of the most southern part of the city of Philadelphia—with the arc of the circle to the west of it—the fifteen miles distance—and the parallel of latitude westward from its termination."

It remains now, as simply and succinctly as practicable, to relate, that on the 4th of August, 1763, the Penns, Thomas and Richard, and Frederick, Lord Baltimore, then being together in London, agreed with Charles Mason and Jeremiah Dixon, "two mathematicians and surveyors," "to mark, run out, settle, fix, and determine all such parts of the circle, marks, lines, and boundaries, as were mentioned in the several articles or commissions, and were not yet completed;" that Messrs. Mason and Dixon arrived in Philadelphia, November 15, 1763, received their instructions from the commissioners of the two Provinces, December 9, 1763, and forthwith engaged in the work assigned to them; that they ascertained the latitude of the southernmost part of the city of Philadelphia (viz.:  $39^{\circ} 56' 29.1''$  north—or more accurately, according to Colonel Graham,  $39^{\circ} 56' 37.4''$ ), which was agreed to be in the north wall of the house then occupied by Thomas Plumstead and Joseph Huddle, on the south side of Cedar Street; and then, in January and February, 1764, they measured thirty-one miles westward of the city (probably from the margin of the river Delaware), to the forks of the Brandywine, where they planted a quartzose stone—known then, and to this day, in the vicinagè, as "the Star-gazers' Stone," a short distance west of the Chester county almshouse, in the same latitude as the southernmost part of Philadelphia (which stone is 6 miles 264 perches west of the meridian of the court house in West Chester; and a due east line from it intersects said meridian four hundred and forty-six and one-half perches, or nearly a mile and a half south of the court house; that in the spring of 1764, after a satisfactory "star-gazing," in the forks of the Brandywine—they ran, from said stone, a due south line fifteen English statute miles (in the first mile crossing the West Brandywine three times), horizontally measured by levels each twenty feet in length and this was re-measured in like manner nearly three years afterwards), to a post marked *West*, ascertaining there, also, the latitude of the place (then computed at  $39^{\circ} 43' 18''$ , now more exactly calculated to be  $39^{\circ} 43' 26.3''$  north); that they then repaired to a post, marked *Middle*, at the middle point of the peninsular west line running from Cape Henlopen (Fenwick's Island) to Chesapeake Bay, and thence, during the summer of 1764, they ran, marked, and described the tangent line, agreed on by the Proprietaries. Then, in the autumn of 1764, from the post marked *West*, at fifteen miles south of Philadelphia, they set off and produced a parallel of latitude westward, as far as to the river Susquehanna; then they went to the tangent point, and in 1764–5, ran thence a meridian line northward until it intersected the said parallel of latitude, at the distance of 5 miles, 1 chain, and 50 links, thus and there determining and fixing the northeast corner of Maryland. Next, in 1765, they described such portion of the semicircle round New Castle, as fell westward of the said meridian, or due north line from the tangent point. "This little bow or arc"—reaching into Maryland—"is about a mile and a half long, and its middle width



one hundred and sixteen feet; from its upper end, where the three States join, to the fifteen mile point, where the great Mason and Dixon's line begins, is a little over three and a half miles; and from the fifteen mile corner due east to the circle, is a little over three quarters of a mile—room enough for three or four good farms. This was the only part of the circle which Mason and Dixon ran."

The surveyors appear to have moved about considerably, and to have repeated their operations at several points, but finally they proceeded with the intention of continuing the west line beyond the Susquehanna, to the end of five degrees of longitude from the river Delaware, in the parallel of said west line; and in the years 1766-7 they extended the same to the distance of 230 miles, 18 chains, and 21 links, from the beginning of said line, at the northeast corner of Maryland (or 244 miles, 38 chains, and 36 links, from the river Delaware), near to an Indian war-path, on the borders of a stream called Dunkard creek; but were there prevented, by the aboriginal Proprietaries, from continuing the said line to the end of five degrees of longitude (the western limits of Pennsylvania), which, in the latitude of said line, they found—and the commissioners agreed—to be 267 miles, 58 chains, and 90 links, at the rate of 53 miles, 167.1 perches, to a degree. Colonel Graham, however, estimates the length of the southern boundary of Pennsylvania at 266 miles, 24 chains, and 80 links.

The line thus run was subsequently (November 9, 1768) certified by the commissioners to have been marked, described, and perpetuated, by setting up and erecting therein stones at the end of every mile, from the place of beginning to the distance of 132 miles, near the foot of a hill called and known by the name of Sideling Hill—every five mile-stone having on the side facing the north the arms of Thomas Penn and Richard Penn graved thereon, and on the south side the arms of Lord Baltimore. Those stones were imported from England, and were hewn from that variety of calcareous rock known as *Oolite* or Roe stone.

The line thus marked is stated to have been measured horizontally—the hills and mountains with a sixteen and a half-foot level; and the vista, cut through the forest, eight yards wide, was "seen about two miles, beautifully terminating to the eye in a point."

The residue of the southern boundary line of Pennsylvania—something less than twenty-two miles—was afterward (in 1782) run by other surveyors; it was not, however, completed and permanently marked until 1784.

The interference of the Indians having arrested the further proceedings of Mason and Dixon, those gentlemen returned to Philadelphia and reported the facts to the commissioners; when they received an honorable discharge on the 26th of December, 1767, having been engaged in the service about four years.

They were allowed twenty-one shillings each per day for one month, from June 21, of the last year, and the residue of the time, ten shillings and six pence each per day, for the expenses, etc., and no more until they embarked for England; and then the allowance of ten shillings and six pence sterling per day was again to take place, and continue until their arrival in England.





The amount paid by the Penns, under those proceedings, from 1760 to 1768, was thirty-four thousand two hundred pounds, Pennsylvania currency.

Dr. Maskelyne, the Astronomer Royal, in an introduction to the Observations of Mason and Dixon, in the Philosophical Transactions, remarks: "In the course of this work they traced out and measured some lines lying in and near the meridian, and extended, in all, somewhat more than one hundred miles; and, for this purpose, the country in these parts (*i. e.*, on the Peninsula) being all overgrown with trees, large openings were cut through the woods, in the direction of the lines, which formed the straightest and most regular, as well as extensive vistas that, perhaps, were ever made. Messrs. Mason and Dixon perceived that a most inviting opportunity was here given for determining the length of a degree of latitude, from the measure of near a degree and a half. Moreover, one remarkable circumstance very much favored the undertaking, which was, that the country through which the lines run was, for the most part, as level as if it had been laid out by art."

The astronomical observations for determining the length of a degree of latitude were begun on the 11th of October, 1766, and continued to the 16th of that month. The degree of latitude measured 363,763 feet, about 68.9 miles. Colonel Graham says, "their measurement for determining the length of a degree of latitude" was performed "in the year 1768, under the auspices of the Royal Society of London, after they had finished the marking of the boundary between Maryland and Pennsylvania, and were discharged from the service of the Commissioners." The difference of latitude, of the stone planted in the forks of Brandywine, and the middle post, in the western Peninsular line—or the amplitude of the celestial arch, answering to the distance between the parallels of latitude passing through these points—has been found by sector to be  $1^{\circ} 28' 45''$ .

In 1767 a bill passed Parliament, imposing certain duties on tea, glass, paper, and painters' colors, imported into the colonies from Great Britain. This act, with several others, re-kindled the opposition of the colonies. Again associations were formed to prevent the importation of British goods, and meetings called to resolve, petition, and remonstrate. The British ministers, deluded into the belief that a reduction of the tax would restore tranquility, promised that five-sixths of the taxes imposed in 1767 should be repealed; and in 1770 all were abolished, save three pence per pound on tea. In Philadelphia the non-importation resolutions were signed by all of the principal merchants and business men of that city.

The lawless white men on the frontiers continued to encroach upon the Indian lands, and to provoke hostilities by atrocious murders of inoffensive Indians. Another savage war menaced the Province in 1767-68, but was prevented by the timely intervention of Sir William Johnson. At his suggestion a great council was held at Fort Stanwix, in New York, at which all grievances were adjusted; and a treaty was made, November 5,

1768, with the Six Nations, which conveyed to the Proprietaries all the land within a boundary extending from the New York line on the Susquehanna, past Towanda and Tyadaghton creek, up the West Branch, over to Kittanning, and thence down the Ohio. This was then called the New Purchase,



and opened a wide field of adventure to the hardy pioneers of Pennsylvania. It was a vast school too, in which some of the bravest soldiers of the subsequent wars were reared.

In 1769 both houses of Parliament, in an address to the King, requested him to order the Governor of Massachusetts to take notice of such as might be guilty of treason, that they might be sent to England and tried there.

In 1771, John Penn having returned to England, Mr. James Hamilton administered for a short time as president of the council, until the arrival of Richard Penn,\* younger brother of John, as lieutenant-governor, in the autumn of the same year. Richard Penn's administration only continued until the return of his brother John, in September, 1773; but he appears during that short term to have won the sincere affections of his fellow-citizens.

The recommendations of meetings and associations to suspend the importation of tea had been so strictly complied with, that but little had been brought into the country. The consequence was, that vast quantities, seventeen millions of pounds, had accumulated on the hands of the East India Company. For their relief, Parliament now authorized them to export this tea to any part of the world, free of duty. Confident of now finding a market for their tea in America, the East India Company freighted several ships with that article for the different colonies, and appointed agents to dispose of it. The colonists resolved to obstruct the sale of that tea and to refuse the payment of even three pence by way of duty.

On the approach of the tea ships destined for Philadelphia, the pilots in the river Delaware were warned not to conduct them into harbor; and their captains, apprised of the foregoing resolutions, deeming it unsafe to land their cargoes, consented to return without making an entry at the custom house, the owners of goods ordered from England, on board these vessels, cheerfully submitting to the inconvenience of having their merchandise returned to Great Britain. It is stated that a large quantity of tea was destroyed on the Cohanse. The captains of vessels addressed to New York wisely adopted the same resolution. The tea sent to Charleston was landed and stored, but not offered for sale; and having been placed in damp cellars, became rotten, and was entirely lost. The ships designed for Boston entered that port.



RICHARD PENN.

\* RICHARD PENN was born in England, in 1734. He was brother of John Penn, and was a member of the Provincial Council, and naval officer during the latter's administration. He married Miss Mary McMasters, of Philadelphia. He was Governor of the Province from 1771 to 1773, and such was the confidence in him that, in 1775, when he embarked for England, he was entrusted with the second petition of Congress to the King. On his arrival in London, he was examined in the House of Lords as to American affairs. He subsequently became a member of Parliament. He died in England, May 27, 1811.



and the energy of Governor Hutchinson prevented their return; but before the tea could be landed, a number of colonists, pursuant to a concerted plan, dressed in Indian costume, entered the vessels, and, without doing other damage, broke open three hundred and forty-two chests of tea, and emptied their contents into the water. Such was the union of sentiment among the people, and so systematic their opposition, that not a single chest of the cargoes sent out by the East India Company was sold for its benefit.

These proceedings were communicated by the King to Parliament on March 7th, 1774, and measures were speedily adopted contemplating the submission of the rebellious colonists. An act was passed called the "Boston Port Bill," by which the port of Boston was closed and the custom house transferred to Salem; by another act the charter of Massachusetts was subverted, the nomination of councillors, magistrates, and other officers being vested in the Crown during the royal pleasure; by a third act the Governor of that colony was directed and authorized to send persons indicted for murder or any other capital offence, to any other colony, or to Great Britain, for trial. A bill was also passed for quartering soldiers upon the inhabitants.

The inhabitants of Boston had foreseen the present crisis, and they met it with undaunted spirit. Information of the passage of the Port Act was received on the tenth of May, and on the thirteenth, the town resolved "that, if the other colonies would unite with them to stop all importations from Great Britain and the West Indies until that act should be repealed, it would prove the salvation of North America and her liberties; but should they continue their exports and imports, there was reason to fear that fraud, power, and the most odious oppression would triumph over justice, right, social happiness, and freedom." A copy of this resolution was transmitted to the other colonies, the inhabitants of which expressed deep sympathy in the sufferings of their brethren in Boston, endured in the common cause; and concurring in opinion with them on the propriety of convening a Provincial Congress, delegates for that purpose were generally chosen.

Throughout the continent, the first of June, the day on which the Boston Port Act was to take effect, on the resolution of the Assembly of Virginia, was adopted "as a day of fasting, humiliation, and prayer, to implore the Divine interposition to avert the heavy calamity which threatened destruction to their civil rights, and the evils of civil war, and to give one heart and one mind to the people, firmly to oppose every invasion of their liberties."

The terms "*Whigs*" and "*Tories*" were introduced at this time—the former to describe those in sympathy with the cause of Boston, and arrayed on the side of the colonies against Parliament; the latter to designate those whose sympathies were with Great Britain against the colonies. Throughout the country, and especially in Pennsylvania, the warmest interest and most cordial sympathy were manifested for the people of Boston.

The committee of correspondence for the city of Philadelphia, early in June sent a circular to the principal citizens of the different counties, in which they say: "The Governor declining to call the Assembly, renders it necessary to take the sentiments of the inhabitants; and for that purpose it is agreed to call a meeting of the inhabitants of this city and the county at



the State House, on Wednesday, the 15th instant. And as we would wish to have the sentiments and concurrence of our brethren in the several counties, who are equally interested with us in the general cause, we earnestly desire you to call together the principal inhabitants of your county and take their sentiments. We shall forward to you by every occasion, any matters of consequence that come to our knowledge, and we should be glad you would choose and appoint a committee to correspond with us."

This was signed by Charles Thomson, the clerk of the first Continental Congress. In pursuance of these suggestions, meetings were held in every part of the State,<sup>1</sup> especially in the middle and western counties, where the Scotch-Irish took the lead. Deputies were chosen from every district in the Province, who assembled at Philadelphia on the 15th of July. There were present, for the city and county of Philadelphia: Thomas Willing, John Dickinson, Peter Chevalier, Edward Pennington, Thomas Wharton, John Cox, Joseph Reed, Thomas Wharton, Jun., Samuel Erwin, Thomas Fitzsimons, Doctor William Smith, Isaac Howell, Adam Hubble, George Schlosser, Samuel Miles, Thomas Mifflin, Christopher Ludwick, Joseph Moulder, Anthony Morris, Jun., George Gray, John Nixon, Jacob Barge, Thomas Penrose, John M. Nesbitt, Jonathan B. Smith, James Mease, Thomas Barclay, Benjamin Marshall, Samuel Howell, William Moulder, John Roberts, John Bayard, William Rush, and Charles Thomson.

Bucks—John Kidd, Henry Wynkoop, Joseph Kirkbride, John Wilkinson, and James Wallace.

Chester—Francis Richardson, Elisha Price, John Hart, Anthony Wayne, Hugh Lloyd, John Sellers, Francis Johnston, and Richard Reiley.

Lancaster—George Ross, James Webb, Joseph Ferree, Matthias Slough, Emanuel Carpenter, William Atlee, Alexander Lowrey, and Moses Irwin.

York—James Smith, Joseph Donaldson, and Thomas Hartley.

Cumberland—James Wilson, Robert Magaw, and William Irvine.

Berks—Edward Biddle, Daniel Brodhead, Jonathan Potts, Thomas Dundas, and Christopher Schultz.

Northampton—William Edmunds, Peter Kechlein, John Oakley, and Jacob Arndt.

Northumberland—William Seall and Samuel Hunter.

Bedford—George Woods.

Westmoreland—Robert Hannah, James Cavett. Thomas Willing was chosen chairman, and Charles Thomson, clerk.

It was agreed that, in case of any difference in sentiment, the question be determined by the Deputies voting by counties.

The letters from Boston of the 13th of May were then read, and a short account given of the steps taken in consequence thereof, and the measures now pursuing in this and the neighboring provinces; after which the following resolves were passed:

"Unan. I. That we acknowledge ourselves and the inhabitants of this Province, liege subjects of his Majesty King George the Third, to whom they and we owe and will bear true and faithful allegiance.

"Unan. II. That as the idea of an unconstitutional independence on the parent state is utterly abhorrent to our principles, we view the unhappy differences be-





tween Great Britain and the Colonies with the deepest distress and anxiety of mind, as fruitless to her, grievous to us, and destructive of the best interests of both.

“Unan. III. That it is therefore our ardent desire that our ancient harmony with the mother country should be restored, and a perpetual love and union subsist between us, on the principles of the constitution, and an interchange of good offices, without the least infraction of our mutual rights.

“Unan. IV. That the inhabitants of these colonies are entitled to the same rights and liberties within these colonies, that the subjects born in England are entitled to within that realm.

“Unan. V. That the power assumed by the Parliament of Great Britain to bind the people of these Colonies, by statutes, ‘IN ALL CASES WHATSOEVER,’ is unconstitutional; and therefore the source of these unhappy differences.

“Unan. VI. That the act of Parliament for shutting up the port of Boston is unconstitutional; oppressive to the inhabitants of that town; dangerous to the liberties of the British Colonies; and therefore, that we consider our brethren at Boston as suffering in the common cause of these Colonies.

“Unan. VII. That the bill for altering the administration of justice in certain criminal cases within the province of Massachusetts Bay, if passed into an act of Parliament, will be as unconstitutional, oppressive, and dangerous as the act above mentioned.

“Unan. VII. That the bill for changing the constitution of the province of Massachusetts Bay, established by charter, and enjoyed since the grant of that charter, if passed into an act of Parliament, will be unconstitutional and dangerous in its consequences to the American colonies.

“Unan. IX. That there is an absolute necessity that a Congress of Deputies from the several Colonies be immediately assembled, to consult together, and form a general plan of conduct to be observed by all the Colonies, for the purposes of procuring relief for our grievances, preventing future dissensions, firmly establishing our rights, and restoring harmony between Great Britain and her colonies, on a constitutional foundation.

“Unan. X. That, although a suspension of the commerce of this large trading province with Great Britain would greatly distress multitudes of our industrious inhabitants, yet that sacrifice, and a much greater, we are ready to offer for the preservation of our liberties; but, in tenderness to the people of Great Britain, as well as this country, and in hopes that our just remonstrances will at length reach the ears of our gracious Sovereign, and be no longer treated with contempt by any of our fellow-subjects in England, it is our earnest desire that the Congress should first try the gentler mode of stating our grievances, and making a firm and decent claim of redress.

“XI. Resolved, by a great majority, That yet notwithstanding, as an unanimity of councils and measures is indispensably necessary for the common welfare, if the Congress shall judge agreements of non-importation and non-exportation expedient, the people of this Province will join with the other Principal and neighboring colonies in such an association of non-importation from and non-exportation to Great Britain, as shall be agreed on at the Congress.

“XII. Resolved, by a majority, That if any proceedings of the Parliament, of



which notice shall be received on this continent, before or at the general Congress, shall render it necessary in the opinion of that Congress, for the Colonies to take farther steps than are mentioned in the eleventh resolve; in such case, the inhabitants of this Province shall adopt such farther steps, and do all in their power to carry them into execution.

“Unan. XIII. That the venders of merchandise of every kind within this Province ought not to take advantage of the resolves relating to non-importation in this Province or elsewhere; but that they ought to sell their merchandise, which they now have or may hereafter import, at the same rates they have been accustomed to do within three months last past.

“Unan. XIV. That the people of this Province will break off all trade, commerce, or dealing of any kind with any colony on this continent, or with any city or town in such colony, or with any individual in any such colony, city, or town, which shall refuse, decline, or neglect to adopt and carry into execution, such general plan as shall be agreed in the Congress.

“Unan. XV. That it is the duty of every member of this committee to promote, as much as he can, the subscription set on foot in the several counties of this Province, for the relief of the distressed inhabitants of Boston.

“Unan. XVI. That this committee give instructions on the present situation of public affairs to their representatives, who are to meet next week in Assembly, and request them to appoint a proper number of persons to attend a Congress of Deputies from the several Colonies, at such time and place as may be agreed on, to effect one general plan of conduct, for attaining the ninth resolve.

“That John Dickinson, Doctor William Smith, Joseph Reed, John Kidd, Elisha Price, William Atlee, James Smith, James Wilson, Daniel Brodhead, John Oakley, and William Scull, be appointed to prepare and bring in a draught of instructions.”

The author of these instructions was John Dickinson, the chairman of the committee; and as important to a proper understanding of the principles that actuated our ancestors in adopting measures which eventually resulted in the revolt of the Colonies, and as a valuable chapter in the history of the State, we give the address in full.

“GENTLEMEN: The dissensions between Great Britain and her Colonies on this continent, commencing about ten years ago, since continually increasing, and at length grown to such an excess as to involve the latter in deep distress and danger, have excited the good people of this Province to take into their serious consideration the present situation of public affairs.

“The inhabitants of the several counties qualified to vote at elections, being assembled on due notice, have appointed us their deputies; and in consequence thereof, we being in Provincial Committee met, esteem it our indispensable duty, in pursuance of the trust reposed in us, to give you such instruction, as at this important period appear to us to be proper.

“We, speaking in their names and our own, acknowledge ourselves liege subjects to his Majesty King George the Third, to whom ‘we will be faithful and bear true allegiance.’

“Our judgments and affections attach us, with inviolable loyalty, to his Majesty’s person, family, and government.



“We acknowledge the prerogatives of the Sovereign, among which are included the great powers of making peace and war, treaties, leagues, and alliances binding us—of appointing all officers, except in cases where other provision is made, by grants from the Crown, or laws approved by the Crown—of confirming or annulling every act of our Assembly within the allowed time—and of hearing and determining finally, in council, appeals from our courts of justice. ‘The prerogatives are limited,’ as a learned judge observes, ‘by bounds so certain and notorious, that it is impossible to exceed them, without the consent of the people on the one hand, or without, on the other, a violation of that original contract, which, in all states implicitly, and in ours most expressly, subsists between the Prince and subject—for these prerogatives are vested in the Crown for the support of society, and do not intrench any farther on our natural liberties, than is expedient for the maintenance of our civil.’

“But it is our misfortune, that we are compelled loudly to call your attention to the consideration of another power, totally different in kind—limited, as it is alleged, by no ‘bounds,’ and ‘wearing a most dreadful aspect’ with regard to America. We mean the power claimed by Parliament, of right to bind the people of these Colonies by statutes, ‘IN ALL CASES WHATSOEVER’—a power, as we are not, and, from local circumstances cannot, be represented there, utterly subversive of our natural and civil liberties—past events and reason convincing us that there never existed, and never can exist, a state thus subordinate to another, and yet retaining the slightest portion of freedom or happiness.

“The import of the words above quoted needs no descant; for the wit of man, as we apprehend, cannot possibly form a more clear, concise, and comprehensive definition and sentence of slavery, than these expressions contain.

“This power claimed by Great Britain, and the late attempts to exercise it over these Colonies, present to our view two events, one of which must inevitably take place, if she shall continue to insist on her pretensions. Either, the colonists will sink from the rank of freemen into the class of slaves, overwhelmed with all the miseries and vices, proved by the history of mankind to be inseparably annexed to that deplorable condition: Or, if they have sense and virtue enough to exert themselves in striving to avoid this perdition, they must be involved in an opposition dreadful even in contemplation.

“Honor, justice, and humanity call upon us to hold, and to transmit to our posterity, that liberty, which we received from our ancestors. It is not our duty to leave wealth to our children: But it is our duty to leave liberty to them. No infamy, iniquity, or cruelty can exceed our own, if we, born and educated in a country of freedom, entitled to its blessings, and knowing their value, pusillanimously deserting the post assigned us by Divine Providence, surrender succeeding generations to a condition of wretchedness from which no human efforts, in all probability, will be sufficient to extricate them; the experience of all states mournfully demonstrating to us, that when arbitrary power has been established over them, even the wisest and bravest nations that ever flourished have, in a few years, degenerated into abject and wretched vassals.

“So alarming are the measures already taken for laying the foundations of a despotic authority of Great Britain over us, and with such artful and incessant vigilance is the plan prosecuted, that unless the present generation can interrupt



the work, while it is going forward, can it be imagined that our children, debilitated by our imprudence and supineness, will be able to overthrow it, when completed? Populous and powerful as these Colonies may grow, they will still find arbitrary domination not only strengthening with strength, but exceeding, in the swiftness of its progression, as it ever has done, all the artless advantages that can accrue to the governed. These advance with a regularity, which the Divine Author of our existence has impressed on the laudable pursuits of his creatures: But despotism, unchecked and unbounded by any laws—never satisfied with what has been done, while anything remains to be done for the accomplishment of its purposes—confiding, and capable of confiding, only in the annihilation of all opposition—holds its course with such unabating and destructive rapidity, that the world has become its prey, and at this day, Great Britain and her dominions excepted, there is scarce a spot on the globe inhabited by civilized nations where the vestiges of freedom are to be observed.

“To us, therefore, it appears, at this alarming period, our duty to God, to our country, to ourselves, and to our posterity, to exert our utmost ability, in promoting and establishing harmony between Great Britain and these Colonies, ON A CONSTITUTIONAL FOUNDATION.

“For attaining this great and desirable end, we request you to appoint a proper number of persons to attend a Congress of Deputies from the several Colonies, appointed, or to be appointed, by the representatives of the people of the Colonies respectively, in assembly or convention, or by delegates chosen by the counties generally in the respective Colonies and met in Provincial Committee, at such time and place as shall be generally agreed on: And that the Deputies from this Province may be induced and encouraged to concur in such measures as may be devised for the common welfare, we think it proper, particularly to inform, how far, we apprehend, they will be supported in their conduct by their constituents.

“The assumed parliamentary power of internal legislation, and the power of regulating trade, as of late exercised, and designed to be exercised, we are thoroughly convinced, will prove unfailing and plentiful sources of dissensions to the mother country and these Colonies, unless some expedients can be adopted to render her secure of receiving from us every emolument, that can in justice and reason be expected, and us secure in our lives, liberties, properties, and an equitable share of commerce.

“Mournfully revolving in our minds the calamities that, arising from these dissensions, will most probably fall on us or our children, we will now lay before you the particular points we request of you to procure, if possible, to be finally decided: and the measures that appear to us most likely to produce such a desirable period of our distresses and dangers. We therefore desire of you—

“FIRST—that the Deputies you may appoint may be instructed by you strenuously to exert themselves, at the ensuing Congress, to obtain a renunciation on the part of Great Britain, of all powers under the statute of the 35th Henry the Eighth, chapter the 2d. Of all powers of internal legislation—of imposing taxes or duties internal or external—and of regulating trade, except with respect to any new articles of commerce, which the Colonies may hereafter raise, as silk, wine, etc., reserving a right to carry these from one colony to another—a repeal





of all statutes for quartering troops in the Colonies, or subjecting them to any expense on account of such troops—of all statutes imposing duties to be paid in the Colonies, that were passed at the accession of his present Majesty, or before this time; whichever period shall be judged most advisable—of the statutes giving the Courts of Admiralty in the Colonies greater power than Courts of Admiralty have in England—of the statutes of the 5th of George the Second, chapter the 22d, and of the 23d of George the Second, chapter the 29th—of the statute for shutting up the port of Boston—and of every other statute particularly affecting the province of Massachusetts Bay, passed in the last session of Parliament.

“In case of obtaining these terms, it is our opinion, that it will be reasonable for the Colonies to engage their obedience to the acts of Parliament declared to have force, at this time, in these Colonies, other than those above-mentioned, and to confirm such statutes by acts of the several assemblies. It is also our opinion, that taking example from our mother country, in abolishing the ‘Courts of Wards and Liveries, Tenures in capite, and by Knights service and purveyance,’ it will be reasonable for the Colonies, in case of obtaining the terms before mentioned, to settle a certain annual revenue on his Majesty, his heirs and successors, subject to the control of Parliament, and to satisfy all damages done to the East India Company.

“This our idea of settling a revenue, arises from a sense of duty to our Sovereign, and of esteem for our mother country. We know and have felt the benefits of a subordinate connection with her. We neither are so stupid as to be ignorant of them, nor so unjust as to deny them. We have also experienced the pleasures of gratitude and love, as well as advantages from that connexion. The impressions are not yet erased. We consider her circumstances with tender concern. We have not been wanting, when constitutionally called upon, to assist her to the utmost of our abilities; insomuch that she has judged it reasonable to make us recompenses for our overstrained exertions: And we now think we ought to contribute more than we do to the alleviation of her burthens.

“Whatever may be said of these proposals on either side of the Atlantic, this is not a time either for timidity or rashness. We perfectly know, that the great cause now agitated is to be conducted to a happy conclusion only by that well tempered composition of counsels, which firmness, prudence, loyalty to our Sovereign, respect to our parent State, and affection to our native country, united must form.

“By such a compact, Great Britain will secure every benefit that the Parliamentary wisdom of ages has thought proper to attach to her. From her alone we shall continue to receive manufactures. To her alone we shall continue to carry the vast multitude of enumerated articles of commerce, the exportation of which her policy has thought fit to confine to herself. With such parts of the world only as she has appointed us to deal, we shall continue to deal; and such commodities only as she has permitted us to bring from them, we shall continue to bring. The executive and controlling powers of the Crown will retain their present full force and operation. We shall contentedly labor for her as affectionate friends, in time of tranquility; and cheerfully spend for her, as



dutiful children, our treasure and our blood, in time of war. She will receive a certain income from us, without the trouble or expense of collecting it—without being constantly disturbed by complaints of grievances which she cannot justify and will not redress. In case of war, or any emergency of distress to her, we shall also be ready and willing to contribute all aids within our power: And we solemnly declare, that on such occasions, if we or our posterity shall refuse, neglect, or decline thus to contribute, it will be a mean and manifest violation of a plain duty, and a weak and wicked desertion of the true interests of this Province, which ever have been and must be bound up in the prosperity of our mother country. Our union, founded on mutual compacts and mutual benefits, will be indissoluble, at least more firm than an union perpetually disturbed by disputed rights and retorted injuries.

“SECONDLY. If all the terms above mentioned cannot be obtained, it is our opinion, that the measures adopted by the Congress for our relief should never be relinquished or intermitted, until those relating to the troops—internal legislation—imposition of taxes or duties hereafter—the 35th of Henry the 8th, chapter the 2d—the extension of Admiralty Courts—the port of Boston and the province of Massachusetts Bay—are obtained. Every modification or qualification of these points, in our judgment, should be inadmissible. To obtain them, we think it may be prudent to settle some revenue as above-mentioned and to satisfy the East India Company.

“THIRDLY. If neither of these plans should be agreed to in Congress, but some other of a similar nature shall be framed, though on the terms of a revenue, and satisfaction to the East India Company, and though it shall be agreed by the Congress to admit no modification or qualification in the terms they shall insist on, we desire your Deputies may be instructed to concur with the other Deputies in it; and we will accede to, and carry it into execution as far as we can.

“FOURTHLY. As to the regulation of trade—we are of opinion, that by making some few amendments, the commerce of the Colonies might be settled on a firm establishment, advantageous to Great Britain and them, requiring and subject to no future alterations, without mutual consent. We desire to have this point considered by the Congress; and such measures taken as they may judge proper.

“In order to obtain redress of our common grievances, we observe a general inclination among the Colonies of entering into agreements of non-importation and non-exportation. We are fully convinced that such agreements would withhold very large supplies from Great Britain, and no words can describe our contempt and abhorrence of those colonists, if any such there are, who, from a sordid and ill-judged attachment to their own immediate profit, would pursue that, to the injury of their country, in this great struggle for all the blessings of liberty. It would appear to us a most wasteful frugality, that would lose every important possession by too strict an attention to small things, and lose also even these at the last. For our part, we will cheerfully make any sacrifice, when necessary, to preserve the freedom of our country. But other considerations have weight with us. We wish every mark of respect to be paid to his Majesty's administration. We have been taught from our youth to entertain



tender and brotherly affections for our fellow-subjects at home. The interruption of our commerce must distress great numbers of them. This we earnestly desire to avoid. We therefore request that the deputies you shall appoint may be instructed to exert themselves, at the Congress, to induce the members of it to consent to make a full and precise state of grievances, and a decent, yet firm claim of redress, and to wait the event before any other step is taken. It is our opinion that persons should be appointed and sent home to present this state and claim at the Court of Great Britain.

“ If the Congress shall choose to form agreements of non-importation and non-exportation immediately, we desire the deputies from this Province will endeavor to have them so formed as to be binding upon all, and that they may be permanent, should the public interest require it. They cannot be efficacious, unless they can be permanent; and it appears to us that there will be a danger of their being infringed, if they are not formed with great caution and deliberation. We have determined in the present situation of public affairs to consent to a stoppage of our commerce with Great Britain only; but in case any proceedings of the Parliament, of which notice shall be received on this continent, before or at the Congress, shall render it necessary, in the opinion of the Congress to take further steps, the inhabitants of this Province will adopt such steps, and do all in their power to carry them into execution.

“ This extensive power we commit to the Congress, for the sake of preserving that unanimity of counsel and conduct that alone can work out the salvation of these Colonies, with a strong hope and trust that they will not draw this Province into any measures judged by us, who must be better acquainted with its state than strangers, highly inexpedient. Of this kind, we know, any other stoppage of trade, but of that with Great Britain, will be. Even this step we should be extremely afflicted to see taken by the Congress, before the other mode above pointed out is tried. But should it be taken, we apprehend that a plan of restrictions may be so framed, agreeable to the respective circumstances of the several colonies, as to render Great Britain sensible of the imprudence of her counsels, and yet leave them a necessary commerce. And here it may not be improper to take notice, that if redress of our grievances cannot be wholly obtained, the extent or continuance of our restrictions may, in some sort, be proportioned to the rights we are contending for, and the degree of relief afforded us. This mode will render our opposition as perpetual as our oppression, and will be a continual claim and assertion of our rights. We cannot express the anxiety with which we wish the consideration of these points to be recommended to you. We are persuaded, that if these Colonies fail of unanimity or prudence in forming their resolutions, or of fidelity in observing them, the opposition, by non-importation and non-exportation agreements, will be ineffectual; and then we shall have only the alternative of a more dangerous contention, or of a tame submission.

“ Upon the whole, we shall repose the highest confidence in the wisdom and integrity of the ensuing Congress: And though we have, for the satisfaction of the good people of this Province, who have chosen us for this express purpose, offered to you such instructions as have appeared expedient to us, yet it is not our meaning, that by these or by any you may think proper to give them, the



deputies appointed by you should be restrained from agreeing to any measures that shall be approved by the Congress. We should be glad the deputies chosen by you, could, by their influence, procure our opinions, hereby communicated to you, to be as nearly adhered to as may be possible; but to avoid difficulties, we desire that they may be instructed by you to agree to any measures that shall be approved by the Congress; the inhabitants of this Province having resolved to adopt and carry them into execution. Lastly—We desire the deputies from this Province may endeavor to procure an adjournment of the Congress, to such a day as they shall judge proper, and the appointment of a standing committee.

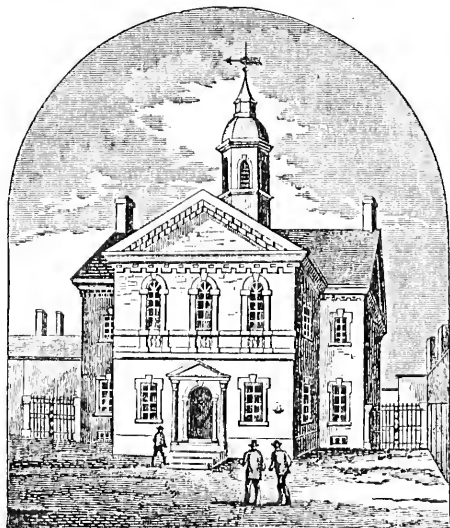
“Agreed, that John Dickinson, Joseph Reed, and Charles Thomson, be a committee to write to the neighboring colonies, and communicate to them the resolves and instructions.

“Agreed, that the committee for the city and county of Philadelphia, or any fifteen of them, be a Committee of Correspondence for the general Committee of this Province.”

Such was the determined stand taken by the people of Pennsylvania, who, with loyalty upon their lips, says Sherman Day, but the spirit of resistance in their hearts, pushed forward the Revolution.

The Assembly promptly responded to the “Instructions” by appointing Joseph Galloway, Speaker, Daniel Rhoads, Thomas Mifflin, John Morton, Charles Humphreys, George Ross, Edward Biddle, and subsequently, John Dickinson, as delegates from Pennsylvania to the Congress to be held in Philadelphia, in Sep-

tember. This body, meeting on the 5th of that month, at Carpenter’s Hall, chose Peyton Randolph, of Virginia, President of Congress, and Charles Thomson, of Pennsylvania, Secretary. The declaration of rights was agreed upon. First, then, they named as natural rights, the enjoyment of life, liberty, and fortune. They next claimed, as British subjects, to be bound by no law to which they had not consented by their chosen representatives (excepting such as might be mutually agreed upon as necessary for the regulation of trade). They denied to Parliament all power of taxation, and vested the right of legislation in their own Assemblies. The common law of England they declared to be their birth-right, including the rights of trial by a jury of the vicinage, of public meetings, and petition. They protested against the maintenance in the Colonies of standing armies without their full consent, and against all legislation by councils depending on the Crown. Having thus proclaimed their rights, they calmly enu-



CARPENTER'S HALL, PHILADELPHIA—1774.





merated the various acts which had been passed in derogation of them. These were eleven in number, passed in as many years—the sugar act, the stamp act, the tea act, those which provided for the quartering of troops, for the supersedure of the New York Legislature, for the trial in Great Britain of offences committed in America, for the regulation of the government of Massachusetts, for the shutting of the port of Boston, and the last straw, known as the Quebec Bill.

On the 18th of October articles of confederation were adopted, the signing of which, two days afterwards, remarks Henry Armitt Brown, should be regarded as the commencement of the American Union, based upon freedom and equality. On the 26th of the same month, after adopting an address to the people of Great Britain, a memorial to the inhabitants of British America, and a loyal address to his Majesty, it adjourned to meet in Philadelphia, on the 10th May following.

The Assembly of Pennsylvania, which met on the 8th of December, was the first Provincial Legislature to which report of the Congressional proceedings was made. By this body they were unanimously approved, and recommended to the inviolable observance of the people; and Messrs. Biddle, Dickinson, Mitlin, Galloway, Humphreys, Morton, and Ross were appointed delegates to the next Congress, Mr. Rhoads being omitted, his office of mayor of the city engrossing all his attention. Upon the return of Benjamin Franklin from London, he was immediately added to the Congressional delegation, together with Messrs. James Wilson and Thomas Willing. Mr. Galloway having repeatedly requested to be excused from serving as a deputy, was then permitted to withdraw. This gentleman became affrighted at the length to which the opposition to the parent State was carried. He drew the instructions given to the Pennsylvania delegates for the past and next Congress, and refused to serve unless they were framed to his wishes.

Hitherto Governor Penn had looked upon the proceedings of the Assembly without attempting to direct or control them. He was supposed to favor the efforts made in support of American principles; but now a semblance of regard to the instructions of the Crown induced him to remonstrance in mild terms against the continental system of petition and remonstrance. In England, the proceedings of the Americans were viewed with great indignation by the King and his ministry, and the petition of Congress, although declared by the Secretary of State, after a day's perusal, "to be decent and proper, and received graciously by his Majesty, did not receive much favor at the hands of the ministry, which resolved to compel the obedience of the Americans." The remonstrances of three millions of people were therefore treated, perhaps believed, as the clamors of an unruly multitude.

Both houses of Parliament joined in an address to the King, declaring "that they find a rebellion actually exists in the Province of Massachusetts." This was followed by an act for restraining the trade and commerce of the New England Provinces, and prohibiting them from carrying on the fisheries on the Banks of Newfoundland, which was subsequently extended to New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia, South Carolina, and the counties on the Delaware.

Pending the consideration of this bill, Lord North introduced what he termed a conciliatory proposition. It provided "that when any colony should propose to make provision, according to its circumstances, for contributing its pro-



portion to the common defence, and should engage to make provision also for the support of the civil government, and the administration of justice in such colony, it would be proper, if such proposal were approved by His Majesty and Parliament, and for so long as such provision should be made, to forbear to levy any duty or tax except such duties as were expedient for the regulation of commerce, the net produce of the last mentioned duties to be carried to the account of such colony." This proposition was opposed as an admission of the correctness of the American views as to taxation by Parliament, and as a concession to armed rebels. The Prime Minister declared "that he did not expect the proposition would be acceptable to the Americans, but that if it had no beneficial effect in the Colonies, it would unite the people of England by holding out to them a distinct object of revenue. That, as it tended to unite England, it would produce disunion in America; for, if one colony accepted it, their confederacy, which made them formidable, would be broken."

This avowal of the character and tendency of the resolution was not requisite to enlighten the colonists. On its transmission to the Provinces, it was unanimously rejected. A specimen of the manner in which it was attempted to be supported is found in the address of Governor Penn to the Assembly of Pennsylvania. "He presented the resolution to the House as an indication of the strong disposition of Parliament to remove the causes of American discontents; urged them to consider this plan of reconciliation, offered by the parent State to her children, with that temper, calmness, and deliberation which the importance of the subject and the present critical situation of affairs demanded; observed that the colonies, amid the complaints occasioned by jealousy of their liberties, had never denied the justice of contributing towards the burthens of the mother country, to whose protection and care they owed not only their present opulence, but even their existence. On the contrary, every statement of their supposed grievances avowed the propriety of such a measure, and their willingness to comply with it. The dispute was therefore narrowed to this point, whether the redress of colonial grievances should precede or follow the settlement of that just proportion which America should bear towards the common support and defence of the whole British Empire. In the resolution of the House of Commons, which he was authorized to say was entirely approved by His Majesty, they had a solemn declaration, that an exemption from any duty would be the consequence of a compliance with the terms of such resolution. For the performance of this engagement, he presumed no greater security would be required than the resolution itself approbated by His Majesty. And as they were the first Assembly to whom this resolution had been communicated, much depended upon their conduct, and they would deservedly be revered by the latest posterity, if by any possible means they could be instrumental in restoring the public tranquility, and rescuing both countries from the horrors of a civil war."

The Assembly lost no time in replying to this message. "They regretted," they said, "that they could not think the offered terms afforded just and reasonable grounds for a final accommodation between Great Britain and the Colonies: They admitted the justice of contribution in case of the burthens of the mother country, but they claimed it as their indisputable right that all aids from them should be free and voluntary, not taken by force, nor extorted by fear; and they



chose rather to leave the character of the proposed plan to be determined by the Governor's good sense, than to expose it by reference to notorious facts, or the repetition of obvious reasons. But, if the plan proposed were unexceptionable, they would esteem it dishonorable to adopt it without the advice and consent of their sister colonies, who, united by just motives and mutual faith, were guided by general counsels. They assured him that they could form no projects of permanent advantage for Pennsylvania which were not in common with the other colonies; and should prospect of exclusive advantage be opened to them, they had too great regard for their engagements to accept benefits for themselves only, which were due to all, and which, by a generous rejection for the present, might be finally secured to all."

Notwithstanding the gloomy state of affairs this year, Lord Dunmore of Virginia set up the unfounded pretension that the western boundary of Pennsylvania did not include Pittsburgh and the Monongahela river, and many settlers were encouraged to take up lands on Virginia warrants. He even took possession of Fort Pitt, by his agent, Dr. John Connolly, on the withdrawal of the royal troops by order of General Gage. Even General Washington, who knew that country so well, and had taken up much land in it, entertained the idea, probably, at that date, that what are now the counties of Fayette, Greene and Washington, were in Virginia. Some of these new settlers were of the worst class of frontiersmen, and several of them were concerned in the barbarous murder of the family of Logan, the Mingo Chief, and of others. A bloody war upon the frontier was the consequence of these murders; but Pennsylvania, by timely conciliatory measures through Sir Wm. Johnson, escaped the ravages of that war. Governor Penn promptly repelled the intruders under the Virginia titles; arrested and imprisoned Dr. Connolly, and kept in pay for some months the rangers of Westmoreland county, who had rallied for the defence of the frontier. Lord Dunmore's war against the western Indians followed the attack on the frontiers of Virginia.

On the 23d of January, 1775, a Provincial Convention was held at Philadelphia, continuing in session six days. There were present committees 1775. from each county, and as these individuals subsequently took an active part in the contest, either in the councils of the State or in the field, we give their names

For the city and liberties of Philadelphia—John Dickinson, Thomas Mifflin, Charles Thomson, John Cadwalader, George Clymer, Joseph Reed, Samuel Meredith, William Rush, James Mease, John Nixon, John Benezet, Jacob Rush, William Bradford, Elias Boys, James Robinson, Manuel Eyre, Owen Biddle, William Heysham, James Milligan, John Wilcox, Sharp Delaney, Francis Gurney, John Purviance, Robert Knox, Francis Hassenlever, Thomas Cuthbert, Sen., William Jackson, Isaae Melcher, John Cox, John Bayard, Christopher Ludwig, Thomas Barclay, George Schlosser, Jonathan B. Smith, Francis Wade, Lambert Cadwallader, Reynold Keen, Richard Bache, Samuel Penrose, Isaac Coates, William Coates, Blathwaite Jones, Thomas Pryor; Samuel Massey, Robert Towers, Henry Jones, Joseph Wetherill, Joseph Cowperthwaite, Joseph Dean, Benjamin Harbeson, James Ash, Benjamin Loxley, William Robinson, Ruloff Alberson, James Irvine.



Philadelphia county—George Gray, John Bull, Samuel Ashmead, Samuel Irvine, John Roberts, Thomas Ashton, Benjamin Jacobs, John Moore, Samuel Miles, Edward Milnor, Jacob Laughlan, Melehior Waggoner.

Chester county—Anthony Wayne, Hugh Lloyd, Richard Thomas, Francis Johnson, Samuel Fairlamb, Lewis Davis, William Montgomery, Joseph Musgrave, Joshua Evans, Persifer Frazer.

Lancaster county—Adam Simon Kuhn, James Clemson, Peter Grubb, Sebastian Graaff, David Jenkins, Bartram Galbraith.

York county—James Smith, Thomas Hartley, Joseph Donaldson, George Eichelberger, John Hay, George Irwin, Michael Snyser.

Cumberland county—James Wilson, Robert Magaw.

Berks county—Edward Biddle, Christopher Schultz, Jonathan Potts, Sebastian Levan, Mark Bird, John Patton, Baltzer Gehr.

Northampton county—George Taylor, John Oakley, Peter Keehlien, Jacob Arndt.

Northumberland county—William Plunkett, Casper Weitzel.

After the organization of the Convention, General Joseph Reed being chosen chairman, the following resolutions were unanimously adopted :

“That the committee of the city of Philadelphia, and each county committee, shall have one vote in determining every question that may come before this convention.

“That this convention most heartily approve of the conduct and proceedings of the Continental Congress. That we will faithfully endeavor to carry into execution the measures of the association entered into and recommended by them, and that the members of that very respectable body merit our warmest thanks by their great and disinterested labors for the preservation of the rights and liberties of the British Colonies.

“That it be, and it is hereby, recommended to the several members of this convention to promote and encourage instructions, or advise from their several counties to their representatives in General Assembly to procure a law prohibiting the future importation of slaves into this Province.

“That in case the trade of the city and liberties of Philadelphia shall be suspended in consequence of the present struggle, it is the opinion of this convention that the several counties should, and that the members of this convention will exert themselves to afford all the necessary relief and assistance to the inhabitants of the said city and liberties, who will be more immediately affected by such an event.

“That if any opposition shall be given to any of the committees of this Province in carrying the association of the Continental Congress into execution, the committees of the other counties, in order to preserve the said association inviolate, will give all the weight and assistance in their power to the committee who shall meet with such opposition.

“That it is the most earnest wish and desire of this convention to see harmony restored between Great Britain and the Colonies. That we will exert our utmost endeavors for the attainment of that most desirable object. That it is the opinion of this body that the commercial opposition pointed out by the Continental Congress, if faithfully adhered to, will be the means of rescuing this





unhappy country from the evils meditated against it. But if the humble and loyal petition of said Congress to his most gracious Majesty should be disregarded, and the British administration, instead of redressing our grievances, should determine by force to effect a submission to the late arbitrary acts of the British Parliament, in such a situation we hold it our indispensable duty to resist such force, and at every hazard to defend the rights and liberties of America.

“WHEREAS, It has been judged necessary for the preservation of our just rights and liberties to lay a restraint on our importation, and as the freedom, happiness, and prosperity of a State greatly depend on providing within itself a supply of articles necessary for subsistence, clothing, and defence, a regard for our country as well as common prudence call upon us to encourage agriculture, manufactures, and economy. Therefore this convention do resolve as follows :

“That from and after the first day of March next, no person or persons should use in his, her, or their families, unless in cases of necessity, and on no account sell to the butchers, or kill for the market, any sheep under four years old. And where there is a necessity for using any mutton in their families it is recommended to them to kill such as are the least profitable to keep.

“That we recommend the setting up of woollen manufactories in as many different branches as possible ; especially coating, flannel, blankets, rugs, or coverlids, hosiery, and coarse cloths, both broad and narrow.

“That we recommend the raising and manufacturing of madder, wood, and such other dye-stuffs as may be raised in this Province to advantage, and are absolutely necessary in the woollen manufactures.

“That each person having proper land should raise a quantity of flax and hemp, sufficient not only for the use of his own family, but also to spare to others on moderate terms. And that it be recommended to the farmers to provide themselves early with a sufficient quantity of seed for the proposed increase of the above articles of hemp and flax.

“As salt is a daily and almost indispensable necessary of life, and the making of it among ourselves must be esteemed a valuable acquisition, we, therefore, recommend the making of it in the manner used in England and other countries, and are of opinion it may be done with success in the interior parts of the Province where there are salt springs, as well as on the sea coasts.

“That saltpetre being an article of great use and consumption, we recommend the making of it, and are further of opinion it may be done to great advantage.

“That the necessity we may be under for gunpowder, especially in the Indian trade, induces us to recommend the manufacturing that article as largely as possible by such persons who are or may be owners of powder mills in this Province.

“That we recommend the manufacturing of iron into nails and wire, and all other articles necessary for carrying on our manufactures evidently in general use, and which, of consequence, should our unhappy differences continue, will be in great demand.

“That we are of opinion the making of steel ought to be largely prosecuted as the demand for this article will be great.

“That we recommend the making of different kinds of paper now in use among us, to the several manufactures ; and as the success of this branch depends



on a supply of old linen and woollen rags, request the people of this Province, in their respective houses, may order the necessary steps to be taken for preserving these otherwise useless articles.

“That as the consumption of glass is greater than the glass houses now established among us can supply, we recommend the setting up of other glass houses, and are of opinion they would turn out to the advantage of the proprietors.

“That whereas wool combs and cards have, for some time, been manufactured in some of the neighboring colonies, and are absolutely necessary for carrying on the hosiery and clothing business, we do recommend the establishing such a manufactory in this Province.

“That we also recommend the manufacturing of copper into sheets, bottoms, and kettles.

“That we recommend the erecting a greater number of fulling mills and mills for breaking, swingling, and softening hemp and flax, and also the making of grindstones in this country.

“That as the brewing of large quantities of malt liquors within this Province would tend to render the consumption of foreign liquors less necessary, it is, therefore, recommended that proper attention be given to the cultivation of barley; and that the several brewers, both in city and country, do encourage it by giving a reasonable and sufficient price for the same.

“That we recommend to all the inhabitants of this Province, and do promise for ourselves in particular, to use our own manufactures, and those of the other colonies in preference to all others.

“That for the more speedy and effectually putting these resolves into execution, we do earnestly recommend societies may be established in different parts, and are of opinion that premiums ought to be granted in the several counties to persons who may excel in the several branches of manufactory, and we do further engage that we, in our separate committees, will promote them to the utmost of our power.

“That if any manufacturer or vender of goods and merchandise in this Province shall take advantage of the necessities of his country, by selling his goods or merchandise at an unusual and extravagant profit, such person shall be considered as an enemy to his country, and be advertised as such by the committee of the place where such offender dwells.

“That we recommend the making tin plates, as an article worthy the attention of the people of this Province.

“That as printing types are now made to a considerable degree of perfection by an ingenious artist in Germantown, it is recommended to the printers to use such types in preference to any which may be hereafter imported.

“That the committee of correspondence for the city and liberties of Philadelphia be a standing committee of correspondence for the several counties here represented, and that if it should at any time hereafter appear to the committee of the city and liberties that the situation of public affairs render a provincial convention necessary, that the said committee of correspondence do give the earliest notice thereof to the committees of the several counties.”

The crisis to which the convention looked forward when framing these resolves,



had arrived. The battle of Lexington was subsequently fought, and submission to the arbitrary acts of Parliament was attempted to be enforced by the bayonet.

Congress at their session in May having resolved to raise a Continental army, of which the Pennsylvania portion amounted to four thousand three hundred men, the Assembly recommended to the commissioners of the several counties,



SEAL OF THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY—1775.

as they regarded the freedom, welfare, and safety of their country, to provide arms and accoutrements for this force: they also directed the officers of the military association to select a number of minute men, equal to the number of arms which could be procured, who should hold themselves in readiness to march at the shortest notice to any quarter, in case of emergency; they made further appropriations for the defence of the city against attacks by vessels of war, and directed the purchase of all the saltpetre that should be manufactured within the next six months at a premium price. To assist in carrying into effect these measures, on the

30th of June, a Committee of Safety, consisting of the following persons, were appointed:

City of Philadelphia—Thomas Wharton, Jr., Benjamin Franklin, Samuel Morris, Jr., Robert Morris, Francis Johnston, John Cadwallader, Owen Biddle, Thomas Willing, Andrew Allen, Robert White.

Philadelphia County—John Dickinson, George Gray, Daniel Roberdeau, Richard Reily.

Bucks—Henry Wynkoop.

Chester—Anthony Wayne, Benjamin Bartholomew.

Lancaster—George Ross.

York—Michael Swope.

Cumberland—John Montgomery.

Northampton—William Edmunds.

Berks—Edward Biddle.

Bedford—Bernard Dougherty.

Northumberland—Samuel Hunter.

Westmoreland—William Thompson.

This body immediately organized by the appointment of Benjamin Franklin, president, William Garrett, clerk, and Michael Hillegas, treasurer. For the pay and support of the associated troops called into service for the defence of the Province, the Assembly directed the issuing bills of credit for thirty-five thousand pounds.

Among the first labors of the Committee of Safety was that of preparing articles for the government of the military organizations known as Associators. On the 19th of August, the following Articles of Association of Pennsylvania were adopted:

“We, the officers and soldiers, engaged in the present association for the defence of American liberty, being fully sensible that the strength and security of any body of men, acting together, consists in just regularity, due



subordination, and exact obedience to command, without which no individual can have that confidence in the support of those about him, that is so necessary to give firmness and resolution to the whole, do voluntarily and freely, after consideration of the following articles, adopt the same as the rules by which we agree and resolve to be governed in all our military concerns and operations, until the same, or any of them, shall be changed or dissolved by the Assembly, or Provincial Convention, or in their recess by the Committee of Safety, or a happy reconciliation shall take place between Great Britain and the Colonies.

“1st. If any officer make use of any profane oath or execration, when on duty, he shall forfeit and pay, for each and every such offence, the sum of five shillings. And if a non-commissioned officer or soldier be thus guilty of cursing or swearing, he shall forfeit and pay, for each and every such offence, the sum of one shilling.

“2nd. Any officer or soldier who shall refuse to obey the lawful orders of his superior officer, may be suspended from doing duty on that day, and shall upon being convicted thereof before a regimental court martial, make such concessions as said court martial shall direct.

“3rd. Any officer or soldier who shall begin, excite, cause, join in, or promote any disturbance in the battalion, troop, or company, to which he belongs, or in any other battalion, troop, or company, shall be censured according to the nature of the offence, by the judgment of a regimental court martial.

“4th. Any officer or soldier who shall strike his superior officer, or draw or offer to draw, or shall lift up any weapon, or offer any violence against him, being in the execution of his office, shall, upon conviction before a regimental court martial, be dismissed, and shall be deemed to be thereby disgraced as unworthy the company of freemen.

“5th. Any commanding or other officer who shall strike any person when on duty, shall, upon conviction before a general court martial, be in a like manner dismissed and disgraced.

“6th. Any officer or non-commissioned officer or soldier, who shall make use of insolent, provoking, or indecent language while on duty, shall suffer censure or fine as shall be inflicted by a regimental court martial, according to the nature of the offence.

“7th. If any officer or soldier should think himself injured by his colonel, or the commanding officer of the battalion, and shall upon due application made to him, be refused redress, he may complain to the general of the Pennsylvania Associators, or to the colonel of any other battalion, who is to summon a general court martial, and see that justice be done.

“8th. If any inferior officer or soldier shall think himself injured by his captain, or other superior officer in the battalion, troop, or company to which he belongs, he may complain to the commanding officer of the regiment, who is to summon a regimental court martial, for the doing justice according to the nature of the case.

“9th. No officer, non-commissioned officer, or soldier, shall fail of repairing with their arms, ammunition, and accoutrements upon any regular alarm, or at the time fixed, to the place of parade or other rendezvous appointed by the





commanding officer, if not prevented by sickness or some other evident necessity, or shall go from the place of parade without leave from the commanding officer before he shall be regularly dismissed, on penalty of being fined or censured according to the nature of the offence, by the sentence of a regimental court martial. But no officer or soldier shall be obliged to attend to learn the military exercise more than once in a week.

“ 10th. Any officer or soldier found drunk when under arms, shall be suspended from doing duty in the battalion, company, or troop on that day, and be fined or censured, at the discretion of a regimental court martial.

“ 11th. Whatever sentinel shall be found sleeping upon his post, or shall leave it before he is regularly relieved, shall suffer such penalty or disgrace as shall be ordered by a regimental court martial.

“ 12th. Whatever commissioned officer shall be convicted before a general court martial, of behaving in a scandalous or infamous manner unbecoming the character of an officer and a gentleman, shall be dismissed from the association with disgrace.

“ 13th. Every non-commissioned officer or soldier who shall be convicted at a regimental court martial of having sold, carelessly lost, wilfully spoiled or wasted, or having offered for sale, any ammunition, arms, or accoutrements belonging to this Province, shall be dismissed such battalion, troop, or company, as an unworthy member, and be prosecuted as the law directs.

“ 14th. All disorders and neglects which officers and soldiers may be guilty of, to the prejudice of the good order and military discipline of the association of this colony, are to be taken cognizance of by a general or regimental court martial, according to the nature and degree of the offence, and be censured at their discretion.

“ 15th. That on the first meeting of every battalion, after subscribing these articles of association, and from thence forward on the first meeting of every battalion, after the third Monday in September annually, there be chosen two persons, such as are entitled to vote for members of Assembly, out of each company in the respective battalions, by the non-commissioned officers and privates, whose duty and office shall be for the year following, to set and join with the officers in court martial, which persons so chosen shall be styled court martial men.

“ 16th. Every general court martial shall consist of thirteen members, six of whom shall be commissioned officers under the rank of a field officer, and six court martial men, who shall be drawn by lot out of the whole number, and these twelve are to choose a president, who shall be a field officer and have a casting voice.

“ 17th. Every regimental court martial shall be composed of seven members, three officers, three court martial men, and a president, who is to be a captain, and to be chosen by the six, and also to have a casting voice.

“ 18th. In all courts martial not less than two-thirds of the members must agree in every sentence for inflicting penalties, or for disgracing any associator, otherwise he shall be acquitted.

“ 19th. The president of each and every court martial, whether regimental or general, shall require all witnesses, in order to trial of offenders, to declare on



their honor, that what they give in as evidence is the truth, and the members of all courts martial shall make a declaration to the president, and the president to the next rank, upon their honor, that they will give judgment with impartiality.

“20th. All non-commissioned officers, drummers, fifiers, or others, that shall be employed and receive pay in any of the battalions, companies, or troops, shall subscribe these rules and regulations, and be subject to such fines, to be deducted from their pay, and to such penalties as a regimental court martial shall think proper, upon being convicted of having transgressed any of these regulations.

“21st. All associators called as witnesses in any case before a court martial, who shall refuse to attend and give evidence, shall be censured or fined, at the discretion of the court martial.

“22d. No officer or soldier being charged with transgressing these rules, shall be suffered to do duty in the regiment, company, or troop to which he belongs, until he has had his trial by a court martial; and every person so charged shall be tried as soon as a court martial can be conveniently assembled.

“23d. The officers and soldiers of every company of artillery, or other company, troop, or party that is or shall be annexed to any battalion, shall be subject to the command of the colonel or commanding officer of said battalion, and the officers shall sit as members of courts martial in the same manner as the officers of any other company.

“24th. No penalty shall be inflicted at the discretion of a court martial other than degrading, cashiering, or fining, the fines for the officers not to exceed three pounds, and the fine for a non-commissioned officer or soldier not to exceed twelve shillings for one fault.

“25th. The field officers of each and every battalion shall appoint a person to receive such fines as may arise within the same, for breach of any of these articles, and shall direct those fines to be carefully and properly applied to the relief of the sick, wounded, or necessitous soldiers belonging to that battalion, and such person shall account with the field officers for all fines received, and the application thereof.

“26th. The general or commander-in-chief of this association, for the time being, shall have full power of pardoning or mitigating any censures or penalties ordered to be inflicted for the breach of any of these articles by any general court martial; and every offender convicted as aforesaid, by any regimental court martial, may be pardoned, or have his penalties mitigated by the colonel or commanding officer of the battalion, excepting only where such censures or penalties are directed as satisfaction for injuries received by one officer or soldier from another.

“27th. Any officer, non-commissioned officer, or other person, who, having subscribed these articles, shall refuse to make such concessions, pay such fines, or in any other matter refuse to comply with the judgment of any court martial, shall be dismissed the service, and held up to the public as unfriendly to the liberties of America.

“28th. Upon the determination of any point by a regimental court martial, if the officer or soldier concerned on either side thinks himself still aggrieved, he may appeal to a general court martial; but, if upon second hearing, the



appeal appears groundless and vexatious, the person so appealing shall be censured, at the discretion of the general court martial.

“29th. Upon the death, resignation, promotion, or other removal of an officer from any battalion, troop, or company (except field officers), or any court martial men, such vacancy is to be filled by the person or persons such troop or company shall elect.

“30th. No officer or soldier shall be tried a second time for the same offence, except in case of appeal.

“31st. All officers and soldiers of every battalion, troop, company, or party of associators, who shall be called by the Assembly, or Committee of Safety in recess of Assembly, into actual service, and be on pay, shall, when acting by themselves, or in conjunction with the Continental forces, be subject to all the rules and articles made by the honorable Congress for the government of the Continental troops.

“32d. No commissioned, non-commissioned officer, or private, shall withdraw himself from the company to which he belongs, without a discharge from the commanding officer of the battalion, nor shall such person be received into any other company without such discharge.

“In testimony of our approbation and consent to be governed by the above regulations, which have been deliberately read to, or carefully perused by us, we have hereunto set our hands.”

Many of the citizen soldiers refused to sign and submit to these regulations, alleging that numerous persons, rich, and able to perform military duty, claimed exemption under pretence of conscientious scruples, and asserting that where the liberty of all was at stake, all should aid in its defence, and that where the cause was common to all, it was inconsistent with justice and equity that the burden should be partial. Moved by these representations, the Committee of Safety recommended to the Assembly to provide that all persons should be subject to military duty, but that persons conscientiously scrupulous might compound for actual service by a pecuniary equivalent. The House, however, was not prepared for a measure of so strong a character; and they suffered their term of office to expire without passing upon the proposition.

But this subject was pressed on the early attention of the succeeding Assembly. Congress having recommended to the inhabitants of the several Provinces, between the ages of sixteen and fifty, to organize themselves into regular companies of militia, gave new occasion to the associators to urge the Assembly to put all the inhabitants in this respect on an equal footing.

The Friends, who were the most affected by coercion to military service, addressed the Legislature, setting forth their religious faith and practice with respect to bearing arms, and claiming exemption from military service by virtue of the thirty-fifth section of the laws agreed upon in England, and the first clause of the charter granted by Penn. The Mennonists and German Baptists also remonstrated, praying exemption, yet, while doing so, they were not unwilling to contribute pecuniary aid. The principles of the Quakers were severely denounced by the associators as unfriendly to the liberties of America, destructive of all society and government, and highly reflecting on the glorious revolutions which placed the present royal family on the throne. “Though



firmly persuaded," they said, "that a majority of the society have too much sincerity, wisdom, and good sense, to be influenced by such principles; yet duty to ourselves, to our country, and our posterity, at this alarming crisis, constrains us to use our utmost endeavors to prevent the fatal consequences that might attend your compliance with the application of the people called Quakers. These gentlemen would withdraw their persons and fortunes from the service of their country at a time when most needed; and if the patrons and friends of liberty succeed in the present glorious struggle, they and their posterity will enjoy all the advantages, without jeopardizing person or property. Should the friends of liberty fail, they will risk no forfeitures, but having merited the protection and favor of the British ministry, will probably be rewarded by promotion to office. This they seem to desire and expect. Though such conduct manifestly tends to defeat the virtuous and wise measures planned by the Congress, and is obviously selfish, ungenerous, and unjust, yet we would animadvert upon the arguments they have used to induce the House to favor and support it."

Thus urged, the Assembly resolved that "all persons between the ages of sixteen and fifty, capable of bearing arms, who did not associate for the defence of the Province, ought to contribute an equivalent for the time spent by the associators in acquiring military discipline; ministers of the gospel of all denominations, and servants purchased *bona-fide* for valuable consideration, only excepted." By this resolution the principle which still regulates the fines for neglect or refusal of military service was established.

The military association, originally a mere voluntary engagement, became, by the resolutions of the Assembly, now having the effect of laws, a compulsory militia. Returns were required from the assessors of the several townships and wards of all persons within military age, capable of bearing arms; and the captains of the companies of associators were directed to furnish to their colonels, and the colonels to the county commissioners, lists of such persons as had joined the association; and the commissioners were empowered to assess on those not associated the sum of two pounds ten shillings annually, in addition to the ordinary tax. The Assembly also adopted rules and regulations for the better government of the military association, the thirty-fifth article of which provided "that if any associator called into actual service, should leave a family not of ability to maintain themselves in his absence, the justices of the peace of the proper city or county, with the overseers of the poor, should make provision for their maintainance."





## CHAPTER IX.

THE BATTLE-DRUM OF THE REVOLUTION. THE PENNSYLVANIA NAVY. THE PROVINCIAL CONFERENCE. THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE. THE CONVENTION OF 1776, AND THE END OF PROPRIETARY RULE. 1775-1776.



WITHIN ten days, says Mr. Linn, after the news of the battle of Bunker's Hill had reached the Province of Pennsylvania, her first rifle regiment was officered and completed, many of the eight companies numbering one hundred men. It was commanded by Colonel William Thompson, of Cumberland county, whom Lossing by mistake credits to Virginia. The companies were severally under the command of Captains James Chambers, Robert Cluggage, Michael Doudle, William Hendricks, John Lowdon, James Ross, Matthew Smith, and George Nagel. The regiment upon its organization at once marched to the relief of Boston, where they arrived about the last of July. They were the first companies south of the Hudson to arrive in Massachusetts, and naturally excited much attention. They were stout and hardy yeomanry, the flower of Pennsylvania's frontiersmen, and according to Thatcher, "remarkable for the accuracy of their aim." This command became, in January, 1776, the "*First Regiment of the Army of the United Colonies, commanded by General George Washington.*" Two companies of this battalion, Captains Smith and Hendricks, were subsequently ordered to accompany General Arnold in his unsuccessful expedition to Quebec. Their term of service was for one year.

The Committee of Safety held its sessions almost daily in Philadelphia. Their duties, says Dr. Smith, were arduous in the extreme. It is indeed difficult to comprehend how a body of men could control and direct such an amount of business, in all its details, as was brought under their notice, and no adequate idea can be formed of their labors.

On the 20th of October a new committee was appointed, the old members continuing except Thomas Willing and Robert White, of Philadelphia; William Edmunds, of Northampton; William Thompson, of Westmoreland; James Mease, George Clymer, David Rittenhouse, John Nixon, Samuel Howell, and Alexander Wilcocks, of the city of Philadelphia. Joseph Reed and Samuel Miles, of the county, George Taylor, of Northampton, and James Biddle, of Berks, were added. The same organization was effected, and until the 22d of July, 1776, it was the moving power of the State.

The troops ordered by Congress were immediately raised, measures taken towards the defence of the Delaware river, both by means of chevaux-de-frize and the construction of an armed flotilla. With great promptness, on the 7th of July, John Wharton was directed to procure materials and make preparations for building a boat or calevat, of which he was to exhibit a model on the next day. Mr. Wharton, equally prompt, produced his model on the 8th, and was



then directed to immediately build a boat or calevat of forty-seven or fifty feet keel, thirteen feet broad, and four and a half feet deep. On the 10th, Manuel Eyre was directed to build a boat according to a model produced by him, and on the 15th the sub-committee was directed to build twelve boats, including the two already ordered. The first officers, Captain Henry Dougherty and Captain John Rice, were appointed on the 17th of July, 1775. The first boat launched was from the yard of John Wharton, on the 19th of July, and was called the Experiment, the command of which was assigned to Captain Henry Dougherty. The second boat launched was the Bull Dog, from the ship yard of Manuel Eyre, at Kensington, on the 26th of July, and Captain Charles Alexander assigned to its command. This was the commencement of the Pennsylvania State Navy, antedating three months the first legislation of Congress (October 13, 1775), in regard to a navy.

The names of the builders of the greater part of the vessels have come down to us. The Franklin and Congress were built by Manuel Eyre; the Washington by John Wharton; the Burke by Warnock Coates; the Hancock by William Williams; the Camden by Simon Sherlock; the Effingham by Casdrop and Fullerton; the Ranger by Samuel Robins; the Dickinson by John Rice, and the Warren by Joseph Marsh.

Among the first commissions issued subsequent to those above mentioned were those of Nicholas Biddle, as Captain of the Franklin, August 1, 1775; John Hamilton, of the Congress, August 2; Allen Moore, of the Effingham, August 3; and James Montgomery, of the Ranger, August 31; and by the 15th of September, the navy was upon a permanent footing, officered as follows: Bull Dog, Captain Alexander Henderson, Lieutenant John Webb; Burke, Captain James Blair, Lieutenant John Chatham; Camden, Captain Richard Eyre, Lieutenant George Garland; Chatham, Captain Charles Alexander, Lieutenant Robert Pomeroy; Congress, Captain John Hamilton, Lieutenant Hugh Montgomery; Dickinson, Captain John Rice, Lieutenant James Allen; Experiment, Captain Allen Moore, Lieutenant Benjamin Thompson; Effingham, Lieutenant John Hennessey; Franklin, Captain Nicholas Biddle, Lieutenant Thomas Houston; Hancock, Captain John Moulder, Lieutenant David Ford; Ranger, Captain James Montgomery, Lieutenant Gibbs Jones; Warren, Captain Samuel Davidson, Lieutenant Jeremiah Simmons; Washington, Captain Henry Dougherty, Lieutenant Nathan Boas.

The cost of this fleet was estimated at £550 per boat; the boats were propelled by rowers, each boat carrying two howitzers, besides swivels, pikes, and muskets. By the 28th of December ten fire rafts were constructed, and Captain John Hazlewood appointed commander and superintendent over the whole fleet of rafts. These were thirty-five feet long and thirteen wide, the floors close and caulked, with a wash-board and rails to confine the materials. They were loaded with hogsheads and other casks, the staves of tar-barrels, oil-barrels, turpentine and resin casks, with hay or straw, turpentine, brimstone, and other combustible substances thrown into the hogsheads and between them, a quantity of pine wood intermixed, and powdered resin strewed over the whole to convey the fire with greater rapidity to every part.

To the naval force were added, in 1776, two floating batteries called the Arnold



and the Putnam, a ship of war called the Montgomery, the *Ætna*, a fire sloop, and six guard boats. According to a return of the 1st of August, 1776, the number of vessels in commission was twenty-seven, and the number of men in actual naval service seven hundred and sixty-eight.

On the 14th of September, 1775, John M. Nesbit was appointed paymaster, and on the 16th John Ross, muster master of the navy. The latter, in accepting the appointment, said he would undertake it for the good of the service, and would accept no pay therefor. He acted in this capacity until the 23d of February, 1776. On the 27th of September, Dr. Benjamin Rush was appointed surgeon, and on the 10th of October, Dr. Dufield, assistant-surgeon, each to receive sixteen dollars per month for their services. On the 23d of October Captain Thomas Read had the honor of receiving the appointment of commodore, the first officer of that title of the naval forces of America.

Congress had, by resolution, allowed all merchant vessels until the month of September to get away from Philadelphia; immediately after which two tiers of the *chevaux-de-frize* were sunk opposite Fort Island (called also Mud Island), just below the mouth of the Schuylkill, to which a third tier was added soon after. Two tiers were sunk farther down the river, near Marcus Hook, and many hulks of vessels in the different channels of the river. The track through these obstructions was concealed from general knowledge, and ten pilots were taken into the pay of the State, who alone conveyed vessels through the passage. The buoys were all removed from the Delaware below the city, and pilots were stationed at Lewes, Delaware, and at Cape May, who piloted vessels up as far as Chester, where the *chevaux-de-frize* pilots took charge of them. The fire-rafts were stationed part in Darby creek, on the Delaware side of the river, part in Mantua creek, on the Jersey side, eleven miles below Camden, and part in the Schuylkill river, and five vessels were stationed between the *chevaux-de-frize*, and the mouth of Woodberry creek, which is a little above Mantua creek. Signal and alarm-posts were established and alarm-boats stationed near them. Post No. 1 was at Cape-Henlopen, under charge of Major Henry Fisher, of Lewes; No. 3 at Mother-kill; No. 8 at Chester; No. 10 at Billingsport, and so on up to the city; and thus news of the arrival of any vessels off Cape Henlopen were conveyed to the Committee within twenty-four hours. The usual station of the fleet was at Fort Island; it was manned in part by sailors and crews of enlisted men, filled up, as occasion required, by the associators.

In October a Continental fleet was fitted out by Congress, at Philadelphia, and the Committee of Safety loaded its vessels with all the gunpowder it could spare, furnished it with a great quantity of arms, and in addition, resolved that its officers might enlist one hundred men from among the crews of the armed boats who were willing to enter the service of the United Colonies. This fleet left Philadelphia in December, 1775, but was frozen up near Reedy Island, and did not finally leave the bay until the 17th of February ensuing. About the same time the second battalion, first under the command of Col. John Bull, and afterwards that of Col. John Philip De Haas, the latter a brave officer of the Provincial service under Forbes and Bouquet, was organized.

Towards the close of the year the Continental Congress made a further demand of four battalions, which were raised in a few weeks. These were placed



under the commands of Colonels Arthur St. Clair, John Shee, Anthony Wayne, and Robert Magaw. The sixth battalion, under Colonel William Irvine, 1776. was organized in February, 1776. These commands were speedily forwarded to the front, a portion to Canada and the defences on the Hudson, the remainder to the main army.

On the 20th of February, 1776, the Committee of Safety requested the Assembly to adopt measures for raising two thousand additional troops for the protection of the Province. The latter body took prompt action, resolving to "levy and take into pay fifteen hundred men, officers included, and that the men be enlisted to serve until the first day of January, 1778, subject to be discharged at any time upon the advance of a month's pay to each man." Two-thirds of the lines were to be rifle-men, divided into two battalions; the remainder to consist of one battalion of musketry. The entire body was raised in six weeks, and rendezvoused at Marcus Hook. The rifle regiment was under the command of Colonel Samuel Miles, the musketry battalion that of Colonel Samuel J. Atlee. These officers saw good service during the French and Indian war, and it was not many days ere the men were under remarkable discipline. This force, however, was severely worsted in the Long Island campaign. The principal officers remaining prisoners, the men were re-organized and recruited as the "Pennsylvania State Regiment of Foot," under Colonel John Bull. On the appointment of the latter as adjutant-general of the militia of the State, Colonel Walter Stewart assumed command.

On the 13th of January, Andrew Caldwell was appointed commander-in-chief of the fleet, "he having been applied to take the command and consenting thereto." On the 22d of the month a muster showed four hundred and ten men employed on board the armed boats. On the 3d of February the pay of the captains of the armed boats was increased to £10 per month, or \$26.66; pay of the first lieutenants to \$17 per month; and of the second lieutenants to \$17 per month; two-thirds of all prize money to be distributed among the captors, one-third to be retained by the Committee for use of the widows and children of those killed in battle. On the 13th of March seamen's wages were fixed at \$7 per month, and two dollars bounty, to be paid one month after their enlistment. The commodore's pay was \$60 per month.

On the 5th of March, John Mitchell was appointed muster master, and on the same day William Brown the first captain of marines, in the State service. On the 6th, Captain Thomas Read was made second in command of the fleet, and the boats all ordered to Fort Island. On the 9th, Captain Samuel Davidson was appointed to the command of the floating battery Arnold, and John Mitchell had to his other duty added that of commissary of provisions for the naval forces.

"The first opportunity given this fleet to defend its native waters," remarks Mr. Westcott, in his History of Philadelphia, "was when, on the night of the 6th of May, 1776, an express arrived with the information that two ships of war and other vessels, supposed to be tenders, were coming up the river. The Committee of Safety ordered Captain Thomas Read, commander of the ship Montgomery, and Andrew Caldwell, commodore, to proceed with the thirteen armed boats and fire-vessel *Ætna*, to attack the enemy. The enemy's vessels were the





frigate Roebuck, Captain Hammond, of forty-eight guns, and the sloop of war Liverpool, Captain Bellew, of twenty-eight guns, with their tenders. Captain Proctor, of the artillery, who had command at Fort Island, volunteered with one hundred men, and served on board the Hornet. The Montgomery, the Continental ship Reprisal, Captain Weeks, and the floating battery Arnold, remained near the chevaux-de-frize, in a line with the forts, but the boats proceeded down the river near the mouth of Christiana creek.

“On the afternoon of the 8th, the flotilla came in sight of the enemy. The boats opened fire with spirit, the cannonade on both sides being very heavy, and lasting for three or four hours, with no particular damage on either side. So wrote Colonel Miles, who was on the river bank near Wilmington with one hundred riflemen, to render any assistance that might be necessary. The Roebuck ran aground, and the Liverpool came to anchor to cover her. During the engagement the Continental schooner Wasp, Captain Charles Alexander, which had been chased into Wilmington creek, came out amid the confusion, and captured an English brig belonging to the squadron. It being nearly dark, and the provincial vessels being but poorly provided with ammunition, firing ceased on both sides. The British worked faithfully during the night, and succeeded in getting their vessels off. An American prisoner on board, said much solicitude was expressed about the movements of the fire-ship. For some reason no effort was made to send the *Ætna* against the Roebuck before she got off. On Thursday morning at five o'clock the action was renewed with so much vigor and skill that the ships were obliged to return to the capes. They were followed by the boats as far as New Castle.

“The captains of the boats complained very much of the character of the supplies furnished them by the Committee. On the second day they had to cut up their blankets, trowsers, and stockings to compensate for defective cartridges; and they also cut up cables and netting for wads for the guns. The captains published a statement, setting forth these facts, and blaming the Committee of Safety for the comparative failure of the expedition. The Assembly appointed a committee to investigate the subject, which reported that the galleys had sufficient ammunition, and that the committee was not in fault. But this report was attacked by the captains, who alleged that the committee had never heard any evidence upon the subject.

“The boats brought up to the city, after the action, splinters from the enemy's vessels knocked off by the American shot, which were exhibited at the Coffee House, exciting much interest. The loss of the boats was one killed and two wounded; the loss of the British, one man killed and five wounded. The Roebuck and the Liverpool resumed their old stations at Cape May, where they organized invasions of the neighboring shores, and captured all the American vessels that came within their reach.”

The deputies from Pennsylvania in the Continental Congress had been instructed by the Provincial Assembly which appointed them to use their best efforts for redress of grievances. Failing in this, Congress, on the 15th of May, 1776, recommended that “the respective Assemblies and conventions of the United Colonies, where no government sufficient to the exigencies of their affairs has been hitherto established, to adopt such government as shall, in the opinion of the



representatives of the people, best conduce to the happiness and safety of their constituents in particular, and America in general."

A diversity of opinion existed in the Province upon this resolution, and on the 21st of the same month [May], a protest was presented to the representatives in Assembly against the authority of the House to interfere in the premises, as being elected under authority derived from the Crown, and sworn to the King's allegiance, they were disqualified from acting on this recommendation. The petitioners did not, however, object to the exercise of the proper powers then existing for the maintenance of order until a new constitution, originating with and founded on the authority of the people, should be prepared and adopted by a convention elected for that purpose. They accordingly asked that application should be made to the several county committees for the election of a convention empowered to carry out the recommendations of Congress. The Assembly referred the resolve of Congress to a committee, but took no further action, nor did the committee ever make a report. "The old Assembly," says Westcott, "which had adjourned on the 14th of June, to meet on the 14th of August, could not obtain a quorum, and adjourned again to the 23d of September. It then interposed a feeble remonstrance against the invasion of its prerogatives by the Convention, but it was a dying protest. The Declaration of Independence had given the old State Government a mortal blow, and it soon expired without a sigh—thus ending forever the Proprietary and royal authority in Pennsylvania."

In the meantime, the Committee of Correspondence for Philadelphia issued a circular to all the county committees for a conference in that city on Tuesday, the 18th day of June. On the day appointed, the following deputies met at Carpenter's Hall, and organized by the election of Colonel Thomas McKean, president, Colonel Joseph Hart, vice-president, and Jonathan B. Smith and Samuel C. Morris, secretaries:

For the Committee of the City, &c., of Philadelphia—Dr. Benjamin Franklin, Col. Thomas McKean, Mr. Christopher Marshall, Sen., Major John Bayard, Col. Timothy Matlack, Col. Joseph Dean, Capt. Francis Gurney, Major William Coates, Mr. George Schlosser, Capt. Jonathan B. Smith, Capt. George Goodwin, Mr. Jacob Barge, Mr. Samuel C. Morris, Capt. Joseph Moulder, Mr. William Lowman, Dr. Benjamin Rush, Mr. Christopher Ludwig, Mr. James Milligan, Mr. Jacob Schriener, Capt. Sharp Delaney, Major John Cox, Capt. Benjamin Loxley, Capt. Samuel Brewster, Capt. Joseph Blewer, Mr. William Robinson.

Philadelphia county—Col. Henry Hill, Col. Robert Lewis, Dr. Enoch Edwards, Col. William Hamilton, Col. John Bull, Col. Frederick Antis, Major James Potts, Major Robert Loller, Mr. Joseph Mather, Mr. Matthew Brooks, Mr. Edward Bartholomew.

Bucks—John Kidd, Esq., Major Henry Wynkoop, Mr. Benjamin Segle, Mr. James Wallace, Col. Joseph Hart.

Chester—Col. Richard Thomas, Major Williams Evans, Col. Thomas Hockley, Major Caleb Davis, Elisha Price, Esq., Mr. Samuel Fairlamb, Capt. Thomas Levis, Col. William Montgomery, Col. Hugh Lloyd, Richard Reily, Esq., Col. Evan Evans, Col. Lewis Gronow, Major Sketchley Morton.

Lancaster—William Atlee, Esq., Mr. Lodowick Lowman, Col. Bartram Gal-



braith, Col. Alexander Lowrey, Major David Jenkins, Capt. Andrew Graaff, Mr. William Brown, Mr. John Smiley, Major James Cunningham.

Berks—Col. Jacob Morgan, Col. Henry Haller, Col. Mark Bird, Dr. Bodo Otto, Mr. Benjamin Spyker, Col. Daniel Hunter, Col. Valentine Eekert, Col. Nicholas Lutz, Capt. Joseph Heister, Mr. Charles Shoemaker.

Northampton—Robert Levers, Esq., Col. Neigal Gray, John Weitzel, Esq., Nicholas Dupui, Esq., Mr. David Deshler, Mr. Benjamin Dupui.

York—Col. James Smith, Col. Robert M'Pherson, Col. Richard M'Allister, Col. David Kennedy, Capt. Joseph Reed, Col. William Rankin, Col. Henry Slagle, Mr. James Edgar, Mr. John Hay.

Cumberland—Mr. James M'Lane, Col. John Allison, John Maclay, Esq., William Elliot, Esq., Col. William Clark, Dr. John Calhoun, Mr. John Creigh, Mr. Hugh M'Cornick, Mr. John Harris, Mr. Hugh Alexander.

Bedford—Col. David Espy, Samuel Davidson, Esq., Col. John Piper.

Westmoreland—Mr. Edward Cook, Mr. James Perry.

The Conference at once unanimously resolved, "That the present government of this Province is not competent to the exigencies of our affairs, and

"That it is necessary that a Provincial Convention be called by this Conference for the express purpose of forming a new government in this Province on the authority of the people only."

Acting upon these resolves, preparations were immediately taken to secure a proper representation in the Convention. The qualifications of an elector were defined. Every voter was obliged to take an oath of renunciation of the authority of George the Third, and one of allegiance to the State of Pennsylvania, and a religious test was prescribed for the members of the Convention. The following declaration was signed by all the deputies on the 24th of June, and presented to Congress:

"We, the deputies of the people of Pennsylvania, assembled in full Provincial Conference, for forming a plan for executing the resolve of Congress of the 15th of May last, for suppressing all authority in this Province, derived from the Crown of Great Britain, and for establishing a government upon the authority of the people only, now in this public manner in behalf of ourselves, and with the approbation, consent, and authority of our constituents, unanimously declare our willingness to concur in a vote of the Congress, declaring the United Colonies free and independent States: *Provided*, The forming the government and the regulation of the internal police of this Colony be always reserved to the people of the said Colony; and we do further call upon the nations of Europe, and appeal to the Great Arbitrer and Governor of the empires of the world, to witness for us, that this declaration did not originate in ambition, or in an impatience of lawful authority, but that we were driven to it in obedience to the first principles of nature, by the oppressions and cruelties of the aforesaid King and Parliament of Great Britain, as the only possible measure that was left us to preserve and establish our liberties, and to transmit them inviolate to posterity."

The Conference adjourned on the 25th of June, after unanimously approving of the following address to the Associators of Pennsylvania:

"GENTLEMEN: The only design of our meeting together was to put an end



to our own power in the Province by fixing upon a plan for calling a convention to form a government under the authority of the people. But the sudden and unexpected separation of the Assembly has compelled us to undertake the execution of a resolve of Congress for calling forth 4,500 of the militia of the Province to join the militia of the neighbouring colonies to form a camp for our immediate protection. We presume only to recommend the plan we have formed to you, trusting that in case of so much consequence your love of virtue and zeal for liberty will supply the want of authority delegated to us expressly for that purpose.

“We need not remind you that you are now furnished with new motives to animate and support your courage. You are not about to contend against the power of Great Britain in order to displace one set of villains to make room for another. Your arms will not be enervated in the day of battle with the reflection that you are to risk your lives or shed your blood for a British tyrant, or that your posterity will have your work to do over again. You are about to contend for permanent freedom, to be supported by a government which will be derived from yourselves, and which will have for its object not the enrolment of one man, or class of men only, but the safety, liberty, and happiness of every individual in the community.

“We call upon you, therefore, by the respect and obedience which are due to the authority of the United Colonies, to concur in this important measure. The present campaign will probably decide the fate of America. It is now in your power to immortalize your names by mingling your achievements with the events of the year 1776—a year which we hope will be famed in the annals of history to the end of time, for establishing upon a lasting foundation the liberties of one-quarter of the globe.

“Remember the honor of our Colony is at stake. Should you desert the common cause at the present juncture, the glory you have acquired by your former exertions of strength and virtue will be tarnished, and our friends and brethren who are now acquiring laurels in the most remote parts of America will reproach us and blush to own themselves natives or inhabitants of Pennsylvania. But there are other motives before you—your houses, your fields, the legacies of your ancestors, or the dear-bought fruits of your own industry and your liberty—now urge you to the field. These cannot plead with you in vain, or we might point out to you further—your wives, your children, your aged fathers and mothers, who now look up to you for aid and hope for salvation in this day of calamity only from the instrumentality of your swords. Remember the name of Pennsylvania. Think of your ancestors and of your posterity.”

Early the same month Congress “resolved, that a Flying Camp be immediately established in the middle Colonies, and that it consist of ten thousand men,” to complete which number, it was ordered that the Province of Pennsylvania be required to furnish six thousand of the militia. This force was to be enlisted for six months. The Conference of Committees then in session resolved subsequently that four thousand five hundred of the militia should be embodied, which with fifteen hundred then in the pay of the Province would make up the six thousand required by Congress. The Flying Camp was accordingly soon formed. It consisted of three brigades, two of which were





commanded respectively by Brigadier-Generals James Ewing and Daniel Roberdeau, of Pennsylvania. The other officer was from Maryland. The object in forming this body seems to have been not only to show the enemy the power of the nation they warred against, but also to render assistance to General Washington in case of offensive or defensive operations. The Flying Camp is closely united with the honors and the sufferings of many men in Pennsylvania. They underwent "the hard fate of war" in the Jerseys, and are intimately connected with the glories achieved at Trenton, Princeton, and Monmouth.

Toward the last of June, apprehending an immediate attack upon Philadelphia by way of the river, the Committee of Safety continued to increase its defences, in order to be prepared for the enemy. The two tiers of chevaux-de-frize first constructed were probably defective, and in consequence two additional tiers were sunk, one opposite Billingsport and the other in range with the fires of the Fort. It becoming obvious in a few days that New York, and not Philadelphia, was to be attacked, Col. Miles' command was ordered to Philadelphia, and letters were dispatched by the Committee to the colonels of the different battalions of the counties of Philadelphia, Bucks, Lancaster, and Chester, requesting they would hold themselves in readiness to march at an hour's warning.

We now come to the most momentous epoch in the history not only of the State, but of the Nation. The first actual approval of independence by State authority was in North Carolina. The convention of that State, on the 22d of April, 1776, directed their delegates to "concur with those of other States in establishing independence." Then followed the action of Virginia, the convention of which resolved unanimously that their delegates in Congress should propose to that body to declare the United Colonies free and independent States, absolved from all allegiance to or dependence on the King and Parliament of Great Britain. The delegates in Congress from Pennsylvania, by their instructions of the 9th of November, 1775, were expressly commanded to resist this measure, as they had been to oppose every proposition for changing the form of the Provincial government. From this restriction they were, however, released by a resolution of the Assembly, adopted at the instance of some petitioners from the counties of Lancaster and Cumberland, authorizing them "to concur with the other delegates in Congress in forming such further contracts between the United Colonies, concluding such treaties with foreign kingdoms and states, and adopting such other measures, as, upon a view of all circumstances, shall be judged necessary for promoting the liberty, safety, and interests of America; reserving to the people of this Colony the sole and exclusive right of regulating its internal government and police." The reluctance with which the Assembly granted this authority is demonstrated by their concluding observations. "The happiness of these Colonies," they said, "has, during the whole course of this fatal controversy, been our first wish; their reconciliation with Great Britain our next. Ardently have we prayed for the accomplishment of both. But if we must renounce the one or the other, we humbly trust in the mercies of the Supreme Governor of the Universe, that we shall not stand condemned before His throne, if our choice is determined by that overruling law of self-preservation, which His divine wisdom has thought proper to implant in the hearts of His creatures."



The committee which reported these instructions consisted of Messrs. Dickinson, Morris, Reed, Clymer, Wilcocks, Pearson, and Smith.

The action of the Pennsylvania Conference has been referred to. The public mind throughout the Colonies was now fully prepared for a declaration of independence. The Assembly of Pennsylvania, which displayed such reluctance, now assented to the measure. On the 7th of June the proposition was made in Congress by Richard Henry Lee, of Virginia, seconded by John Adams, of Massachusetts, that the "United Colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent states; and that all political connection between them and the State of Great Britain is, and ought to be, totally dissolved." This resolution was referred to a committee of the whole Congress, where it was daily debated. In favor of independence, Lee and Adams were the most distinguished speakers, the latter of whom has been characterized as the "ablest advocate" of the measure; and their most formidable opponent was John Dickinson.

Although the latter, by his political writings, had been powerfully instrumental in preparing the people for this end, yet when the time came, he endeavored to allay the undue excitement. "Prudence," he said, "required that they should not abandon certain for uncertain objects. Two hundred years of happiness and present prosperity, resulting from English laws, and the union with Great Britain, demonstrated that America could be wisely governed by the King and Parliament. It was not as independent, but as subject States, not as a republic, but as a monarchy, that the Colonies had attained to power and greatness. What then," he exclaimed, "is the object of these chimeras hatched in the days of discord and war? Shall the transports of fury sway us more than the experience of ages, and induce us to destroy, in a moment of anger, the work which had been cemented and tried by time. The restraining power of the King and Parliament was indispensable to protect the Colonies from disunion and civil war; and the most cruel hostility which Britain could wage against them, the surest mode of compelling obedience, would be to leave them a prey to their own jealousies and animosities. For, if the dread of English arms were removed, province would rise against province, city against city, and the weapons now assumed to combat the common enemy would be turned against themselves.

"Necessity would then compel them to seek the tutelary power they had rashly abjured: and, if again received under its ægis, it would be no longer as freemen, but as slaves. In their infancy, and without experience, they had given no proof of ability to walk without a guide; and, judging of the future by the past, they must infer that their concord would not outlive their danger. Even when supported by the powerful hand of England, the Colonies had abandoned themselves to discords, and sometimes to violence, from the paltry motives of territorial limits, and distant jurisdictions: what, then, might they not expect, when their minds were heated, ambition roused, and arms in the hands of all.

"If union with England gave them means of internal peace, it was not less necessary to procure the respect of foreign powers. Hitherto, their intercourse with the world had been maintained under the name and arms of England. Not as Americans—a people scarce known—but as Englishmen, they had obtained entrance and favor in foreign ports: separated from her, the nations would treat



them with disdain, the pirates of Europe and Africa would assail their vessels, massacre their seamen, or subject them to perpetual slavery.”

As far-seeing a man as John Dickinson was, he could not fully comprehend the idea of a separate existence of the Colonies from the mother country, and yet no purer patriot breathed the air of freedom. A zealous advocate of liberty, it was, as stated, his words that startled the Colonies and struck the key-note which aroused the energies of the provincialists and bade them contend for independence. Notwithstanding his over-cautionsness, nay hesitancy, the declaration having been determined on, Dickinson entered heartily into its support and took an active part in all the affairs transpiring in the Colonies—even wielding his sword in the cause.

On the first day of July, a vote in committee of the whole was taken in Congress, upon the resolution declaratory of independence. It was approved by all the Colonies except Pennsylvania and Delaware. Seven of the delegates from the former were present, of whom four voted against it. Cæsar Rodney, one of the delegates from the latter, was absent, and the other two, Thomas M’Kean and George Read, were divided in opinion, M’Kean voting in favor and Read against the resolution. At the request of a colony, the proposition having been reported to the house, was postponed until the next day, when it was finally adopted and entered upon the journals.

Pending the consideration of this important question, a committee, consisting of Jefferson, John Adams, Franklin, Sherman, and R. R. Livingston, was appointed to prepare a Declaration of Independence. Adams and Jefferson were appointed a sub-committee, and the original draft of this eloquent manifesto was made by Jefferson. It was adopted by the committee without amendment, and reported to Congress on the twenty-eighth of June. *On the 4th of July, having received some alterations, it was sanctioned by the vote of every Colony.*

Two of the members from Pennsylvania, Morris and Dickinson, were absent; Franklin, Wilson, and Morton, voted for, and Willing and Humphreys, against it. To secure the vote of Delaware, M’Kean sent an express for Rodney, who, though eighty miles from Philadelphia, arrived in time to unite with him in the vote.

The Declaration was directed to be engrossed, and, on the second of August, 1776, was signed by all the members then present, and by some who were not members at the time of its adoption. Among the latter were Colonels George Ross and James Smith, Dr. Benjamin Rush, George Clymer, and George Taylor, who had been elected by the Pennsylvania Convention, in the place of Messrs. Dickinson, Willing, and Humphreys, who had opposed it.

On the 5th of July circular letters were sent by Congress to the Assemblies, Conventions, and Councils of Safety of the various States, requesting that the Declaration of Independence should be officially proclaimed. In Pennsylvania the Committee resolved on the latter—that the instrument should be read by the Sheriff of Philadelphia, or by some person under his direction, at the State House, on Monday the 8th of July. At the same time it was directed that the King’s arms should be taken down from the court room and publicly burned by nine associators appointed for the purpose.



On the day in question, the Committee of Observation for Philadelphia marched to the lodge room, in Lodge Alley, occupied by the Committee of Safety; from thence both bodies proceeded to the State House yard, where John Nixon, a member of the Committee of Safety, on behalf of the proper officer, read the Declaration of Independence. "The instrument," says Mr. Westcott, "was heard with attention, and received with hearty and warm applause. In the afternoon the five battalions were mustered on the commons, and the Declaration was proclaimed to each of them. In the evening the King's arms were torn down, as had been previously arranged, and burned, amidst the acclamations of a large crowd of spectators. Bells were rung, bonfires were lighted, and, upon this joyful occasion, the old bell of the State House, bearing upon its sides the remarkable motto '*Proclaim Liberty throughout the Land, unto all the Inhabitants thereof;*' was probably first rung in honor of the joyful change of affairs."

The delegates to the Convention to frame a constitution for the new government consisted of the representative men of the State—men selected for their ability, patriotism, and personal popularity. They met at Philadelphia, on the 15th of July, each one taking, without hesitancy, the prescribed test, and organized by the selection of Benjamin Franklin, president, George Ross, vice-president, and John Morris and Jacob Garrigues, secretaries. On the 18th of the month, Owen Biddle, Colonel John Bull, the Rev. Wm. Vanhorn, John Jacobs, Colonel George Ross, Colonel James Smith, Jonathan Hoge, Colonel Jacob Morgan, Colonel Jacob Stroud, Colonel Thomas Smith, and Robert Martin, were appointed to "make an essay for a declaration of rights for this State." On the 24th the same persons were directed to draw up an essay for a frame or system of government, and John Leshar was appointed in place of Colonel Morgan, who was absent with leave.

On the 25th of July, Colonel Timothy Matlack, James Cannon, Colonel James Potter, David Rittenhouse, Robert Whitehill, and Colonel Bartram Galbraith, were added to the Committee on the Frame of Government. On the 28th of September, the Convention completed its labors by adopting the first State Constitution, which went into immediate effect, without a vote of the people. During the session of the Convention, says Mr. Westcott, it not only discussed and perfected the measures necessary in the adoption of a Constitution, but assumed the supreme authority in the State, and legislated upon matters foreign to the object for which it was convened. Among other matters this body appointed a Council of Safety, to carry on the executive duties of the government, approved of the Declaration of Independence, and appointed justices of the peace, who were required, before assuming their functions, to each take an oath of renunciation of the authority of George III., and one of allegiance to the State of Pennsylvania.

The legislative power of the frame of government was vested in a General Assembly of one House, elected annually. The supreme executive power was vested in a President, chosen annually by the Assembly and Council, by joint ballot—the Council consisting of twelve persons, elected in classes, for a term of three years.

A Council of Censors, consisting of two persons from each city and county,





was to be elected in 1783, and in every seventh year thereafter, whose duty it was to make inquiry as to whether the Constitution had been preserved inviolate during the last septennary, and whether the executive or legislative branches of the government had performed their duties as guardians of the people, or assumed to themselves, or exercised other or greater powers than they were entitled to by the Constitution. They were also to inquire whether the public taxes had been justly levied and collected, in all parts of the Commonwealth; in what manner the public moneys had been disposed of, and whether the laws had been duly executed. For these purposes they had power to send for persons, papers, and records, and they could pass public censures, order impeachments, and recommend to the Legislature the repeal of such laws as appeared to have been enacted contrary to the principles of the Constitution. Their powers were to continue one year, and they might call a convention to meet within two years, if deemed absolutely necessary, for amending any article of the Constitution that might appear defective, or for explaining any that might be thought to be not clearly explained, or for adding such as might appear necessary for the preservation of the rights and happiness of the people. The articles to be amended were to be published six months before election, in order that the people might have opportunity of instructing their delegates concerning them.

This Constitution, although defective, was not for some years remedied. The Assembly, in 1777, adopted measures looking to a calling of a convention, and an election ordered for delegates thereto by a resolution on 28th November, 1778, but so highly incensed were the people of the State at what they considered an uncalled-for action on the part of the Legislature, that body rescinded the motion by a vote of forty-seven to seven, nine-tenths of the qualified voters remonstrating.

The scarcity of salt exciting serious apprehensions, Congress passed resolutions against a monopoly of that article, and the Council of Safety purchased a quantity to distribute through the State. They established salt works on Tom's river, New Jersey, but some time elapsed before these works were productive.

The necessities of the Continental service caused the Council of Safety to place the State battalions of Colonels Samuel Miles, Samuel J. Atlee, and Daniel Brodhead at the disposal of Congress. They were marched to Long Island, where, with the Continental regiments of the Pennsylvania Line, viz.: Colonels Shee's, Magaw's, and Lambert Cadwallader's, they were engaged in battle on the 27th of August, which resulted in the defeat of the American forces and the evacuation of Long Island. The Pennsylvania troops sustained serious loss. Lieutenant-Colonel Caleb Perry, of the musketmen, was killed, as also Lieutenant Charles Taylor, of the second battalion of riflemen, and Lieutenant Joseph Moore, of the musketmen. Colonel Samuel Miles and Lieutenant-Colonel James Piper, of the first riflemen, and Colonel Samuel J. Atlee, of the third, with other officers, were taken prisoners.

On the 16th of November Fort Washington was reduced, and as in the engagement at Long Island, the Pennsylvania troops were severe sufferers. Morgan's, Cadwallader's, Atlee's, Swope's, Watts', and Montgomery's battalions



were taken prisoners. In addition to these severe blows to the cause of independence, General Howe's advance menaced Philadelphia.

On the 28th of November a meeting was held at the State House to consider the exigency of affairs. The Assembly sent General Mifflin through the State to stir up the people. Bounties were offered to volunteers—ten dollars to every man who joined General Washington on or before December 20th, seven dollars to those who came forward before December 25th, and five dollars to all who enlisted after that time and before December 30th, on condition of their undergoing six weeks service. Commodore Seymour was dispatched to Trenton with the armed boats to assist in transporting the army and stores across the Delaware. General Roberdeau was sent to Lancaster to alarm the people.

In the midst of this general excitement and almost consternation, Congress exhibited an alarm and indecision which was exceedingly injurious to the cause. After having declared by resolution that they would not quit Philadelphia, the members, on the very next day, adjourned precipitately to Baltimore.

General Washington dispatched Major-General Israel Putnam to Philadelphia to direct the defences. He arrived on the 12th of December, and assumed military command of the city. The fort at Billingsport was of little consequence, and works were commenced at Red Bank, on the Delaware, New Jersey, as commanding the river.

The British troops occupied Trenton towards the middle of December, and their advance threatened Philadelphia from the east side of the Delaware. The Council of Safety, owing to the demand for reinforcements by the commander-in-chief, sent forth an energetic and patriotic circular, calling on every friend of his country "to step forth at this crisis." In order to render the organization of the associators more serviceable, Colonel John Cadwallader was chosen brigadier-general by the Council of Safety, and Colonel Miles appointed brigadier-general of the Pennsylvania Line.



REAR VIEW OF INDEPENDENCE HALL.



## CHAPTER X.

THE REVOLUTION. BATTLES OF TRENTON AND PRINCETON. THE BATTLE OF BRANDYWINE. MASSACRE AT PAOLI. BRITISH OCCUPATION OF PHILADELPHIA. BATTLE OF GERMANTOWN AND REDUCTION OF FORT MIFFLIN. 1776-1777.



ON Wednesday, the 25th of December, 1776, General Washington, with his army, was on the west bank of the Delaware, encamped near Taylorsville, then McConkey's ferry, eight miles above Trenton. The troops under General Dickinson were at Yardleyville; and detachments were encamped still further up the river. The boats on the river had all been secured when General Washington had crossed with his army on the first of the month. The Pennsylvania troops were in two bodies—

one at Bristol, under General Cadwallader, and the other at Morrisville, opposite Trenton, under General Ewing. At this time the British, under General Howe, were stationed in detachments at Mount Holly, Black Horse, Burlington, and Bordentown; and at Trenton there were three regiments of Hessians, amounting to about fifteen hundred men, and a troop of British light horse. Divisions of the British army were also at Princeton and New Brunswick.



SEAL OF THE ASSEMBLY.  
1776.

The plan of General Washington was to re-cross the Delaware with his army at McConkey's ferry, in the night of the 25th, and for General Ewing, with his command, to cross at or below Trenton,

—that both might fall upon the enemy at the same time—Ewing at the south and General Washington at the north end of the town. At dusk the Continental troops, under the commander-in-chief, amounting to 2,400 men, with twenty pieces of artillery, began to cross at the ferry. The troops at Yardleyville, and the stations above, had that day assembled at this ferry. It was between three and four o'clock in the morning before all the artillery and troops were over and ready to march. Many of the men were very destitute as regarded clothing, but nowise despairing, they pushed on. The ground was covered with sleet and snow, which was falling, although before that day there was no snow, or only a little sprinkling on the ground. General Washington, as they were about to march, enjoined upon all profound silence during their march to Trenton, and said to them: "I hope you will all fight like men."

The army marched with a quick step in a body from the river, up the cross-road to the Bear Tavern, about a mile from the river. The whole force marched down this road to the village of Birmingham, distant about three and one-half miles. There they halted, examined their priming, and found it all wet.



“Well,” said General Sullivan, “we must fight them with the bayonet.” From Birmingham to Trenton the distance by the river road and the Scotch road is nearly equal, being about four and a half miles.

The troops were formed in two divisions. One of them, commanded by General Sullivan, marched down the river road. The other, commanded by General Washington, accompanied by Generals Lord Stirling, Greene, Mercer, and Stevens, filed off to the left, crossed over to the Scotch road, and went down this road till it enters the Pennington road about a mile above Trenton. Scarcely a word was spoken from the time the troops left the ferry till they reached the town, and with such stillness did the army move that they were not discovered until they came upon the out-guard of the enemy, which was posted in the outskirts of the town, when one of the sentries called to the out-guard and asked, “Who is there?” “A friend,” was the reply. “A friend to whom?” “A friend to General Washington.” At this the sentinel fired, retreating. The American troops immediately returned the fire, and, marching upon them, drove them into town. The artillery, under Colonel (afterwards General) Knox, soon got into position, and enfiladed the main street. The infantry supported the artillery, and the enemy were thrown into confusion. One regiment attempted to form in an orchard, but were soon forced to fall back upon their main body. A company of them entered a stone house, which they defended with a field-piece, judiciously posted in the hall; but Captain (afterwards Colonel) Washington advanced to dislodge them. Finding his men exposed to a close and steady fire, he suddenly leaped from them, rushed into the house, seized the officer who had command of the gun, and claimed him prisoner. His men followed him, and the whole company were made prisoners. In the meanwhile victory declared itself everywhere in favor of the American arms.

General Rahl, who commanded the Hessians, was mortally wounded early in the engagement. He was taken to his headquarters, where he died of his wounds. The number of prisoners was twenty-three officers and eight hundred and eighty-six privates. The loss of the enemy in killed was seven officers and thirty privates; that of the Americans, two privates killed and two frozen to death. Had General Ewing's division been able to cross the Delaware as contemplated, and taken possession of the bridge on the Assunpink, all the enemy that were in Trenton would have been captured; but owing to so much ice on the shores of the river, it was impossible to get the artillery over. As it was, the victory greatly revived the drooping spirits, not only of the army, but of the Union. Before night the forces of Washington, with their prisoners and other trophies of victory, had safely landed on the Pennsylvania side of the river.

After the battle at Trenton, General Putnam hastened to rejoin the army, leaving General Irvine in command of Philadelphia. Subsequently General Gates succeeded the latter.

Close upon the victory at Trenton followed the action at Princeton, on the 2d day of January, 1777. In this battle the Philadelphia City Troop, 1777. under the command of Captain Samuel Morris, and Captain William Brown's company of marines, belonging to the Pennsylvania ship





Montgomery, distinguished themselves by their bravery. At Princeton fell the brave General Hugh Mercer, and a number of other officers and men.

The members of the Supreme Executive Council, chosen under the Constitution of the State, at the election in February, assembled on the 4th of March, and proceeded to an organization, and the Council of Safety was dissolved. In joint convention with the Assembly, Thomas Wharton, Jr.,\* was elected President, and George Bryan, Vice-President. To give due dignity to the executive of the new government, the inauguration took place on the following day, the 5th, with much pomp and ceremony, at the court house.



THOMAS WHARTON, JR.,

On the 13th of March, the Supreme Executive Council appointed a Navy Board, to whom was committed all powers necessary for the good of that service. This board entered very promptly upon the duties of its appointment, meeting with many difficulties, boats out of repair and inefficiently manned, difficulties about rank in the fleet, all of which it succeeded in overcoming. In April, when it was thought Philadelphia would be attacked, this board was invested with all powers in its department necessary to ensure the public safety, and a proclamation was issued forbidding the sailing of all vessels from the port without its permission.

The association system failing, the Assembly addressed itself to the task of establishing a regular and permanent militia, and a Board of War, consisting of nine members, was appointed to assist in carrying out the provisions of the new militia law.

Early in June, General Howe, commander of the British forces at New York, showed a disposition to advance by land across New Jersey, and to take possession of Philadelphia. On the 14th of that month he actually made an advance by two columns, which led General Washington to believe that this was his real intention. This information being communicated to Congress, the same day that body directed "that the second-class of the militia of the counties of Philadelphia, Chester, Bucks, Lancaster, York, Cumberland, Berks, and Northampton, be ordered to march to the places to which the first class of the said counties respectively are ordered, and that the third class be got in readiness to march, and also, that the first and second classes of the city militia be ordered to march to Bristol, and the third class hold themselves in readiness to march at the shortest notice." This order was promptly responded to by the Supreme Executive Council of the State, who issued a circular letter to the lieutenants of

\* THOMAS WHARTON, JR., was born in Philadelphia in 1735. He was descended from an ancient English family, and was the grandson of Richard Wharton, who emigrated to Pennsylvania in 1683. President Wharton was twice married, first to Susan, daughter of Thomas Lloyd, and subsequently to Elizabeth, daughter of William Fishbourn. He was a warm supporter of the principles of the Revolution, and on the change of government, was elected to the highest office in the State. He died suddenly at Lancaster, on the 23d of May, 1778. He was buried with military honors, and at the request of the vestry, was interred within the walls of Trinity church in that city.



the counties named "to forward the first-class of militia immediately, and to hold the second class in readiness to march at the shortest notice." One hundred wagons were also directed to be sent. The militia, we will state here, was divided into eight classes. When a class was called out, many belonging to it could not or would not go. The deficiency was made up by the employment of substitutes, either taken from the other classes, or from those not subject by law to the performance of military duty. These substitutes were procured by means of a bounty, which was paid by the State, to be remunerated by the fines imposed on delinquents, and varied from £15 to £50 for two months service. In some regiments the number of substitutes nearly equalled the number of those regularly drafted. The system of employing substitutes at high rates was much complained of by the officers of the regular army, who regarded it as a serious obstruction to recruiting by enlistments.

The marching of General Howe, it seems, was intended to draw General Washington from the strong position he then occupied, and in that event to give him battle, which he declined to do, as our troops were then posted. Washington wisely refused to risk his army in an open field fight, and Howe would not venture to cross the Delaware, leaving so large a force as that commanded by Washington in his rear, so that Philadelphia was again relieved from being attacked by the way of New Jersey. It having become apparent, therefore, that General Howe had definitely changed his plan for gaining possession of Philadelphia, the marching orders for all the militia, except those of Chester and Philadelphia, were countermanded.

Early in July, news of the embarkation of a large British force at New York very reasonably suggested the idea that the attack on the capital of Pennsylvania would be by way of the river Delaware, and that perchance was General Howe's intention when he sailed. Every effort was accordingly made for the defence of the river. On the 27th of July certain information was received by the Council of Safety of the approach of the British fleet towards the Delaware bay. The news produced the highest degree of excitement among the inhabitants, and induced the authorities of the State to redouble their exertions. The day following, Congress made a requisition on the Supreme Executive Council for four thousand militia, in addition to those already in service, in response to which the authorities ordered one class to be immediately called into service "to march for Chester."

The different detachments of the army under Washington were also directed to repair to the vicinity of Philadelphia, while the militia of Maryland, Delaware, and Northern Virginia, were ordered by forced marches to join the Pennsylvania troops. It was at this time that Washington first met Lafayette, who had recently arrived in Philadelphia. Lafayette, invited by Washington, at once took up his quarters with the commander-in-chief, and shared all the privations of the camp.

After entering Delaware bay, General Howe found some difficulty in the navigation of his immense naval armament. He retraced his steps to the ocean, deciding to make his approach by the way of the Chesapeake.

On the 25th of August, the British army, consisting of eighteen thousand men, including a portion of the Hessian force, was disembarked not far from



the head of the river Elk. It was plentifully furnished with all the equipage of war, excepting the defect of horses, as well for the cavalry as for the baggage. The scarcity of forage had caused many of them to perish the preceding winter, and a considerable number had died also in the late passage.

This was a serious disadvantage for the royal troops, who, in this section of Pennsylvania, might have employed cavalry with singular effect. On the 28th, the English vanguard arrived at the head of the Elk, and the day following at Gray's hill. Here it was afterwards joined by the rear guard under General Knyphausen, who had been left upon the coast to cover the debarkation of the stores and artillery.

The whole army took post behind the river Christiana, having Newark upon the right, and Pencader or Atkins on the left. A column commanded by Lord Cornwallis having fallen in with Maxwell's riflemen, routed and pursued them as far as the farther side of White Clay creek, in which the patriots lost forty in killed and wounded. The loss of the enemy was somewhat less.

The American army, in order to encourage the partisans of independence, and overawe the disaffected, marched through the city of Philadelphia; it afterwards advanced towards the enemy, and encamped behind White Clay creek. A little after, leaving only the riflemen in the camp, Washington retired with the main body of his army behind the Red Clay creek, occupying with his right wing the town of Newport, situated near the Christiana, and upon the great road to Philadelphia; his left was at Hoekhesson. But this line was little capable of defence.

The enemy, reinforced by the rear guard under General Grant, threatened with his right the centre of the Americans, and extended his left as if with the intention of turning their right flank. Washington saw the danger, and retired with his troops behind the Brandywine; he encamped on the rising ground which extend from Chadd's Ford, in the direction of northwest to southeast. The riflemen of Maxwell scoured the right bank of the Brandywine, in order to harass and retard the enemy. The militia, under the command of General Armstrong, guarded a passage below the principal encampment of Washington, and the right wing lined the banks of the river higher up, where the passages were most difficult. The passage of Chadd's Ford, as the most practicable of all, was defended by the chief force of the army. The troops being thus disposed, the American general waited the approach of the English. Although the Brandywine, being fordable almost everywhere, could not serve as a sufficient defence against the impetuosity of the enemy, yet Washington had taken post upon its banks, from a conviction that a battle was now inevitable, and that Philadelphia could only be saved by a victory. General Howe displayed the front of his army, but not, however, without great circumspection. Being arrived at Kennet Square, a short distance from the river, he detached his light-horse to the right upon Wilmington, to the left upon the Lancaster road, and in the front towards Chadd's Ford. The two armies found themselves within seven miles of each other, the Brandywine flowing between them.

Early in the morning of the 11th of September, the British army marched toward the enemy. Howe had formed his army in two columns, the right commanded by General Knyphausen, the left by Lord Cornwallis. His plan was, that while



the first should make repeated feints to attempt the passage of Chadd's Ford, in order to occupy the attention of the Americans, the second should take a long circuit to the upper part of the river, and cross at a place where it is divided into two shallow streams. The English marksmen fell in with those of Maxwell, and a smart skirmish was immediately engaged. The latter were at first repulsed; but being reinforced from the camp, they compelled the English to retire in their turn. But at length, they also were reinforced, and Maxwell was constrained to withdraw his detachment behind the river. Meanwhile, Knyphausen advanced with his column, and commenced a furious cannonade upon the passage of Chadd's Ford, making all his dispositions as if he intended to force it. The Americans defended themselves with gallantry, and even passed several detachments of light troops to the other side, in order to harass the enemy's flanks. But after a course of skirmishes, sometimes advancing, and at others obliged to retire, they were finally, with an eager pursuit, driven over the river. Knyphausen then appeared more than ever determined to pass the Ford; he stormed, and kept up an incredible noise. In this manner the attention of the Americans was fully occupied in the neighborhood of Chadd's Ford. Meanwhile, Lord Cornwallis, at the head of the second column, took a circuitous march to the left, and gained unperceived the forks of the Brandywine. By this rapid movement, he passed both branches of the river, at Trimble's and at Jefferis' fords, without opposition, about two o'clock in the afternoon, and then turning short down the river, took the road to Dilworth, in order to fall upon the right flank of the American army. General Washington, however, received intelligence of this movement about noon, and, as it usually happens in similar cases, the reports exaggerated its importance exceedingly; it being represented that General Howe commanded this division in person. Washington therefore decided immediately for the most judicious, though boldest measure; this was to pass the river with the centre and left wing of his army, and overwhelm Knyphausen by the most furious attack. He justly reflected that the advantage he should obtain upon the enemy's right would amply compensate the loss that his own might sustain at the same time. Accordingly, he ordered General Sullivan to pass the Brandywine with his division at an upper ford, and attack the left of Knyphausen, while he, in person, should cross lower down, and fall upon the right of that general.

They were both already in motion in order to execute this design, when a second report arrived which represented what had really taken place as false, or in other words, that the enemy had not crossed the two branches of the river, and that he had not made his appearance upon the right flank of the American troops. Deceived by this false intelligence, Washington desisted, and Greene, who had already passed with the vanguard, was ordered back. In the midst of these uncertainties, the commander-in-chief at length received the positive assurance, not only that the English had appeared upon the left bank, but also that they were about to fall in great force upon the right wing. This was composed of the brigades of Generals Stephen, Stirling, and Sullivan. The first was the most advanced, and consequently the nearest to the English; the two others were posted in the order of their rank, that of Sullivan being next to the centre. The latter was immediately detached from the main body to support the two former brigades, and, being the senior officer, took the com-





mand of the whole wing. Washington himself, followed by General Greene, approached with two strong divisions towards this wing, and posted himself between it and the corps he had left at Chadd's Ford, under General Wayne, supported by Proctor's artillery, to oppose the passage of Knyphausen. These divisions, under the immediate orders of the commander-in-chief, served as a corps of reserve, ready to march, according to circumstances, to the succor of Sullivan or of Wayne.

But the column of Cornwallis was already in sight of the Americans. Sullivan drew up his troops on the commanding ground above Birmingham meeting-house, with his left extending towards the Brandywine, and both his flanks covered with very thick woods. His artillery was advantageously planted upon the neighboring hills; but it appears that Sullivan's own brigade, having taken a long circuit, arrived too late upon the field of battle, and had not yet occupied the position assigned it when the action commenced. The British, having reconnoitered the dispositions of the Americans, immediately formed, and fell upon them with the utmost impetuosity. The engagement became equally fierce on both sides about four o'clock in the afternoon. For some length of time the Americans defended themselves with great valor, and the carnage was terrible. But such was the emulation which invigorated the efforts of the British and Hessians, that neither the advantages of situation, nor a heavy and well-supported fire of small-arms and artillery, nor the unshaken courage of the Americans, were able to resist their impetuosity. The light infantry, chasseurs, grenadiers, and guards, threw themselves with such fury into the midst of the Continental battalions, that they were forced to give way. Their left flank was first thrown into confusion, but the rout soon became general. The vanquished fled into the woods in their rear; the victors pursued, and advanced by the great road towards Dilworth. On the first fire of the artillery, Washington, having no doubt of what was passing, had pushed forward the reserve to the succor of Sullivan. But this corps, on approaching the field of battle, fell in with the flying soldiers of Sullivan, and perceived that no hope remained of retrieving the fortune of the day. General Greene, by a judicious manœuvre, opened his ranks to receive the fugitives, and after their passage, having closed them anew, he retired in good order, checking the pursuit of the enemy by a continual fire of the artillery which covered his rear. Having come to a defile, covered on both sides with woods, he drew up his men there, and again faced the enemy. His corps was composed of Virginians and Pennsylvanians; they defended themselves with gallantry, and made an heroic stand.

Knyphausen, finding the Americans to be fully engaged on their right, and observing that the corps opposed to him at Chadd's Ford was enfeebled by the troops which had been detached to the succor of Sullivan, began to make dispositions for crossing the river in reality. The passage of Chadd's Ford was defended by an intrenchment and battery. The Americans stood firm at first; but upon intelligence of the defeat of their right, and seeing some of the British troops who had penetrated through the woods, come out upon their flank, they retired in disorder, abandoning their artillery and munitions to the Hessian general. In their retreat, or rather flight, they passed behind the position of General Greene, who still defended himself, and was the last to quit the field of



battle. Finally, it being already dark, after a long and obstinate conflict, he also retired. The whole army retreated that night to Chester, and the day following to Philadelphia.

There the fugitives arrived incessantly, having effected their escape through by-ways and circuitous routes. The victors passed the night on the field of battle. If darkness had not arrived seasonably, it is very probable that the whole American army would have been destroyed. Their loss was computed at about three hundred killed, six hundred wounded, and near four hundred taken prisoners. They also lost ten field-pieces and a howitzer. The loss in the royal army was not in proportion, being something under five hundred, of which the slain did not amount to one-fifth.

The French officers were of great utility to the Americans, as well in forming the troops as in rallying them when thrown into confusion. One of them, the Baron St. Ouary, was made a prisoner, to the great regret of Congress, who bore him a particular esteem. Captain De Fleury had a horse killed under him in the hottest of the action. The Congress gave him another a few days after. The Marquis De Lafayette, while he was endeavoring, by his words and example, to rally the fugitives, was wounded in the leg. He continued, nevertheless, to fulfil his duty, both as a soldier in fighting and as a general in cheering the troops and re-establishing order. The Count Pulaski, a noble Pole, also displayed an undaunted courage at the head of the light-horse. The Congress manifested their sense of his merit by giving him, shortly after, the rank of brigadier, and the command of the cavalry.

If all the American troops in the action of the Brandywine had fought with the same intrepidity as the Virginians and Pennsylvanians, and especially if Washington had not been led into error by a false report, perhaps, notwithstanding the inferiority of numbers and the imperfection of arms, he would have gained the victory, or, at least, would have made it more sanguinary to the English. However this might have been, it must be admitted that General Howe's order of battle was excellent; that his movements were executed with as much ability as promptitude; and that his troops, British as well as German, behaved admirably well.

The day after the battle, towards evening, the British dispatched a detachment of light troops to Wilmington. There they took prisoner the Governor of the State of Delaware, and seized a considerable quantity of coined money, as well as other property, both public and private, and some papers of importance.

Lord Cornwallis entered Philadelphia the 26th of September, at the head of a detachment of British and Hessian grenadiers. The rest of the army remained in the camp at Germantown. Thus the rich and populous capital of the whole confederation fell into the power of the royalists, after a sanguinary battle, and a series of manœuvres no less masterly than painful, of the two armies. The Quakers, and all the other loyalists who had remained there, welcomed the English with transports of gratulation. Washington, descending along the left bank of the Schuylkill, approached within sixteen miles of Germantown. He encamped at Skippack creek, purposing to accommodate his measures to the state of things.

Congress and the Supreme Executive Council of the State remained in



Philadelphia during the exciting events transpiring before the city. The former adjourned on the 18th to meet at Lancaster, where it convened on the 27th, but three days after removed to York. The State government remained until the 24th, when it adjourned to Lancaster, the archives, etc., having previously been removed to Easton.

A few days after the battle of Brandywine four or five hundred of the American wounded soldiers were taken to Ephrata and placed in a hospital. Here the camp fever set in, which, in conjunction with the wounds of the soldiers, baffled the skill of the surgeons. One hundred and fifty, a fearful mortality, proved fatal and were buried there. They were principally from Pennsylvania and New England, and a few British who had deserted and joined the American army.

On the evening of the 20th of September General Wayne's division of the army was encamped on the ground at Paoli, three miles in the rear of the left wing of the British army, from whence, after being reinforced by General Smallwood's command of militia, it was his intention to march and attack the enemy's rear when they decamped, and if possible "cut off their baggage." General Howe having been informed by Tories residing in the neighborhood of the exact position of Wayne's encampment, dispatched General Gray, with an adequate force, to capture the whole party. Cautiously approaching in the dead of the night, and probably guided by some local enemy of the American cause, he drove in the pickets with charged bayonets, and at once rushed upon the encampment with the cry of "no quarters." Wayne instantly formed his division, and with his right sustained a fierce assault, directed a retreat by the left, commanded by Colonel Richard Humpton, under cover of the first Pennsylvania regiment, the light infantry, and the horse, who for a short time withstood the violence of the shock. The total loss of the Americans has been variously estimated at from one hundred and fifty to three hundred, while the British only admitted a loss of seven.

Some severe animadversions on this unfortunate affair having been made in the army, General Wayne demanded a court martial, which, after investigating his conduct, was unanimously of opinion "that he had done everything to be expected from an active, brave, and vigilant officer," and acquitted him with honor. Of this court General Sullivan was president.

General Howe, having occupied Philadelphia, at once took measures to secure the unobstructed passage of his fleet up the Delaware river. Colonel Sterling was sent with a detachment to attack the fort at Billingsport, as its capture would place it in their power to make a passage through the obstructions in the channel, and to bring their vessels within striking distance of Fort Mifflin. This was accomplished on the 2d of October, without resistance, the small garrison, under Colonel Bradford, taking off all the ammunition and some of the cannon spiking the rest, and burning the barracks.

While this was being effected by the enemy, General Washington regarded it as a favorable opportunity of making an attack on the British force stationed at Germantown. He took this resolution with the more confidence, as he was now reinforced by the junction of the troops from the Hudson and a division of Maryland militia.

The British line of encampment crossed Germantown at right angles about



the centre, the left wing extending on the west from the town to the Schuylkill. That wing was covered in front by the mounted and dismounted Hessian chasseurs, who were stationed a little above, towards the American camp; a battalion of light infantry and the Queen's American rangers were in the front of the right. The centre, being posted within the town, was guarded by the 40th regiment, and another battalion of light infantry, stationed about three-quarters of a mile above the head of the village. Washington resolved to attack the British by surprise, not doubting that if he succeeded in breaking them, as they were not only distant, but totally separated from the fleet, his victory must be decisive.

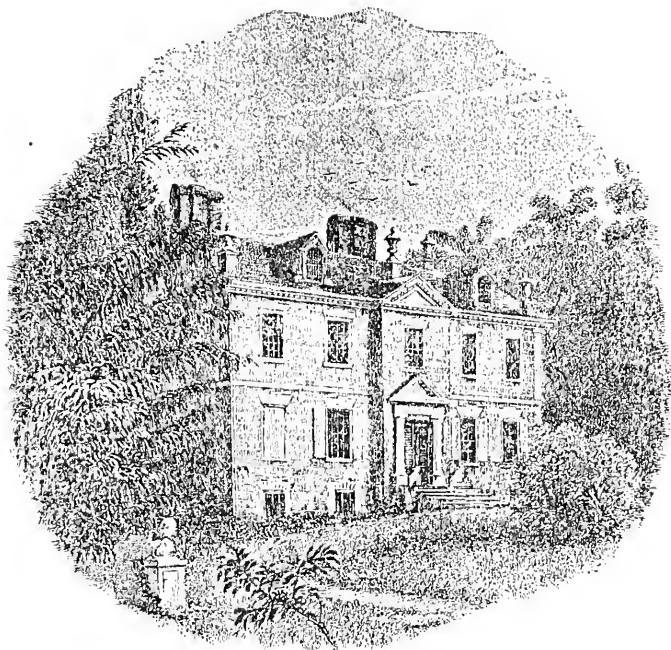
He so disposed his troops that the divisions of Sullivan and Wayne, flanked by Conway's brigade, were to march down the main road, and entering the town by the way of Chestnut Hill, to attack the English centre and the right flank of their left wing; the divisions of Greene and Stephen, flanked by MacDougal's brigade, were to take a circuit towards the east, by the limekiln road, and entering the town at the market-house, to attack the left flank of the right wing. The intention of the American general in seizing the village of Germantown by a double attack, was effectually to separate the right and left wings of the royal army, which must have given him a certain victory. In order that the left flank of the left wing might not contract itself, and support the right flank of the same wing, General Armstrong, with the Pennsylvania militia, was ordered to march down the Manatawny or Ridge road upon the banks of the Schuylkill, and endeavor to dislodge the chasseurs and Hessians at Van Deering's mill and at the falls, and afterwards to get upon the left and rear of the enemy, if they should retire from that river. In like manner, to prevent the right flank of the right wing from going to the succor of the left flank, which rested upon Germantown, the militia of Maryland and New Jersey, under Generals Smallwood and Forman, were to march down the old York road, and to fall upon the English on that extremity of their wing. The division of Lord Stirling, and the brigades of Generals Nash and Maxwell, formed the reserve. General Potter, in the meantime, was ordered to make an attack or a feint from the west side of the Schuylkill upon the royal camp in the city, so as to keep the grenadiers in work. These dispositions being made, Washington quitted his camp at Skippach creek, and moved towards the enemy on the 3d of October, about seven in the evening. Parties of cavalry silently scoured all the roads, to seize any individual who might have given notice to the British general of the danger that threatened him. Washington in person accompanied the columns of Sullivan and Wayne. The march was rapid and silent.

At three o'clock in the morning, the British patrols discovered the approach of the Americans; the troops were soon called to arms; each took his post with the precipitation of surprise. About sunrise the Americans came up. General Conway, having driven in the pickets, fell upon the 40th regiment and the battalion of light infantry. These corps, after a short resistance, being overpowered by numbers, were pressed and pursued into the village. Fortune appeared already to have declared herself in favor of the Americans; and certainly if they had gained complete possession of Germantown, nothing could have frustrated them of the most signal victory. But in this conjuncture





Lieutenant-Colonel Musgrave threw himself, with six companies of the 40th regiment, into a large and strong stone house, the mansion of Judge Chew, situated near the head of the village, from which he poured upon the assailants so terrible a fire of musketry that they could advance no further. The Americans attempted to storm this unexpected covert of the enemy, but those within



THE CHEW MANSION, GERMANTOWN.

continued to defend themselves with resolution. They finally brought cannon up to the assault, but such was the intrepidity of the English, and the violence of their fire, that it was found impossible to dislodge them. During this time General Greene had approached the right wing, and routed, after a slight engagement, the light infantry and Queen's rangers. Afterwards, turning a little to his right, and towards Germantown, he fell upon the left flank of the enemy's right wing, and endeavored to enter the village. Meanwhile, he expected that the Pennsylvania militia, under Armstrong, upon the right, and the militia of Maryland and New Jersey, commanded by Smallwood and Forman, on the left, would have executed the orders of the commander-in-chief, by attacking and turning, the first the left, the second the right flank of the British army. But either because the obstacles they encountered had retarded them, or that they wanted ardor, the former arrived in sight of the German chasseurs, and did not attack them; the latter appeared too late upon the field of battle.

The consequence was, that General Grey, finding his left flank secure,



marched, with nearly the whole of the left wing, to the assistance of the centre, which, notwithstanding the unexpected resistance of Colonel Musgrave, was excessively hard pressed in Germantown, where the Americans gained ground incessantly. The battle was now very warm at that village, the attack and the defence being equally vigorous. The issue appeared for some time dubious. General Agnew was mortally wounded while charging with great bravery at the head of the Fourth brigade. Colonel George Matthews, of the Ninth Virginia regiment, who was in the advance of Greene's column, assailed the English with so much fury that he drove them before him into the town. He had taken a large number of prisoners, and was about entering the village when he perceived that a thick fog and the unevenness of the ground had caused him to lose sight of the rest of his division. Being soon enveloped by the extremity of the right wing, which fell back upon him when it had discovered that nothing was to be apprehended from the tardy approach of the militia of Maryland and New Jersey, he was compelled to surrender with all his party; the English had already rescued their prisoners. This check was the cause that two regiments of the English right wing were enabled to throw themselves into Germantown, and to attack the Americans who had entered it in flank. Unable to sustain the shock, they retired precipitately, leaving a great number of killed and wounded. Lieutenant-Colonel Musgrave, to whom belongs the principal honor of this affair, was then relieved from all peril. General Grey, being absolute master of Germantown, flew to the succor of the right wing, which was engaged with the left of the column of Greene. The Americans then took to flight, abandoning to the English, throughout the line, a victory, of which, in the commencement of the action, they had felt assured.

The principal causes of the failure of this well-concerted enterprise were the extreme haziness of the weather, which was so thick that the Americans could neither discover the situation nor movements of the British army, nor yet those of their own; the inequality of the ground, which incessantly broke the ranks of their battalions, an inconvenience more serious and difficult to be repaired for new and inexperienced troops, as were most of the Americans, than for the English veterans; and, finally, the unexpected resistance of Musgrave, who found means, in a critical moment, to transform a mere house into an impregnable fortress. General Reed's proposition was to pursue the enemy when first thrown into confusion and turning their faces towards Philadelphia, but General Knox opposed the suggestion as being against all military rule, "to leave an enemy in a fort in the rear." "What," exclaimed Reed, "call this a fort, and lose the happy moment!" Knox's opinion prevailed, and the result was as described.

Thus fortune, who at first had appeared disposed to favor one party, suddenly declared herself on the side of their adversaries. Lord Cornwallis, being at Philadelphia, upon intelligence of the attack upon the camp, flew to its succor with a corps of the cavalry and the grenadiers; but when he reached the field of battle the Americans had already left it. They had two hundred men killed in this action; the number of wounded amounted to six hundred; and about four hundred were made prisoners. One of their most lamented losses was that of Brigadier-General Francis Nash, of North Carolina, besides



Colonel Boyd, Major Sherbourne, Major White, and Major Irvine. The loss of the British was little over five hundred in killed and wounded; among the former were Brigadier-General Agnew and Colonel Bird. The American army saved all its artillery, and retreated the same day, about twenty miles, to Perkiomen creek.

The Congress expressed, in decided terms, their approbation, both of the plan of this enterprise and the courage with which it was executed; for which their thanks were given to the general and the army. A few days after the battle, the royal army removed from Germantown to Philadelphia.

On the 17th of October the British army, under Burgoyne, surrendered to General Gates, the news of which enlivened the hearts of the desponding patriots, but unfortunately resulted in a clamor for a change in the commander-in-chief, substituting Gates in Washington's position. This faction was not strong, and although they excited a spirit of envy and jealousy in many officers of the Continental army, yet the rank and file bore true allegiance to their illustrious commander.

On the 22d of October occurred Count Dunop's attack on Fort Mercer, at Red Bank. It commenced at four o'clock, and with the first sound of the Count's cannon, the British fleet, consisting of the *Augusta*, a new sixty-four gun vessel, the *Roebuck*, forty-four guns, the *Merlin* frigate, the *Liverpool*, and several other vessels which had got through the barrier at Billingsport, attempted to make its way up the river to assist the attack. The Pennsylvania State fleet, under Commodore Hazelwood, immediately engaged these vessels and drove them back; the galleys also were of great service in flanking the enemy at the fort. Going down the river, the *Augusta* and *Merlin* ran aground; hearing of which, on the morning of the 23d, the commodore immediately hoisted signal to engage, and the action soon became general. The *Augusta* took fire and blew up, and not being able to get the *Merlin* off, she was burned by her crew. Commodore Hazelwood was, by a vote of Congress of the 4th of November, honored with a sword for his gallant conduct in this action.

Pending the reduction of Fort Mifflin, on Hog Island, the Pennsylvania fleet was actively engaged defending the pass between it and the Jersey shore, took a part in the actions before the fort was burned and abandoned by our troops on the 16th of November, losing in one day thirty-eight men killed and wounded. On the 20th, Fort Mercer was abandoned by our troops, and the fleet could no longer lie in safety under Red Bank; accordingly, after holding a council of the captains of the galleys, it was determined to pass by the city in the night, and take refuge in the Delaware above Burlington. At three o'clock in the morning of the 21st, the commodore got under way, and about half past four passed the city without having a shot fired at the convoy. It consisted of thirteen galleys, twelve armed boats, province sloop, ammunition sloop, *Convention* brig, an accommodation sloop, one provision sloop, one schooner, and two flats with stores; the schooner *Delaware*, Captain Eyre, was driven on shore and set on fire. An attempt was made to get the Continental fleet up, but failed, and its vessels *Andrea Doria*, *Xebex*, etc., with the Province ships and the two floating batteries, were set on fire and burned.



## CHAPTER XI.

THE REVOLUTION. THE CANTONMENT AT VALLEY FORGE. THE MISCHIANZA. PHILADELPHIA EVACUATED BY THE BRITISH. INDIAN OUTRAGES. SULLIVAN'S EXPEDITION. ABOLITION OF SLAVERY IN PENNSYLVANIA. 1777—1780.



LATE in November, General Washington, being now reinforced by General Gates' army from the north, encamped in a strong position at Whitemarsh, Montgomery county. The American army at this time consisted of about eleven thousand, of whom nearly three thousand were unfit for duty, "being barefooted and otherwise naked." Howe had with him but little more than twelve thousand fighting men. The British general made several attempts to provoke or entice Washington into the field, but the latter chose to receive the enemy in camp—each general choosing not to risk a battle without the advantage of ground. On the 3d of December General Howe attempted to surprise the American camp, but his design was frustrated by the vigilance of the American commander. Howe manœuvred with the hope of drawing General Washington out to battle, but signally failed. The Americans remained in their own camp, with the exception of skirmishing parties sent out to annoy the enemy. Generals Potter, Irvine, Armstrong, and Reed, of the Pennsylvania troops, kept watch over the movements of the British. On the night of the 8th, General Howe marched back ingloriously to Philadelphia without accomplishing his threat of "driving General Washington over the Blue Mountains." Washington finally concluded to go into winter quarters at Valley Forge. Here this faithful band of patriots, worn out with the fatigues of the summer's campaign, and destitute of all the necessaries of life, passed a most dreary winter. They erected log huts on the plan of a village, and so far were comfortably sheltered; but blankets, sufficient clothing, shoes, and oftentimes provisions, were but scantily provided. It was with great difficulty and anxiety that Washington kept his army together until spring. Yet amid all this suffering, day after day, as Dr. Lossing remarks, surrounded by frost and snow, for it was a winter of great severity, patriotism was still warm and hopeful in the hearts of the soldiers; and the love of self was merged into the one holy sentiment—*love of country*. Although a few feeble notes of discontent were heard, and symptoms of intentions to abandon the cause were visible, yet the great body of that suffering phalanx were content to wait for the budding spring, and be ready to enter anew upon the fields of strife for the cause of freedom. It was one of the most trying scenes in the life of Washington, but a cloud of doubt seldom darkened the serene atmosphere of his hopes. He knew that the cause was just and holy, and his faith and confidence in God as a defender and helper of right were as steady in their ministrations of vigor to his soul as were the pulsations





of his heart to his active limbs. In perfect reliance upon Divine aid, he moved in the midst of crushed hopes, and planned brilliant schemes for the future.

Congress, on the 10th of December, passed a resolution requesting the Legislature of Pennsylvania to enact a law requiring all persons at the distance



WASHINGTON'S HEAD-QUARTERS AT VALLEY FORGE.

of seventy miles, and upwards, from General Washington's headquarters, and below the Blue Mountains, to thresh out their wheat and other grain within as short a space of time as the Legislature should deem sufficient for the purpose, and in case of failure to subject the same to seizure by the commissaries at the price of straw only. No such law was passed, but the commander-in-chief, on the 29th, issued a proclamation from Valley Forge commanding that one-half of



the grain in store within seventy miles of his camp should be threshed out before the first of February ensuing, and the other half before the first of March.

On Monday, the 5th of January, 1778, transpired the ever-memorable event—the “Battle of the Kegs.” The large number of vessels, says Thompson Westcott, which lay before Philadelphia, stimulated the ingenuity of the Americans to find some means to destroy them. A number of kegs, or of machines that resembled kegs as they were floating, were prepared at Burlington by the men of the Pennsylvania galleys, and placed in a position to be carried against the shipping by the current. Unluckily the vessels, which had been in the middle of the river, were then drawn in near the wharves to avoid the ice. The kegs had spring locks which were contrived so as to explode on coming in contact with any hard substance. On the day in question several of these kegs were observed floating down the river, and “an alarm immediately spread throughout the city. Various reports prevailed, filling the city and the royal troops with consternation. Some reported that these kegs were filled with armed rebels who were to issue forth in the dead of night and take Philadelphia by surprise, asserting that they had seen the points of their bayonets through the bung-holes of the kegs. Others said they were charged with the most inveterate combustibles, to be kindled by secret machinery, and setting the whole Delaware in flames, were to consume all the shipping in the harbor; whilst others asserted they were constructed by art magic, would of themselves ascend the wharves in the night time, and roll, all flaming, through the streets of the city, destroying everything in their way. Be this as it may, certain it is that all the shipping in the harbor, and all the wharves were fully manned. The battle began, and it was surprising to behold the incessant blaze that was kept up against the enemy—the kegs. Both officers and men,” continues the account, “exhibited the most unparalleled skill and bravery on the occasion, whilst the citizens stood gazing as the solemn witnesses of their prowess. From the Roebuck and other ships of war whole broadsides were poured into the Delaware. In short, not a wandering chip, stick, or drift log, but felt the vigor of the British arms.” The entire transaction was laughable in the extreme, and furnished the theme for unnumbered sallies of wit from the Whig press, while the distinguished author of “Hail, Columbia,” Francis Hopkinson, paraphrased it in a ballad which was immensely popular at the time.

With the exception of occasional depredations committed by British foraging parties, during the winter all was quiet on the Delaware. The vigilance of Generals Potter and Lacey greatly restrained these forays. In the meantime, through Washington, with the aid of Steuben and other foreign officers in the army, the band of American patriots were metamorphosed into a well-disciplined army. General Wayne's command was encamped during nearly the whole winter and spring at Mount Joy, in Lancaster county, assisting in securing supplies of provisions for the army at Valley Forge.

The Supreme Executive Council of the State, and the Assembly, in session at Lancaster, and the Congress at York, were principally engaged in legislating for the interests of the army, preparing for the ensuing campaign. On the 6th of March the Assembly passed the “act for the attainder of divers traitors,” among whom were specially mentioned, Joseph Galloway, Andrew Allen, Rev.



Jacob Duché, John Biddle, and others. The recreant sons of Pennsylvania began to be numerous and troublesome, and severe measures were absolutely necessary.

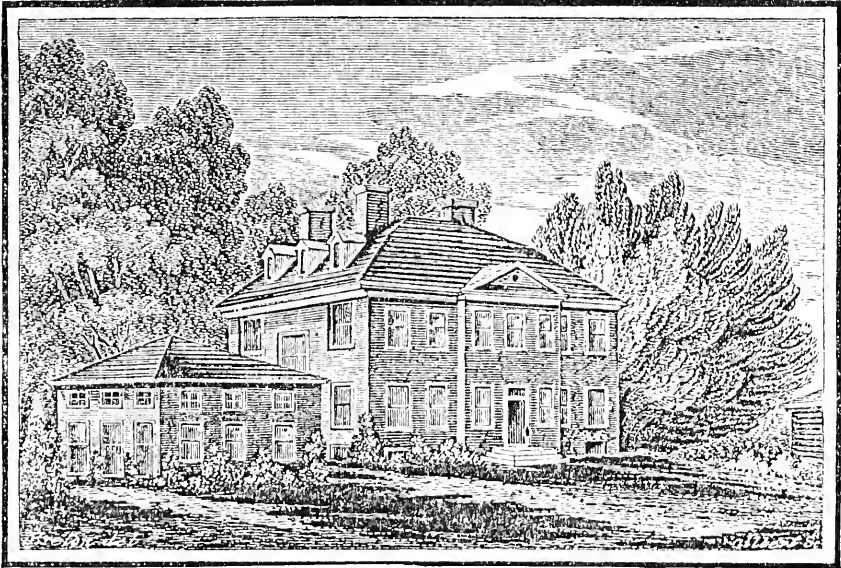
On the 6th of February France openly espoused the American cause, and a treaty of alliance was negotiated at Paris, by the commissioners, Benjamin Franklin, Silas Deane, and Arthur Lee, who had been sent as ambassadors by Congress in September of the previous year. This joyful news reached York on the 2d of May. In compliance with this agreement, the French ministry dispatched a fleet of twelve ships and four frigates, under Count D'Estang, to the Delaware.

On the 1st of May, General John Lacey, with a small force of militia stationed at Crooked Billet Tavern, Bucks county, for the purpose of preventing supplies of provisions being sent to Philadelphia, were surprised by a detachment of British troops under Colonel Abercrombie. The Americans lost twenty-six killed, eight or ten wounded, and fifty-eight missing. The British bayoneted many of the prisoners after they had surrendered; others of the wounded were "thrown in among some standing buckwheat straw, which was set on fire, whereby several were burned to death. The corpses of the killed were roasted, and the clothes burned off their bodies." The infamous wretches who committed these atrocities were the Tory soldiers of Simcoe's rangers. Among the Americans killed was Captain John Downey. He served gallantly at Trenton and Princeton, and was commissary to Lacey's brigade.

On the 7th of May, Lord Howe was superseded by Sir Henry Clinton. Previous to the British commander's departure a magnificent fête, called the *Mischianza*—"a combination of the regatta, the tournament, the banquet, and the ball," we quote from Hazard, "was given in his honor by his field officers. The principal scenes were enacted at Mr. Wharton's country-seat, in Southwark; but a splendid spectacle was exhibited on the Delaware, by the procession of galleys and barges, which left the foot of Green Street, with the ladies, knights, Lord and General Howe, General Knyphausen, &c., on board, with banners and music. The British men-of-war, the *Vigilant*, the *Roebuck*, and the *Fanny*, lay in the stream opposite the city; and the shores were crowded with British transport ships, from which thousands of eager spectators watched the scene. Cheers and salutes of cannon greeted the procession. The principal actors in the pageant were the six Knights of the *Blended Rose*, splendidly arrayed in white and pink satin, with bonnets and nodding plumes, mounted on white steeds elegantly caparisoned, and attended by their squires. These knights were the champions of the *Ladies of the Blended Rose*, and were dressed in Turkish habits of rich white silk. To these were opposed the *Knights of the Burning Mountain*, dressed and mounted with equal splendor, and professing to defend the *Ladies of the Burning Mountain*. The names of the *Ladies of the Blended Rose*, as given by one of the actors in the pageant, were Miss *Auchmuty* (the daughter of a British officer), Miss *Peggy Chew*, Miss *Jenny Craig*, Miss *Williamina Bond*, Miss *Nancy White*, and Miss *Nancy Redman*. The *Ladies of the Burning Mountain*, Miss *Beckie Franks*, Miss *Becky Bond*, Miss *Becky Redman*, Miss *Sally Chew*, and Miss *Williamina Smith*—only five; but Major *André*, in his account, gives it a little differently. In place of Miss *Auchmuty*, of the *Blended Rose*, he has Miss *M. Shippen*; and in place of Miss *Franks*, of the *Burning*



Mountain, he has Miss S. Shippen, and, in addition, Miss P. Shippen. The challenge given by the Knights of the Blended Rose was, that 'the Ladies of the Blended Rose excel in wit, beauty, and every other accomplishment, all the other ladies in the world; and if any knight or knights should be so hardy as to deny this, they are determined to support their assertions by deeds of arms, agreeable to the laws of ancient chivalry.' The challenge was of course accepted by the Knights of the Burning Mountain, and the tournament succeeded. After the tournament came a grand triumphal procession, through an arch; and then a *fête champêtre*, with dancing, supper, &c., enlivened by all the music of the



THE WHARTON HOUSE, WHERE THE MISCHIANZA WAS HELD.

[Fac-simile of an Old Print.]

army. Such were the scenes exhibited in Philadelphia, while the half-naked and half-starved officers and soldiers of the American army were suffering on the hills of Valley Forge. The accomplished and unfortunate Major André was one of the knights, and was, besides, the very life and soul of the occasion. He, with another officer, painted the scenery, and designed and sketched the dresses, both of the Knights and Ladies."

Six days after this pageant of folly, on the 24th of May, a council of war was held under Sir Henry Clinton, and it was resolved to evacuate the city, which took place on the 18th of June. This was delayed owing to the arrival, on the 6th, of the commissioners of Great Britain sent to negotiate peace and a reconciliation. It was too late. The treaty with France put that out of the question now, whatever might previously have been the feeling. Among other intrigues, it is stated, the commissioners secretly offered to General Joseph Reed, then delegate to Congress, and afterwards President of the Executive Council of Pennsylvania, £10,000 sterling, with the best office in the Colonies, to promote





their plans. He promptly replied: "I am not worth purchasing; but such as I am, the king of Great Britain is not rich enough to do it." Fearing the arrival of the French fleet, news of which had been forwarded General Clinton by the British ministry, the enemy's flotilla went out to sea, or took shelter in Raritan Bay, while the army pushed across the Jerseys. Washington, apprised of the retreat of the enemy, moved his troops from winter quarters and pursued them. The brilliant action of Sunday, the 28th of June, at Monmouth, was the consequence. The day was excessively warm and sultry. The American troops, though much fatigued by their march, fought with determined bravery, and the British were compelled to give way. Taking advantage of the night, the approach of which probably saved them from a total rout, they withdrew, and at daybreak had gained the heights of Middletown, having left behind them such of their wounded as could not with safety be removed.

On the 23d of May previous, President Wharton died suddenly of an attack of quinsy, at Lancaster. His funeral, on the day following, was conducted by the State authorities, and as commander-in-chief of the forces of the State, was buried with military honors. By his decease, the Vice-President, George Bryan, assumed the executive functions.

Upon the re-occupation of Philadelphia by the Continental army, Major General Benedict Arnold was ordered by General Washington to take command of the city, and "prevent the disorders which were expected upon the evacuation of the place and the return of the Whigs after being so long kept out of their property."

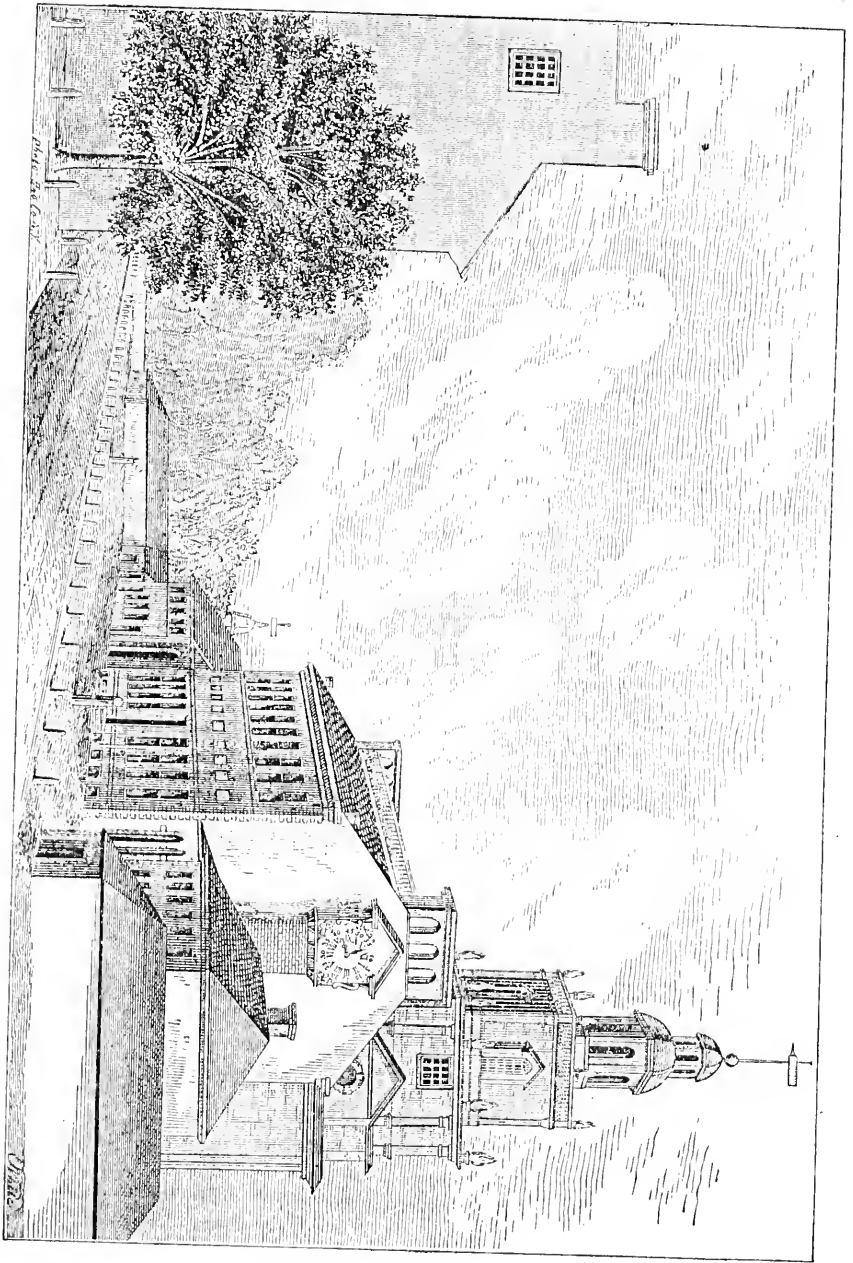
Congress met at the State House, on the 25th of June, and the Supreme Executive Council held its first meeting the day following.

It was the 9th of July ere Commodore Hazelwood reported the armed boats of the Pennsylvania navy all afloat and getting ready for service. The Convention brig, Captain Thomas Houston, was ordered to be fitted out as soon as possible, and it, with the armed boats, to go down into the bay; and in a short time three of the galleys and three of the barges were fitted and manned. The rest were laid up except one galley, which was sunk in Crosswicksunk creek, near Bordentown.

On the 25th the Supreme Executive Council took into consideration the case of John Gilfray, boatswain of the ship *Montgomery*, found guilty of deserting to the enemy, and under sentence of death. It being the first conviction of an offence of this kind in the State fleet, he was pardoned, and Commodore Hazelwood was authorized to offer full pardon to all deserters who returned before the 1st of September. In the beginning of this month, however, Lieutenant Lyon, of the *Dickinson*, and Lieutenant Ford, of the *Efingham*, who deserted during the attack upon Fort Mifflin, were executed on board one of the guard boats on the Delaware. Lieutenant Wilson, of the *Rangers*, and John Lawrence, one of the gunners of the fleet, who deserted at the same time, and were under sentence of death, were reprieved.

Active measures were taken for the speedy trial of all persons accused of high treason, and the "conviction of quite a number excited an intense sensation and much alarm among the Tories and Quakers." Several were executed, notwithstanding every exertion to save them, but so bitter was the hatred of the Whigs





THE STATE HOUSE, PHILADELPHIA—1778.



of the Revolution, many of whom had suffered severely at the hands of the disaffected, that some victims were deemed necessary to mollify their animosities. "Merey," says Thompson Westcott, "was fettered in the desire to vindicate principles, and strike terror into the souls of the Tories by some memorable examples."

The Indians of the Six Nations, as well as the tribes in the western territory, had been induced by the British to take up the hatchet against the Colonies. During the year 1777 they were principally engaged on the Northern frontiers of New York, and Pennsylvania escaped their ravages, with the exception of a few marauding parties. In 1778 the garrison at Pittsburgh was strengthened, and Fort M'Intosh was built at the mouth of Beaver. Notwithstanding the expected attacks from Indians on the north and west branches of the Susquehanna, the inhabitants of Northumberland county and of the Wyoming valley had promptly responded to the urgent calls of Congress, and left exposed their own homes, by sending nearly all their fighting men to the campaigns in the lower country. While in this defenceless situation, the dark cloud of savage warfare burst upon them. Early in July, 1778, Colonel John Butler, with a party of Tory rangers, a detachment of Sir John Johnson's Royal Greens, and a large body of Indians, chiefly Senecas, descended the Susquehanna, and destroyed the flourishing settlements of the Wyoming valley. A few old men were hastily gathered for defence, with a few soldiers returned on a visit from the army; the women and children were sheltered in a stockade fort, where their defenders ought also to have remained; but their courage outweighed their prudence, they loved fighting from habit, and they chose to go out to meet the enemy. This little handful of men fought with more than Spartan courage, but numbers overpowered them—they were routed—many were cut down in the fight, and those captured were put to death with the hatchet. Colonel Dennison, who escaped to the fort with a few others, succeeded in entering into a capitulation by which the women and children were to be preserved, and permitted to depart. Unhappily, however, the British commander either could not or would not enforce the terms of the capitulation, which were to a great extent disregarded, as well by the Tories as Indians. Instead of finding protection, the valley was again laid waste—the houses and improvements were destroyed by fire, and the country plundered. Families were broken up and dispersed, men and their wives separated, mothers torn from their children, and some of them carried into captivity, while far the greater number fled through the wilderness of the Pokono mountains towards the settlements on the Delaware. Some died of their wounds, others from want and fatigue, while others were lost in the wilderness or were heard of no more. Several perished in a great swamp in the neighborhood, which from that circumstance acquired the name of *The Shades of Death*, and retains it to this day. For fuller details of this painful transaction, the reader is referred to the sketch of Luzerne.

Colonel Hartley, with a small detachment from Muney, soon after the battle, went up the Susquehanna, and destroyed the Indian villages at Wyalusing, Sheshequin, and Tioga. A month or two after the battle of Wyoming, a force of British, Indians, and Tories, under Colonel McDonald, made a descent on the West Branch. Fort Muney being untenable, was abandoned on definite



information being received of the approach of the enemy, as also the fort at the mouth of Warrior's run, and all the women and children in the neighborhood were put into boats and sent down to Fort Augusta. Four miles up from the mouth of the Warrior's run was located Fort Freeland, which at this time was commanded by Captain John Lytle. The enemy at once laid siege to the fort. There were brave men in that fort, who would have defended it to the death; but it was also filled with women and children, whom it was not thought prudent to expose to the cruelties that might result from a capture by storm. When, therefore, the enemy were about setting fire to the fort, a capitulation was entered into, by which the men and boys, able to bear arms, were to be taken prisoners, and the women and children were to return home unarmed. A Mrs. Kirk, in the fort with her daughter Jane and her son William, before the capitulation fixed a bayonet upon a pole, vowing she would kill at least one Indian; but as there was no chance for fighting, she exhibited her cunning by putting petticoats upon her son "Billy"—who was able to bear arms, but had yet a smooth chin—and smuggled him out among the women.

The enemy took possession of the place, allowing the women and children to remain in an old building outside of the fort, on the banks of the run. At a preconcerted signal, Captain Hawkins Boon, who commanded a stockade on Muddy run, two miles above Milton, came up to the relief of Freeland's fort, with a party of men. Perceiving the women and children playing outside of the fort, he suspected no danger, and incautiously approached so near that the women were obliged to make signs to him to retire. He retreated precipitately, but was perceived by the enemy, who with a strong force waylaid him, on the Northumberland road, at McClung's place. Boon's party fell into the ambush, and a most desperate encounter ensued, from which few of the Americans escaped. Colonel McDonald afterwards spoke in the highest terms of commendation of the desperate bravery of Hawkins Boon. He refused all quarter—encouraged and forced his men to stand up to the encounter; and at last, with most of his Spartan band, died on the field, overpowered by superior numbers.

The border settlements of Westmoreland were also overrun in every direction by scalping parties, and as many of the marauding parties were known to cross the Allegheny, forts were ordered to be erected at the mouth of Puckety creek, on the Loyahanna, and on the Kiskeminitas. At the same time, General McIntosh was sent with a small force of regulars for the protection of the frontiers. He commenced the erection of a fort at the mouth of the Beaver, named after the commander. From here General McIntosh went on an expedition against the Sandusky towns, and erected Fort Laurens on the Tuscarawas.

On the 1st of December, General Joseph Reed was elected President, and George Bryan, Vice-President, who were inducted into their official stations with all the pageantry attending the first inauguration of the chief executive of the State.

The main body of the American army continued at White Plains watching the movements of the enemy during the autumn of 1778, when Washington took up winter quarters in huts which he had caused to be constructed at Middlebrook, in New Jersey.

Wednesday, the 30th of December, was observed, by order of Congress, as





a day of fasting and prayer. At this period "the affairs of the colonies were in the most distressed and ruinous condition. . . . Party disputes and personal quarrels were the great business of the day, while the momentous concerns of the country, a great and accumulating debt, ruined finances, depreciated money, and a want of credit, which is the consequence in the want of everything, were but secondary considerations, and postponed by Congress from time to time, as if their affairs wore the most promising aspect. The paper was sinking in Philadelphia daily fifty per cent." In fact, there was an alarming supineness pervading the constituted authorities.



JOSEPH REED.\*

The conduct of General Arnold, on the 3d of February, 1779, occasioned decided 1779. action on the part of the Supreme Executive Council, and the Attorney-General of the State was ordered to prosecute Arnold for illegal and oppressive conduct while in command of the military at Philadelphia.

A copy of the charges were presented to the General before he left the city, but he did not care to meet them, and under pretence of attending to his duty, "declined inquiry." From the camp on the Raritan, whence he had gone, he addressed a letter "To the Public," expressing his willingness that Congress should direct a court-martial to inquire into his conduct. The accusations of the Supreme Executive Council were laid before that body, but the trial was delayed, and not until January, 1780, was the court-martial held. Arnold was then "convicted of using the public wagons for his own benefit," but he was acquitted of any corrupt intent, and sentenced to be reprimanded by the commander-in-chief.

---

\* JOSEPH REED was born at Trenton, New Jersey, August 27, 1741. He graduated at New Jersey College, 1767, and shortly after entered the Inner Temple, London, as a law student. Returning in 1765, he began a successful practice at Trenton, and in 1767 was appointed deputy secretary of New Jersey. After his marriage in England to Esther De Berdt, he settled in Philadelphia. He was a member of the Committee of Correspondence in 1773, president of the Convention of January, 1775, delegate to Congress in May, and in July, accompanied Washington to Cambridge as his secretary and aid-de-camp. During the campaign of 1776 he was adjutant-general of the Continental army. In 1777 he was appointed chief-justice of Pennsylvania, and named by Congress brigadier-general, both of which he declined. He served as a volunteer at Brandywine, Whitemarsh, Germantown, and Monmouth. Member of Congress in 1778, he signed the Articles of Confederation. From 1775 to 1781 he was President of Pennsylvania. Active, energetic, and patriotic, President Reed had the confidence of his fellow-citizens, by whom he was respected and beloved. His memory, however, has been maligned by Bancroft, who, in his zeal to laud some favorite officer, charges Reed with disloyalty. Recent researches prove their falsity, and that the American officer who listened to the syren-voice of the Britons was a Colonel Reed, of the Burlington, N. J., militia. President Reed resumed his profession at the close of his administration, and after the peace visited England for his health, but without beneficial result. He aided greatly the founding of the University of Pennsylvania, favored the gradual abolition of slavery, and the doing away with the Proprietary powers vested in the Penn family. He died at Philadelphia, March 5, 1785.



The "scarcity of articles of food and personal necessity" was now becoming so general, that the Supreme Executive Council issued a proclamation on the 18th of January against "forestalls and engrossers." The cause of all this trouble was, as heretofore alluded to, the depreciation of the Continental money. The quantity of this money then in circulation, exclusive of the State's emissions of paper, was one hundred and thirty millions of dollars—about four times as much as was necessary for a medium of trade. The Continental money, therefore, instead of standing at almost one-fourth of the value, remarks Thompson Westcott, had depreciated in some articles so low as *three thousand per cent.* This was said to be due "first, to a scarcity of many articles, particularly of European goods; second, a monopoly of many articles, particularly of West India goods, which operates the same way as a scarcity; third, a want of confidence in the credit of the money induced people to ask and give a greater sum for articles than they were worth." The Pennsylvania Assembly attempted to grapple with this subject, and adopted certain restrictions in regard to purchases, and laid embargoes on the exportation of goods. Prices were affixed by the local committees of inspection for certain imported articles and home productions. These measures, it was hoped, would be of the utmost benefit, but the regulation of prices bore hard on some of the tradesmen, and in consequence they were the first to complain. The whole difficulty was owing to the depreciation of the currency, but the problem was not of easy solution. On the 26th of May the Supreme Executive Council and the Assembly presented a memorial to Congress upon this subject. That body adopted "a plan for raising money by subscription, and stopping the emissions of paper currency." This gave some relief, but unfortunately the loans were small.

The campaign of 1779 opened, therefore, under circumstances not bright or cheery. Congress made no provisions for re-enlisting until late, when at the time a competent army should have been in camp. The bounty then offered was so low that men could not be procured to enter the service, and the States of Pennsylvania, New York, Virginia, and New Jersey had to be called on in the most pressing manner, by the commander-in-chief, and ultimately by Congress, to increase the bounty, and use every exertion to forward their respective quotas of troops.

The policy of waging a more decisive war against the Indians, and the Tories associated with them in their barbarous irruptions upon the frontiers of Pennsylvania and New York, caused Congress, on the 25th of February, to direct the commander-in-chief to take the most effectual means to protect the inhabitants and chastise the savages. With this end in view, General Washington ordered General Sullivan to carry the war into the country of the Six Nations, "to cut off their settlement, destroy their crops, and inflict upon them every other mischief which time and circumstances would permit." The plan of the campaign was to be commenced by a combined movement of two divisions, the one from Pennsylvania ascending the valley of the Susquehanna to the intersection of the Tioga river, under Sullivan, and the other from the north under General James Clinton, which was to descend the Susquehanna from its principal source, and after forming a junction, the whole to proceed by the course of the Chemung river into the fertile country of the Senecas and



Cayugas. The progress of this force was slow, and Indian precaution was used to guard against surprise. Large flanking parties were flung out on either side, and riflemen and scouts were kept forward. Major Parr's rifle corps formed the advance guard, the brigades of Generals Hand, Maxwell, Parr, and Proctor's artillery forming the central column, or constituting the main body of the army, while General Clinton's division protected and brought up the rear. On the 29th, the advance fell in with the enemy near Newtown, on the Chemung. The number of Indians was thirteen hundred, of the Tories two hundred and fifty. The notorious Brant commanded the savages, while the regular troops and rangers were led by Colonel John Butler. The contest was long, and on the side of the enemy, bloody. The latter, at last, fled in the utmost precipitation. Eleven Indian dead were found on the field. The rest of the wounded and dead were borne away on the retreat. Being pushed at the point of the bayonet, they had not time to bear away all their slain, although the Indians invariably exert themselves to the utmost to prevent the bodies of their dead from falling into the hands of their foes. The Americans lost three killed and thirty-four wounded. Sending his wounded back to Tioga, General Sullivan pushed on his army, destroying the various Indian towns, their fields of corn and beans. The Indians everywhere fled as the American army advanced, and the whole country of the Genesee was swept as with the besom of destruction. Forty Indian towns, the largest containing one hundred and twenty-eight houses, were destroyed. Corn, gathered and ungathered, amounting to one hundred and sixty thousand bushels, shared the same fate. This terrible lesson neither intimidated the savages nor prevented their incursions. Throughout the remainder of the war, they stole in small parties into all the frontier settlements, where blood and desolation marked their track. Colonel Brodhead, about the same time, engaged in a successful expedition against the Munsey towns on the north branch of the Allegheny, destroying the villages and crops about the mouth of Brokenstraw, and above the Conewango, and a party of forty warriors cut off who were on their way to the settlements in Westmoreland county.

The successful storming of Stony Point by General Wayne on the night of July 15, one of the most daring exploits of the war, produced a great alteration in the situation of affairs, wrote General St. Clair, and buoyed up the hearts of the desponding patriots, as it struck terror to the Tories. Congress, on the 26th of the same month, unanimously passed a resolution of thanks to General Wayne, "for his brave, prudent, and soldierly conduct in the spirited and well conducted attack on Stony Point."

On the 11th of October, Vice-President Bryan resigned his office, whereupon Colonel Matthew Smith was chosen to fill the vacancy, which he, too, resigned on the 29th of the month. At the annual election on the 12th of November following, William Moore was unanimously chosen to the position.

On the 27th of November, the Assembly, after careful consideration, passed resolutions annulling the Royal Charter, and granting the Penns, as a compensation for the rights of which they were deprived, £130,000 sterling. They retained, however, their manors, real estate as private proprietors, their ground-rents and quit-rents issuing out of their manors, and were still the largest landed proprietors in Pennsylvania. They subsequently received



from the British government an annuity of £4,000 for their losses by the Revolution.

The year 1780 is memorable in the annals of Pennsylvania for the 1780. passage of the act for the gradual abolition of slavery in this State. On the 5th of February, 1779, the Supreme Executive Council, in their message to the Assembly, called the attention of that body to this subject. "We think," say they, "we are loudly called on to evince our gratitude in making our fellow-men joint heirs with us of the same inestimable blessings, under such restrictions and regulations as will not injure the community, and will imperceptibly enable them to relish and improve the station to which they will be advanced. Honored will that State be in the annals of mankind which shall first abolish this violation of the rights of mankind; and the memories of those who will be held in grateful and everlasting remembrance who shall pass the law to restore and establish the rights of human nature in Pennsylvania. We feel ourselves so interested on this point as to go beyond what may be deemed by some the proper line of our duty, and acquaint you that we have reduced this plan to the form of a law, which, if acceptable, we shall in a few days communicate to you." Although the subject was thus forcibly presented, the matter was dismissed by the Assembly "as the Constitution would not allow them to receive the law from the Council." Nothing more was done until in the November Assembly, when George Bryan, formerly Vice-President of the State, having been elected a member of the Legislature, urged the passage of a bill which he had prepared. On the first of March, 1780, by a vote of thirty-four yeas to twenty-one nays, the act passed the Assembly. It provided for the registration of every negro or mulatto slave or servant for life, or till the age of thirty-one years, before the first of November following, and also provided, "that no man or woman of any nation or color, except the negroes or mulattoes who shall be registered as aforesaid, shall at any time hereafter be deemed, adjudged, or holden within the territory of this Commonwealth, as slaves or servants for life, but as free men and free women." The servants of members of Congress, foreign ministers, and persons passing through or sojourning not longer than six months, were also made an exception. To Vice-President Bryan is due the credit of originating and finally urging this humane measure to a successful vote.

Again the paper-money difficulties took up the attention of the State Legislature. On the 20th of March, Congress, yielding to the necessity, authorized the States to revise the laws making the continental bills a tender, and to amend them as it was thought proper. The next day, in the Assembly, a motion to suspend the operation of the law so far as it made the continental currency equal to gold and silver in payment of debts, was lost by a tie vote. The effort, however, to prevent a suspension of the tender laws could not be maintained very long. On the 24th of May a bill was proposed, which passed the 31st, effecting this plan for three months, and on the 22d of June the suspension was continued until the next session, and on December 22d, indefinitely. On the 1st of June, for the purpose of bringing the war to a close, the Assembly authorized the passage of an act to redeem the continental bills to the amount of twenty-five millions of dollars, by the collection of taxes at the rate of one million dollars to forty millions. Every effort was made to keep the State money up to par. The mea-





sures adopted bringing but temporary relief, the Assembly, on the 29th of May, passed resolutions authorized the borrowing of a sum of money not exceeding £200,000 sterling, pledging the faith and honor of the State for its repayment after ten years. It was deemed necessary to send an agent to Europe, but neither in Holland nor France, countries whose sympathies were the strongest for the struggling Colonies, could this be effected, and he was, in July, 1781, recalled by the Supreme Executive Council. Other measures were adopted to relieve pressing necessities. The army was not only without pay but without clothing, and full short of provisions. To supply their destitute countrymen, subscriptions were instituted by the ladies, while to relieve financial embarrassment, "The Bank of Pennsylvania" was established. The continental money, however, continued to sink in value, while efforts were made again and again to sustain it.

On the 20th of March a law was passed to effect a re-organization of the whole militia system. It provided for the appointment of a lieutenant for each county, and two sub-lieutenants or more, not exceeding the number of battalions. The battalions were to be divided into classes as heretofore. Fines, however, for non-attendance on muster days were fixed for commissioned officers at the price of three days' labor, and for non-commissioned officers and privates at one and a half days' labor. When called out, the pay of privates was to be equal to one day's labor. Persons called out, but neglecting or refusing to go, were liable to pay in each case the price of a day's labor during the term of service, besides a tax of fifteen shillings on the hundred pounds upon their estates. As a relief to this class, the hiring of substitutes was allowed. Pensions were promised to the wounded in battle, and support to the families of those militia men who were killed, at rates to be fixed by the courts. Considerable opposition was made to this law, from the fact that by permitting the hiring of substitutes it would relieve the disaffected and Tories.

The exigencies of the times, says Thompson Wescott, led to the authorizing of some extraordinary measures. On the 28th of May, General Washington, in writing to President Reed, said: "I assure you every idea that you can form of our distress will fall short of the reality. There is such a combination of circumstances to exhaust the patience of the soldiery that it begins at last to be worn out, and we see in every line of the army the most serious features of mutiny and sedition. . . . I must observe to you that much will depend upon the State of Pennsylvania. She has it in her power to contribute, without comparison, more to our success than any other State, in the two essential articles of flour and transportation. . . . The matter is reduced to a point. Either Pennsylvania must give us all the aid we ask of her, or we undertake nothing. . . . I wish the Legislature could be engaged to vest the Executive with plenipotentiary powers. I should then expect something from your abilities and zeal. This is not a time for formality or ceremony. The crisis is in every point of view extraordinary, and extraordinary expedients are necessary. I am decidedly of this opinion."

In addition to the demands of our own army in the field, the expected arrival of the French troops rendered energetic and determined action. On the first of June the Assembly resolved, that during the recess of the House, "should the



circumstances of the war render it necessary," the President or Vice-President in Council, should be authorized and empowered "to declare martial law," as far as the same might be "conducive to the public security and to the safety and defence of the good and faithful citizens of this Commonwealth." On the 6th, Council passed resolutions to the effect, that as it "would be necessary to make extraordinary exertions for the supply of the army, and supporting other measures that might be for the safety and security of the State, a discrimination should be made between citizens who had shown themselves to be friends of the country and those of a contrary character. On the same day a proclamation was issued, in which was specified the necessity of procuring supplies in so short a space of time that the usual and ordinary forms must be dispensed with. Late offensive movements of the enemy, of which certain intelligence had just been received, admitted of no delay in procuring a number of horses and wagons to be forwarded with all expedition to camp. Furthermore, the indiscriminate admission of all strangers without examination or inquiry gave facilities to spies and emissaries of the enemy. All suspicious persons were ordered to be arrested. An embargo was laid on all outward bound vessels, excepting those in the service of France. Seizure of horses was made, especially those belonging to the Tories and Quakers. Searches for arms were also made through the houses of the latter.

Sir Henry Clinton having entered the State of New Jersey with his force, seems to have caused all this alarm. A portion of the militia was ordered to join the main army, but the British commander having pushed up North river, the orders were countermanded. Shortly after, the French troops, under Rochambeau having arrived, a plan was formed for an attack on New York. In order to make this enterprise effective, the services of militia from Pennsylvania were demanded, and the several counties of the State were put under requisition for the furnishing of supplies. Flour, forage, wagons, and horses were required. Four thousand militia were ordered to be organized by the county lieutenants, to rendezvous at Trenton, New Jersey. President Reed took command of the camp in person. When strongest, it consisted of fifteen hundred infantry, two companies of artillery, with four pieces of cannon, and the City Troop of light-horse. On account, however, of the blockade of Rochambeau by the British fleet, and the non-arrival of another division of the French army, the plan failed and the camp broke up. The camp at Trenton was well conducted—the tents and necessaries for field service were in good order—a regular market was held which was attended by neighboring farmers. On the occasion of the dismissal of the troops on the 2d of September, addresses were made to them by General Lacey, Colonel Eyre, and Colonel Wills, a committee appointed for that purpose.



## CHAPTER XII.

THE REVOLUTION. THE TREASON OF ARNOLD. REVOLT OF THE PENNSYLVANIA LINE. SURRENDER OF CORNWALLIS. DECLARATION OF PEACE. 1780-1783.



OWARDS the close of September the Supreme Executive Council received intelligence of the treason of General Benedict Arnold, who had been in command of the American post at West Point. Among the people the news of the infamy of this man excited the greatest indignation. In Philadelphia, to give expression to popular feeling, a public parade took place, three days after the arrival of the news, in which an effigy of Arnold was carried through the streets and finally hung upon a gallows. The Council at once confiscated Arnold's estate, and his wife was ordered to depart the State within fourteen days. Of the arrest, trial, and execution of Major Andre, and the escape of Arnold, his reward and price of dishonor, it is not in our province to refer to in full. If the proceedings against Tories in Pennsylvania had been fierce previous to this time, the feeling aroused by the defection of Arnold produced the bitterest animosity and hatred against all who were not in full sympathy with the American Colonies. Many arrests were made, a number were tried and condemned, and one, a Quaker of Chester county, executed for high treason. The property of prominent Tories were forfeited and sold, and in fact, the most energetic measures taken to crush out whatever might be inimical to the cause of independence.

The situation of the soldiers from Pennsylvania in the Continental army at this period was truly deplorable. About the 1st of December, the division of General Wayne went into winter quarters, in the neighborhood of Morristown. The soldiers were wearied out with privations, and indignant at their officers, whom they accused of not properly representing their situation to Congress. But the fault was in the tardiness of Congress, not in the officers. The Pennsylvania troops had been enlisted on the ambiguous terms of "serving three years or during the continuance of the war," and the commanding officers of the army anticipated the evils that occurred. From the report to the Assembly we give the accounts which follow.

It appears that considerable discontent had for some time taken place amongst the soldiers on account not only of the cause alluded to, but of deficiencies of clothing, arrearages of pay, and the depreciation of the currency; which as yet extended no further than private complaints and murmurs. Whatever real causes of discontent, in some of these particulars, might have been occasioned by the public necessities, owing to disappointments unavoidable in times of war and invasion, it is evident that they were greatly exaggerated by the influence of too great a mixture of British deserters in the Pennsylvania Line. It is more than probable that this dissatisfaction would not have assumed the formidable aspect



in which it afterwards appeared had not concurrent circumstances administered the occasion.

New Year's Day, being a day of customary festivity, an extra portion of rum was served out to the soldiers. This, together with what they were able to purchase in the neighborhood of the Line, was sufficient to inflame the minds of men, already predisposed by a mixture of real and imaginary injuries, to break forth into outrage and disorder. As soon as night came on, the camp was observed to be in great confusion, and by eleven o'clock became quite tumultuous; the troops avowedly threw off all obedience and prepared to march. In vain did General Wayne and the officers of the Line exert themselves to reduce the mutiny and restore order and discipline; the affair had gone too far to yield to their exertions, and one of the officers unhappily lost his life in the attempt. At length the Line left their camp in a most tumultuous and disorderly manner, and marched to Princeton, where they fixed their quarters.

General Wayne, uncertain whether this mutiny arose from British influence and disaffection, or only from the grievances they so loudly complained of, thought it most prudent to get this disorderly body, if possible, organized into some regularity, in which situation the mutineers might be treated with and the truth discovered. To this he was the more encouraged as they had repeatedly, and in the strongest terms, denied the least tincture of disaffection, or any intention of deserting to the enemy. He accordingly recommended it to them to choose a number of sergeants, to sit as a board and represent their grievances, so that redress might be had if their complaints should appear to be well founded. In pursuance of this order, a sergeant from each regiment met General Wayne, Colonels Butler and Stewart, and mentioned the following grievances:

"1. Many men continued in the service after the expiration of the enlistments.

"2. The arrearages of pay, and the depreciation not yet made up, and the soldiers suffering every privation for want of money and clothing.

"3. That it was very hurtful to the feelings of the soldiers to be prevented from disposing of their depreciation certificates as they pleased, without consulting any person on the occasion."

Upon this representation being considered by General Wayne and the colonels, it was agreed, on their part, that one disinterested sergeant or private from each regiment should, with the commanding officer of the corps, when an enlistment was disputed, determine on the case; also that a sergeant from each regiment be appointed to carry an address to Congress, backed by the general and field officers. This was followed by the proposals from the sergeants to General Wayne, which, with his answer, was sent forward. The sergeants' propositions were entitled: "Proposals from the Committee of Sergeants, now representing the Pennsylvania Line Artillery, &c."

"1. That all, and such men as were enlisted in the years 1776 or 1777, and received the bounty of twenty dollars, should be without any delay discharged; and all arrears of pay, and depreciation of pay, should be paid to the said men, without any fraud, clothing included.

"2. Such men as were enlisted after the year 1777, and received one hundred and twenty dollars bounty, or any more additions, should be entitled to their





discharge at the expiration of three years from the time of said enlistment, and their full depreciation of pay, and all arrears of clothing.

"3. That all such men belonging to the different regiments that were enlisted for the war, should receive the remainder part of their bounty and pay, and all arrears of clothing. That they should return to their respective corps, and should do their duty as formerly, and that no aspersions should be cast, and no grievances should be repeated to the said men.

"4. Those soldiers who were enlisted and received their discharges, and all arrearages of pay and clothing, should not be compelled to stay by any former officers commanding any longer time than was agreeable to their own pleasure and disposition; of those who should remain for a small term as volunteers, that they should be at their own disposal and pleasure.

"5. As they then depended and relied upon General Wayne to represent and repeat their grievances, they agreed in conjunction from that date, January 4, in six days to complete and settle every such demand as the above five articles mentioned.

"6. That the whole Line were actually agreed and determined to support the above articles in every particular."

General Wayne, having maturely considered the foregoing proposals and articles presented to him by the sergeants, in behalf of themselves, the artillery and privates of the Pennsylvania Line, returned the following answer:

"That all such non-commissioned officers and soldiers as were justly entitled to their discharges should be immediately settled with, their accounts properly adjusted, and certificates for their pay and arrearages of pay and clothing given them, agreeably to the resolution of Congress, and the act of the Honorable Assembly of Pennsylvania, for making up the depreciation, and should be discharged the service of the United States.

"That all such non-commissioned officers and privates belonging to the respective regiments, artillery or infantry, who were not entitled to their discharge, should also be settled with, and certificates given them for their pay, depreciation, and clothing, in like manner as those first mentioned, which certificates were to be redeemable at a short period as the nature of the case would admit, to be paid in hard cash or an equivalent in Continental money of these States, and should be immediately furnished with warm clothing, they returning to their duty as worthy, faithful soldiers.

"These propositions were founded in principles of justice and honor, between the United States and the soldiery, which was all that reasonable men could expect, or that a general could promise consistent with his station or duty, and the mutual benefit of their country and the Line which he had had so long the honor of commanding. If the soldiers were determined not to let reason and justice govern on this occasion, he had only to lament the fatal and unfortunate situation to which they would reduce themselves and their country."

Intelligence of this affair was soon conveyed to New York. The enemy were highly elated on the occasion, and exerted themselves to the utmost, not abating their diligence, although the rain poured down incessantly. Four or five thousand troops were immediately embarked in order to make a descent on Jersey, at



South Amboy, under a full persuasion that the Pennsylvania Line waited only an opportunity to join the British troops.

They were confirmed in this idea by a person from Woodbridge who went over to Staten Island and informed that such was the determination of the Board of Sergeants.

On the arrival of this news at Philadelphia, the President of the State and a committee of Congress, attended by the Pennsylvania troop of horse, set out for Trenton. In the meantime, the negotiations previously stated had taken place, but not to any extent. General Wayne was yet in doubt as to the real designs of the mutineers; but a circumstance now occurred which seemed to evince the fidelity of the discontented troops. A spy from New York, attended by a guide, appeared before the Board of Sergeants with a paper rolled in sheet lead, intimating that if the Pennsylvania Line would direct their march toward North river a large body of British troops should be ready to receive them; and promising very large emoluments to every soldier who would thus desert his country's cause. No sooner did this emissary make his errand known but the Board of Sergeants rejected the proposal with disdain, and sent the spy with his companion under guard to General Wayne, with a reserve, however, that they should be re-delivered to the Board if demanded.

President Reed, having on the 6th advanced near Princeton (being also fully authorized by the Committee of Congress to make propositions), wrote a letter to General Wayne, in which he expressed some doubts as to the propriety of going within the pickets of the insurgents. This letter being shown to the sergeants, they immediately wrote to the President these words: "Your Excellency need not be in the least afraid or apprehensive of any irregularities or ill-treatment, that the whole Line will be very happy, how expedient your Excellency would be in settling this unhappy affair."

Encouraged by these circumstances, but without any great confidence in them, more especially as the Board of Sergeants had demanded the spies from General Wayne and at this time had them in possession, his Excellency determined to venture among them. That the President had no firm dependence on their pacific assurances, appears by a passage in a letter written to the Vice-President at Philadelphia, just before he went into Princeton, wherein he says: "I have but one life, and my country has the first claim to it. I therefore go with the cheerfulness which attends performing a necessary, though not a pleasant duty." Upon his entry into Princeton the whole Line was drawn up for his reception, and every mark of military honor and respect shown him. After this interview the negotiations commenced in regular form.

During the treaty, the President had the address to persuade the mutineers to advance to Trenton; for notwithstanding all favorable appearances, he still remained jealous of their situation.

After a correspondence of some days, in which great tenaciousness was shown on the part of the malecontents, and equity with firmness on the part of President Reed, articles of agreement were finally assented to and confirmed on both sides. These articles were as follows, viz.: "Proposals made to the non-commissioned officers and soldiers of the Pennsylvania Line, at Princeton, January 7th, 1781.



"His Excellency, Joseph Reed, Esq., President, and the Honorable Brigadier-General Potter of the Council of Pennsylvania, having heard the complaints of the soldiers as represented by the sergeants, informed them that they were fully authorized to redress reasonable grievances, and they had the fullest disposition to make them as easy as possible; for which end they proposed:

"That no non-commissioned officer or soldier should be detained beyond the time for which he freely and voluntarily engaged, but where it appeared they had been in any respect compelled to enter or sign, such enlistment should be deemed void and the soldier discharged.

"To settle who were and who were not bound to stay, three persons should be appointed by the President and Councils [this appointment was made afterwards by the Committee of Congress], who were to examine into the terms of enlistments; where the original enlistments could not be found, the soldier's oath should be admitted to prove the time and terms of enlistment, and the soldier should be discharged upon his oath by the condition of the enlistment.

"Wherever any soldier had enlisted for three years, or during the war, he was to be discharged, unless it should appear he afterwards re-enlisted voluntarily and freely. The gratuity of one hundred dollars given by Congress was not to be reckoned as a bounty, or any men detained in consequence of that gratuity. The commissioners to be appointed were to adjust any difficulties which might arise on this article also.

"The auditors were to attend as soon as possible to settle the depreciation with the soldiers, and give them certificates. Their arrearages of pay should be made up as soon as circumstances would admit.

"A pair of shoes, overalls, and shirt, should be delivered to each soldier in a few days, as they were already purchased and ready to be forwarded whenever the Line should be settled. Those who were discharged would receive the above articles at Trenton, producing the General's discharge.

"The President hoped that no soldier of the Pennsylvania Line would break his bargain, or go from the contract made with the public, and they might depend upon it that the utmost care would be taken to furnish them with every necessary fitting for a soldier. In addition, the President would recommend that the State of Pennsylvania should take some favorable notice of those who were engaged for the war. The Commissioners would attend at Trenton, where the clothing and stores would be immediately brought, and the regiments should be settled with in their order. A field officer of each regiment was to attend during the settlement of his regiment.

"Pursuant to General Wayne's orders of the 2d instant, no man was to be brought to any trial or censure for what had happened on or since New Year's Day, but all matters were to be buried in oblivion."

On the conclusion of the foregoing articles, the two emissaries were again delivered up, but his Excellency having been informed by General Wayne, that at the time they were first brought to him, he had promised the two soldiers who conducted them fifty guineas each as a reward for their fidelity, he determined to fulfil this engagement, and accordingly sent for those men, and offered them the promised gratuity. This, however, they declined accepting, saying that they only obeyed the orders of their superiors, the board of sergeants. The hundred



guineas were then offered to the board of sergeants, who returned this remarkable answer: "Agreeably to the information of two sergeants of our board who waited on your Excellency, that in consideration of the two spies, they informed the remainder of the board that your Excellency had been pleased to offer a sum of gold as a compensation for our fidelity; but as it has not been for the sake *or through any expectation of receiving a reward, but for the zeal and love of our country*, that we sent them immediately to General Wayne, we, therefore, do not consider ourselves *entitled to any other reward but the love of our country*, and do jointly agree that we shall accept of no other."

The two spies were tried by a court-martial on the 10th, and being duly convicted, were executed on the 11th, agreeable to their sentence, near the great road leading from Philadelphia to Trenton ferry.

However unjustifiable the conduct of the Pennsylvania Line was and should be deemed in the first instance, it must be acknowledged that they conducted themselves in the business, culpable as it was, with unexpected order and regularity, and their fidelity in refusing the large offers made by the enemy, in delivering up the spies, and in refusing the hundred guineas they had so justly merited, exhibits an instance of true patriotism and disinterestedness not to be found amongst mercenary troops who bear arms for pay and subsistence only, uninspired by their country's rights, or the justice of the cause which they have engaged to support.

In pursuance of the articles agreed to, and the plan adopted, commissioners were appointed by Congress to settle with the discontented soldiers, man by man, their terms of enlistment carefully inquired into, their wants supplied, money advanced on account of pay, and certificates given for the remainder.

About the close of February, 1781, orders were given for the rendezvousing of the Pennsylvania troops under General Wayne at York, previous to joining the Southern army under General Greene. The delay of the State auditors, who were appointed to settle and pay the proportion of the depreciation due the troops, caused some little trouble, but by the 7th of June this force, amounting to only eleven hundred, formed a junction with Lafayette.

No sooner had the allied armies departed, than fears arose that the unprotected state of the country might tempt the British troops in New York to make an incursion into New Jersey, and even to approach Philadelphia. To counteract such a movement, the Pennsylvania militiamen were ordered to hold themselves in readiness for instant service. Congress recommended that three thousand men should be called out. This force rendezvoused at Newtown, in Bucks county. A watch was set at Cape May. The public records were ordered to be got ready for immediate removal. The uncertainty as to the designs of the enemy continued for some days, but as no movement was made against New Jersey, and as embarkations were made from New York, it became probable that the intention was to transport a body of troops southward to relieve Cornwallis. The camp at Newtown was therefore broken up about the middle of October, and the militia returned to their homes.

The capitulation of the British army under Cornwallis at Yorktown to the American Commander-in-Chief on the 29th of October, gladdened and cheered the hearts of the patriots of the whole country. They were overpowered, says





Westcott, with gratitude and gladness—while the hearts of the Tories sank within them—for they knew this great event was virtually a conclusion of the war. The important news was first communicated to Thomas McKean, President of Congress, on the morning of the 22d. On the 24th, when the official account of the surrender was brought by Major Tilghman, aid to Washington, the Supreme Executive Council of the State waited upon the President of Congress, the members of that august body, and the minister of France, who congratulated each other on this great, important, and happy event. The standard of Pennsylvania was hoisted, and at twelve o'clock a salute was fired from the artillery in the State House yard, as also from the shipping in the harbor with colors displayed.

The success of the American arms before Yorktown did not lessen the ardor and energy of Congress, the State of Pennsylvania, the commander-in-chief, or the army. The end of the conflict with the mother country seemed nearer, and no effort was spared to secure the blessed boon for which they had struggled so many years.



WILLIAM MOORE.

On the 14th of November William Moore,\* who had served as Vice-President since 1779, succeeded President Reed, whose term as councillor had expired. General James Potter was chosen at the same time Vice-President. During the entire administration of President Moore, the great question at issue in the State was that of the finances.

On account of the hostile demonstrations of the Ohio Indians against the settlements in Western Pennsylvania, it was determined that a force should be raised and marched against the Sandusky Indians, who seemed the most active in keeping up a predatory warfare. The requisite force was raised principally in Washington and Westmoreland counties, consisting of the ranging companies of volunteers. On the 20th of May the troops, numbering more than four hundred, assembled at Mingo Bottom, where they unanimously selected as leader Colonel William Crawford, of Westmoreland. Of the disastrous results of that expedition, the defeat, the capture, and finally the burning of Colonel Crawford at the stake by the savages, we can merely refer to. When the news of Crawford's unhappy fate reached the settlements, it spread a gloom on every countenance. During the French war he had distinguished himself for his brave and gallant conduct, and in the revolutionary struggle he proved himself

\* WILLIAM MOORE was a native of Philadelphia, and at the outset of the Revolution engaged in mercantile pursuits. He signed the non-importation resolutions, and was a member of the Council of Safety, 1776, from which he was transferred by the Supreme Executive Council to the Board of War. Upon his election as Councillor in 1779 he was chosen Vice-President, and, on the expiration of President Reed's term of office, to the head of the State government. In 1781 he was elected a member of the Assembly, and, until his death, which took place in 1793, he took an active part in public affairs. Mr. Moore married Sarah, daughter of Thomas Lloyd, and was brother-in-law of President Wharton, who married Susanna Lloyd.



not unworthy his reputation as a soldier and a patriot. His loss was a severe blow to the frontiers.

The savages soon after this, emboldened with their late success, and instigated by Girty, McKee, and other white outlaws who had taken refuge among them, determined on a grand campaign. Measures were at once adopted to defend the exposed settlements, and although there were frequent Indian incursions into Kentucky and Virginia, Western Pennsylvania was happily spared.

In August a special session of the Assembly was convened by request of the Supreme Executive Council, to devise some means to provide funds for carrying on the government. At this session the matter of a treaty between Great Britain and the United States was taken up. In 1778, the General Assembly had passed resolutions declaring "that the man or men who should presume to make a separate or partial convention with the King of Great Britain, or with commissioners appointed by him, ought to be considered as enemies of the United States; that, as a preliminary, the fleets and armies of the British Crown ought to be withdrawn from the American territory, or the independence of the United States previously acknowledged. Resolutions were also adopted affirming the sovereignty of the State, and averring that Congress had no right or authority to do anything that might have a tendency to yield up that authority, without the consent of the State, previously obtained." These matters were now taken up by the Council. In many particulars the condition of public affairs had changed and become modified since 1778; but the probability of peace rendered some definite action necessary. A resolution was therefore adopted on the 28th of May, by the Supreme Executive Council, re-affirming the spirit of the resolutions of 1778, with the additional declaration that any propositions that might be made by Great Britain in any manner tending to violate the treaty existing between the United States and France ought to be treated "with every mark of indignity and contempt." At the same time, the Council declared that the benefits which Great Britain might derive from America, were she to adopt principles of moderation, wisdom and justice, "were such that a desire for the general interest of mankind and the dignity of human nature, caused some concern at witnessing that once powerful and respectable nation continuing to act upon principles which, if persisted in much longer, would, by destroying all title to the esteem and confidence of the United States, render treaties of amity and commerce between the Americans and English absolutely and altogether impracticable." This measure came up before the Assembly at the special session. A resolution against peace with England without the concurrence of France, against reunion with Great Britain on any terms, and against a revival of the rights of the Proprietary family, was before the Assembly. It was supposed that, in reference to the last subject, the House was divided in sentiment. The proposition had previously been rejected in committee by a vote of seven to five. This news reached the public and caused a great excitement. The proposal was recommended by way of amendment to be taken up the following day. The spirit manifested by the people was such as to show the members of the Legislature what the real feeling was. It was so strong and overwhelming, that the next day, when the amendment was proposed, instead of a warm debate upon it, all opposition was silenced, and the resolutions were passed unanimously.



On account of Indian incursions into the upper part of Northumberland during the early part of the autumn, the Council determined to send an expedition into the Genesee country, of which General James Potter, Vice-President, was to be in command. The lieutenants of Berks, Lancaster, Northampton, and Cumberland were directed to call into service a sufficient number of troops to rendezvous at Fort Muncy on the 4th of October. At the same time militia from several of the western counties were ordered to Fort Pitt under command of General William Irvine, who had been deputed by the same authority to march on Sandusky. Both of these expeditions were on the eve of setting out, when at the request of General Washington, the orders were countermanded. This was owing to the determined efforts required for the further prosecution of the war against the British. The alacrity with which the frontiersmen entered the service on this special call was conspicuous, and when orders came to lay aside the expeditions the disaffection was great, as the militia were, particularly in the western counties, determined to avenge the atrocious murder of Colonel Crawford.

In November, the Pennsylvanians confined on board the Jersey prison-ship, at New York, made application to the State authorities, representing their destitute condition. They were cruelly treated by the English, and were in want of clothing, blankets, and food. There were sent to them immediately afterwards, by a flag of truce, three hundred bushels of potatoes and fifty barrels of flour. As frequently, however, as possible, exchanges were made of prisoners, by which many of the captives at New York were released.

Prior to the Revolution an angry controversy grew out of the claims of Connecticut to the Wyoming Valley lands. It was postponed to the more pressing exigencies of that important epoch, in which both parties made common cause. The Connecticut settlers had returned soon after Sullivan's expedition of 1779. In 1778, the title of these lands had been taken from the Penns and vested in the State. On the assertion of this new title on the part of the State, the controversy was opened anew, and was referred to Congress, who appointed commissioners to meet at Trenton in November, 1782. The commissioners, after hearing both parties, decided that Connecticut had no right to the land in controversy—and that the jurisdiction and pre-emption of all lands within the charter bounds of Pennsylvania of right belonged to that State. The settlers cheerfully acquiesced in the change of jurisdiction, but claimed that, although Connecticut had no right to the land, yet the Susquehanna Company had. The State proceeded to enforce its claims by a method very different from that of William Penn, and thereupon ensued a fierce and vindictive civil war, nearly as desolating as the previous irruptions of the Tories and savages. At length, after a series of vacillating and ill-advised legislation, the State passed a law, in 1799 and 1801, compensating the Pennsylvania claimants by a grant of lands elsewhere, or by a payment in money; and confirming to the Connecticut settlers their titles on condition of their paying the State a small price per acre, from eighty-six cents to one dollar and twenty cents, according to the quality of their land. The New England emigrants became obedient, industrious, and valuable citizens of their adopted State; and Wyoming, after a long train of unparalleled sufferings, enjoyed a state of repose and prosperity.

At the election in November, John Dickinson was chosen President, and



General James Ewing, Vice-President. Political controversy ran high, and neither before or since, were bitter invective and detraction of prominent citizens so freely indulged in by newspaper writers. Millin, Reed, McKean, Dickinson Cadwallader, and other influential men of the State, were assailed by a malignity and virulence unequalled.

On the 12th of March, the first news was received of the signing of the treaty of November 30, 1782, acknowledging the independence of the United States. This was the first measure necessary in the negotiations for peace between all the belligerents. On the 20th of January, 1783, the preliminary treaty of peace was signed. On the 11th of April, Congress issued a proclamation enjoining a cessation of hostilities; and on the 16th of the same month, the Supreme Executive Council made public announcement of the happy event at the Court House. The State flag was hoisted, church bells were rung, and expressions of joy at the happy relief from the miseries of war, were universal.



JOHN DICKINSON.\*

One of the first measures that was necessary on the cessation of the war was an exchange of prisoners. The soldiers of Burgoyne's army were principally in the interior of Pennsylvania, and these were put in motion before the proclamation, and arrived in Philadelphia on their way to New York a day or two previous to the official announcement.

With this joyful intelligence, the re-opening of commerce followed, and at once action was taken by the Supreme Executive Council, for the removal of the obstructions in the Delaware river.

---

\* JOHN DICKINSON was a native of Maryland, born November 13, 1732. He studied law in Philadelphia, and entered the Temple, London. On his return he practiced with success at Philadelphia. Was elected member of the Assembly in 1764. In 1765 he was a deputy to the first Colonial Congress, and its resolutions were drawn up by him. In 1767 he published his "Farmers' Letters to the Inhabitants of the British Colonies," which was reprinted in England and France. In 1760 the College of New Jersey conferred on him the degree of LL.D. In 1774 he wrote an "Essay on the Constitutional Power of Great Britain over the Colonies of America," published by the Provincial Conference of Pennsylvania. He was a member of the Congress of 1774, and was the author of those important State papers, "The Address to the Inhabitants of Quebec," "The Declaration to the Armies," the two petitions to the King, and "The Address to the States." He opposed the Declaration of Independence as premature. This course made him unpopular for a time. In October, 1777, he was made brigadier-general of the Pennsylvania militia. In April, 1779, he returned to Congress from Delaware, and wrote "The Address to the States," of May 26. In 1781-5 he was President of the States of Pennsylvania and Delaware, successively, and member of the Convention for framing the Federal Constitution. In 1788 appeared his "Fabius" letters, advocating the adoption of the new Constitution. Another series over the same signature, on the relations of the United States with France, 1797, was his last work. In 1792 he was a member of the Convention which framed the Constitution of Delaware. His political writings were published in two volumes, in 1801. He was a man of elegant learning and fine conversational powers. He died at Wilmington, Delaware, February 14, 1808.





## CHAPTER XIII.

TROUBLE IN THE SETTLEMENT OF THE CLAIMS OF THE SOLDIERS. COUNCIL OF CENSORS. TREATY AT FORT STANWIX. CONVENTION TO REVISE THE CONSTITUTION. 1783-1790.



IN June 1783, a number of the non-commissioned officers and soldiers of the Pennsylvania Line, wearied and exasperated by the delay in the settlement of their claims, resolved to demand a redress of their grievances and a prompt settlement of their accounts. A body of them accordingly marched from Lancaster towards the city of Philadelphia, and although the Supreme Executive Council and Congress were informed of their coming, no measures were taken to check the advance of the malecontents. On the 21st of June, while the Executive Council was in session, about thirty of them armed marched to the State House, and sent in a memorial in writing that as their general officers had left them, they should have authority to appoint commissioned officers to command them and redress their grievances. With this demand went a threatening message that in case they were refused, the soldiers would be let in upon the Council, who must then abide by the consequences. Only twenty minutes were given for deliberation; but so insolent were the terms, that Council at once unanimously rejected the propositions. This creating a wide-spread alarm, the President of Congress assembled that body in special session, and demanded that the militia of the State should be immediately called forth in sufficient force to reduce the soldiers to obedience, disarm them and put them in the power of Congress. Prior to the assembling of Congress at Carpenter's Hall, the soldiers were at their barracks and all was quiet. A session of the Supreme Executive Council was held on the following day, Sunday, at the house of President Dickinson. That body, however, was not as much in favor of the extreme measures as Congress. The result was that the latter, dissatisfied with the indisposition of the Council, adjourned to meet at Princeton, New Jersey. The action of Congress was neither prudent nor necessary. It was, continues Mr. Westcott, whose account we have given, the result of too high a degree of pride, and a disposition to construe an undesigned affront into a wanton insult, or it was a consequence of a pusillanimous fear, that was unjustifiable by the succession of events.

The promoters of this mutiny escaped, but several of the ringleaders were arrested and court-martialed. Two of the sergeants of the Third Pennsylvania were sentenced to be shot, while several others were to receive corporal punishment. All were subsequently pardoned by Congress.

Congress remained during the summer at Princeton. The Assembly of Pennsylvania, the Council, and prominent citizens of the State invited it to return to Philadelphia, and although Congress seemed pleased and satisfied at the measures taken, yet they were ashamed to go back to a city they had deserted so precipitately and causelessly almost, and they adjourned to meet at Annapolis.



During this year, a conference was held by George Bryan, George Gray, and William Bingham, commissioners appointed on behalf of Pennsylvania, and Abraham Clark, Joseph Cooper, and Thomas Henderson, on behalf of New Jersey, to settle the jurisdiction of the islands in the Delaware. By this body the islands were assigned to the States according to proximity. Windmill island, League island, Mud or Foot island, Hog island, and Little Tinicum were annexed to the State of Pennsylvania, while Petty's island and Red Bank island were assigned to New Jersey. It was further agreed that the river Delaware should be a public highway, and that the two States should have concurrent jurisdiction between the shores. This treaty was ratified by an act passed 20th September.

At the general election in October, members of the Council of Censors were chosen, conformable to the Constitution of 1776, for the purpose of inspecting the acts of the Legislature and Executive branches of the Government, since the adoption of that instrument.

On the 10th of November, the Council of Censors met at Philadelphia. Of this body, Frederick A. Muhlenberg was chosen president. The Council continued in existence nearly a year, adjourning finally on the 25th of September, 1784. Various amendments were discussed and strong differences of opinion were manifested; but in their address to the freemen of the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, at the close of their labors, recommended a continuance of the frame of government. They say, "If with heart and hand united, we will all combine to support the Constitution, and apply its injunctions to the best use of society, we shall find it a source of the richest blessings. We would earnestly recommend this to you. Give it a fair and honest trial; and if after all, at the end of another seven years, it shall be found necessary or proper to introduce any changes, they may then be brought in, and established upon a full conviction of their usefulness, with harmony and good temper, without noise, tumult, or violence."

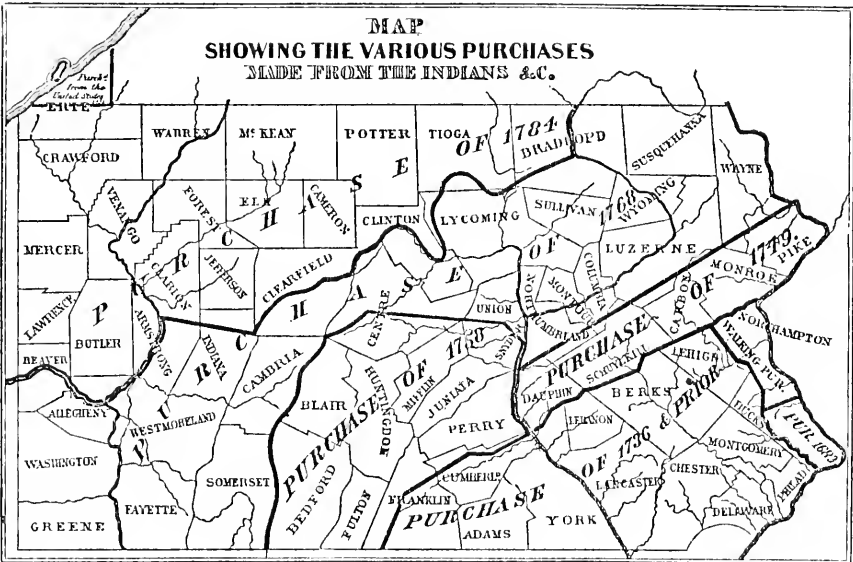
The definitive treaty of peace with England was ratified by Congress 1784. on the 14th of January, 1784, and proclamation of the fact published on the 22d of that month. In celebration of this event, the Legislature of Pennsylvania erected a triumphal arch on High Street, between Sixth and Seventh streets. By an unlucky accident the arch took fire just as the inaugurating ceremonies were to take place.

On the 9th of August, General Lafayette visited Philadelphia and was received by the citizens of the State with great enthusiasm, "amidst the discharge of artillery and the ringing of the bells." He was waited upon by the officers of the Pennsylvania Line, headed by Generals Wayne, St. Clair, and Irvine, and an address of welcome and congratulation delivered by President Dickinson, in the presence of the Council and the Assembly.

Since the year 1763, the northwestern boundary of Indian purchases in the State ran from the Susquehanna, on the New York line, to Towanda creek; thence to the head of Pine creek; thence to its mouth, and up the West Branch to its source; thence over to Kittanning, and down the Ohio to the west line of the State. The last treaty held at Fort Stanwix with the Indians took place in October, 1784. One important feature of this treaty was the settlement of the difficulty that had existed for sixteen years between the whites, in relation to the



boundary line embraced by Tyadaghton. It was contended by some that Lyeo-  
ming creek was the line, and by others that it was Pine creek.



At this treaty, the Pennsylvania commissioners were specially instructed to inquire of the Indians which stream was really the Tyadaghton, and, also, the Indian name of Burnett's Hills, left blank in the deed of 1768. The Indians informed them Tyadaghton was what the whites call Pine creek, being the largest stream emptying into the West Branch. As to Burnett's Hills, they called them the Long Mountains, and knew them by no other name.

The commissioners at this treaty purchased the residue of the Indian lands within the limits of Pennsylvania, and the deed, signed by the chiefs of the Six Nations, is dated October 23, 1784. This purchase was confirmed by the Wyandott and Delaware Indians, at Fort McIntosh, by a deed executed by those nations, dated January 21, 1785. Thus, says Meginness, in a period of about one hundred and two years was the whole right of the Indians to the soil of Pennsylvania extinguished. The Legislature, at the time of this last treaty, being apprehensive that the directions given to the commissioners to ascertain the precise boundaries of the purchase of 1768, might produce some inconveniences, declared: "That the said directions did not give, nor ought not to be construed to give, to the said commissioners, any authority to ascertain, definitely, the boundary lines aforesaid, in the year 1768, striking the line of the West Branch of Susquehanna, at the mouth of Lyeo-mick or Lyeo-ming creek, shall be the boundaries of the same purchase, to all legal interests and purposes, until the General Assembly shall otherwise regulate and declare the same."

This last accession of lands was called by the whites the "New  
1785. Purchase," and when the land office opened in 1785, settlers rapidly flocked up the West Branch.



On the 4th of July of this year, the Philadelphia Agricultural Society, the first in the United States, was organized.

On the 18th of October, Benjamin Franklin,\* then on the verge of eighty, having arrived from France the previous month, was chosen President of the State, and Charles Biddle, Vice-President.

The controversy in relation to the test laws which the previous year had caused the disruption of the Assembly, was reviewed before the Legislature, but little relief was given by the act of 4th of March, 1786, and it was not until three years after that a bill was passed repealing all laws requiring any oath or affirmation of allegiance "from the inhabitants of the State."

The islands assigned to Pennsylvania by the treaty with New Jersey were, by an act passed at this session of the Legislature, distributed among the several counties bordering on the river. Up to this time the jurisdiction over Hog island was doubtful, but it had been exercised by Philadelphia county. By this act that island was permanently attached to Chester county.

During this year considerable activity was manifested by manufacturers and inventors. Applications were made to the Assembly for aid, by John Stephens, to enable him to prosecute to perfection his discovery of the art of making blue stone melting pots equal to black lead crucibles; by John Fitch, the exclusive right to his invention of navigating boats and vessels by steam;



BENJAMIN FRANKLIN.

\* BENJAMIN FRANKLIN was born at Boston, Massachusetts, on the 17th of January, 1706. Apprenticed to his brother James, a printer, he occasionally contributed to the newspaper published by him. The brothers disagreeing, Benjamin left him, went to Philadelphia, and established himself as a printer. He subsequently visited England, where he worked as a journeyman, returned in 1726, and in 1729 became editor and proprietor of the *Pennsylvania Gazette*. In 1730, married Deborah Reed; commenced publishing "Poor Richard's Almanac," which acquired a wide celebrity. He became clerk of the Provincial Assembly in 1736, postmaster of Philadelphia, 1737, deputy postmaster, general of the British Colonies in 1753, agent of the Assembly in opposition to the claims of the Proprietary Governments of exemption from taxation in England, 1757-62. In 1752 he made, by means of a kite, the great discovery of the identity of lightning with the electric fluid. This procured him the membership of the Royal Society, the Copley gold medal, and the degree of LL.D., in 1762, from Oxford and Edinburgh. In 1755 he assisted in furnishing transportation for Braddock's expedition. He was commissioner to the Albany Congress of 1754. While in England, in 1766, he was examined before the House of Commons on the state of affairs in the Colonies, and partly by his exertions the obnoxious Stamp Act was repealed. Returning to Philadelphia, in May, 1775, he was elected to Congress; was one of the committee to prepare, and a signer of, the Declaration of Independence. He was president of the Provincial Convention which framed the Constitution of 1776. From the close of the latter year to 1785 was ambassador to France. To him is due the principal credit of procuring the treaty of alliance with France, 1778, which secured the independence of the Colonies. With Adams and Jay, he signed the definite treaty of peace, September 3, 1783. He was President of Pennsylvania, 1785-88, and delegate to the Convention which framed the Federal Constitution of 1787. He died at Philadelphia, April 17, 1790.





by John Eve, manufacturer of gunpowder; by Oliver Evans, for the exclusive right to use his inventions of machines for making cotton and woolen cards, and also a machine to clean wheat and manufacture it into flour; by Whitehead Humphreys, for assistance to prosecute his discoveries in the art of converting bar-iron into steel; by George Wall, for exclusive manufacture of a new mathematical instrument invented by him; and by Emanuel Bantling, for a special law of encouragement for his invention of a tube-bellows for blacksmiths.

In March, 1787, the subject of the removal of the seat of the State Government from Philadelphia to Harrisburg was introduced into the Assembly by Mr. Findley. The preamble stated that "the people of the State suffered great inconvenience, and were subjected to unequal burdens in consequence of the seat of Government, Land Office, Treasury of the State, Comptroller-General's Office, and Rolls' Office being fixed at Philadelphia, at the distance of four hundred miles from the Western boundary of the State." He therefore moved that a committee be appointed to bring a bill appointing commissioners to erect a State House at Harrisburg, on a lot of ground belonging to the State. This motion was carried by a vote of thirty-three yeas to twenty-nine nays, but was shortly afterward reconsidered and laid on the table.

In May of this year [1787], the Convention to frame the Federal Constitution assembled in Philadelphia. Twelve States were represented. The delegates from Pennsylvania were Thomas Mifflin, Robert Morris, Benjamin Franklin, George Clymer, Thomas Fitzsimons, Jared Ingersoll, James Wilson, and Gouverneur Morris. General Washington was elected president, and William Jackson, secretary. The Convention sat with closed doors. It terminated its deliberations on the 18th of September, when the scheme of the Constitution was perfected. The plan had many opponents in Pennsylvania, particularly among the partisans of the State Government. A draft of the instrument was reported to the Assembly, when a motion was made to authorize the calling of a State Convention to deliberate upon its adoption. This body met on the 21st of November, and was organized by the choice of Frederick Augustus Muhlenberg as president, and James Campbell as secretary. On the 12th of December following, the final adoption of the draft of the Constitution was carried by a vote of forty-six yeas to twenty-three nays. The day after, the members of the Convention and of the Supreme Executive Council, with officers of the State, and the city of Philadelphia, and others, went in procession from the State House to the old Court House, where the ratification of the instrument was solemnly proclaimed. Twelve cannon were fired and the bells were rung. The Convention returned to the State House, where two copies of the ratification of the Constitution were signed. According to Hamilton, a motion was made that all members should sign it as an acquiescence to the principle that the majority should govern, which was strenuously objected to by the opponents of this instrument.

The Federal Constitution, after its adoption by Pennsylvania, was submitted to the other States, and as State after State approved of it, the exultation of the "Federalists," as they were called, and the chagrin of the "Anti-Federalists," were displayed with more and more violence. In several States processions had taken place to celebrate the inauguration of the new era, but in



Pennsylvania, says Westcott, there had been no celebration of this kind, the proceedings in reference to the adoption of the Constitution being hurried through so as not to allow of any public display. It was decided, however, that as soon as the ninth State acceded to it, measures should be taken for public rejoicing. Delaware, New Jersey, Georgia, Pennsylvania, Connecticut, Maryland, South Carolina, and Massachusetts had adopted it prior to June, 1788, and when, on the 21st of that month, New Hampshire, the ninth State, ratified it, it was determined by the citizens of Philadelphia to celebrate the formation of the new Union on the ensuing 4th of July. By that time Virginia had acceded to the Constitution. This pageant was as imposing as it was possible for the authorities and people of Pennsylvania, in their enthusiasm, to make it, and not only in the metropolis, but in every town in the State was the occasion one of patriotism and splendor.

The adoption of the Constitution, says Mr. Westcott, rendered the institution of measures necessary for the election of members of Congress and electors of President and Vice President of the United States. In order to avail themselves as fully as possible of the privileges afforded, the Anti-Federalists were early at work. A few among the leading men of this party assembled in convention at Harrisburg in September, ostensibly for the purpose of recommending a revision of the new Constitution. Blair McClenahan was chairman of this small assembly, and General John A. Hanna secretary. They resolved that it was expedient to recommend an acquiescence in the Constitution, but that a revision of the instrument was necessary. Among other topics enforced was the propriety of a reform of the ratio of Congressional representation, and that Senators should be liable to be superseded or recalled at any time by the State which elected them. Several other changes were advocated, but it contented itself by nominating a general ticket for Congress. The action of this body was immediately denounced, and as the nominees were Anti-Federalists, it was said that power to enforce the new Constitutional system ought not to be granted to its opponents. A new convention was called to meet at Lancaster, which selected candidates for Congress and electors for President. The election of members of Congress took place in November, and in the State six of the nominees on the Federal ticket were elected, and two (David Muhlenberg, of Montgomery, and Daniel Heister, of Berks), who, although Federalists, had, with two others of the same politics, been placed as a matter of policy with the opposition ticket.

On the 14th of October, Vice President Muhlenberg resigning, David Redick, of Washington county, was chosen to that station. On the 5th of November following, General Thomas Mifflin succeeded Benjamin Franklin, who declined a re-election on account of his advanced years. At the same time George Ross, of Lancaster, was elected Vice President.

The first election for electors of President of the United States under the new Constitution was held in January. The Federal ticket was successful—**1789.** the ten votes of Pennsylvania were given for George Washington as President, and eight votes for John Adams, and two for John Hancock for Vice President. Eleven of the thirteen States participated in the election—two not having ratified the Constitution, and the other not having provided for the choosing of electors. General Washington received the



unanimous vote as President, and John Adams had the majority for Vice President.

The Pennsylvania Constitution of 1776 proving inadequate for the requirements of a useful and effective government, its revision was demanded. On the 24th of March the Assembly passed resolutions recommending the election of delegates to form a new Constitution. The Supreme Executive Council refused to promulgate this action of the Assembly. In September following the latter body passed resolutions for calling a convention. At the election in October delegates were chosen, and on the fourth Tuesday of November the Convention assembled in Philadelphia, electing Thomas Mifflin, President. After a long session the members adjourned in the ensuing year to meet again, when

1790. the subject of the Constitution was again taken up and concluded, and the new instrument adopted September 2, 1790.

The most radical changes were made in the executive and legislative branches of government. The Assembly ceased to have the sole right to make laws, a Senate being created. The Supreme Executive Council was abolished. A governor was directed to be elected, to whom the administration of affairs was to be entrusted. The former judicial system was continued, excepting that the judges of the higher courts were to be appointed during good behavior, instead of for seven years. The Bill of Rights re-enacted the old Provincial provision copied into the first Constitution, respecting freedom of worship, rights of conscience, and exemptions from compulsory contributions for the support of any ministry. The recognition of God, and of a future state of rewards and punishments, was still demanded of all holding office, but a belief in the divine inspiration of the Old and New Testaments was not included. The Council of Censors ceased to have authority; and Pennsylvania conformed in all important matters to the system upon which the new Federal Government was to be administered.

In the autumn of 1790, depredations on the frontiers became of common occurrence, and as little could be done to arrest them without marching into the heart of the Indian settlements, this was determined upon, and General Josiah Harmar was ordered to march upon the towns bordering on the Miami. The result was unfortunate, owing to the ruinous plan of acting in detachments; by this means one-half of the regular force was lost. This abortive expedition served only to encourage the enemy, and to give additional rancor to their incursions. The failure of General Harmar made a deep impression upon the American nation, and was followed by a loud demand for a greater force, under the command of a more experienced general.

General Arthur St. Clair, a native of Pennsylvania, an officer of the Revolution, and then Governor of the Northwestern territory, was placed in the year following at the head of a regular force of about fifteen hundred men, well furnished with artillery, and six hundred militia. Like Harmar's, this expedition was a disastrous failure, ending in the total route of St. Clair's army, and the loss of many officers and men. This, in proportion to the number engaged, was enormous and unparalleled, except in the affair of Braddock. Sixty-eight officers were killed upon the spot, and twenty-eight wounded. Out of nine hundred privates who went into action, five hundred and fifty were left dead upon the field, and many of the survivors were wounded.



## CHAPTER XIV.

ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR MIFFLIN. THE YELLOW FEVER IN PHILADELPHIA. THE PRESQU'ISLE ESTABLISHMENT. THE WHISKEY INSURRECTION. DEFENCE OF THE FRONTIERS. 1790-1794.

**T**HE first election held under the Constitution of the Commonwealth—that of 1790, resulted in the choice of Thomas Mifflin\* for Governor. General Mifflin had little or no opposition, his term of service as President being highly acceptable to the people. General Arthur St. Clair, his opponent, was highly esteemed, but the popularity of Mifflin carried him in triumph, and for three terms was chosen to the chief magistracy of Pennsylvania, and the routine of executive business, says Armor, as established by him under the new Constitution, with little variation has been preserved. Several important events transpired during his administration which more than ordinarily moved the public mind.

The system of internal improvements which in Pennsylvania in after years formed so great a portion of the cares of the State, and which involved the Commonwealth in heavy debts, dates its beginning from measures adopted during the first year of Governor Mifflin's administration. The committee appointed by the Legislature at their session in 1790, made a long and valuable



THOMAS MIFFLIN.

report on the 19th of February, 1791, in which the results of the 1791. examinations made in previous years by the commissioners were embodied. The members of this committee were of opinion that the

---

\*THOMAS MIFFLIN was born in Philadelphia, in 1744, of Quaker parentage. On the completion of his education in the Philadelphia College, he entered a counting-house. He visited Europe in 1765, and returning, entered into mercantile pursuits. In 1772, he was chosen to the Assembly from Philadelphia; and in 1774, a delegate to the first Continental Congress. He was appointed major of one of the first Pennsylvania battalions; accompanied Washington to Cambridge, as aid-de-camp; in August, was made quarter-master general; shortly afterwards adjutant general; brigadier general, March 16, 1776; and major general, February 19, 1777. He commanded the covering party during the retreat from Long Island. After the battle of Germantown, he resigned his position in the army. In 1782, was elected a delegate to Congress, of which body he was president in 1783. He was member and speaker of the Legislature in 1785; a delegate to the convention to frame the Federal constitution in 1787; President of the Supreme Executive Council from October, 1788, to December, 1790; president of the convention which framed the constitution of 1790; Governor of the State from 1790 to 1799; and died at Lancaster, January 21, 1800, while serving as a member of the Legislature.





Delaware river could be an important channel for the introduction of the trade and produce of New York by a portage of nineteen miles, and by extending two other short portages to Lake Ontario. They estimated that a safe boat and raft navigation might be made to the Northern boundary of the State for £25,000. In regard to the connection of the Delaware and Allegheny rivers, they stated various interesting facts. In 1790 it was said that one hundred and fifty thousand bushels of wheat had been brought down the Susquehanna, and passed through Middletown for Philadelphia, a large proportion of which came from the Juniata. In 1788 a considerable quantity of flour went up the Susquehanna for the settlers of Northumberland. A further report was made in April, by which appropriations for opening the rivers were recommended, and that the Governor should issue a proclamation inviting proposals for undertaking the construction of canals and locks in and near the waters of the Tulpehocken and Quittapahilla; that a canal should be made from Frankstown to Poplar run; that proposals should be invited for clearing the Susquehanna from Wright's ferry to the Maryland line; that the construction of a turnpike road from Philadelphia through Lancaster to the Susquehanna should be contracted for; also, other roads throughout the State. The bill was passed on the 6th of April, and in August Governor Mifflin apprised the Legislature that he had made contracts for the improvement of certain streams, but that several propositions had not yet met with persons willing to undertake the specified work."

In the meanwhile, continues Mr. Westcott, "an association was formed for promoting the improvement of roads and inland navigation," and the Assembly was asked to pass an act of incorporation for "a company for opening a canal and lock navigation between the rivers Schuylkill and Susquehanna, or by the waters of the Tulpehocken and Quittapahilla, and the Quittapahilla and Swatara in the counties of Berks and Dauphin." The public interest was strongly aroused in favor of this enterprise, and the most sanguine ideas of its importance and successful accomplishment were indulged in. It is stated that forty thousand shares were subscribed for, when the number were but one thousand. To give all an equal chance, the shares were distributed among the subscribers by lottery. This enterprise began in 1792, was completed after some years, and is now known as the Union Canal.

In April, 1793, a company was chartered for the purpose of constructing a canal and lock navigation in the west branch of the Brandywine.

1793. On the same day "The Conewago Canal Company" was authorized to open and improve the navigation of the Susquehanna river, from Wright's ferry to the mouth of the Swatara. This project was an important object in the great scheme for internal improvement and intercourse with the West. The remains of this canal around the Great Falls are still to be seen.

During the same year the Bank of Pennsylvania was incorporated by the Legislature, the opinion being expressed that it would "promote the regular, permanent, and successful operation of the finances of the State, and be productive of great benefit to trade and industry in general." The State subscribed for one-third of the entire stock—and branches were established at Lancaster, Harrisburg, Reading, Easton, and Pittsburgh. These were discontinued in 1810; in 1843 the State sold its stock, and with the financial crisis of 1857 it sunk in ruin.



In 1793, the affairs of the French revolution created undue excitement in America, and much sympathy was expressed by the people of the Union in that terrible convulsion which shook Europe to its centre. The appointment of M. Genet as Minister from the French Republic to the United States, raised the enthusiasm to the highest pitch. Upon the arrival of Genet, the streets of Philadelphia were the scene of continual excitement. Every effort was made by the Federal and State governments to stem the tide of Gallic madness which threatened violence, owing to the number of English and French sailors then in the port of the capital. A British ship, the *Granger*, was captured in the Delaware, but being in violation of the laws of nations, was promptly released. Following this a vessel named the *Sally* was fitted out as a French privateer. The State government determined to make an effort to maintain the neutrality of the port, and Mr. Dallas, Secretary of the Commonwealth, was directed by Governor Mifflin to wait on M. Genet, and forbid the sailing of the vessel. In the course of the violent controversy which ensued during this interview, Genet said that he "would appeal from the President to the people."

This expression, so severely criticised and denounced by the citizens and the press, was emphatically denied by the French minister. He gave his promise that the privateer should not leave, but in violation she did sail a few days afterward. A committee of merchants waited on Governor Mifflin and entreated him to preserve neutrality. The governor assured them that every measure would be taken; and the Federal authorities also showed earnestness in the determination to repress the proceedings of M. Genet.

In the heated discussions which resulted, Governor Mifflin maintained a reserved and dignified position.

At the opening of the session of the Legislature in August, the Executive reported the measures which were taken to preserve the neutrality of the ports. In accordance with his views, an appropriation was made for the erection of a battery on Mud island, for the purpose of commanding the river Delaware.

It was during this year that the dreaded pestilence, the yellow fever, ravaged Philadelphia, spreading dismay and terror. The general consternation which incited many to flee from the destroyer, "produced scenes of distress and misery," wrote Matthew Carey, "of which parallels are rarely to be met with, and which nothing could palliate but the extraordinary public panic and the great law of self-preservation. Men of affluent fortunes, who gave daily employment and sustenance to hundreds, were abandoned to the care of a negro, after their wives, children, friends, clerks, and servants had fled away and left them to their fate. In some cases, at the commencement of the disorder, no money could procure proper attendance. With the poor the case was as might be expected, infinitely worse than the rich. Many of these perished without a human being to hand them a drink of water, to administer medicines, or to perform any charitable office for them. Various instances occurred of dead bodies found lying in the streets, of persons who had no house or habitation and could procure no shelter." The cessation of business, in consequence of the plague, threw hundreds of poor people out of employment. Want and famine made their appearance. While the fatal atmosphere of contagion overspread the devoted city, says Westcott, the most frightful exaggerations of the real condi-



tion of things were spread throughout the country, the consequence of which very soon became serious. In nearly all the cities and towns, near and far, with a few humane exceptions, all intercourse with Philadelphia was prohibited. This added to the general distress. At last the benevolence of the inhabitants elsewhere came to the relief, and contributions in money and provisions were poured out with a liberal hand. The mortality, it is stated, was about five thousand, equal to twenty-two per cent. of those remaining in the city. Among those attacked were Governor Mifflin and Alexander Hamilton, Secretary of the Treasury under Washington. Both recovered, and on the 14th of November the Executive issued a proclamation, stating the pestilence had ceased, and fixing a day of thanksgiving, fasting, and prayer.

The defence of the western portion of the State from Indian incursions again required the prompt attention of the authorities, and on the 28th of February, 1794, the Legislature passed an act for raising soldiers for the defence of the river Delaware and of the western frontiers. At the same time efforts were made toward the laying out of a town at Presqu'Isle, "in order to facilitate and promote the progress of settlement within the Commonwealth, and to afford additional security to the frontiers thereof."

Governor Mifflin transmitted to the President of the United States a copy of this act, apprehending the difficulties which soon manifested themselves. Prior to this he had sent to Captain Ebenezer Denny a commission, giving him the command of the Allegheny company, ordered to protect Messrs. William Irvine, Andrew Ellicott, and Albert Gallatin, who had been appointed commissioners to lay out the town. For the same object, a post had been established at Le Boeuf, two miles below the site of the old French fort of that name. On the arrival of the detachment at Fort Franklin the news were not favorable toward an establishment at Presqu'Isle. The Indians had been irritated by the British, and meditated an opposition to the government. General Wilkins, in writing to Mr. Dallas, stated "the English are fixed in their opposition to the opening of the road to Presqu'Isle, and are determined to send a number of English and Indians to cut them off."

On the 24th of May Governor Mifflin applied to the President to order one thousand militia from the Western brigades, raised for the frontier defence, to support the commissioners who were authorized to lay out the towns. The brigade inspectors of Westmoreland, Washington, Allegheny, and Fayette, accordingly made a draft for that number to co-operate with Captain Denny's detachment, under the command of General Wilkins. The citizens of Northwestern Pennsylvania urged on improvements, and the President, fearful of giving offence to the Indians, advised a temporary cessation. Governor Mifflin, in writing to the Secretary of War, said: "Some of the old grievances, alleged to have been suffered from the Union, the inflammatory speech of Lord Dorchester, the constant machinations of British agents, and the corruption of the British tribes, had, in truth, previously excited that hostile disposition which you seem to consider the effect of the measures pursued by Pennsylvania for establishing a town at Presqu'Isle. . . . I desire to be clearly understood that on my part no assent is given to any proposition that shall bring in doubt or controversy the rights of the States. . . . At the same time I am



anxious to promote the views of the general government, and to avoid increasing the dissatisfaction of the Six Nations, or in any manner extending the sphere of Indian hostilities." Orders were issued to Captain Denny to proceed no farther with his detachment than Le Bœuf, where under the direction of General Wilkins two small block-houses had been erected for the protection of the commissioners.

Attorney-General Bradford having been written to by the Secretary of War as to the constitutionality of raising four companies of troops "for the port of Philadelphia and the defence of the frontiers," replied: "There is nothing in the Constitution, I apprehend, which prohibits the several States from keeping troops *in time of war*. If peace shall be made with the Indians, and the United States be engaged in no other war, these troops cannot be constitutionally kept up in Pennsylvania, although the war should continue to rage in Europe."

A rumor prevailing that a large body of Indians, assisted by the British, had been seen crossing the lake, and others descending the Allegheny, with the object of taking Fort Franklin, destroying the settlement at Cussewago, and then make an establishment at Presqu'Isle, Captain Denny removed to Venango with his men, at the same time ordering the brigades to be ready when called.

On the 18th of June, at Buffalo creek, a council was held with the Six Nations, by Captain Denny and the Pennsylvania commissioner, General Chapin. Cornplanter addressed the conference, in substance as follows: "That they depended upon the Americans to do all in their power to assist them; they wished Colonel Johnson, the British agent, and General Chapin to remove back over the line which they had laid out. This line began at O'Bail's town, and in a direct line crossed French creek, just below Mead's, and on the head of the Cuyahoga; from thence to the Muskingum, and down the Ohio and to the mouth and up the Mississippi, leaving a small square for a trading house at the mouth of the rivers, and one where Clarksville now stands. If this removal was attended to immediately, they should consider them friends; if not, they must be considered enemies." Mr. Ellicott and Captain Denny desired an interval of an hour to prepare an answer, at the expiration of which they replied as follows: "By the peace of 1782 the King of Great Britain ceded all the lands of Pennsylvania, which they claim, but from regard to justice they desired to fairly purchase it from the Six Nations—the real owners of the soil. The purchase north of the north boundary of Pennsylvania, west of the Conewango river, Lake Chatauqua, and the path leading from thence to Lake Erie, and south of said lake, was made of your chiefs at Fort Harmar by Generals Butler and Gibson, and the money and goods punctually paid them. They had also sold those lands to such people as chose to settle and work them, and it was their duty to protect them from depredations. Their military preparations were intended as a defence from hostile Western Indians, not supposing they needed any from the Six Nations, whom they considered their friends and allies. They could not consistently with their duty remove from the lands they had purchased, unless directed to do so by the great council of the people, to whom they would immediately send their message. They had been ordered by the great council of Pennsylvania to their present post, and they could not move from thence until orders came for that purpose."





At another conference, held at the same place, the Indians maintained that they "had decided upon their boundaries, and wished for nothing but justice—they wanted room for their children. If a garrison were established at Presqu'Isle the southern Indians might do injury and the Six Nations be blamed for it."

In October, the President, at the desire of the Indians, appointed a conference at Canandaigua for the purpose of establishing a firm and permanent friendship with the Six Nations, and appointed Colonel Timothy Pickering sole agent for this purpose. At this council all difficulties were amicably settled, a large tract of land west of the Phelps and Gorham purchase in New York was reserved to them, with \$14,500 in goods; and fifty-nine sachems signed a treaty of perpetual peace and friendship with the United States.

Although active preparations were made for carrying out the intentions of the Legislature, an act was subsequently passed to suspend the laying out of a town at Presqu'Isle, and it was not until the 18th of April, 1795, that, all difficulties removed, the same body authorized the laying out of the towns at Le Boëuf, at the mouth of Conewango creek, at the mouth of the French creek, and at Presqu'Isle.

At this time transpired the important events to which we shall now refer. Perhaps no part of the history of Pennsylvania is less understood than the insurrection of 1794, commonly known as the "Whiskey Insurrection." We give, therefore, a summary of the various excise laws of Pennsylvania, with their fate as indicating the temper of the people on that subject, together with a notice of the hardships the early settlers of Western Pennsylvania had to endure, the disturbances following the enactment of an excise law by Congress, and of the measures, peaceable and military, taken to suppress them.

On the 16th of March, 1684, the first excise was imposed by the Assembly of the Province, in an act entitled "Bill of Aid and Assistance of the Government." [Votes of Assembly, I. 29.] This objectionable feature thereof was soon after repealed, and not renewed until the year 1738, when the Provincial Assembly passed "An Act for laying an excise on wine, rum, brandy, and other spirits." So unpopular was this act, that it remained in force only a few months.

In May, 1744, it was again renewed by the Assembly, for the purpose of providing money without a general tax, not only to purchase arms and ammunition for defence, but to answer such demands as might be made upon the inhabitants of the Province by his Majesty for distressing the public enemy in America. This was not long in operation.

In the year 1772, the attention of the Assembly was once more called to the excise as a productive source of revenue, and a duty was levied on domestic and foreign spirits. At first, however, as to home distilled spirits it was not executed, and, indeed, hardly any steps were taken for the purpose, particularly in the older counties. But during the Revolutionary war, the necessities of the State and a temporary unpopularity of distillation, owing to the immense amount of grain consumed, rendered the collection of duties both necessary and practicable, and a considerable revenue was thereby attained. Towards the end of the war the act was repealed.

In 1780, Congress resolved that an allowance of an additional sum should be made to the army, to compensate for the depreciation of its pay. This was



distributed among the States for discharge. Pennsylvania made several appropriations for the purpose, but the revenues so applied turned out to be unproductive. The depreciation fund was always favorably regarded, and upon an application of the officers of the Pennsylvania Line, another effort was made, the revenue arising from the excise remaining uncollected was appropriated to this fund, and vigorous measures were taken for its collection. [Dallas, II. 162.]

Great changes, however, had taken place in the disposition of the people since the first imposition of these duties. The neighboring States were free from the burthen, and in New Jersey, where a law had been passed for the purpose, its execution had been entirely prevented by a powerful combination. The Pennsylvania law, therefore, met with great opposition, especially west of the Alleghenies, and there is no evidence that the excise was ever paid in that section.

The majority of the people in the western counties of the State were of Scotch-Irish descent. They had heard of the exaction and oppression in the old country under the excise laws—that houses were entered by excise officers, the most private apartments examined, and that confiscations and imprisonment followed if the smallest quantity of whiskey was discovered not marked with the official brand. They also remembered that resistance to the stamp act and duty on tea, at the commencement of the Revolution, began by the destruction of the tea and a refusal to use the royal stamps; that the design was not to break allegiance to the British throne, but to force a repeal of these odious laws. They were almost to a man enemies to the British government, and had contributed their full proportion in service in establishing the independence of America. To them no other tax of equal amount would have been half so odious. Holding these opinions, it is not to be wondered at, that the more hot-headed resorted to threats of violence, and precipitated the riotous proceedings which are detailed in the pages following.

The condition of the Western counties at this period we shall briefly describe. This portion of Pennsylvania was partially settled from ten or fifteen years before the war of the Revolution. During that contest the people west of the mountains had to defend themselves against the murderous attacks of the Indians on their borders. The savage foe often made incursions into the settlements, murdered men, women, and children, burnt their cabins and destroyed their grain and cattle.

On one occasion they penetrated into the centre of Westmoreland county, burnt the county town, killed several of the inhabitants, and carried off as prisoners the daughters of Hanna, the original proprietor of the place. In the summer season, for several years, the men placed their wives and children in block-houses, guarded by the old men, while the young and active hoed their corn and harvested their crops in parties, some keeping watch and others performing the work. They were also called on for their quota of men to fight the British on the Atlantic coast. "When a boy," says Dr. Carnahan in an excellent resumé of the transaction, "I have heard from the lips of western men of the battles of Brandywine, Germantown, and Monmouth, and also of the horrors and sufferings of the Jersey prison-ships. For several years after the peace of 1783, there was nothing but a horse-path over the mountains; so that salt, iron, powder, lead, and other necessary articles had to be carried on pack-



horses from Philadelphia to Pittsburgh. As late as 1794, the year of the insurrection, so bad were the roads that freight in wagons cost from five to ten dollars per hundred pounds, salt sold for five dollars a bushel; iron and steel from fifteen to twenty cents per pound in Pittsburgh.

"Western Pennsylvania is a hilly but remarkably healthy and fertile region, and in its virgin state the soil produced wheat, rye, corn, and other grains in abundance with very little culture. But there was no market. While the farmers east of the mountains were growing rich by means of the French revolution and the general war in Europe, those west of the mountains could find no outlet for their abundant harvests. The freight of a barrel of flour from Pittsburgh to Philadelphia would cost nearly as much as it would bring in that market. The mouth of the Mississippi was then in the hands of the Spanish, and there were no houses of established character in New Orleans to which produce could be consigned. Merchants in Pittsburgh and elsewhere would not purchase wheat or flour and run the risk of sending it down the river in boats, which were liable to be fired on by the Indians from the banks of the Ohio, the boatmen murdered, and their cargoes destroyed

"Trade down the river was carried on in this way: A farmer of more enterprise than his neighbors, would build a boat or ark of rough plank, load it with his own produce and that of his neighbors who were willing to send a venture, and he would float down the Ohio and Mississippi and sell at New Orleans for what he could get, and make his way back in a vessel to New York; or what was more common, he would come through Louisiana, Mississippi, Tennessee, Kentucky, and Virginia, over the mountains and through cane-brakes, wearing a girdle of Spanish dollars round his body, which might serve as a corset in case an Indian, as was very likely, should shoot at him."

Wheat was so plentiful and of so little value that it was a common practice to grind that of the best quality and feed it to the cattle, while rye, corn, and barley would bring no price as food for man or beast. The only way left for the inhabitants to obtain a little money to purchase salt, iron, and other articles necessary in carrying on their farming operations, was by distilling their grain and reducing it into a more portable form, and sending the whiskey over the mountains or down the Ohio to Kentucky, then rapidly filling up and affording a market for that article. The lawfulness or morality of making and drinking whiskey was not in that day called in question. When Western Pennsylvania was in the condition described, the Federal Constitution was adopted, and a most difficult problem was presented, viz.: How to provide ways and means to support the government, to pay just and pressing Revolutionary claims, and sustain an army to subdue the Indians still harassing the frontiers. The duties on goods imported were very far from adequate to the wants of the new government. Taxes were laid on articles supposed to be the least necessary, and, among other things, on distilled liquors or on the stills with which they were manufactured.

The Constitution of the United States provided "that all duties, imports, and excises shall be uniform throughout the United States." (Section 8.) But it is manifest that the same article may be taxed alike in all the States, and yet the tax may be very unequal and oppressive in particular parts of the country. Excise on stills and whiskey operated in this way, little or no whiskey was



manufactured in some of the States, and in different parts of the same State. The Western people saw and felt that the excise pressed on them, who were the least able to bear the burden, more heavily than on any other part of the Union. They had more stills and made more whiskey than an equal population in any part of the country. There were very few or no large manufactories where grain was bought and cash paid. There was not capital in the country for that purpose. In some neighborhoods every fifth or sixth farmer was a distiller, who, during the winter season, manufactured his own grain and that of his neighbors in a portable and saleable article. They foresaw that what little money was brought into the country by the sale of whiskey would be carried away in the form of excise duties. The people of Western Pennsylvania then regarded a tax on whiskey in the same light as the citizens of the State would now a United States tax on coal and iron.

The State tax, as heretofore remarked, having remained a dead letter for years, was repealed, a circumstance not likely to incline the people to submit to a similar law passed by Congress on the 3d of March, 1791, at the suggestion of General Hamilton, then Secretary of the Treasury. This law laid an excise of four pence per gallon on all distilled spirits. The members from Western Pennsylvania—Smilie, of Fayette, and Findley, of Westmoreland—stoutly opposed the passage of the law, and on their return among their constituents loudly and openly disapproved of it. Albert Gallatin, then residing in Fayette county, also opposed the law by all constitutional methods. It was with some difficulty that any one could be found to accept the office of inspector in the western district on account of its unpopularity.

The first public meeting in opposition was held at Redstone Old Fort, 27th July, 1791, where it was concerted that county committees should meet at the four county seats of Fayette, Allegheny, Westmoreland, and Washington. On the 23d of August the committee of Washington county passed resolutions, and published them in the *Pittsburgh Gazette*, to the effect that "any person who had accepted or might accept an office under Congress in order to carry the law into effect, should be considered inimical to the interests of the country, and recommending to the citizens of Washington county to treat every person accepting such office with contempt, and absolutely to refuse all kind of communication or intercourse with him, and withhold from him all aid, support, and comfort."

Delegates from the four counties met at Pittsburgh, on the 7th of September, 1791, and passed severe resolutions against the law. These meetings, composed of influential citizens, served to give consistency to the opposition.

On the 5th of September, 1791, a party, armed and disguised, waylaid Robert Johnson, collector of Allegheny and Washington, near Pigeon creek, in Washington county, tarred and feathered him, cut off his hair, and took away his horse, leaving him to travel on foot in that mortifying condition. Several persons were proceeded against for the outrage, but the deputy marshal dared not serve the process, and "if he had attempted it, believes he should not have returned alive." The man sent privately with the process was seized, whipped, tarred and feathered, his money and horse taken from him, blindfolded and tied in the woods, where he remained five hours.





In October, 1791, an unhappy person, named Wilson, who was in some measure "disordered in his intellects," and affected to be, perhaps thought he was, an exciseman, and was making inquiry for distillers, was pursued by a party in disguise, taken out of his bed, and carried several miles to a blacksmith's shop. There they stripped off his clothes and burned them, and having burned him with a hot iron in several places, they tarred and feathered him and dismissed him, naked and wounded. The unhappy man conceived himself to be a martyr to the discharge of an important duty.

In Congress, 8th of May, 1792, material modifications were made in the law, lightening the duty, allowing monthly payments, &c.

In August, 1792, the Government succeeded in getting the use of William Faulkner's house, a captain in the United States army, for an inspection office. He was threatened with scalping, tarring and feathering, and compelled to promise not to let his house for that purpose, and to publish his promise in the *Pittsburgh Gazette*.

The President issued a proclamation the 15th of September, 1792, enjoining all persons to submit to the law, and desist from all unlawful proceedings. The Government determined—first, to prosecute delinquents; second, to seize unexcised spirits on their way to market; and third, to make no purchases for the army except of such spirits as had paid duty.

In April, 1793, a party in disguise attacked in the night the house of Benjamin Wells, collector in Fayette county, but he being from home, they broke open his house, threatened, terrified, and abused his family. Warrants were issued against the offenders by Judges Isaac Mason and James Findley, but the sheriff refused to execute them, whereupon *he* was indicted. On the 22d of November they again attacked the house of Benjamin Wells in the night. They compelled him to surrender his commission and books, and required him to publish a resignation of his office within two weeks in the papers, on pain of having his house burned.

Notwithstanding these excesses, the law appeared, during the latter part of 1793, to be rather gaining ground. Several principal distillers complied, and others showed a disposition, but were restrained by fear.

In June, 1794, John Wells, the collector for Westmoreland, opened his office at the house of Philip Reagan, in that county. An attack was made in the night by a numerous body of men. Reagan expected them, and had prepared himself with guns and one or two men. The firing commenced from the house, and the assailants fired at it for some time, without effect on either side. The insurgents then set fire to Reagan's barn, which they burned, and retired. In the course of a day or two 150 men returned to renew the attack. After some parleying, Reagan, rather than shed blood, proposed to capitulate, provided they would give him honorable terms and assurances that they would neither abuse his person nor destroy his property, he to give up his commission, and never again act as an exciseman. These stipulations were agreed to, reduced to writing and signed by the parties. Reagan then opened his door, and came out with a keg of whiskey and treated them. However, after the whiskey was drunk, some of them began to say that he was let off too easy, and that he ought to be set up as a target to be shot at. Some were for tarring and feathering him, but others took



his part, and said he had acted manfully, and that after capitulating they were bound to treat him honorably. At length they got to fighting amongst themselves. After this it was proposed and carried that Reagan should be court-martialed, and that they would march off right away to Ben. Wells, of Fayette county, the excise officer there, and catch him and try him and Reagan both together. They set out accordingly, taking Reagan along, but when they arrived at Wells' house he was not there, so they set fire to it and burned it to the ground with all its contents. They left an ambush near the ruins, in order to seize Wells. Next morning he was taken, but during the night, as Reagan had escaped and Wells was very submissive with them, they let him off without further molestation.

The next attack was made on Captain Webster, the excise officer for Somerset county, by a company of about 150 men from Westmoreland. They took his commission from him, and made him promise never again to act as a collector of excise. An attempt was made by some of the party to fire his haystacks, but it was prevented by others. They marched homeward, taking Webster a few miles. Seeing him very submissive, they ordered him to mount a stump and repeat his promise never again to act as a collector of excise, and to hurrah three times for "Tom the Tinker," after which they dismissed him.

This term, "Tom the Tinker," came into popular use to designate the opposition to the excise law. It was not given by adversaries as a term of reproach, but assumed by the insurgents in disguise at an early period. "A certain John Holeroft," says Mr. Braeckenridge, "was thought to have made the first application of it at the attack on William Congbran, whose still was cut to pieces. This was humorously called mending his still. The menders, of course must be tinkers, and the name collectively became Tom the Tinker." Advertisements were put up on trees and other conspicuous places, with the signature of "Tom the Tinker," threatening individuals, admonishing or commanding them. Menacing letters, with the same signature, were sent to the *Pittsburgh Gazette*, with orders to publish them, and the editor did not dare refuse. "At Braddock's field the acclamation was, 'Hurrah for Tom the Tinker!' 'Are you a Tom Tinker's man?' Every man was willing to be thought so, and some had great trouble to wipe off imputations to the contrary." Mr. Findley says "it afterwards appeared that the letters did not originate with Holeroft, though the inventor of them has never been discovered."

The office in Washington opened to receive the annual entries of stills, after repeated attempts, was suppressed. At first the sign was pulled down. On the 6th of June, twelve persons, armed and painted black, broke into the house of John Lynn, where the office was kept, and, beguiling him by a promise of safety to come down stairs, they seized and tied him, threatened to hang him, took him into the woods, cut off his hair, tarred and feathered him, and swore him never again to allow the use of his house for an office, never to disclose their names, and never again to aid the excise; having done this, they bound him, naked, to a tree and left him. He extricated himself next morning. They afterwards pulled down part of his house, and compelled him to seek an asylum elsewhere.

In Congress, on the 5th of June, 1794, the excise law was amended. Those, however, who desired not amendment, but absolute repeal, were thereby incited



to push matters to a more violent crisis. It became indispensable for the government to meet the opposition with more decision. Process issued against a number of non-complying distillers in Fayette and Allegheny. Indictments were found against Robert Smilie and John McCulloch, rioters, and process issued accordingly.

It was cause of great and just complaint in the Western counties, that the Federal courts sat only on the eastern side of the mountains, and that individuals were subjected to ruinous expenses when forced to attend them. The processes, requiring the delinquent distillers to appear at Philadelphia, arrived in the west at the period of harvest, when small parties of men were likely to be assembled together in the fields. In Fayette county the marshal executed his processes without interruption, though under discouraging circumstances. In that county the most influential citizens and distillers had, at a meeting in the winter or spring previous, agreed to promote submission to the laws, on condition that a change should be made in the officers.

In Allegheny county, the marshal had successfully served all the processes except the last, when, unfortunately, he went into Pittsburgh. The next day, 15th July, 1794, he went in company with General Neville, the inspector, to serve the last writ on a distiller named Miller, near Peters' creek. It is believed that had Major Lenox, the marshal, gone alone to serve that remaining one, there would have been no interruption. Unfortunately he called on the inspector to accompany him. General Neville was a man of the most deserved popularity, says Judge Wilkinson, and in order to allay opposition to the law as far as possible, was appointed inspector for Western Pennsylvania. His appearing, however, in company with the marshal, excited the indignation of some of Miller's neighbors, and on the return of the marshal and inspector, they were followed by five or six men armed, and a gun was discharged towards them, not, it is believed, with a design to injure, but to alarm them and show their dislike towards the inspector.

On the day of this occurrence, there was a military meeting at Mingo creek, about seven miles distant from the inspector's house, for the purpose of drafting men to go against the Indians. A report of the attack on the marshal and inspector was carried to this meeting, and on the day following, at daylight, about thirty young men, headed by John Holerof, the reputed "Tom the Tinker," assembled at the house of the inspector and demanded the delivery of his commission and official papers. This was refused, and the firing of guns commenced. It is not known who fired the first gun—the insurgents always maintaining that it came from the house, and their only intention was to alarm the inspector, and to cause him to deliver his papers.

The firing went on for some time from the house and from the assailants. At length a horn was sounded in the house, and then there was a discharge of fire-arms from the negro quarters, which stood apart from the mansion house. From the guns of the negroes, who probably used small shots, five or six of the insurgents were wounded, one of them mortally. Forthwith the report spread that the blood of citizens had been shed, and a call was made on all who valued liberty or life to assemble at Mingo creek meeting-house, prepared to avenge the outrage. Some went willingly, others were compelled to go. A large number assembled at the place of rendezvous. Three men were appointed to



direct the expedition, and Major Macfarlane, who had been an officer in the Pennsylvania Line of the Revolution, was chosen to command the armed force. When they were within half a mile of Neville's house, leaving those who had no fire-arms in charge of the horses, they advanced. After the first attack, Neville had left his house, and Major Kirkpatrick, with ten or twelve United States soldiers, had come to defend it. Kirkpatrick was allied to the family of Neville by marriage. When the assailants approached the house, the three men who were to superintend the affair took their station on an eminence at a distance. Macfarlane and his men approached within gun-shot and demanded Neville. It was answered that Neville was not in the house nor on the premises. His commission and official papers were then demanded, with a declaration that if they were not delivered they would be taken by force. Kirkpatrick replied that he had a sufficient force to defend the house, and he would not surrender the papers. Macfarlane informed him that he would wait until the women and children, which he observed were in the house, had withdrawn, and then he would commence the attack, unless his demands were complied with. The women withdrew and the firing began on both sides.

After several rounds the firing seemed to cease from the house, and Macfarlane, supposing a parley was desired, stepped from behind a tree which protected him and ordered his men to stop. At that instant a ball from the house struck him, and he expired in a few minutes. Some of the assailants, without orders, applied a torch to the barn; from the barn the fire spread to the other out-buildings, and from them to the dwelling house. When the house caught fire, Kirkpatrick surrendered and was permitted to leave with his command uninjured.

The death and funeral of Macfarlane greatly increased the excitement, and runners were sent forth to call a meeting of the people at Mingo creek meeting-house, to determine what measures were to be taken. In the town of Washington, among others, the messenger urged David Bradford and Colonel John Marshall to attend the proposed meeting. At first they both refused. Marshall said he would have nothing to do with the business; and Bradford declined on the ground that he was prosecuting attorney for the county, and that his services in that capacity might hereafter be called for. They afterwards changed their minds, attended the meeting, where, hearing the story of what they called the murder of Macfarlane, their sympathies became excited, and from that moment they took a warm and active part. The prominent persons at this meeting were those named, and Messrs. Parkinson, Cook, and Braekenridge. The latter, it appears, attended for the purpose of gaining their confidence. He suggested that though what they had done might be morally right, yet it was legally wrong, and advised the propriety of consulting their fellow citizens. A meeting of delegates from the Western counties was therefore ordered to be held at Parkinson's Ferry, now Monongahela city, on the 14th of August.

A night or two after the meeting at Mingo creek, Bradford and Marshall got possession of the Pittsburgh and Philadelphia mail. The post-boy had been attacked and the mail taken from him by two men near Greensburg. The object was to ascertain what had been written to the east respecting the disturbance. Letters were found giving sad accounts of their doings, and naming individuals





concerned. Those of General Gibson, Colonel Presley Neville, Mr. Brison, and Mr. Edward Day, gave the greatest offence to the insurgents. The documents not referring to this affair were put into the mail bag and returned to the post-office in Pittsburgh. The authors of the objectionable letters were, in consequence, obliged to leave Pittsburgh, by some circuitous route, or conceal themselves, that it might be given out publicly that they were gone.

In the meantime, Bradford and others, without a semblance of authority, issued a circular letter to the colonels of the several regiments in the Western counties, requiring them to assemble their commands at the usual place of rendezvous, fully equipped with fire-arms and ammunition and four days' provision, and from thence to march to Braddock's Field, so as to arrive on Friday, the 1st of August. Strange to say, it was in many instances promptly obeyed; many who despised it at heart did not dare to disobey it. Bradford afterwards denied that he gave such an order, but this is in existence.

There were but three days between the date of the orders and the time of assemblage, yet a vast and excited multitude was brought together, many in companies, under arms. Some were well disposed towards the government, but came for fear of being proscribed; others as mere spectators; others, such as Judge Brackenridge and several from Pittsburgh, to put themselves, if possible, at the head of the multitude, and restrain them, by organization and management, from proceeding to open outrage and rebellion. Great apprehension was entertained that the insurgents might proceed to Pittsburgh and burn the town. The obnoxious persons had been banished, as if by authority, in deference to the demands of the Tom Tinker men, and the Pittsburgh delegation were careful to announce the fact at Braddock's Field. Probably the majority of those assembled were secretly well disposed towards the government, but afraid to come out and avow it. Mr. Brackenridge thus describes the feeling that prevailed there and throughout the Western counties: "A breath in favor of the law was sufficient to ruin any man. It was considered as a badge of Toryism. A clergyman was not thought orthodox in the pulpit unless against the law. A physician was not capable of administering medicine, unless his principles were right in this respect. A lawyer could have got no practice without at least concealing his sentiments, if for the law; nor could a merchant at a country store get custom. On the contrary, to talk against the law was the way to office and emolument. To go to the Legislature or to Congress, you must make a noise against it. It was the *Shibboleth* of safety, and the ladder of ambition."

It was proposed by Bradford to march and attack the garrison at Pittsburgh, but this was abandoned. Bradford now moved that the troops should go on to Pittsburgh. "Yes," said Brackenridge, "by all means; at least to give a proof that the strictest order can be observed, and no damage done. We will just march through, and, taking a turn, come out upon the plain on the banks of the Monongahela; and after taking a little whiskey with the inhabitants, the troops will embark and cross the river." Officers having been appointed, Edward Cook and Bradford, generals, and Colonel Blakenay, officer of the day, the insurgents marched in a body, by the Monongahela road, to Pittsburgh. By the wily management of some of the Pittsburgh gentlemen, the greater part of the company, after being diverted by a treat, were got across the Monongahela. A



few, however, remained, determined to burn General Neville's house, in town, and General Gibson's and others. By the influence of Colonel Cook, Marshall, and others of the insurgent party, this outrage was prevented. Major Kirkpatrick's barn, across the river, was burned. If they had succeeded in burning two or three houses, the whole town must have been consumed. "The people," says Mr. Brackenridge, "were mad. It never came into my head to use force on the occasion. I thought it safest to give good words and good drink, rather than balls and powder. It cost me four barrels of old whiskey that day, and I would rather spare that than a quart of blood."

An account of these turbulent proceedings reaching the State and national authorities, a conference was immediately held. Governor Mifflin, on the 6th of August, appointed Chief-Justice M'Kean and General William Irvine to proceed immediately to the Western country to ascertain the facts relative to the late riots, and, if practicable, to bring the insurgents to a sense of their duty. The day following, President Washington issued a proclamation of warning, commanding "all persons being insurgents, on or before the 1st day of September, to disperse and retire peaceably to their respective abodes," at the same time directing the raising of troops, to be held in readiness to march at a moment's warning." The quotas of the States were as follows:

	Infantry.	Cavalry.	Artillery.	Total.
Pennsylvania .. . . . . .	4,500	500	200	5,200
New Jersey.....	1,500	500	100	2,100
Maryland.....	2,000	200	150	2,350
Virginia.....	3,000	300	...	3,300
	11,000	1,500	450	12,950

The same day, Governor Mifflin issued a similar proclamation, directing the quota of the State to be armed and equipped as speedily as possible. The Governor issued a second proclamation, calling together the Assembly of the State in special session.

On the 8th, the President appointed James Ross, Jasper Yeates, and William Bradford forthwith to repair to the Western counties and confer with such bodies or individuals as they may approve, "in order to quiet and extinguish the insurrection," giving them full instructions and ample powers concerning the same.

These proceedings in the east had not been received west of the Alleghenies previous to the meeting called for the 14th of August, at Parkinson's Ferry. This was composed of two hundred and sixty delegates, elected by the respective counties of Westmoreland, Fayette, Allegheny, Washington, and that part of Bedford lying west of the mountains, and by the county of Ohio, in Virginia. Many had been sent with a view to stem the current of disorder until it had time to cool down. This, however, was only to be accomplished, as some thought, not by open opposition, but by covert management. Colonel Cook was appointed chairman, and Albert Gallatin secretary. Gallatin, Brackenridge, and Judge Edgar, of Washington county, took a prominent part in the discussions. The intemperate resolutions were gradually softened down or explained away. The organic force of the insurrection was condensed into a committee of sixty, one from each township; and this committee was again represented by a standing



committee of twelve. The committee of sixty was to meet at Redstone Old Fort, on the 2d of September, and the standing committee were in the meantime to confer with the United States commissioners, whose arrival had been announced at Pittsburgh, during the meeting. To gain time and restore quietness was the great object with Gallatin and his friends. Mr. Gallatin presented with great force the folly of past resistance, and the ruinous consequences to the country of the continuance of the insurrection. He urged that the government was bound to vindicate the laws, and that it would surely send an overwhelming force against them. He placed the subject in a new light, and showed the insurrection to be a much more serious affair than it had before appeared.

The Pennsylvania commissioners reached Pittsburgh on the 17th. On the 20th the commissioners on the part of the Union, with those on the part of the State, met the committee appointed at the meeting at Parkinson's Ferry. At this conference, preliminary proceedings were taken which resulted in propositions by both bodies of commissioners, who explicitly declared that the exercise of the powers vested in them "to suspend prosecutions," "to engage for a general pardon and oblivion of them," "must be preceded by full and satisfactory assurances of a sincere determination in the people to obey the laws of the United States." The committee presented their grievances, dwelling principally, says Chief-Justice M'Kean, on their being staid in the courts of the United States, and compelled to attend trials at the distance of three hundred miles from their places of abode, before judges and jurors who were strangers to them. Every argument against an excise was urged, but it was clearly evidenced that there was an apprehension in the gentlemen of the committee themselves respecting the safety of their own persons and property, if they should even recommend what they conceived best for the people in the deplorable situation to which they had brought themselves.

The conference adjourned to the 28th of August, to meet the committee of sixty at Redstone Old Fort, now Brownsville, where, after two days' session, the propositions of the commissioners were finally recommended for acceptance. The meeting was opened by a long, sensible, and eloquent speech by Mr. Gallatin, in favor of law and order. Mr. Brackenridge enforced and enlarged upon the arguments already advanced by Gallatin. Bradford, in opposition, let off a most intemperate harangue; but when he found the vote, 34 to 23, was against him, he retired in disgust. Afterwards, alleging that he was not supported by his friends, he signed the terms of submission, and advised others to do it. Judge Edgar summed up the argument for submission, and, by his pious and respectable character and his venerable appearance, won many over to his side.

Such was the fear of the popular frenzy that it was with difficulty a vote could be had at this meeting. No one would vote by standing up. None would write a yea or nay, lest his handwriting should be recognized. At last it was determined that yea and nay should be written by the secretary on the same pieces of paper, and be distributed, leaving each member to chew up or destroy one of the words, while he put the other in the box. This resulted in the appointment of another committee to confer with the commissioners, who were also empowered "to communicate throughout the several counties the day at which the sense of the people was expected to be taken" on this question,



“Will the people submit to the laws of the United States upon the terms proposed by the commissioners of the United States?”

The foregoing test of submission was to be signed individually by the citizens throughout the Western counties before or on the 11th of September. Only ten days intervened, says Rev. Dr. Carnahan, between the offer of the new terms and the day on which each individual should secure an amnesty of the past by a written promise of submission to the laws. Four of these days passed before the terms were printed, leaving only six days to circulate information over a region much larger than the State of New Jersey. There was no opportunity to instruct the people respecting what was to be done. The consequence was that in some places the people did not meet at all.

All the commissioners had returned to Philadelphia before the day of signing, except James Ross, who remained to carry the signatures to the government. Bradford and Marshall signed on the day appointed, and to the credit of the former be it stated, that he made a long speech exhorting the people to submit.

The report of the commissioners, however, was so unfavorable, that the President thought it necessary to send over the mountains the army already collected, but within a few days after Mr. Ross left with the papers signed, a sudden and great change took place in the sentiments and conduct of the insurgents. Various meetings were held, and strong resolutions were passed, expressing their ready submission to the laws of the land. Ohio county, Virginia, was the only exception—the inhabitants of that district being as rebellious as ever.

The army, as previously stated, consisted of 12,950 men. Governor Henry Lee, of Virginia, was placed in chief command. Governor Thomas Mifflin, of Pennsylvania; Governor Richard Howell, of New Jersey; Governor Thomas S. Lee, of Maryland; and General Daniel Morgan of Virginia, commanded the volunteers from the respective States.

The President, accompanied by General Henry Knox, Secretary of War; General Alex. Hamilton, Secretary of the Treasury; and Judge Richard Peters, of the United States District Court, set out for Western Pennsylvania on the 1st of October. On Friday His Excellency reached Harrisburg, and on the day following, Carlisle, where the main body of the army had preceded him.

The meeting of the Committee of Safety at Parkinson's Ferry, on the 2d of October, appointed William Findley, of Westmoreland, and David Redick, of Washington county, commissioners to wait on the President and to assure him that submission and order could be restored without the aid of military force. They met President Washington at Carlisle on the 10th, where several interviews were had. They made known to him the change that had taken place, that the great body of people, who had no concern in the disorders, remained quietly at home and attended to their business, had become convinced that the violence used would ruin the country; that they had formed themselves into associations to suppress disorder and to promote submission to the laws. The President in reply, stated that as the army was already on its way to the disaffected region, the orders would not be countermanded, yet assured the delegates that no violence would be used, and all that was desired was to have the inhabitants come back to their allegiance.





The commissioners returned, called another meeting of the Committee of Safety at Parkinson's Ferry, on the 24th, and made their report. Assurances were received from all parts of the country that resistance to the laws had been abandoned, and that no excise officer would be molested in the execution of his duties. The same commissioners, with the addition of Messrs. Ephriam Douglass and Thomas Morton, were appointed to meet the President on his arrival at Bedford, and inform him of the state of the country.

The President left Carlisle on the 11th of October, reaching Chambersburg on the same day, Williamsport on the 13th, and Fort Cumberland on the 14th, where he reviewed the left division of the army, consisting of the Virginia and Maryland volunteers. On the 19th, he arrived at Bedford, where he remained two or three days, then returned to the Capital, which he reached on the 28th.

In the meantime, the commissioners appointed by the insurgents, finding that the President had left for the east, proceeded to Uniontown, to confer with General Lee, in whose hands all power to treat with them had been delegated, who received them with civility, assuring them that no exertions would be wanting on his part to prevent injury to the persons and property of the peaceable inhabitants. He bade the commissioners to "quiet the apprehensions of all on this score," that he expected on the part of "all good citizens the most active and faithful co-operation, which could not be more effectually given than by circulating in the most public manner, the truth among the people, and by inducing the various clubs which had so successfully poisoned the minds of the inhabitants to continue their usual meetings for the pious purpose of contradicting with their customary formalities their past pernicious doctrines. A conduct, he continued, so candid should partially atone for the injuries which, in a great degree, may be attributed to their instrumentality, and must have a propitious influence in administering a radical cure to the existing disorders." This report was printed and widely circulated. The General himself published an address to the inhabitants of the "Four Western Counties," recommending the subscribing "*an oath to support the Constitution and obey the laws*, and by entering into an association to protect and aid all the officers of the government in the execution of their respective duties."

Notices were at once issued by all the justices of the peace that books were opened at their respective offices "to receive the tests or oaths of allegiance of all good citizens." At the same time General Neville gave official notice for the immediate entering of all stills. At once the people attended to the requirements of the commander-in-chief of the army and the law, and on the 17th of November, general orders were issued for the immediate return of the troops, except a small detachment under General Morgan, directed to remain at Pittsburgh "for the winter defence."

A formal investigation was held by Judge Peters, at which information was made against many who had really been guilty of no offence against the Government. Quite a number were arrested and carried to Pittsburgh. Some were released through the interposition of influential friends, while others, less fortunate, were sent to Philadelphia for trial, where they were imprisoned for ten or twelve months. Several were finally tried, one or two convicted, but



subsequently pardoned. David Bradford, who had been excepted from the amnesty, fled down the Ohio river, escaping into the Spanish dominions.

The peculiar course which Mr. Brackenridge had taken placed him, for a time, in a very awkward predicament, as well as in personal danger. He was denounced to the government as having been one of the leaders of the insurrection. He had certainly taken an active part in the public meetings, and apparently acted with the insurgents. The turning point in his case was the *quo animo*, the motive for his peculiar conduct. Fortunately, his motives had been fully known, throughout his whole course, to Hon. James Ross, who explained his conduct to the Secretary of the Treasury. At the close of the examination the Secretary, General Hamilton, said to him, "In the course of yesterday I had uneasy feelings. I was concerned for you as for a man of talents. My impressions were unfavorable. You may have observed it. I now think it my duty to inform you that not a single one remains. Had we listened to some people, I do not know what might have been done. There is a side to your account. Your conduct has been horribly misrepresented, owing to misconception. I will announce you in this point to General Lee, who represents the Executive. You are in no personal danger. You will not be troubled even by a simple inquisition by the judge. What may be due to yourself with the public, is another question."

Albert Gallatin, as also Judge Addison, were censured for the part taken therein, but no men stood higher in the opinion, not only of the President of the United States, but of the Pennsylvania authorities. William Findley and Hugh H. Brackenridge, each wrote a History of the Insurrection, but they endeavored simply to defend the parts they took in the transaction. In the language of Dr. Carnahan, "this occurrence was salutary as an example, showing that the Federal Government was not a rope of sand, which might be broken at the will of any section of the country whenever any State or part of a State thought a particular law unjust or oppressive."

This year, August 20, General Anthony Wayne gained a complete victory over the combined forces of the Indians. His pursuit of them even to the gates of the British fort, the destruction of McKee's house, and the Indian cornfields, close to that fort, and his very decided correspondence with the British commandant, broke the spirit of the Indians and led to the treaty of Fort Greenville, by which the Indian title to the eastern portion of the State of Ohio was ceded to the United States. This removed all danger of hostile incursions into Western Pennsylvania, and thus also contributed to the rapid settlement of that section of the State.

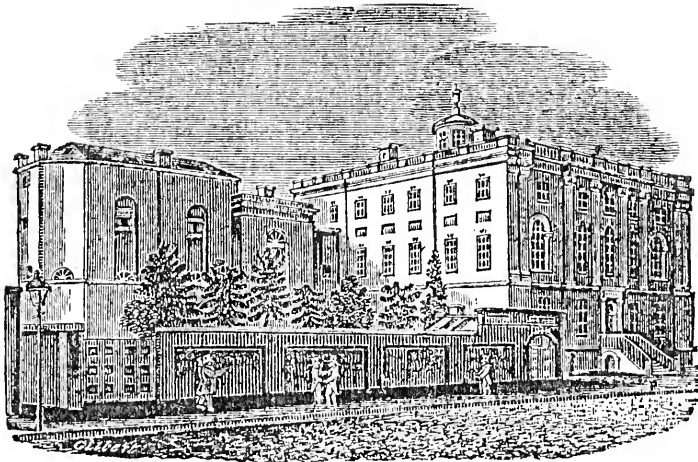


## CHAPTER XV.

JAY'S TREATY. THE FRIES INSURRECTION. REMOVAL OF THE SEAT OF GOVERNMENT. ADMINISTRATIONS OF GOVERNORS M'KEAN AND SNYDER. WAR OF 1812. 1795-1817.



THE terms of the treaty with Great Britain, commonly called Jay's, upon being made known caused intense excitement, and a violent spirit of opposition, says Westcott, to its ratification was immediately displayed. Town meetings were called in Philadelphia, and



BUILDING ERECTED BY PENNSYLVANIA FOR THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES.

[Fac-simile of an Old Print.]

1795. memorials were presented to the President of the United States upon the subject. These demonstrations were all intended to have an influence upon Washington, who had not yet signed the treaty, but they were without effect. Despite the vituperation launched against himself and Mr. Jay, he ratified the instrument on the 11th of August.

In the expectancy that Philadelphia would continue to be the Capital of the nation, the Legislature erected a building on Ninth Street, with the intention of making it the official residence of the President. On the completion of the building, Governor Mifflin tendered the use of it to Mr. Adams, the President elect, who declined the offer. The building was eventually sold, and became the property of the University of Pennsylvania.

In March, the President informed Congress of the difficulties which prevented the negotiation of a treaty with France. The demands of the latter were so



insolent, that the intelligence checked in part the tide of sympathy which had been setting so strongly towards that unfortunate country. The Senate of Pennsylvania, however, passed strong resolutions deprecating war, but they met with disaster in the House. The political excitement ran high, and the French or black cockade was worn by the over-ardent patriots of the day. As a badge of distinction it was said to be indiscreet and improper, and led many into turbulence.

Governor Millin, in view of the prospect of a war with France, addressed a circular letter to the officers of the militia, requesting their assistance  
**1797.** in preparing for warlike measures. The enthusiasm of the citizens became aroused, and new companies were formed where the old were not prompt in their conduct. Measures were taken by the merchants of Philadelphia for the building of vessels of war to be loaned the government. In the beginning of July, Captain Decatur, in command of the sloop-of-war Delaware, captured a French privateer cruising about the capes. She was sent a prize to Philadelphia, and her crew forwarded to the jail at Lancaster.

The imposition of the so-called "house tax" by the Federal Government,  
**1798.** led to resistance in Lehigh, Berks, Northampton, and a small portion of Bucks and Montgomery counties. The intention of the United States was to raise a revenue to reduce the heavy debt incurred by the Revolutionary war. Had the participants clearly understood the law and the objects of Congress, they would not have deigned to resist by force the attempt at its collection. The measure was at first opposed by the women, and the methods of defence resorted to by them induced the title "The Hot Water War" to be applied to the disturbances. In Northampton county a number of persons were seized by order of the United States marshal, but rescued by a force under the leadership of John Fries. In obedience to the proclamation of the President, Governor Millin called out troops from Philadelphia, Bucks, Chester, Montgomery, and Lancaster. The command was given to General William Macpherson. The ringleaders were soon arrested, and taken to Philadelphia. Fries was subsequently tried for high treason and found guilty, but his life was spared, as well as those of his companions, President Adams according them a free pardon.

The removal of the Capital, always a vexatious question, began to be vigorously discussed shortly after the adoption of the Constitution. The location of the seat of government in a large city has ever been objectionable, from the fact that legislation is too much under the control of the municipality, and in the great State of Pennsylvania it was considered that it would be better for the interests of the Commonwealth if the Capital was centrally located. In February, 1795, a resolution passed the House of Representatives for the removal of the place of permanent residence of the Legislature to Carlisle. It failed in the Senate. At the session of 1796 the House again took up the matter. Reading and Carlisle were both named; but their claims not agreed to. Lancaster was chosen by two majority; the Senate, however, interposed, and the measure was not accomplished. Two years afterwards the subject was again renewed, and Wright's Ferry on the Susquehanna river proposed. Subsequently a motion was made to strike out Wright's Ferry and insert Harrisburg,





but was lost. The bill, as passed, was amended in the Senate by the insertion of Harrisburg as the Capital. Neither House would recede, and the measure failed. In 1799 another effort proved successful, and Lancaster was selected as the seat of government. The Governor signed the bill on the 3d of April, 1799. The time from which Lancaster was to be considered the State Capital was after the first Monday of November. The Legislature met there on the 3d of December following; "and thus, after one hundred and seventeen years," says Westcott, "Philadelphia ceased to be the capital of the State, about the same time when, by the removal of the Federal Government, it ceased to be the capital of the Union."



THOMAS M'KEAN.

In 1799, the choice of Governor fell on Thomas M'Kean,\* then chief justice of Pennsylvania. On assuming the duties of his office, great difficulties had to be surmounted, the principal of which was the removal from office of many who had heretofore been appointed not through merit, but personal considerations only. His course was sharply criticised, and party feeling during his entire administration was exceedingly warm and bitter. Writing to President Jefferson shortly after his induction into office, he says: "It appears that the anti-republicans (even those in office), are as hostile as ever, though not so insolent. To overcome them they must be shaven, for in their offices

(like Samson's hair-locks) their great strength, with their disposition for mischief, may remain, but their power of doing it will be gone. It is out of the common order of nature to prefer enemies to friends; the despisers of the people should not be their rulers, nor men be vested with authority in a government which they wish to destroy."

The Federalists in the Legislature made an attack upon the Governor for holding the principles thus enunciated, and the address of the Senate was one of accusation instead of congratulation. Governor M'Kean made a long reply, "declaring that the objectionable expressions were uttered before he assumed

---

\*THOMAS M'KEAN was born in Chester county, March 19, 1734. After an academic and professional course of study, he was admitted an attorney, and soon after appointed deputy attorney-general for Sussex county, Delaware. In 1757 he was elected clerk of the Pennsylvania Assembly, and from 1762 to 1769 was member thereof for the county of New Castle. In 1765 he assisted in framing the address of the Colonies to the British House of Commons. In 1771 he was appointed collector of the port of New Castle; member of the Continental Congress in 1774, and annually re-elected until February, 1783. In 1778 he was a member of the convention which framed the Articles of Confederation; and 1781 president of Congress. In addition to these duties, in 1777 he acted as President of Delaware, and until his election of Governor, from 1777 to 1799, held that office, and executed the duties of chief justice of Pennsylvania. He was a promoter of and signer of the Declaration of Independence; commanded a battalion which served under Washington in the winter of 1776-77. He was elected Governor of Pennsylvania three terms (1798 to 1808) under the constitution of 1790, of the convention framing which he was a member. He died at Philadelphia, on the 24th of June, 1817.



office, and that as regarded the removals from office he relied upon his right to make such changes as he deemed proper, without accountability to any person or party."

During his last term of office, such was the acrimony of the opposition who controlled the Assembly, that articles of impeachment were preferred against him, but a trial was never had. Governor M'Kean submitted a paper "defining in a most lucid manner the powers and duties of the several branches of the government, legislative, judicial, and executive, and expounding clearly impeachable offences. This document is regarded with great favor by professional men, and is quoted as authority upon the questions of which it treats."

In his last message to the Legislature he said, "In my last personal communication to the Assembly, probably in the last important public act of my life, I shall be indulged, I hope, in claiming some credit for feelings corresponding with the solemnity of the occasion. It has been my lot to witness the progress of our country from a colonial to a national character, through the ordeal of many trials, in peace and in war. It has been my happiness to enjoy the favor and the confidence of our country in the most arduous as well as in the most auspicious stages of her political career. Thus attached by every tie of honor and of gratitude, by all the motives of social interest and affection, I contemplate the future destinies of our country with a proud but an anxious expectation. My day of exertion (of feeble exertion at the best) is past; but for our fellow-citizens, and for their representatives in every department of the government, I can only cease to implore the blessing of Providence when I cease to exist."

By a law passed in 1802, to provide for the regulation of the militia, the State cockade was directed to be blue and red. The same year was  
**1802.** passed the first law for the education of the children of the poor gratis, although both the Constitution of 1776 and that of 1790 provided for the establishment of "a school or schools in every county." Owing to the lameness of this law, it remained a dead statute so far as some of the counties in the State were concerned.

In the address of the Democratic committee for 1803, is used the following language: "As Pennsylvania is the keystone of the Democratic arch,  
**1803.** every engine will be used to sever it from its place"—being probably the first instance in which the comparison of the Commonwealth to the keystone of an arch was used, and the origin of a figure of speech since very common.

At the session of the Legislature in December, a memorial was presented from Thomas Passmore, of Philadelphia, charging Justices Yeates, Shippen, and Smith, of the Supreme Court, with oppression and false imprisonment, he having been committed for contempt of court. The subject was referred to the succeeding Assembly. This body took up the affair, and the House of Representatives recommended that the court should be impeached for high misdemeanors. Articles of complaint were prepared and the impeachment sent to the Senate. It was not until the subsequent session that proceedings were had, when, upon the final vote in the Senate, thirteen pronounced guilty, eleven not guilty; the constitutional majority of two-thirds not being obtained, the accused were acquitted.



In the month of August the first through line of coaches from Philadelphia to Pittsburgh, *via* Lancaster, Harrisburg, Carlisle, Shippensburg, 1804. Bedford, Somerset, and Greensburg was established, and the time occupied about seven days.

In 1805, a project was started by a portion of the Democratic party, as then organized, for revising the State Constitution. It grew out of the trial 1805. of the judges of the Supreme Court, and the advocates of the measure proposed to make the election of senators annual, to reduce the patronage of the Governor, and to limit the tenure of the judiciary. The party urging these changes assumed the name of "Constitutionalists;" while those opposed called themselves "Friends of the People." The controversy for some time was carried on with much bitterness, but did not result in a change.

This year was distinguished by an effort towards the propulsion of the first land-carriage moved by steam in the world. This was done by Oliver 1807. Evans, in July, at Philadelphia. The year following the first railroad in America was built in Ridley township, Delaware county.

In October, 1808, Simon Snyder,\* another member of the Constitutional convention of 1790, was elected Governor. Three 1808. years previously, on account of the estrangement of Governor M'Kean from the party which elevated him to power, his defeat was nearly effected by Mr. Snyder. The former having served the full constitutional period, the latter was nominated for Governor, and although his opponent, James Ross, was a man of eminent talent, Governor Snyder was elected by an overwhelming majority.



SIMON SNYDER.

On his accession to the gubernatorial office, difficulties with England were serious, she assuming the right to search American vessels for suspected deserters from the British navy, under cover of which the grossest outrages were committed by British cruisers and privateers on American commerce. These depredations produced the most intense excitement. From the beginning of its career the United States had earnestly protested against the right of search. An open rupture had been apprehended for several years, but owing

\*SIMON SNYDER was born at Lancaster, November 5, 1759. His father, Anthony Snyder, was a native of Oppenheim in Germany, emigrating to America in 1748. He apprenticed himself at the age of seventeen to the trade of a tanner at York, and during intervals pursued his studies. In 1784 he removed to Selinsgrove, where he entered into mercantile pursuits. He was early elected a justice of the peace, which office he held for twelve years. He was a member of the Convention which framed the Constitution of 1790; and in 1797 was elected a member of the House of Representatives, of which he was chosen Speaker in 1802, serving in that position for six successive terms. With him originated the arbitration principle incorporated with other wholesome provisions for the adjustment of controversies brought before justices of the peace, in a law commonly called the "hundred dollar law." In 1808 he was elected Governor of Pennsylvania, and served for three terms. Upon retiring from that office in 1817, he was chosen to the State Senate, but died while a member of that body, November 9, 1819.



to the amicable nature of the Federal Government the resort to arms was delayed until all hopes of settling existing difficulties with England were at an end. As early as 1807 active preparations were made by the United States for defence, and about five millions of dollars were appropriated by the government for war purposes. In 1811 Congress was convened a month

1811. earlier, and that body at once seconded the measures adopted by President Madison, declaring offensive measures, and authorizing the call of one hundred thousand troops.

Pennsylvania spoke out emphatically, resolving to stand by the general government, and this course was promptly followed by nearly all the States of the Union. On the 12th of May, 1812, Governor Snyder expressed the

1812. feelings of the people of his native State, in his call for Pennsylvania's quota of fourteen thousand militia, when he said: "The Revolution of America, that great and mighty struggle, which issued in giving to the United States that place among the powers of the earth to which the laws of nature and of nature's God entitled them, had scarcely been consummated, when the King, over whom we had been triumphant, began an invasion of our rights and property, which has almost uninterruptedly been continued and yearly aggravated in kind and in degree. Remonstrance has followed remonstrance, but they 'have only been answered by repeated injury' and new outrage. Their promises—their written engagements—their plighted faith—have all been wantonly violated. These wrongs have been so long endured, that our motives have been mistaken, and our national character misrepresented. Our forbearance has been called cowardice—our love of peace, a slavish fear to encounter the dangers of war. We know that these representations have no foundation in truth; but it is time that our enemies—that our friends—that the world, should know, we are not degenerated sons of gallant sires.

"For nearly thirty years we have been at peace with all the nations of the earth. The gales of prosperity, and the full tide of happiness, have borne us along; while the storm of war has been desolating the greater part of the civilized world, and inundated it with the bitter waters of affliction. All the means which wisdom and patriotism could devise have been in vain resorted to, in the hope of preserving peace. The cup of patience—of humiliation and long suffering—has been filled to overflowing; and the indignant arm of an injured people must be raised to dash it to the earth, and grasp the avenging sword.

"In the cultivation of the earth, and in manufacturing and transporting its products, the people of the United States have been honestly, usefully, and harmlessly employed; and for many years have we been feeding the nation whose navy 'has plundered our seas, ravaged our coasts, and destroyed the lives of our people.' Our ability and disposition to serve them has whetted their commercial jealousy and monopolizing animosity.

"It is our property that has been plundered—it is our rights that have been invaded—it is the persons of our friends, relatives, and countrymen, that have been 'taken captive on the high seas,' and constrained 'to bear arms against their country; to become the executioners of their friends and brethren, or to fall themselves by their hands.' It is our flag that has been bathed in our





waters—made red with the blood of our fellow-citizens. Every gale from the ocean wafts to our ears the sighs, the groans of our impressed seamen, demanding retribution. It is our homes and firesides that have been invaded by ‘the merciless Indian savages,’ who have been instigated to pollute our sacred soil with hostile feet, and tomahawk our citizens reposing in peace in the bosom of our country. The seeds of discord have been sown amongst our people by an accredited spy of the British government, at a time, too, when the relations of peace and amity were subsisting between our own and that government, founded on re-iterated assurances from them of national esteem and friendship.

“If ever a nation had justifiable cause for war, that nation is the United States. If ever a people had motives to fight, we are that people. Our government, the watchful guardians of our welfare, have sounded the alarm—they have called upon us to gird on our swords and be ready to go forth and meet our enemies. Let us hasten to obey the government of our choice, and rally around the constituted authorities of the Union. Let an honorable zeal glow in our bosoms, as we eagerly press forward to render our services. It would give the Governor inexpressible satisfaction, if Pennsylvania would volunteer her quota. May each State animate the others, and every citizen act as if the public weal—the national honor and independence—rested upon his single arm. The example of the heroes and statesmen of our Revolution, and the rich inheritance their courage and wisdom achieved, cannot fail to urge all who love their country to flock around her standard—upborne by the right hands of freemen, planted in the sacred soil their valor won, and consecrated by a righteous cause;—this nation may well go forth ‘with a firm reliance on the protection of Divine Providence,’ and a conscious belief that the arm of the Lord of Hosts, the strength of the Mighty One of Israel, will be on our side.

“The last appeal being now to be made, by an injured and indignant nation, it remains for the militia and volunteers of Pennsylvania, by a prompt co-operation with her sister States, to render efficient the measures which are or may hereafter be adopted by the the United States government.”

Such was the enthusiasm of the hour, that in response to the Governor’s call three times as many troops tendered their services as were required. The disappointment of some was so great that money was freely offered to secure a place among those accepted by the authorities.

General William Reed, the adjutant-general of the State, speedily organized this force, which was formed into two divisions—Major-General Isaac Morrell appointed to the command of the first, and Major-General Adamson Tammehill to the second. The differences which had so long subsisted between the United States and Great Britain, and which had led to the various measures adopted for defence, finally resulted in war, which was declared by Congress on the 18th day of June, 1812. Every representative but two from Pennsylvania, and both the senators, voted in favor of a declaration, and nobly did their constituents make known their approval of that vote.

By a law of the General Assembly passed in February, 1810, the seat of government was directed to be removed to Harrisburg in the summer of 1812. Until the erection of the public buildings, for which a commission was



appointed, the sessions of the Legislature were held in the Court House at Harrisburg, from December, 1812, to December, 1821.

In July, a general alarm prevailed in the town and vicinity of Erie, in consequence of the appearance of a British Indian force on the opposite side of the Lake. On the 15th, orders were issued for the organization of the sixteenth division of the Pennsylvania militia, under General Kelso, for the protection of the frontier. Arms and munitions of war were sent forward. These measures so promptly taken, prevented the British and their savage allies from polluting the soil of Pennsylvania with hostile feet.

On the 3d of December, 1812, Governor Snyder, in his annual message, held this language in relation to the declaration of war by Congress against Great Britain: "The sword of the nation, which for thirty years has been rusting in its scabbard, has been drawn to maintain that independence which it had gloriously achieved. In the war of the Revolution our fathers went forth, as it were, 'with a sling, and with a stone, and smote the enemy.' Since that period our country has been abundantly blessed and its resources greatly multiplied; millions of her sons have grown to manhood, and, inheriting the principles of their fathers, are determined to preserve the precious heritage which was purchased by their blood, and won by their valor."

At the suggestion of the Governor, the Legislature passed an act for an additional monthly allowance to be made to the militia from Pennsylvania. Gun-boats and privateers were built and fitted out in the port of Philadelphia, the ordnance at Fort Millin was repaired, and energetic efforts made to place not only the Delaware river, but that portion of the State upon Lake Erie, in a state of defence.

The gallant services of two eminent Pennsylvanians, Commodore Stephen Decatur, of the frigate *United States*, and Lieutenant James Biddle, of the *Wasp*, received special approbation at the hands of the Legislature, who directed an appropriate sword to be presented to each of those officers for their bravery.

Early in the month of March, 1813, the blockade of the Delaware, 1813. which had been constantly anticipated from the period at which hostilities were proclaimed, was effected by the British fleet under Commodore Sir John P. Berresford. It was prosecuted with such vigor as to cut off the chief part of the foreign commerce of Philadelphia. In the course of that month, the enemy were several times repulsed by the militia of Delaware in attempts to capture small vessels close in with the shore.

In obedience to requisitions from the President, a third and fourth detachment of one thousand men each were ordered into the service of the Union. The fourth detachment was to protect the shores of the Delaware, and the third to protect vessels of war then building and equipping in the harbor of Erie. The happy result of the latter service was amply manifested in the glorious victory on Lake Erie, which, if ever equalled, was in naval service never excelled—a victory not less brilliant in its achievements than important in its effects; not less honorable to the nation than to the distinguished Perry, who commanded, and the brave officers and men who composed, that heroic force. The successes of Croghan, Harrison, and Chauncey, during the year, struck a fatal blow to British prowess, whether upon the land or the sea.



At the subsequent session of the Assembly of the State, it was directed "that the thanks of the government be tendered to Captain Oliver Hazard Perry, of Rhode Island, for the brilliant action through which he succeeded in capturing His Britannic Majesty's fleet on Lake Erie," and that a gold medal be presented to him. A gold medal was likewise presented to Commodore Jesse Duncan Elliott, of Pennsylvania, for heroic conduct in that engagement, and silver medals "to those citizens of the State who nobly and gallantly volunteered on board of the American squadron on Lake Erie."

In the summer and autumn of 1813, the shores of the Chesapeake and its tributary rivers were made a general scene of ruin and distress. The British force assumed the character of the incendiary in retaliation for the burning of the town of York in Upper Canada, which had been taken by the American army under General Dearborn in April of that year. This was purely accidental, but it served as a pretext for the general pillage and conflagration which followed the marching of the invading army. On the 24th of August, 1814, the enemy took possession of Washington City, no defence having been made. The commanders of the British force—General Ross and Admiral Blackburn—proceeded in person

to direct and superintend the business of conflagration. "They set fire 1814. to the Capitol," says Mr. Dallas in his "Causes and Character of the War," "within whose walls were contained the halls of the Congress of

the United States—the hall of their highest tribunal for the administration of justice; the archives of the legislature and the national library. They set fire to the edifice which the United States had erected for the residence of their chief magistrate. And they set fire to the costly and extensive buildings erected for the accommodation of the principal officers of the government in the transaction of the public business. These magnificent monuments of the progress of the arts which America had borrowed from her parent Europe, with all the testimonials of taste and literature which they contained, were on the memorable night of the 24th of August, consigned to the flames, while British officers of high rank and command united with their troops in riotous carousals by the light of the burning pile." Horror-stricken, if not conscience-stricken, at the desolation, General Ross fled from the unfortunate city.

Owing to the menacing attitude of the enemy subsequent to the fearful depredations alluded to, additional requisitions were made, and the promptitude with which the militia of the State turned out at their country's call reflected upon them signal honor. On the 26th of August, Governor Snyder issued his stirring appeal for a call to arms: "The landing upon our shores," he said, "by the enemy, of hordes of marauders, for the purpose avowedly to create by plunder, burning, and general devastation, all possible individual and public distress, gives scope for action to the militia of Pennsylvania by repelling that foe, and with just indignation seek to avenge the unprovoked wrongs heaped on our unoffending country. The militia generally within the counties of Dauphin, Lebanon, Berks, Schuylkill, York, Adams, and Lancaster, and that part of Chester county, which constitutes the 2d brigade of the 3d division, and those corps particularly who, when danger first threatened, patriotically tendered their services in the field, are earnestly invited to rise (as on many occasions Pennsylvania has heretofore done) superior to local feeling and evasives that



might possibly be drawn from an imperfect military system, and to repair with that alacrity which duty commands, and it is fondly hoped inclination will prompt, to the several places of brigade or regimental rendezvous that shall respectively be designated by the proper officer, and thence to march to the place of general rendezvous.

“Pennsylvanians, whose hearts must be gladdened at the recital of the deeds of heroism achieved by their fellow-citizen soldiers now in arms on the Lake frontier, and within the enemy’s country, now the occasion has occurred, will with ardor seek and punish that same implacable foe, now marauding on the Atlantic shores of two of our sister States.”

By the general orders issued the same day camps were established at Marcus Hook, on the Delaware, and at York. A force of five thousand men were soon at the latter rendezvous under the commands of Major-General Nathaniel Watson and Brigadier-Generals John Forster and John Adams. When General Ross attempted to capture Baltimore, these Pennsylvania militia marched thither and had the high honor to aid in repelling the enemy.

The gallant record, during the year’s campaign, of the brave Pennsylvanians who served at Chippewa and Bridgewater, reflected glory on the patriotism and valor of the old Commonwealth, and secured not only the thanks of their brave commander, but the gratitude of their countrymen.

During the struggle which had just closed, the soil of Pennsylvania had never been trodden by a hostile foot, and yet it had at one time a greater number of militia and volunteers in the service of the United States than were at any time in the field from any other State in the Union, and as she furnished more men, so did she furnish more money to carry on the war. The militia and volunteers, as noted, were actually engaged in Canada, on Lake Erie, at Baltimore and elsewhere, and stood ready to repel the enemy from the States of New York and New Jersey. It ought not be forgotten that when four thousand New York militia, under General Van Rensselaer, arrived at Buffalo on their march to invade Canada, they refused to cross the line, on the pretext that they were not obliged to do so even to fight their country’s enemies; but soon after, when General Adamson Tammehill, with a brigade of two thousand Pennsylvanians, reached the Niagara, they did not hesitate, but promptly crossed the line and gallantly met the foe. So, too, it was the militia of Pennsylvania who manned Perry’s fleet, on Lake Erie, and enabled him to announce, “We have met the enemy, and they are ours.”

On the 17th day of February, 1815, the treaty of peace between the 1815. United States and Great Britain was ratified by the Senate.

On the 20th of the same month, Captain Charles Stewart, of the frigate *Constitution*, with an inferior force, captured the British ships of war, *Cyane* and *Levant*. This gallant service was received everywhere with joy, and Captain Stewart’s native State, Pennsylvania, presented him with a magnificent gold-hilted sword, commemorative of his distinguished bravery and skill.





## CHAPTER XVI.

ADMINISTRATIONS OF GOVERNORS FINDLAY, HEISTER, SHULZE, WOLF, AND RITNER.  
INTERNAL IMPROVEMENTS. THE COMMON SCHOOL SYSTEM. 1817-1837.



THE success of the Republicans in 1817 brought to the gubernatorial office William Findlay,\* of Franklin county. Governor Findlay found his position one of much care and trouble. Party rancor ran so high that at each sojourn of the Legislature during his term of office the opposition who controlled both Houses made his official conduct subject to investigation.



WILLIAM FINDLAY.

In June, 1817, commissioners on the part of Maryland were met by those from Pennsylvania to examine the river Susquehanna and consider the means best calculated to improve its navigation. The commissioners reported against the continuation of the canal system adopted at Conewago, but recommended the removal of certain obstructions in the river at the different rapids, as far as Northumberland. Explorations of other streams had previously been made, and an extensive system of internal improvements was presented to the Legislature at its session

1818. in 1818 by Governor Findlay, the main features being the improvement of

the navigation of the principal rivers, with their tributary streams within the jurisdiction of the State, as far up and as near to their sources as possible, then by connecting the heads of these streams by short portages.

During Governor Findlay's term of office began the opening up of the anthracite coal trade, which has grown to such immense proportions. The primary difficulty heretofore had been in sending the coal to market. Private

\* WILLIAM FINDLAY was born at Mercersburg, Franklin county, June 20, 1768. His ancestors were Scotch-Irish. He received a good English education, and was intended for the law, but owing to the pecuniary embarrassments of his father, who met with a severe loss by fire, a collegiate course, then considered necessary, was denied him. After marrying, in 1791, he began life as a farmer. He was appointed a brigade inspector of Franklin county, the first office he held. In 1797 he was elected a member of the House of Representatives. In 1803 he was again chosen to that office, and successively until January, 1807, when, having been elected State Treasurer, he resigned his seat in the House. For ten years he filled the latter position. In 1817 he was elected Governor over General Joseph Heister. He served one term. At the session of the Legislature, in 1821-22, Governor Findlay was chosen United States Senator for six years. At the expiration of the senatorial term, President Jackson appointed him Treasurer of the United States Mint. He died at Harrisburg, November 12, 1846.



enterprises, however, were encouraged, and by these means easy access was rapidly afforded for the products of the mines in the interior counties to reach the seaboard.

General Joseph Hiester,\* an officer of the Revolution, succeeded Governor Findlay in December, 1820. Remembering the unmerited attacks made 1820. upon his predecessor in office, he thus alludes to the subject in his inaugural: "I trust that if any errors shall be committed, they will not be chargeable to intention. They will not proceed from a willful neglect of duty on my part, nor from any want of devotion to the best interests of our country. Such errors, I may justly hope, will meet with indulgence from an enlightened and liberal people.

. . . Considering myself as elected by the people of this Commonwealth, and not by any particular denomination of persons, I shall endeavor to deserve the name of chief magistrate of Pennsylvania, and to avoid the disgraceful appellation of the Governor of a party."

As it is with us even to-day, the great subject which engrossed the minds of the 1821. citizens of the State, was the opening of a great highway to the West—ever the grand aim of those who had the prosperity of the Commonwealth at heart. The Legislature chartered a number of canal and turnpike companies, and authorized State subscriptions to the same.

The subject of education was another measure to which the attention of the people was drawn, and in his annual message Governor Hiester used this language: "Above all it appears an imperative duty to introduce and support a liberal system of education connected with some general religious instruction." The city and county of Philadelphia had been erected into "the first school district of Pennsylvania" in 1818, and during this session (1822) the city and county of Lancaster were erected into "the second school district." These, termed the Lancasterian methods, were the beginnings of that glorious system of free education, which has placed our State in the front rank of public educators.

In 1822, the Legislature first met in the Capitol erected at Harrisburg. This building had occupied two years in its erection, the corner-stone 1822. having been laid on the 31st of May, 1819, with imposing ceremonies.

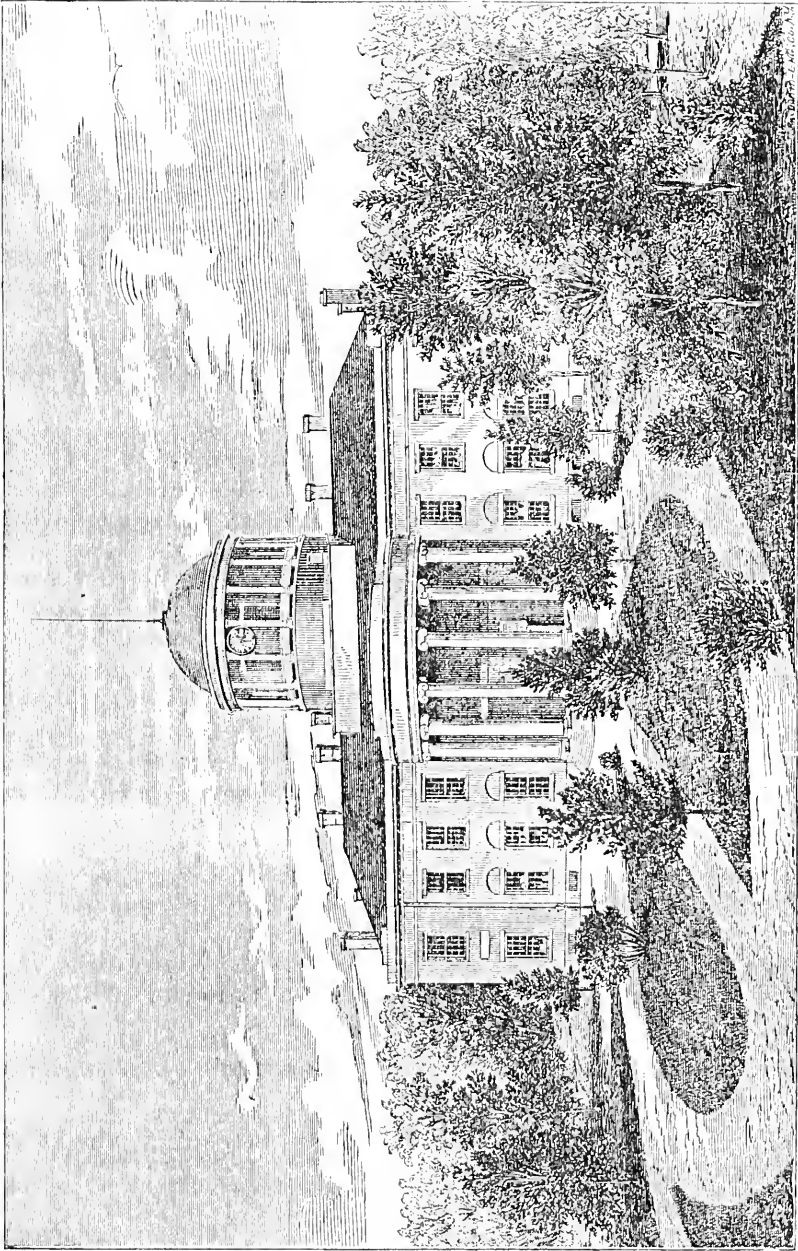


JOSEPH HIESTER.

---

\* JOSEPH HIESTER was born at Reading, November 18, 1752. In 1775 he raised a company of eighty men, and received his commission as captain. When the battalion was formed he was appointed major. He participated in the battle of Long Island, severely wounded, was taken prisoner, and suffered a year's confinement in a British prison-ship. After his exchange he again joined the army and was wounded at Germantown. He was for many years a member of the Legislature; was delegate of the Convention of 1790, and was a member of Congress from 1797 to 1805, and again from 1815 to 1821, when he was elected Governor of the State, which station he filled one term. He died June 10, 1832.





STATE CAPITOL, HARRISBURG.



John Andrew Shulze,\* of Lebanon county, was inaugurated Governor 1823. nor December 16, 1823. For six years he occupied the executive chair.

In 1823, in his annual message, President Monroe made his celebrated declaration in favor of the cause of liberty in the Western hemisphere, and the non-interference of European powers in the political affairs of this continent. The determined stand taken by Mr. Monroe was warmly endorsed by the people of Pennsylvania, and the Legislature of the State, at the subsequent session, passed resolutions to the effect that it had afforded them "the highest gratification to observe the President of the United States, expressing the sentiments of millions of freemen, proclaiming to the world that any attempt on the part of the allied sovereigns of Europe to extend their political systems to any portion of the continent of America, or in any other manner to interfere in their internal concerns, would be considered as dangerous to the peace and safety of the United States." Governor Shulze, in transmitting these resolutions to the President, expressed his hearty endorsement of the doctrines therein set forth.



JOHN ANDREW SHULZE.

During the administration of Governor Shulze, General Lafayette made his second visit to Pennsylvania, an event which produced marked and 1825. spontaneous enthusiasm among the entire population. Next to the great and good Washington, he was hailed as the deliverer of this country, and no where was he made more welcome than in this State.

In 1825, the Schuylkill navigation canal, projected almost thirty years previously, although not commenced until 1815, was completed. The occasion was one of public rejoicing, and the success of the enterprise gave an impetus to other improvements. Shortly afterwards the Union canal, heretofore referred to, was also finished. The great Pennsylvania canal was prosecuted with vigor.

Governor Shulze hesitated somewhat at this stupendous plan of 1826. internal improvements by the State, and opposed the loan of a million dollars authorized by the Legislature. He was obliged to yield, however, to the popular will, and before the close of his second term, six millions of dollars had been borrowed.

---

\*JOHN ANDREW SHULZE, the son of a Lutheran clergyman, was born at Tulpehoeken, Berks county, July 19, 1775. He received a classical education and studied theology. He was ordained in 1796 a Lutheran minister, and for six years officiated as pastor of several congregations in Berks county. Owing to a rheumatic affection, he forsook the church and entered upon mercantile pursuits. In 1806 he was elected to the Legislature, and served three years. In 1813 he was commissioned prothonotary of the new county of Lebanon, which office he filled for eight years. In 1821 he was chosen representative, and the year following a State senator. In 1823 he was elected Governor of the State, and re-elected in 1824. In 1840 he was a member of the Electoral College. In 1846 he removed to Lancaster, where he died, November 18, 1852.





The main line of the public works from Philadelphia to Pittsburgh was composed of 126 miles of railroad and about 292 miles of canal. It was completed in 1831. Several branch canals were also put under contract, and the entire expenditure for the improvements amounted to over thirty-five millions of dollars. These internal improvements were managed by a board of three canal commissioners.

On the 28th of March, 1825, the question of calling a convention to revise the Constitution was ordered to be submitted at the next general election, but the measure was defeated by a vote of 44,470 to 59,813.

Previous to 1827, says Mr. Sypher, the only railroads in America were a short wooden railroad (to which we have heretofore referred), constructed at Leiper's stone quarry in Delaware county, Pennsylvania, and a road three miles in length, opened at the Quiney granite quarries in Massachusetts, in 1826. In May, 1827, a railroad nine miles in length was constructed from Mauch Chunk to the coal mines. This was, at the time, the longest railroad in America.

In 1829, George Wolf,\* of Northampton county, was chosen Governor over 1829. Joseph Ritner. At this period there began to be a change in the political horizon of the State. A fearful crusade was made against secret societies, which were denounced as tending to subvert free government. Commencing in the New England States, the reported abduction of a traitor to the free-masons in New York, assisted to spread rapidly the contagion, and party lines were almost equally drawn in the State of Pennsylvania. The Federal party lost its identity, and the Anti-Masons sprung up like mushrooms. Their candidate for Governor was



GEORGE WOLF.

defeated at the first election by seventeen thousand, and at the second by only three thousand votes out of a poll of almost two hundred thousand.

When Governor Wolf came into office the financial affairs of the Commonwealth, owing to the extensive scheme of public improvements, then well progressing, were in a deplorable condition. There was but one course to pursue which would maintain the credit of the State, and that was to push the works to rapid completion. This was done, and in a few years he with others had the proud satisfaction of beholding how far these needed improvements went towards developing the resources of Pennsylvania.

\* GEORGE WOLF was a native of Allen township, Northampton county, where he was born, August 12, 1777. He received a classical education. Before his majority he acted as clerk to the prothonotary, at the same time studying law under John Ross. President Jefferson appointed him postmaster at Easton, and shortly after Governor M'Kean commissioned him as Clerk of the Orphans' Court, which office he held until 1809. In 1814 he was chosen member of the Legislature, and in 1824 a representative in Congress, a position he filled for three terms. From 1829 to 1835 he occupied the executive chair of the State. General Jackson appointed him comptroller of the Treasury in 1836, and President Van Buren collector of the port of Philadelphia in 1838. He died at Philadelphia, March 11, 1840.



At this period measures were adopted which has secured for the children of the Commonwealth the system of public or free education—being the levying of a tax for a school fund. The Governor, in his annual message,

1831. December, 1831, says in reference thereto: "It is cause for ordinary measure of gratification that the Legislature, at its last session, considered this subject worthy of its deliberations, and advancing one step towards the intellectual regeneration of the State by laying a foundation for raising a fund to be employed hereafter in the righteous cause of a practical general education; and it is no less gratifying to know that public opinion is giving strong indications of having undergone a favorable change in reference to this momentous measure, and by its gradual but powerful workings is fast dispelling the grovelling fallacies, but too long prevalent, that gold is preferable to knowledge and that dollars and cents are of a higher estimation than learning. . . . I would suggest for your consideration the propriety of appointing a commission, to consist of three or more talented and intelligent individuals, known friends of a liberal and enlightened system of education, whose duty it should be to collect all the information and possess themselves of all the facts and knowledge that can be obtained from any quarter having a bearing upon or connection with the subject of education, and to arrange and embody the same in a report to the Legislature." In compliance with this wise recommendation, a bill was eventually drawn embodying what were

1834. believed to be the best features of those systems which had been most successful in other States, and at the session of 1834 passed both branches of the Legislature with a unanimity rarely equalled in legislation.

On the 14th of April, the Legislature again passed an act for submitting the question of calling a convention, which was approved at the general election by a vote of 87,570 to 73,166. At the next session of the Assembly, March 29, 1836, an act was passed directing the convention.

In 1835, at a period of unusual

1835. political excitement, Joseph Ritner,\* of Westmoreland county, was elected Governor. Owing to a defection in the ranks of the party to whom Governor Wolf gave adherence, the vote was divided between him and Henry A. Muhlenberg, resulting in his defeat.



JOSEPH RITNER.

\* JOSEPH RITNER was born in Berks county, March 25, 1780. He was brought up as a farmer, with little advantages of education. About 1802 he removed to Washington county. Was elected a member of the Legislature from that county, serving six years, and for two years was Speaker of the House of Representatives. In 1835 he was elected Governor of Pennsylvania, as the Anti-Masonic candidate. He was an earnest advocate of the common school system, so successfully inaugurated during the administration of Governor Wolf, and also a strong opponent of human slavery. In 1818 he was nominated by President Taylor director of the mint, Philadelphia, in which capacity he served for a short time. He died on the 16th day of October, 1869.



Notwithstanding the perfect unanimity which attended the passage of the school law of 1834, in many sections of the State persons were sent to the Legislature especially to secure its abolition. It was at this time that such men as Wolf, and Ritner, and Stevens, stood up in advocacy of the common school system, and which fortunately resulted in preserving the law intact, except so far as to divest it of any objectionable features. In the language of Mr. Burrowes, "When the agitating divisions of the day shall have sunk into comparative insignificance, and names be only repeated in connection with some great act of public benefaction, those of George Wolf and Joseph Ritner will be classed by Pennsylvania among the noblest on her long list; the one for his early and manly advocacy, and the other for his well-timed and determined support, of the Free School."



## CHAPTER XVII.

CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION. "BUCKSHOT WAR." ADMINISTRATIONS OF GOVERNORS PORTER, SHUNK, JOHNSTON, POLLOCK, AND PACKER. 1837-1861.



ON the 2d of May, 1837, the convention, of which John Sergeant was elected president, assembled at Harrisburg for the purpose of revising the constitution of the Commonwealth. Adjourning in July, the convention met again at Harrisburg in October, and removed in December to Philadelphia, where their labors were closed 1838. on the 22d February, 1838. The amendments were adopted by the people at the subsequent annual election. In conformity with the more important amendments, the political year commenced in January; rotation in office was secured by allowing the Governor but two terms of three years each, in any term of nine years; the senatorial term was reduced to three years; the power of the Legislature to grant banking privileges was abridged and regulated; private property could not be taken for public use without compensation previously secured; the Governor's patronage was nearly all taken away, and the election of many officers heretofore appointed by him was vested in the people or their representatives; the Governor's nomination of judicial officers was to be confirmed in the Senate with open doors; all life offices were abolished; judges of the Supreme Court were to be commissioned for fifteen years—presidents of the common pleas, and other law judges, for ten years—and associate judges for five years—if they so long believed themselves well; the right of suffrage was extended to all white freemen twenty-one years old, one year resident in the State, having within two years paid a tax assessed ten days before the election, and having resided ten days immediately preceding in the district; white freemen between the ages of twenty-one and twenty-two, citizens of the United States, having resided a year in the State and ten days in the district, could vote without paying any tax; two successive Legislatures, with the approbation of the people at a subsequent election, once in five years, could add to the Constitution whatever other amendments experience may have required.

The amendments proposed were ratified at the general election in October by a vote of 113,971 to 112,759.

At the October election (1838) David R. Porter, of Huntington, was chosen Governor, in a hotly contested political canvass over Governor Ritner. The defeated party issued an ill-timed and ill-advised address, advising their friends "to treat the election as if it had not been held."

It was determined therefore to investigate the election, and to do this the political complexion of the Legislature would be decisive. The majority of the Senate was Anti-masonic, but the control of the House of Representatives hinged upon the admission of certain members from Philadelphia whose seats were contested. The votes of one of the districts in that city were thrown out by





reason of fraud, and the Democratic delegation returned. The Anti-masonic return judges refused to sign the certificates, "and both parties made out returns each for a different delegation, and sent them to the Secretary of the Commonwealth." The Democratic returns were correct, and should have been promptly received "without question."

When the Legislature met, the Senate organized by the choice of Anti-masonic officers. In the House a fierce struggle ensued, both delegations claiming seats. The consequence was that each party went into an election for speaker, each appointing tellers. Two speakers were elected and took their seat upon the platform—William Hopkins being the choice of the Democrats, and Thomas S. Cunningham of the opposition. The Democrats believing they were in the right, left out of view the rejection of the votes of the Philadelphia district. However, when the returns from the secretary's office were opened, the certificate of the minority had been sent in, thus giving the advantage to the Anti-masons. It was then a question which of the two Houses would be



DAVID R. PORTER.\*

recognized by the Senate and the Governor.

At this stage of the proceedings, a number of men (from Philadelphia especially), collected in the lobby, and when the Senate after organization proceeded to business, interrupted it by their disgraceful and menacing conduct. The other branch of the Legislature was in like manner disturbed, and thus both Houses were compelled to disperse. The crowd having taken possession of the halls proceeded to the Court House, where impassioned harangues were indulged in and a committee of safety appointed. For several days all business was suspended, and the Governor, alarmed for his own personal safety, ordered out the militia, and fearing this might prove insufficient, called on the United States authorities for help. The latter refused, but the militia under Major-Generals Patterson and Alexander, came promptly in response. For two or three days during this

contest, the danger of a collision was imminent, but wiser counsels

1839. prevailed, and the Senate having voted to recognize the session of the House presided over by Mr. Hopkins, the so-called "Insurrection at Harrisburg" was virtually ended. This was what is commonly known as the "Buck-shot War."

---

\* DAVID RITTENHOUSE PORTER, the son of General Andrew Porter, of the Revolution, was born near Norristown, Montgomery county, October 31, 1788. He received a good classical education. When his father was appointed surveyor-general, young Porter went as his assistant. During this period he studied law, but his health becoming impaired, he removed to Huntingdon county, where he engaged in the manufacture of iron. In 1819 he was elected member of the Assembly, serving two years. In 1821 Governor Hiester appointed him prothonotary of Huntingdon county. In 1836 he was chosen State senator, and from 1838 to 1845 filled the office of Governor of the Commonwealth. He died at Harrisburg, August 6, 1867.



Governor Porter in his first annual message to the Legislature held the following views, which for far-sightedness were somewhat remarkable, inasmuch as as they were the subject of considerable ridicule by the press: "There are two subjects which are essentially necessary to the full fruition of the benefits to be derived from our main lines of canals and railroads between the eastern and western sections of the Commonwealth, as to awaken the earnest solicitude of every true Pennsylvanian. I allude to the removal of the obstructions to steamboat navigation in the Allegheny, Ohio, and Mississippi rivers from Pittsburgh to the Gulf of Mexico, and from Pittsburgh up the Allegheny as far as the same may be found practicable by the survey authorized under direction of the general government, and to the construction of a continuous railroad from the city of Pittsburgh through or near the capitals of Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois, to some point on the Mississippi river at or near St. Louis."

In 1836, the charter of the second bank of the United States expired, but the United States Bank of Pennsylvania was chartered by the State Legislature, with the same capital of \$35,000,000, and, purchasing the assets and assuming the liabilities of the old bank, continued the business under the same roof. In 1837, a reaction commenced. All the banks, with very rare exceptions, suspended specie payment throughout the Union. A resumption was attempted in 1839, but was only persevered in by the banks of New England and New York. This new suspension, however, was not generally followed by contraction of the currency in Pennsylvania until 1841, when an attempt was made to

1841. resume, but it proved fatal to the bank in question and the Girard bank, which were obliged to go into liquidation; while nearly all the banks of this State, and of all the States south and west of it continued their suspension. To relieve the distressing pressure throughout the State, consequent upon the downfall of the great banks, and the general reaction of all private speculations, and also to provide temporary means for meeting the demands upon the State treasury, the banks, still in a state of suspension, were permitted, by a law of 4th May, 1841, to issue small notes, of the denominations of \$1, \$2, and \$3, which were loaned to the State, and were redeemable in State stock whenever \$100 were presented in one parcel. The treasury of the State still being embarrassed, the State stocks became depreciated (being at one time as low as \$35 for \$100), and the small notes depending upon it, sympathized in the depreciation, but not to an equal extent. An attempt to coerce the banks to specie payments, in the spring of 1842, was unsuccessful, the State having made no adequate provision for the redemption of the small notes, called

1842. *relief notes*. A few city banks resumed; others failed; the country banks generally remained in a state of suspension, and the relief notes, at a discount of from seven to ten per cent., formed the only currency throughout the State. During this year the State made only a partial payment, in depreciated funds, of the semi-annual interest on her stocks, and her credit, hitherto sustained with difficulty, sunk with that of other delinquent States. The legislative provisions of 1842 and 1843, especially the tax law of July, 1842, tended in a great measure to replenish the exhausted treasury, and resuscitate the credit of the State.

In 1843 arose a new political organization which had for its principles reform



in the naturalization laws, the reading of the Bible in the public schools, 1843. and the election or appointment of native Americans only to office.

"American Republican Associations," as the societies were termed, were rapidly organized, especially in the large cities. "Beware of foreign influence," was the rallying cry of this ephemeral party, who were charged with religious proscription, intolerance, and persecution. A very large proportion of the inhabitants of Philadelphia were of foreign extraction, if not of foreign birth. The attempt to infuse religious prejudices into political contests always results in outrage, disorder, blood, tumult, and conflagrations. Such was the consequence in the metropolis—a series of riotous proceedings in April and May, 1844, which required at last the State authorities to check. Governor Porter

1844. issued a proclamation calling "into immediate service all the volunteer companies belonging to the first division of the Pennsylvania militia," under the command of Major-General Patterson. Over-awed for the time by the presence of this armed force, the lawless proceedings ceased, but no sooner did the military retire, than the same spirit fanned anew the flames of discord. The militia were again called out, and the city placed under martial law. A conflict arose between the populace and the troops, which resulted in the latter firing into an unarmed crowd of citizens. Several were killed and a number wounded. The excitement became intense. The Governor went

in person to the city and used every exertion to quiet the turbulent and disaffected, which resulted successfully—and thus ended the lawless proceedings which disgraced the proud escutcheon of not only the city of Philadelphia but the State of Pennsylvania.

Having served two terms, Governor Porter was succeeded in office by his former

1845. Secretary of the Commonwealth, Francis R. Shunk,\* at that time from Allegheny county. During his first term but little of interest transpired in Pennsylvania, the entire attention of the people of the State being drawn to the war with Mexico, brought about



FRANCIS R. SHUNK.

by the annexation of Texas.

Congress, on the 13th of May, 1846, announced that by the act of 1846. Mexico a state of war existed between that government and the United States, and for the purpose of prosecuting it to a speedy and successful termination, the President was authorized to employ the militia, naval, and

\* FRANCIS RAWN SHUNK was born at the Trappe, Montgomery county, August 7, 1788. He became a teacher at the age of fifteen, and in 1812 received the appointment as clerk in the Surveyor-General's office under General Andrew Porter. In 1814 he marched as a private soldier to the defence of Baltimore. In September, 1816, he was admitted to the practice of the law. He filled the position of assistant and then principal clerk of the House of Representatives for several years; next became secretary to the Board of Canal Commissioners; and in 1839 Governor Porter appointed him secretary of the Commonwealth. In 1842 he removed to Pittsburgh, engaging in his profession. In 1844 he was elected Governor of Pennsylvania, and re-elected in 1847. He died on the 30th of July, 1848.



military forces of the United States and to call for and accept the services of fifty thousand volunteers.

In pursuance of this authority the President requested six regiments of volunteer infantry to be held in readiness to serve for twelve months, or to the end of the war. Within a period of thirty days the offer of ninety companies, sufficient to fill nine regiments, were received—manifesting an old-time patriotism and zeal highly creditable to the State.

In November, 1846, orders were sent for the mustering into the service of the United States one regiment of volunteers, and on the 15th day of December the first regiment was organized at Pittsburgh—six of the companies composing it were from Philadelphia, one from Pottsville, one from Wilkes-Barre and two from Pittsburgh, under the command of Colonel Wynkoop.

At the request of the President, the second regiment of volunteer infantry was mustered into service on the 5th of January, 1847, at Pittsburgh. One of the companies composing this force was organized in Philadelphia, one in Reading, one in Mauch Chunk, one in Harrisburg, one in Danville, two in Cambria county, one in Westmoreland county, one in Fayette county, and one in Pittsburgh. Colonel Roberts was placed in command, to which succeeded Colonel Geary.

Two additional companies were subsequently mustered into service and sent to the field. One of these was from Bedford, the other from Millin county.

The record of the gallant services of these troops on the fields of Mexico it is not our province now to recall. At Vera Cruz, Cerro Gordo, Chepultepec, and the City of Mexico, their bravery and valor secured the highest commendations of their venerated chieftain.

Just as the remnant were returning from the South with their laurels, the Executive of the State, deeply lamented, passed away, having a few days previous (July 9, 1848) issued the following :

“To the people of Pennsylvania :

“It having pleased Divine Providence to deprive me of the strength necessary to the further discharge of the duties of your chief magistrate, and to lay me on a bed of sickness, from which I am admonished by my physicians and my own increasing debility, I may, in all human probability, never rise, I have resolved, upon mature reflection, under a conviction of duty, on this day, to restore to you the trust with which your suffrages have clothed me, in order that you may avail yourselves of the provision of the Constitution to choose a successor at the next general election. I therefore hereby resign the office of Governor of the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, and direct this, my resignation, to be filed in the office of the Secretary of the Commonwealth.

“In taking leave of you under circumstances so solemn, accept my gratitude for the confidence you have reposed in me. My prayer is that peace, virtue, intelligence, and religion may pervade all your borders—that the free institutions you have inherited from your ancestors may remain unimpaired till the latest posterity—that the same kind Providence, which has already so signally blessed you, may conduct you to a still higher state of individual and social happiness—and when the world shall close upon you, as I feel it is soon about to close upon





me, that you may enjoy the consolations of the Christian's faith, and be gathered, without a wanderer lost, into the fold of the Great Shepherd above."

Governor Shunk was succeeded in office by William F. Johnston,\* then Speaker of the Senate, according to the provisions of the Constitution. The vacancy having occurred three months before the time fixed for the annual election, the acting Governor therefore issued the necessary writs for the election of a chief magistrate, which resulted in the choice of Mr. Johnston.



WILLIAM F. JOHNSTON.

Owing to a number of illegal seizures of fugitives from labor, on the 3d of March previous the Assembly passed an act to prohibit the exercise of certain powers heretofore employed by the judicial officers of the State, relative to the rendition of fugitive slaves, forbidding the use of the jails of the Commonwealth for the detention of such persons, and also repealing so much of the act of 1780 as authorized the masters or owners of slaves to bring and retain such within the State for a period of six months. This act was considered in the Southern States as being inimical to the faithful observance of Pennsylvania's Federal obligations. Fidelity in the discharge of every constitutional duty has

distinguished our government and people, and whatever may have been the mischievous opinions then propagated beyond our borders, they were conceived in error of our true history.

Attention having been called to the neglected and suffering condition of the insane poor of the State in 1844, the Legislature, at the subsequent session, provided for the establishment of an asylum for this unfortunate class, to be located within ten miles of the seat of government. The citizens of Harrisburg, with the aid of a liberal appropriation by Dauphin county, purchased a farm adjoining that city, and in 1848 the commissioners appointed by the State began the erection of the first building erected by the Commonwealth for the reception of the insane. To the individual exertions of an estimable and philanthropic lady, Miss Dorothea L. Dix, are we indebted for the active interest taken by the Commonwealth in these noble charities.

\* WILLIAM FREAME JOHNSTON was born at Greensburg, Westmoreland county, November 29, 1808. With a limited academic education, he studied law and was admitted to the bar in May, 1829. Removing to Armstrong county, he was appointed District Attorney, a position he held until 1832. He represented Armstrong county for several years in the Lower House of the Assembly, and in 1847 was elected a member of the Senate from the district composed of the counties of Armstrong, Indiana, Cambria, and Clearfield. At the close of the session of 1848, he was elected Speaker of the Senate for the interim, and on the resignation of Governor Shunk on July 9th following, assumed the gubernatorial functions according to the provisions of the Constitution. At the general election in October, he was elected for the full term, serving until January 20, 1852. On retiring from office, Governor Johnston entered into active business life. He was appointed by President Johnson collector of the port of Philadelphia, but owing to the hostility of the United States Senate to most of that President's appointments, he was not confirmed. He died at Pittsburgh, October 23, 1872.



It was not until this year that the common school system was adopted throughout the entire State—and in the educational epoch of our history, stands conspicuous. From this time onward rapid strides were made—improvements in the system and defects remedied.

In 1849 considerable excitement existed in Pittsburgh and the western part of the State, occasioned by the erection of a bridge over the Ohio river **1849.** at Wheeling, owing to the obstruction to navigation of that highway in times of high water. The Legislature was appealed to, eventually Congress, and finally the Supreme Court of the United States. Measures, however, were adopted which removed all objections.

During Governor Johnston's administration, the attention of the Legislature was called to the records of the Provincial and State governments, which in their then condition were inaccessible, and that body authorized their publication. Twenty-nine volumes of these documents, including a general index, edited by Samuel Hazard, were printed. They form almost complete details of the transactions of government from 1682 to 1790—invaluable in their importance to a full comprehension of the early history of Pennsylvania.

The passage by Congress of the fugitive slave law was a matter of **1850.** vast importance to the State. Situate on the borders of the slave States of Delaware, Maryland, and Virginia, wrongs were to be feared and disorders apprehended. For years previous the southern slave felt free whenever he touched the soil of the Land of Penn, but the enactment of the compromise measures of 1850 obliged him to flee beyond the confines of the States. The year following a serious riot occurred at Christiana, Lancaster county; and in other localities the arrest of fugitives led to disturbances of the peace and bloodshed.

William Bigler,\* of Clearfield, assumed the functions of the chief magistracy January 20, 1852. During Governor Bigler's term of office several very important measures were adopted by the Legislature, the principal of which were the establishing the office of county superintendent of



WILLIAM BIGLER.

\* WILLIAM BIGLER was born at Shermansburg, January 1, 1814. He received a fair school education. Learned printing with his brother from 1830 to 1833, at Bellefonte. In the latter year he established the Clearfield *Democrat*, which he successfully carried on for a number of years. He subsequently disposed of his paper and entered into mercantile pursuits. In 1841 he was elected to the State Senate, chosen Speaker in the spring of 1843, and at the opening of the session of 1844. In October following, he was re-elected to the Senate. In 1849 appointed a revenue commissioner. In 1851, elected Governor of the State, serving for three years. In January, 1855, he was elected for the term of six years to the United States Senate. Governor Bigler was a prominent delegate of the Constitutional Convention of 1873, and to his labors are we indebted for a number of the beneficial features of this instrument. He was one of the earliest champions of the Centennial Exposition of 1876, and represented Pennsylvania in the Board of Finance, and his efforts ministered greatly to its successful issue. His residence is at Clearfield.



common schools, and the founding of the Pennsylvania training school for feeble-minded children.

The completion of the Pennsylvania railroad from Harrisburg to Pittsburgh, in February, 1854, added a powerful impulse to the development of the resources of the State, and perfected that grand scheme by which almost a century previous the inhabitants of the metropolis sought to secure the trade of the West. With the completion of this important route, lateral roads were built, until at the present time a map of that thoroughfare presents the appearance of a gigantic tree with innumerable branches. The consolidation act of the 2d of February, by which the county of Philadelphia was blotted out of existence, merging it into the city, was a notable event of the year



JAMES POLLOCK.

The North Branch canal, the last of the system of internal improvements undertaken by the Commonwealth, was completed. Owing to some mismanagement the work had been discontinued for ten or twelve years. It opened an outlet to the inexhaustible mines of coal with which that section abounds.

At the October election, 1855, James Pollock,\* of Northumberland, was chosen Governor by a large majority. He was nominated and supported by the Know-Nothing party, an organization closely allied to the Native American Association. At this period the subject of the introduction of slavery into the Territories was warmly agitated throughout the length and breadth of the State.

By the act of the 16th of May, the main line of the public works of the State was directed to be sold. On the 25th of June following Governor Pollock caused the same to be done, and on the 31st day of July the whole line of the public works between Philadelphia and Pittsburgh was transferred to the Pennsylvania Railroad Company, at the price of seven millions five hundred thousand dollars. Following this sale, measures were taken for the disposal of the remaining divisions of the public improvements. They had failed to be a source of revenue to the State, and the application of the proceeds to the payment of the debt of the Commonwealth soon led to the removal of taxation by the State.

---

\*JAMES POLLOCK was born at Milton, Northumberland county, September 11, 1810. His early education was committed to the care of Rev. David Kirkpatrick, who had charge of the classical academy at Milton. He graduated at Princeton, September, 1831; in 1835 he received the degree of A.M. in course, and in 1855 the honorary degree of LL.D. was conferred upon him. Jefferson College conferred a like honor in 1857. In November, 1833, he was admitted to the bar; in 1835 appointed District Attorney for Northumberland county; from 1843 to 1849 served as member of Congress; in 1850 appointed president judge of the eighth judicial district, and in 1854 Governor of Pennsylvania. In the so-called compromise convention assembled at Washington in February and March, 1861, Governor Pollock represented Pennsylvania. From 1861 to 1866 he filled the office of Director of the United States Mint under the appointment of President Lincoln. In 1869 he was reinstated by President Grant to the same position, which office he now [1876] holds.



In the summer of this year [1857], a serious financial revulsion occurred, resulting in the suspension of specie payments by the banks of Pennsylvania and other States of the Union, followed by the failure of many long-established commercial houses, leading to the destruction of confidence, and to the general embarrassment and depression of trade, and threatening to affect disastrously the credit of the Commonwealth and the great industrial interests of the people.

In order to release the banks from the penalties and forfeitures incurred by a suspension of specie payments, Governor Pollock convened the Legislature in "extraordinary session" on the 6th of October. On the 13th an act was passed "providing for the resumption of specie payments by the banks and for the relief of debtors," to go into immediate effect. This law had the desired result, and public confidence being restored, the different branches of industry revived, and the community saved from bankruptcy and ruin.

When William F. Packer,\* of Lycoming county, assumed the office of Governor on the 19th of January, 1858, the great question which occupied the minds of the people not only of the State but of the Union was the admission of Kansas among the great family of States.

Although by the act of 1857, separating the office of superintendent of public schools from that of secretary of the Commonwealth, provision was made for the establishment of normal schools, it was not until 1859 that any such was recognized. The first was that located at Millersville, Lancaster county.

In 1859 the celebrated raid into Virginia by John Brown occurred, by which the public property of the United States at Harper's Ferry was seized, and the lives of citizens of that State sacrificed by that band of desperadoes, who, in their mad zeal, attempted to excite the slave population to insurrection. The subsequent trial and conviction of John Brown by no means quenched the flames of disunion which the Missouri compromise of 1820, the fugitive slave law of 1850, and the Kansas-Nebraska imbroglio had united in kindling. The election of President Lincoln in 1860 causelessly precipitated the measures which led to civil war. On the 20th of December, South Carolina passed by a unanimous vote the



WILLIAM F. PACKER.

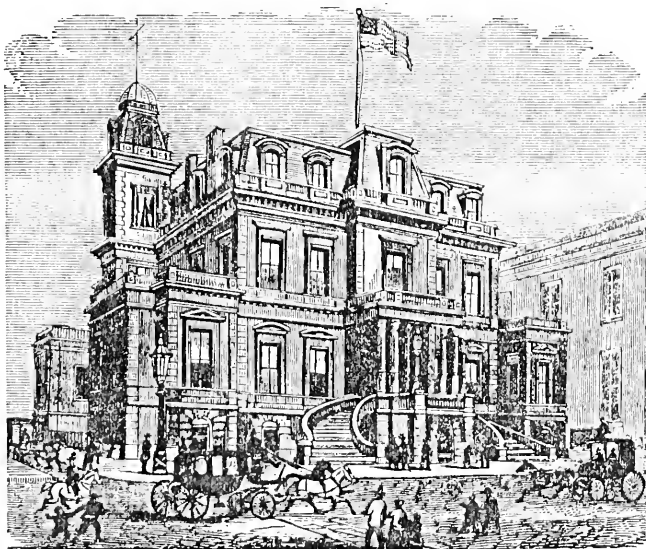
\* WILLIAM FISHER PACKER was born in Howard township, Centre county, April 2, 1807. At the age of thirteen he began to learn the profession of printing in the office of Samuel J. Packer, at Sunbury. Mr. Packer's newspaper being discontinued, William F. returned to Centre county, completing his apprenticeship in the office of the *Patriot*. In 1825, he was appointed clerk in the register's office of Lycoming county. In 1827 he began the study of law, but purchasing an interest shortly after in the *Gazette*, he continued his editorial career with that paper until 1836, when he assisted in establishing the *Keystone* at Harrisburg, remaining connected therewith until 1841. In February, 1839, he was appointed a member of the Board of Canal Commissioners; in 1842, Auditor-General of the Commonwealth; in 1847, and 1848, elected member of the Legislature, being chosen the latter year Speaker of the House; in 1849, elected to the Senate; and in 1857, Governor of the Commonwealth. He died in the city of Williamsport, September 27, 1870.





ordinance of secession. Governor Packer, in his last message to the Legislature, expressed in plain terms the fearful position in which not only South Carolina, but the other States preparing for similar action, had placed themselves. "The advocates of secession," he said, "claim that the Union is merely a compact between the several States composing it, and that any one of the States which may feel aggrieved may, at its pleasure, declare that it will no longer be a party to the compact. This doctrine is clearly erroneous. The Constitution of the United States is something more than a mere compact, or agreement, between the several States. As applied to nations, a compact is but a treaty which may be abrogated at the will of either party; responsible to the other party for its bad faith in refusing to keep its engagement, but entirely irresponsible to any superior tribunal. A government, on the other hand, whether created by consent or conquest, when clothed with legislative, judicial, and executive powers, is necessarily in its nature sovereign; and from this sovereignty flows its right to enforce its laws and decrees by civil process, and in an emergency, by its military and naval power. The government owes protection to the people, and they in turn owe it their allegiance. Its laws cannot be violated by its citizens without accountability to the tribunals created to enforce its decrees and to punish offenders. Organized resistance to it is rebellion."

On the 24th of December, on the attempt to ship ordnance from the arsenal at Pittsburgh for the purpose of supplying southern ports, the citizens of that city rightly refused permission, and it was prevented.



UNION LEAGUE HOUSE, PHILADELPHIA.



## CHAPTER XVIII.

THE CIVIL WAR. ESTABLISHMENT OF CAMP CURTIN. PENNSYLVANIA TROOPS THE FIRST TO REACH THE NATIONAL CAPITAL. THE BATTLE FLAGS OF THE STATE. PENNSYLVANIA INVADED BY THE CONFEDERATES. CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION OF 1873. ADMINISTRATIONS OF GOVERNORS CURTIN, GEARY, AND HARTMAN. 1861-1876.



UTTERINGS of the coming storm were approaching nearer and nearer, and the year opened up gloomily. In the midst of this portentous overshadowing, on the 15th of January, Andrew G. Curtin,\* of Centre county, took charge of the helm of State. In his inaugural he took occasion "to declare that Pennsylvania would, under any circumstances, render a full and determined support of the free institutions of the Union," . . . and pledged himself to stand between the Constitution and all encroachments instigated by hatred, ambition, fanaticism, and folly.

On the 17th of February, the House passed a series of resolutions approbatory of Major Anderson, and Governor Hicks of Maryland, and pledging to that State the fellowship and support of Pennsylvania. The month previous the House had passed resolutions taking high ground in favor of sustaining the Constitution and the Union. In Philadelphia and throughout the State, meetings were held for the avowal of the same sentiments at that time. It was by this means that the elements of opposition to treason were called forth and put in motion.



ANDREW G. CURTIN.

Threatening as was the danger, no one anticipated that it would break forth so suddenly, nor that it would grow to such fearful proportions as it in a brief time assumed. The Governor was aware of the solid patriotism of the citizens of the State, in the stubborn will, the ability, and resources of the Commonwealth. It is true, when the leaders of the South, who had long secretly been preparing to dissolve the Union, unmasked their design by the attack on Fort Sumter, in Charleston harbor, South Carolina, on the 12th day of April, 1861, no State in the Union was less prepared, so far as munitions of war were

\* ANDREW GREGG CURTIN was born at Bellefonte, Centre county, April 28, 1817. Admitted to the bar in 1839, and practiced at Bellefonte. From 1855 to 1858 he was Secretary of the Commonwealth and superintendent of common schools. In 1860 he was elected Governor of Pennsylvania. When the war for the Union broke out he was one of the most zealous of the war governors of the Northern States. He was re-elected in 1863. Active in the election of General Grant to the Presidency, he was honored with the appointment of Minister to Russia in 1869. He returned in 1872, and was elected a member of the convention which framed the present Constitution of the State. He resides at Bellefonte.



concerned, to take part in an armed conflict, than Pennsylvania at that time. Her volunteer soldiery system had fallen into decay. There were less volunteer military companies in the State up to 1860 than ever before were on the rolls of the Adjutant-General's office. While the militia system had fallen into contempt, by reason of the burlesques to which it was made a subject, the distaste for that service had grown with the long period of peace which had surrounded the country; and this, added to the fact that the large Quaker and Menonite portion of the population, the strong Methodist and Presbyterian elements which exist in all parts of the Commonwealth, and which, as a rule, held the mere trade in war in abhorrence, pervaded the State, so barren in military material, that when the first tokens of the impending storm were seen by the movement of secession, the people of Pennsylvania looked on with seeming indifference, lulling themselves in the false security which their hopes that there would be no collision, inspired. But when that first overt act was committed, and the news was flashed over the North, it created no fiercer feeling of resentment elsewhere than it did throughout the Keystone State.

On the 15th day of the same month, the President of the United States issued a proclamation calling out seventy-five thousand militia from the different States to serve for three months, in the war thus precipitated, and a requisition at once made on this State for fourteen regiments. The alacrity with which these regiments were furnished, demonstrated not so much the military ardor, as it did the patriotic spirit of the people. As before remarked, the citizens had no clear idea of the horrors of war—the shedding of human blood and the sacrifice of human life was a thing fearfully horrible to them—which they did not fully realize were to be the enormous effects of the attack on Fort Sumter. When they responded to the call for troops, they rushed forward believing their firm appearance would over-awe the insurgents, and a single bloodless campaign end the trouble between the South and the National government. Hence, instead of fourteen regiments, sufficient rushed to Harrisburg to organize twenty-five. But there were two men—Pennsylvanians—who comprehended the situation from the outset. General Simon Cameron, Secretary of War under President Lincoln, advised the organization of the most powerful army the North could raise, so that at one blow armed Rebellion might be effectually crushed. Governor Curtin took advantage of the excess of men offering their services, and began at once, after the complement of the three months' men had been furnished to the Federal government, to organize the famous Reserve corps. He discovered the approaching tornado in the distance, and thus commenced to prepare for its fury, the Reserves being the only troops well-organized and disciplined in the North ready for the service of the Union at the moment of the disaster of the first battle of Bull Run.

On the 18th of April, Camp Curtin was regularly and formally established in the north-western suburbs of Harrisburg. It was the first regular camp formed north of the Susquehanna in the loyal States, and before the end of the month of April, twenty-five regiments were sent to the field from its precincts. On the 30th of April, Governor Curtin called an extra session of the Legislature, for the purpose of providing means for the better establishment of the State Militia, for the passage of financial measures, the assumption of a military debt



then already created, and to organize an army for State defence. The Legislature, when convened, acted with energetic promptness. On the 15th day of May, following, an act was passed providing for the organization of the Reserve corps, to consist of thirteen regiments of infantry, one regiment of cavalry, and one of artillery.

The first military organization which, according to documentary evidence, began the active preparations for defence, was the Ringgold light artillery, of Reading. Early in January, 1861, Captain McKnight believed he foresaw the signs of impending danger, and he therefore counselled with his men, who agreed to devote a certain portion of each day to drill and discipline.

On the morning of the 12th of April Governor Curtin received the following dispatch from Philadelphia :

“The war is commenced. The batteries began firing at four o'clock this morning. Major Anderson replied, and a brisk cannonading commenced. This is reliable, and has just come by associated press. The vessels were not in sight.”

This intelligence referred to the attack on Fort Sumter, and was at once flashed from the Capital, by orders of the Governor, to all parts of the State. The news was interpreted as the precipitation of a great rebellion. Three days later, the President issued his proclamation calling out the militia. The Secretary of War telegraphed to Governor Curtin to send two regiments of the quota of fourteen from this State within two days. Washington city was reported as in imminent peril, being entirely unprotected and at the mercy of the assailants then in arms in Virginia. The utter lack of military organizations outside the cities of the State was remarkable at this period—so remarkable, indeed, as to have no doubt been understood and acted upon by the insurgent leaders, because the same condition existed in all the Middle and Eastern States, where a continuous period of peace had almost completely deadened military ardor. Aside from Philadelphia and Pittsburgh, there were few military companies in the State fully armed and equipped, and of these not one-fourth contained the minimum number (thirty-two) of men. But, as the appeal for men was disseminated through the towns and villages of the interior, the officers of whatever military organizations which did exist promptly rallied their men and tendered their services to the Governor. The Ringgold light artillery, Captain McKnight, of Reading; the Logan guards, Captain Selheimer, of Lewistown; the Washington artillery, Captain Wren, and the National light infantry, Captain McDonald, of Pottsville; and the Allen rifles, Captain Yeager, of Allentown, were the first, or among the very first to offer their services in an armed and disciplined condition for immediate action. When the Ringgold light artillery, numbering one hundred and two men, reached Harrisburg, and word was sent to the Secretary of War of the presence of so strong a company at the State Capital, he at once telegraphed for its immediate presence in Washington, but for prudential reasons the order was suppressed.

On the morning of the 18th of April, a detachment of regulars of company “H,” 4th artillery, numbering fifty men, arrived in Harrisburg from the West, in command of Lieutenant Pemberton. This young officer was of Northern extraction, but his Southern sympathies led him into the Rebel service, where he





rose to the grade of Lieutenant-General, and had the felicitous favor of being captured, with his entire command, at Vicksburg. The five volunteer companies having been mustered into the United States service by Captain Seneca G. Simmons, of the 7th United States infantry, the regulars and the volunteers referred to departed on the same train, the first for Fort McHenry, and the latter for Washington. The volunteers marched two miles through the city of Baltimore, then filled with Southern sympathizers, ready to obstruct their passage through the city. On leaving the cars at Bolton to march to Camden station, a battalion was formed in this order: Pemberton's regulars on the right, Selheimer's Logan guards next, and Yeager, Wren, and McDonald following—McKnight, with the Ringgold artillery, bringing up the rear. As the column was formed at Bolton station, the Baltimore police appeared in large force, headed by Marshal Kane, followed by a mob, who at once attacked the volunteers, and were countenanced by the police sent to give them a safe conduct through the city. The men were ordered to maintain their discipline, and to make no reply to the ribald slang of the ruffians who menaced them. When in the centre of the city, the regulars under Pemberton filed off toward Fort McHenry, leaving the volunteers to pursue their march to Camden station. This seemed to be a signal to the mob, and at once the air was filled with flying missiles, while every species of oath and imprecation was flung at the volunteers as they moved onward. Not a man made a reply—steadily, silently, sternly, and undauntedly the five companies moved over the rough, cobble-stone streets. At every step the mob increased—almost every house contributed to swell the stream of fury—women screamed encouragement from latticed blinds—but with unblanched faces and a steady step the brave men who hurried to the rescue of the National Capital never for a moment wavered, marching like veterans, as the mob gave way before and around them, they forced their passage to the depot. The mob believed that a portion of the Logan guards carried loaded guns, because their half-cocked pieces displayed percussion caps, but in reality, there was not a load of powder or ball in the entire five companies; nevertheless the feint of displaying the caps, which was done partly as a jest on leaving the cars at Bolton station, saved the men from the bloody attack which was hurled the next day at a force of Massachusetts troops passing through the city. As it was, when the troops were boarding the cars at Camden station, the infuriated rabble who had dogged their steps hurled bricks, stones, clubs, and mud into their disorganized ranks, without, fortunately, injuring a man. Attempts were made to throw the cars from the track, to detach the locomotive, and to break the machinery—all of which failed, the train leaving the depot amid the demoniac yells of the disappointed ruffians whose thirst for blood was now aroused to a savage fury. The solicitude of Governor Curtin for the safe transit of these troops through Baltimore was intense. He remained at the telegraph office in Harrisburg receiving dispatches depicting the scene in the streets of Baltimore, and when at length it was announced that the train had passed out of the reach of their assailants, with the men on board, he emphatically declared that not another Pennsylvania soldier should march through Baltimore unarmed, but fully prepared to defend himself.

At seven o'clock, p.m., of the 18th, these five companies reached Washington,



and were at once properly quartered. They were the first troops which arrived from any State to defend the National Capital, constituting the advance of that mighty host which speedily followed from the North, the West, and the East, and which eventually defeated the slaveholder's rebellion for the destruction of the fairest heritage in the shape of a government man ever bequeathed to his brother. The following resolution was passed by Congress in recognition of the gallantry displayed by the soldiers from Pennsylvania who passed through Baltimore on the ever-memorable 18th of April:

“37TH CONGRESS, U. S., JULY 22, 1861.

“*Resolved*, That the thanks of this House are due, and are hereby tendered, to the five hundred and thirty soldiers from Pennsylvania, who passed through the mob at Baltimore and reached Washington on the 18th of April last, for the defence of the National Capital.

“GALUSHA A. GROW,

“*Speaker of the House of Representatives.*”

On the day when the first troops contributed by the State for the defence of the National Capital were pursuing their march through the streets of Baltimore, other volunteers were arriving in Harrisburg—the railroad depots were overflowing with recruits—the public grounds around the State Capitol were covered with improvised shelter for troops—the Capitol was occupied by them, and it was at once apparent that a great camp must be established, where raw recruits could be received, drilled, equipped, and armed for active service. Accordingly, what was known as the Dauphin County Agricultural Society's park, an eligible plot of ground in the northwestern portion of the suburbs of Harrisburg, was taken possession of by the authorities. It lay within two hundred feet of the Pennsylvania railroad on the east, and a thousand on the west from the Susquehanna river, and was, perhaps, the finest site for a great camp of instruction and depot for military stores in the Commonwealth. Camp Curtin was founded on the 18th of April, 1861, and before the end of that month twenty-five regiments were formed there and sent to the field. It can be inferred from this, the energy and enthusiasm with which the authorities and people of Pennsylvania entered into the conflict for the defence of the Union after the assault on Fort Sumter had fully aroused their patriotic resentment.

Captain G. A. C. Seiler, of Harrisburg, organized the first military operations at Camp Curtin; and under the immediate direction of the State authorities before the regular recruiting and instruction of men at that post, the Secretary of the Commonwealth, Eli Slifer, had, previously to the establishment of the camp on the 18th of April, assumed the discharge of certain military functions, such as replying to telegraph offers of troops, affording information as to quotas of companies; but after the regular opening of Camp Curtin, Captain Seiler was formally put in command, which position he held by commission from the 28th of May to the 31st of July, 1861, during which he displayed great energy, but by exposure and over-work contracted a disease, from which he died. Having relinquished the command of the camp on the date named, he was succeeded by Colonel John H. Taggart, 12th Regiment, P. V.

Early on the 21st of April, there arrived in Harrisburg troops in companies from Ohio, consisting of men from Cincinnati, Cleveland, Urbana, Mansfield,



Dayton, Zanesville, and Steubenville, who were quartered at Camp Curtin. The intelligence had reached Harrisburg of the burning of the bridges on the Northern Central railroad, and a body of two thousand men were at once thrown forward from Camp Curtin, followed by three hundred regulars from Carlisle barracks with a battery of flying artillery. When these troops reached Cockeyville, Md., it produced the most intense excitement along the Northern Central railroad leading into Baltimore, while in that city the sympathizers with the rebellion were thrown into convulsive rage at the threat which this advance of troops seemed to imply, of an attack on that place. It was believed there that the troops in Fort McHenry were awaiting the arrival of the troops from Cockeyville to shell Baltimore. In the meantime the few companies enlisted at the former locality were subjected to almost equal anxiety, as they were there without tents or proper commissary supplies, expecting hourly to be overwhelmed by the advance of a powerful force from disloyal Baltimore.

On the 27th of April, at least three thousand men had arrived at Camp Curtin; two thousand were encamped at Lancaster, and three thousand were in readiness to march from Philadelphia.

The twenty-five regiments which were fitted out at Camp Curtin, consisting of 20,175 men, were clothed, armed, equipped, subsisted, and transported by the State, in consequence of the inability of the Federal Government to perform this service. At the completion of the three months enlistment, over ten thousand of these men were returned to Camp Curtin. Their condition while in service on the Southern border of the State, in Maryland and Virginia, was not the best, as they were compelled, to a great extent, to do without cooked rations or tents, and much complaint was uttered in consequence.

Colonel Thomas Welsh, of Lancaster county, assumed the command of Camp Curtin in July, 1861, which he held until the complete organization of his regiment, the 45th, and its departure for the scene of war, on the 21st of October following, having received its flag from Governor Curtin on the day previous. Until Colonel Welsh took command of the Camp, its organization and discipline were not as rigid as strict military rule demanded. This was partly owing to the peculiar condition of the levies which daily arrived. The three months' men had been principally organized under the militia laws of the State, and from the troops which had acquired that short experience in actual service, the nine months' men were recruited—after which came the requisition for the three-years' men, and with it a sterner element in both camp and field, which brought up the standard of the troops sent to the front to the very highest veteran efficiency. Colonel Welsh gave to the discipline of Camp Curtin its first strict military rule, in the enforcement of which he was ably seconded by Adjutant W. W. Jennings, of Harrisburg, who served from the opening of the Camp in that position until he was elected Colonel of the 127th regiment.

During the year 1862, when the organization of the three years, **1862.** regiments began, drafts were ordered by the Federal Government, and as the Federal authorities apportioned the quotas to the States, the State authorities in turn apportioned quotas to the several counties, where they were sub-divided among towns and townships. To fill up these quotas and thus



escape the draft, called into existence a business in bounties, by which hundreds of thousands of dollars were spent if not squandered. Agents from the several counties of the State were stationed at Camp Curtin for the purpose of offering bounties to recruits, a business which was converted into a rivalry out of which official fraud and personal corruption grew to frightful proportions, filling up companies frequently with men who were physically and mentally incompetent, and in many cases with others who shirked their duty when in the field, or sought to escape before they reached the front. Nevertheless, Pennsylvania met the demands made upon her by the War Department with the utmost alacrity, and the best material she could command.

Of the quota of the State, under the call of July 7, 1862, forty-three regiments of volunteers, aggregating 40,383 men, were put into service, and under the draft, ordered August 4th of the same year, fifteen regiments, containing an aggregate force of 15,000 men, organized and sent forward. During the same period nine independent batteries of artillery were organized in the State, with an aggregate strength of 1,358 officers and men. The speed with which Governor Curtin pushed forward these men elicited the warmest acknowledgments of the War Department, through which President Lincoln forwarded his thanks to the people of Pennsylvania for the promptness with which they responded to the call for troops. By the liberal offer of bounties the draft was rendered unnecessary in nearly all parts of the State, each county quota being in most part filled up by the nine months' men, who, on reaching Camp Curtin, in most instances re-enlisted for the war.

In the month of September, after the second disaster at Bull Run, it became evident that the enemy had adopted an aggressive policy, and was about to invade the Northern States through Maryland and the southern border of Pennsylvania. At the period of this crisis, Governor Curtin, with his usual alacrity and foresight, solicited and received authority from the President to issue a proclamation calling into immediate service fifty thousand of the freemen of the State. Under this call twenty-five regiments and four companies of infantry, fourteen unattached companies of cavalry, and four batteries of artillery were immediately organized and sent to the border, the greater portion advancing beyond the State line into Maryland. General John F. Reynolds, at that time commanding the Pennsylvania Reserve corps, was put temporarily in charge of these troops, and when the crisis ended which made their appearance in the field necessary, Governor Curtin was thanked by Major-General McClellan for his zeal in thus covering the southern border of his State, which materially aided in frustrating the Southern incursion into the heart of Pennsylvania, and probably further North.

Early in June, 1863, before the dispersing of General Milroy's force at Winchester, the general government took the alarm, and an order from  
1863. the War department constituted two new military departments, one of them being that of the Susquehanna, under the the command of General Couch, the other that of the Monongahela, under the command of General W. T. H. Brooks. On the 12th of June, Governor Curtin called out the entire militia of the State. Prompt was the response, and large numbers of troops came at once to Harrisburg, offering their services for the *emergency*. Unfortu-





nately, the general government refused to accept on that first call any troops for less than *six months*. The men, who had suddenly left their homes, were unprepared for an absence of six months, and would not be mustered into the service of the United States. In this dilemma, Governor Curtin was appealed to, that he should receive the offering troops on account of the State, as we had a right to defend our territory without the consent of the general government—to but to prevent a conflict of authority, the Governor would not consent thereto.

It was on the 26th of June that the second proclamation of Governor Curtin was issued, limiting the service to ninety days, or for the emergency. However, in the interim between the 17th and the 26th of the month eight regiments and one battalion had been mustered in for the emergency. During this delay the battle of Gettysburg had occurred, and the rebel force retreated south of the Potomac ere the entire number of troops called by the State were in motion. This circumstance has given rise to the charge of lack of patriotism by Mr. Greeley and other historians of the war. It is stated by the former that “the uniformed and disciplined regiments of New York city generally and promptly went to the front, but that the number of Pennsylvanians, Marylanders, and West Virginians, who set their faces resolutely towards the enemy in this crisis bore but a slim proportion to that of their brethren, who seemed just then to have urgent business east of the Susquehanna or west of the Ohio;” in other words, that the country was profoundly disheartened, while the army had already absorbed what was bravest and most patriotic of its militia—and he puts down the number of Pennsylvanians who finally responded to the calls at twenty-five thousand, with the force of New York at fifteen thousand, and New Jersey at three thousand.

The New York and New Jersey troops were not required to be mustered into the United States service for six months, but were received as they came, for the emergency. This should be properly understood. There was no lack of patriotism on the part of the people of Pennsylvania on this occasion, but the paucity of State troops was attributable, in a great degree, to the action of the State and National authorities. That the people of the State would have responded to a proper call before the battle of Gettysburg is evident from the alacrity which was exhibited on the occasion of that made by the Governor in September, 1862.

It has been stated that the object of the Secretary of War in calling for troops for so long a period as six months was in a great measure to have a large force ready to guard the line of the Potomac when necessary. Had a longer time been afforded for that purpose, troops might have been obtained, but it was unwise to make a call for the period noted, when the invasion of the State was imminent.

The first evidence the inhabitants of the Cumberland Valley had of the rebel approach, was the flight of Milroy's wagon train, which was ordered, as alleged, to secure itself on the east side of the Susquehanna. The horse and mule teams, laden with army supplies, thronged the main road from the State line, and afforded substantial evidence of Milroy's overthrow. Soon followed trains of farm wagons not only from Maryland, but from York, Franklin, and Cumberland counties, too numerous to find accommodations at Harrisburg or in



ts vicinity, but which pushed on to Lebanon, Berks, and Lancaster counties. Many of these trains were crowded with produce and house furniture, most of them leaving behind the women and children. Loose cattle, horses, colts, and calves abounded. Pedestrians also pushed along with the caravan, some carrying what they well could. So precipitate was the flight that many amusing incidents occurred, of which it is not our province at the present to rehearse.

While the female portion of the rural districts remained behind with their household goods to guard, in the towns along the railroads there prevailed a general alarm, and those who could left for places of security. As far east as Harrisburg was this especially the case; railroad cars were crowded, and other vehicles were called into requisition. But the commotion was not confined to them. Banks were cleared of their money and valuable papers, numerous stores of their goods, and at the Capitol of the State, the important and valuable papers of the departments, the books of the State Library, as also the different county records, were removed to places of safety.

In the midst of the consternation which prevailed, the men of the State who were not with the militia were firm, and the able-bodied went to work upon the fortifications on the west of the Susquehanna, opposite Harrisburg, subsequently named Fort Washington, with the hope of some, and the expectation of others, that the Confederate force, if it came at all, would come directly down the valley. Troops were likewise stationed at the different fording places of the river, and breastworks thrown up.

The New York and New Jersey troops did not by any means comprise all the effective militia force in the valley. They were of some use in swelling the number of our forces at Fort Washington, and it is now reported that Colonel Jenkins, who with his command of eight hundred men, spent a night at Mechanicsburg, approached Harrisburg as far as Oyster's Point, where a slight artillery skirmish ensued, but that officer ascended a hill in the valley from which he had a view of the defences opposite the Capital, and upon inquiry was informed that a large Union force, with considerable artillery, occupied that city. However, the Army of the Potomac was approaching, the Confederate troops sent for, and on Monday, June 29, their forces at Carlisle and York fell back to concentrate.

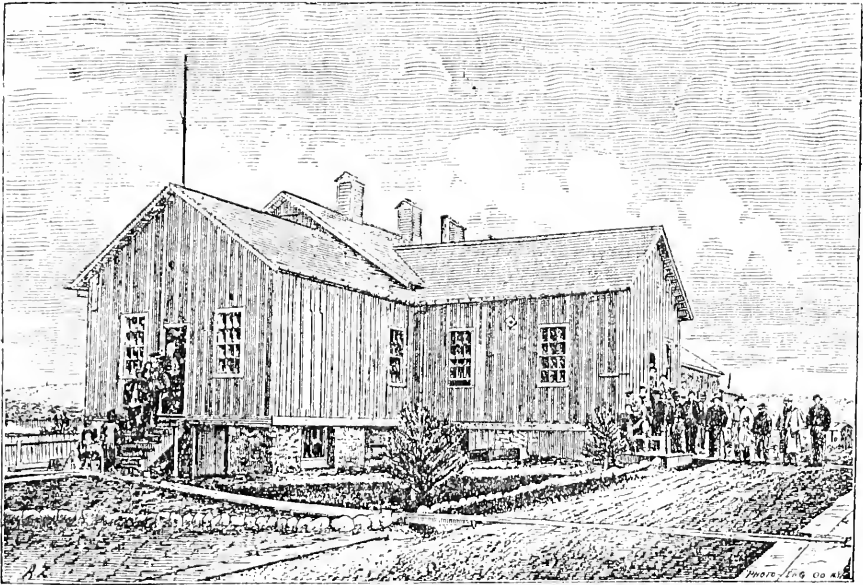
Of the subsequent events—the three days' fight at Gettysburg—that decisive battle which struck the death-knell of the Southern Confederacy, we shall describe in full in subsequent pages.

In July 1864, the Confederate forces again crossed the Potomac, threatening the southern border of the State, and marched towards the National Capital. Under the pressing demands of the Federal authorities, all the organized troops in Pennsylvania were immediately sent forward. The Southern army was defeated and driven back. A column of three thousand men had however crossed into the State, and on the 30th of July, burned the town of Chambersburg. The full details of this transaction are given elsewhere. Although the people of all the Southern border suffered much from the incursions of the enemy, Chambersburg was the only town entirely destroyed within the limits of any loyal State. The citizens of that place were suddenly reduced to



poverty, and for a time, were sustained by the active benevolence of the people of other portions of the Commonwealth. The burning of Chambersburg was an act of ruthless vandalism unnecessary at the time as a means of promoting the protection or the success of the invader, and perpetrated merely as a show of bravado, in defiance of all honorable warfare and the sacred rights of humanity. The inhabitants offered no resistance at the time to the advance—there was no Union force intrenched in the town, and therefore, no necessity to fire it as a means of dislodging an enemy.

The history of all the campaigns in which the troops of Pennsylvania took



GENERAL HOSPITAL, CAMP CURTIN, 1863.

[From a Photograph by D. C. Burdette.]

part is also the history of Camp Curtin. It was on that classic ground that these troops were in great part recruited, mustered-in, and mustered-out.

After the mustering in of the nine months' men, the Federal authorities took charge of Camp Curtin, the affairs of which were thenceforth, to the end of the war, entirely conducted through the War Department. The control of all troops after they were mustered into the United States service passed out of the hands of the State, yet the Governor of the Commonwealth did not cease vigilantly to care for their welfare, to look after their comfort in the field, and their succor when sick or wounded. Camp Curtin, besides being a vast depot of military stores and rendezvous for troops passing to and from the army in the field, was also a hospital for the accommodation of the sick and wounded, and for the quartering of prisoners captured in battle. In addition to the relief afforded by the government in hospitals attached to this and other camps, the citizens in various portions of the State were unceasing in their attention to the wounded or diseased-stricken heroes. After those sanguinary conflicts at Antietam and Gettys-



burg, when numerous hospitals were improvised, and indeed during the four years of war, the entire population of the State busied themselves in providing such aid that the military stores did not afford, in which noble duty women and children vied with old and young men in contributing the utmost in their power.

Governor Curtin, at the close of the war, in a special message to the Legislature thus referred to the part which the people had taken in the struggle to maintain the Union and preserve the Government :

“ Proceeding in the strict line of duty, the resources of Pennsylvania, whether in men or money, have neither been withheld or squandered. The history of the conduct of our people in the field is illuminated with incidents of heroism worthy of conspicuous notice; but it would be impossible to mention them in the proper limits of a message, without doing injustice, or, perhaps, making invidious distinctions. It would be alike impossible to furnish a history of the associated benevolence and of the large individual contributions to the comfort of our people in the field and hospital, or of the names and services, at all times, of our volunteer surgeons, when called to assist in the hospital or on the battle field; nor is it possible to do justice to the many patriotic Christian men who were always ready to respond when summoned to the exercise of acts of humanity and benevolence. Our armies were sustained and strengthened in the field, by the patriotic devotion of their friends at home; and we can never render full justice to the heaven-directed, patriotic, Christian benevolence of the women of the State.”

With this message all operations at the various camps were brought to a close. At the great rendezvous, Camp Curtin, the ground was restored to the uses of agriculture, and to-day is partly occupied by private residences. But the scenes enacted there will never be forgotten. It was the Altar on which Pennsylvania laid her most precious offerings for the safety of the Union of which she is the Keystone. The flower of her youth and the robust maturity of her strongest manhood passed into and out of that camp to the field of battle—some to perish amid its carnage, others to return wounded or sickened unto death, and still others unharmed, the survivors of the great conflict, who now live to wear its honors and enjoy the fruits of the victory for Liberty and Union, which their valor helped to win.

During the four years of war, Pennsylvania sent to the Federal or Union army 270 regiments and several unattached companies, numbering in all 387,284 men, including the 25,000 militia in service in September, 1862.

1861.—Under call of the President of April 15, 1861, for three months, 20,979; “ Pennsylvania reserve volunteer corps” sent into the United States service under the call of the President of July 22, 1861, for three years, 15,856; organized under act of Congress of July 22, 1861, for three years, 93,759; making 130,594.

1862.—Under call of the President of July 7, 1862, including eighteen nine-months regiments, 40,383; organized under draft ordered August 4, 1862, for nine months, 15,100; independent companies for three years, 1,358; recruits forwarded by superintendents of recruiting service, 9,259; enlistments in organizations of other States and in the regular army, 5,000; making 71,100.

1863.—Organized under special authority from War Department for three





years, 1,066; under call of the President of June, 1863, for six months, 4,484; for the emergency, 7,062; recruits forwarded by superintendents of recruiting service, 4,458; enlistments in regular army, 934; militia called out in June for ninety days, 25,042; making 43,046.

1864.—Re-enlistments in old organizations for three years, 17,876; organized under special authority from War Department for three years, 9,867; under call of July 27, for one year, 16,094; under call of July 6, for one hundred days, 7,675; recruits forwarded by superintendents of recruiting service, 26,567; drafted men and substitutes, 10,651; recruits for regular army, 2,974; making 91,704.

1865.—Under call of the President of December 19, 1864, for one year, 9,645; recruits forwarded by superintendents of recruiting service, 9,133; drafted men and substitutes, 6,675; recruits for regular army, 387; making 25,840; and a total of 362,284 men. To this should be added the militia called out in 1862, amounting to 25,000, which go to make up the grand total of 387,284 men furnished by Pennsylvania.

There is no feature so attractive in the organization and services of the regiments which Pennsylvania contributed to aid in crushing the insurrection of the people of the slave States, than that of the origin of the regimental battle flags, the actions in which they were borne, their present condition, and place of deposit.

In May, 1861, the Society of the Cincinnati of Pennsylvania, an organization formed of the surviving officers of the Revolutionary war and their descendants, tendered to Governor Curtin a donation of five hundred dollars, to be used toward arming and equipping the volunteers of the State. On the 8th of May the Governor, in a special message to the Legislature, announced the tender of this money, and requested that he be authorized to receive and directed how to apply it. In a series of joint resolutions, the Assembly directed him to apply the money to the purchase of regimental flags to be inscribed with the arms of the State. Other resolutions were passed providing for ascertaining how the several regiments of Pennsylvania in the war of the Revolution, in that of 1812, and with Mexico, were numbered, the divisions of the service in which they were distributed, and in what action said regiments distinguished themselves; that having obtained these particulars, the Governor should procure regimental standards, inscribed with the numbers of those regiments respectively, on which should be engrossed such data. The standards thus were delivered to the regiments then in the field or forming, bearing the regimental numbers corresponding to the regiments of Pennsylvania in former wars. The Reserves secured the greater portion of the flags thus inscribed with the dates of the Revolution and succeeding wars. The Governor was also authorized to procure flags for all the regiments of the State serving in the Union army, emblazoned with the number thereof and the coat of arms of the Commonwealth. These resolutions provided for the return of all the standards to the possession of the State at the close of the war, to be inscribed as the valor and good conduct of the soldiers of each regiment deserved; and whenever the country may be involved in any future war, they are to be delivered to the regiments then formed according to their number as they may be called into service.



Such was the origin of the battle-flags of Pennsylvania. The Governor in person presented each regiment with one of these ensigns, the ceremony either taking place at camps within the State or in the camps of the armies at the front to which they were assigned. Such events were always interesting—the magnetic eloquence of the fervid Governor eliciting the spontaneous enthusiasm of the men who received their standards with vows that were zealously kept, while the pledges of personal devotion which the Governor made to care for them in sickness, wounds, and death, and to provide for the widows and orphans of those who perished, were as religiously fulfilled. Every regiment that went into service bearing one of these flags never lost its identity with the State which contributed it to the national defence, and to that extent the fame those soldiers made for themselves on the field of battle was reflected back on the old Commonwealth, where its lustre will long be preserved, not as an object of irritation between the sections which antagonized each other in the late civil war, but as an evidence of national devotion and personal valor which is destined in after years to be prized in grateful remembrance.

Two hundred and eighteen of these flags have been returned to the State, and are deposited in a room specially arranged for their safe keeping in the Capitol at Harrisburg. They are enumerated by beginning with the 11th regiment, Colonel Richard Coulter's, to that used by the 215th, Colonel Thomas Wistar's. The condition of the standards impresses the beholder with the havoc through which they were carried. That of the 100th regiment now consists of only three small pieces of tattered silk. The flag of the 150th was captured at Gettysburg and afterwards recaptured among the baggage of the President of the so-called Southern Confederacy. That of the 90th has its staff shot away; the 148th is in a similar condition, as well as greatly riddled by bullets. Two flags of the 51st are torn and riddled, having been carried in some of the fiercest struggles of the conflict. The original flag of the Buck-tail regiment (42d), with a portion of a buck-tail still on the top of the staff, is an object of much curiosity. The State possesses no more valuable deposit in its archives than these flags. The older they become the more valuable and more venerated they will be.

Another subject growing out of the war was the adoption of the system of soldiers' orphans schools. Of the facts connected with their origin and growth we shall refer in brief terms.

In the message of Governor Curtin, of January 7, 1863, he says: "In July last, I received, at Pittsburgh, by telegraph, an offer from the Pennsylvania railroad company of a donation of \$50,000, to assist in paying bounties to volunteers. I declined this offer, because I had no authority to accept it on behalf of the public, and was unwilling to undertake the disbursement of the fund in my private capacity. I have since received a letter on the subject from the company, suggesting other modes of disposing of the money, a copy of which is annexed to this message." To Colonel Thomas A. Scott, then vice-president of that great corporation, are we really indebted for originating and suggesting the establishment of that system which led the way to provide for the education and maintenance of the destitute orphans of soldiers. At the request of the Governor, a bill was prepared by Professor J. P. Wickersham, then principal of the State Normal school at Millersville, embodying the provisions necessary



for carrying into effect the measures proposed in the message concerning these wards of the State. This bill was not acted on for want of time, but a short act was passed authorizing the Governor to accept the donation of the railroad company, and to use it, at his discretion, for the purposes designated. In order to accomplish this, the Governor, on the 16th of June, 1864, duly commissioned Thomas H. Burrowes, Superintendent of Soldiers' Orphans. Dr. Burrowes began at once to organize the system. A number of schools willing to receive pupils were selected in different parts of the State, through the assistance of the patriotic and public-spirited citizens in the several counties who acted as superintending committees. By the 9th of February, 1865, six schools and five homes had contracted to receive two hundred and seventy-six orphans.

The task of finding suitable institutions willing to receive soldiers' orphans, under all the circumstances attending the matter, was one of extreme difficulty; and a man less hopeful than Dr. Burrowes, one with more calculation and less faith, would not have succeeded in accomplishing it. He had but \$50,000 at command, several of the Normal schools declined his request to erect additional buildings for the accommodation of such orphans as he might send to them, the prices asked for taking care of the orphans by a number of boarding schools to which he applied were higher than he could pay, and, worse than all, there was a general want of confidence in the permanency of the enterprise. Still, full of faith and zeal, the superintendent labored on in his good work, and, at last, had the good fortune of seeing the obstacles that at first stood in the way of his plans, in great measure overcome.

The Legislature of 1865 passed an act, approved March 23, "establishing the right principle that the destitute orphans of our brave soldiers are to be the children of the State," and appropriating \$75,000 to carry on the work for the year. Although this measure finally passed both Houses unanimously, it met in its progress some very strong opposition, and Dr. Burrowes says, "it owes its origination entirely to the wise forethought and untiring exertions of Governor Curtin."

The expenses of the first year amounted to \$103,817 67, but no one appreciated even then the magnitude of the system building up. For nearly ten years the number of orphans under the care of the Commonwealth have been about eight thousand annually, at an annual expense of nearly half a million dollars.

"No calculation," said Governor Geary in his message of 1868, "can furnish an estimate of the benefits and blessings that are constantly flowing from these institutions. Thousands of orphan children are enjoying their parental care, moral culture, and educational training, who otherwise would have suffered poverty and want, and been left to grow up in idleness and neglect. Many a widow's heart has been gladdened by the protection, comfort, and religious solicitude extended to her fatherless offspring, and thousands are the prayers devoutly uttered for those who have not been unmindful of them in the time of their affliction. In making the generous disposition it has done for these destitute and helpless orphans, the Legislature deserves and receives the heartiest thanks of every good citizen, all of whom will cordially approve a continuance of that beneficence. In shielding, protecting, and educating the



children of our dead soldiers, the Legislature is nobly performing its duty. These children are not mere objects of charity or pensioners upon our bounty, but the wards of the Commonwealth, and have just claims, earned by the blood of their fathers, upon its support and guardianship, which can only be withheld at the sacrifice of philanthropy, honor, patriotism, State pride, and every principle of humanity."

As early as 1864, measures were taken by the Executive and Legislature looking to the preparation of a history of the men who went forward in the armies of the country from this State in the great battles for the Union. Subsequently, 1866, Prof. Samuel P. Bates was appointed to this work. Five imperial octavo volumes of over one thousand pages each give a valuable history of every regiment from the State—an enduring monument, not only of the bravery of the sons of Pennsylvania, but of the power and the glory of the good old Commonwealth.

On the 15th of January, 1867, General John W. Geary,\* of Westmoreland county, was inaugurated Governor of the State, a position in which, by election to a second term, he served six years. During that period the debt of the Commonwealth was reduced over ten millions of dollars. It was a time of unusual activity in business, and the proper development of the industrial resources of Pennsylvania.



JOHN W. GEARY.

During the war for the Union, the so-called "border counties," York, Adams, Cumberland, Franklin, Fulton, Bedford, and Perry, suffered severely, not only through the invasion of the Southern forces, but incidentally by the marching of the Federal troops interposing to drive the former from the State. The citizens who thus sustained destruction and loss of property appealed to the Legislature for aid. That body generously considered the matter and took measures to afford the citizens the necessary assistance. The Governor appointed a board of commissioners agreeably to the act of April 9,

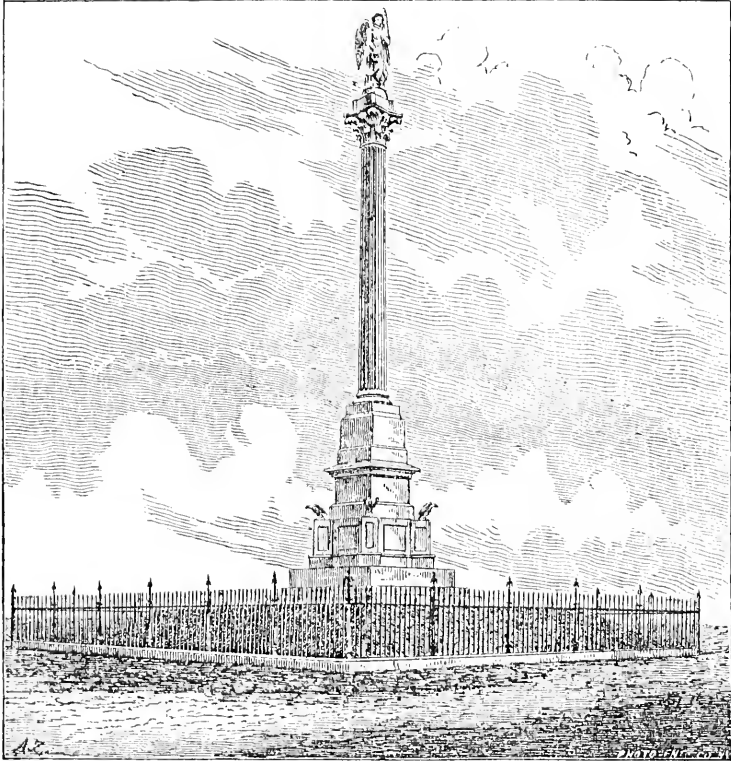
\* JOHN WHITE GEARY was born at Mount Pleasant, Westmoreland county, December 30, 1819. He taught school, became a merchant's clerk in Pittsburgh, afterward studied at Jefferson College; finally became a civil engineer, and for several years was connected with the Allegheny Portage railroad. He was lieutenant-colonel of the second Pennsylvania regiment in the Mexican war; wounded at Chapultepec, and for meritorious conduct was made first commander of the city of Mexico after its capture and colonel of his regiment. In 1849 was made postmaster of San Francisco, soon after alcalde of that city, and its first mayor. In 1852 returned to Pennsylvania and settled on his farm in Westmoreland county. From July, 1856, to March, 1857, he was Governor of Kansas. Early in 1861 raised and equipped the 25th Pennsylvania volunteers; promoted brigadier-general of volunteers April 25, 1862; wounded at Cedar Mountain; led the 2d division of the 12th corps at Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Wauhatchie, and Lookout Mountain; commanded the 2d division of the 20th corps in Sherman's march to the sea; appointed military governor of Savannah on its capture, December 22, 1864; elected Governor of Pennsylvania, 1867, serving two terms. He died suddenly, at Harrisburg, on February 8, 1873.





1868, who were authorized to adjudicate the claims thereof, and although the amounts allowed were small, they served to afford temporary relief.

By an act of the Assembly adopted April 22, 1858, a monument was erected this year, on the grounds of the Capitol at Harrisburg, to commemorate the heroic virtues of the "citizens of Pennsylvania who were slain or lost their lives in the late war with Mexico."



THE PENNSYLVANIA MONUMENT TO THE HEROES OF MEXICO.

At the session of the Legislature of 1870, an effort was made to take from the sinking fund of the State bonds to the value of nine and a half  
 1870. millions of dollars, the proceeds of the sales of the public improvements formerly owned by it, in aid of certain railroads. The Governor interposing his veto, prevented this contemplated outrage.

In the month of July, 1871, a serious disturbance of the public peace  
 1871. and order of the city of Williamsport took place, rendering the civil authority powerless. Under this necessity a reliable military force was sent forward under command of General Jesse Merrill, to protect and aid the authorities in enforcing the civil processes. By the presence of the troops the law-abiding citizens were encouraged and the lawless disheartened. This was termed at the time "the saw-dust war."



1872. A Bureau of Labor Statistics and of Agriculture was established by an act of the Legislature of April 12, 1872.

General John F. Hartranft,\* of Montgomery county, assumed the office of Governor on the 21st of January, 1873.

The inland fisheries of nearly all the States having toward the middle of the century shown a very great falling off in consequence of the absence of all legal regulation, the New England States, commencing with Massachusetts, took the subject in hand in 1865, and immediately thereafter, on the 30th of March, 1866, the State of Pennsylvania followed her example.

Colonel James Worrall was appointed commissioner by Governor Curtin, to make an examination of the streams of the State, the artificial obstructions to the passage of fish, and to report such measures as should be proper to re-stock and protect them.

In the summer of 1868, several gentlemen of Harrisburg, to test the matter of propagating fish from other streams, introduced the black bass of the Potomac into the Susquehanna, and through appropriate legislation the result has been successful. Fish-ways were created in the dams which crossed the more important rivers—intended to facilitate the passage of



JOHN F. HARTRANFT.

anadromous fishes up and down the streams. The Legislature in 1873 made appropriations for carrying out this object, and the Fishery commissioners have zealously devoted themselves to this work; and Pennsylvania has advanced equally with the most energetic of the other States.

The pernicious and alarming results of special legislation, with other evils connected with the working of the Constitution of 1838, demanded a reform in that instrument. On the 2nd of June, 1871, the General Assembly, to further that object, passed a resolution to submit the calling of a convention to the people

---

\* JOHN FREDERICK HARTRANFT was born in New Hanover township, Montgomery county, December 16, 1830. In his seventeenth year he entered the preparatory department of Marshall College, and subsequently was transferred to Union College, Schenectady, where he graduated in 1853; studying law, he was admitted to the bar in 1859. At the outset of the civil war he raised the 4th Pennsylvania regiment. At the first Bull Run battle he served on General Franklin's staff, the period of enlistment of his regiment having expired one day previous. Upon the muster out of this "three months'" regiment, Colonel Hartranft organized the 51st. He accompanied General Burnside in his expedition to North Carolina in March, 1862, and with his regiment was in all the engagements of the 9th corps, including Vicksburg; led the famous charge that carried the stone bridge at Antietam; was made brigadier-general May 12, 1864; in command of the 3d division, 9th army corps, March 25, 1865, gallantly recaptured Fort Steadman in the lines before Richmond, for which he was breveted major-general. Was elected auditor-general of Pennsylvania, in 1865, and on August 29, 1866, the President tendered him the position of colonel in the regular army, which he declined. In 1868, General Hartranft was re-elected auditor-general. In 1872 he was chosen Governor of the Commonwealth, and re-elected in 1875 for the term of three years.



of the State. At the general election held in October following, the vote for holding a constitutional convention was 328,354 to 70,205 against the measure. The Legislature, by its act of April 11, 1872, made provision for the calling of the same, and to secure a full and free expression of opinion in the convention without party or political bias, the plan of minority representation was adopted. The delegates elected assembled at the State Capitol, Harrisburg, on Tuesday, November 13, 1872, adjourned from thence to Philadelphia on the 27th, where it assembled on the 7th of January, 1873. The draft of the Constitution having been adopted by that body, it was submitted to the qualified electors of the Commonwealth on Tuesday, the 18th day of December, and was approved by a vote of 253,560 for, and 109,198 against the measure. As thus adopted, the new Constitution of 1873 comprises the following reforms: An increase of the number of senators and representatives of the General Assembly; biennial sessions of the Legislature; the election by the people of sundry officers heretofore chosen; minority representation; modifications of the pardoning power; a change in the tenure and mode of choosing the judiciary; a change in the date of the annual elections; prohibition of all special legislation, with other changes of vital importance to the interests of the people at large. The 1874. Constitution went into effect the first day of January, 1874. Although it is imperfect in certain points, the Constitution is considered a model instrument, and during the two years in which it has been in operation, given the greatest satisfaction to the people.

In March, 1874, owing to the seizure of railroad trains by a mob at Susquehanna depot on the New York and Erie Railroad, troops were ordered forward by the Governor, who succeeded in quelling the disturbance and restoring confidence. Disturbances in the mining regions occurred during this and the following year; but by the prompt calling out of the military by Governor Hartranft, order and peace were preserved.

The new constitution providing for the election of a Lieutenant-Governor who was to act as President of the Senate, in November John Latta\* of Westmoreland county, was chosen for a period of four years.

On the 18th day of January, 1876, Governor Hartranft re-  
1876. assumed the executive functions under the constitution of 1873; and the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, founded by deeds of Peace, has become the Empire State of the Union—first in population, first in wealth, first in industrial resources, and first in political influence.

---

\* JOHN LATTA was born in Unity township, Westmoreland county, in 1836. He received an academic education, graduated at Yale Law School, admitted to the bar in 1859, and located at Greensburg. Mr. Latta served in the Senate 1864-5, and in the House 1872-3. Elected Lieutenant-Governor 1874.



PART II.

---

COUNTY HISTORIES.





ORGANIZATION OF COUNTIES AND COUNTY TOWNS.

COUNTIES.	FROM WHAT FORMED.	WHEN FORMED.	COUNTY TOWNS.	When laid out.
Chester*		1682.	West Chester	1786
Bucks*		1682.	Dorsetstown	1783
Philadelphia*		1682.	Philadelphia	1682
Lancaster	Chester.	May 10, 1729.	Lancaster	1730
York	Lancaster.	Aug. 19, 1749.	York	1741
Cumberland	Lancaster	Jan. 27, 1750.	Carlisle	1751
Berks	Philadelphia, Bucks, Lancaster.	Mar. 11, 1752.	Reading	1748
Northampton	Bucks.	Mar. 11, 1752.	Easton	1738
Bedford	Cumberland.	Mar. 9, 1771.	Bedford	1766
Northumberland	Lancaster, Cumberland, Berks, Bedford, and Northampton.	Mar. 27, 1772.	Sunbury	1772
Westmoreland†	Bedford.	Feb. 26, 1773.	Greensburg	1782
Washington	Westmoreland.	Mar. 28, 1781.	Washington	1782
Erie	Westmoreland.	Sept. 26, 1783.	Uniontown	1769
Franklin	Cumberland.	Sept. 9, 1781.	Chambersburg	1764
Montgomery	Philadelphia.	Sept. 10, 1781.	Norristown	1781
Dauphin	Lancaster.	Mar. 4, 1785.	Harrisburg	1785
Luzerne	Northumberland	Sept. 25, 1786.	Wilkes-Barre	1783
Huntingdon	Bedford.	Sept. 20, 1787.	Huntingdon	1767
Allegheny	Westmoreland and Washington.	Sept. 24, 1788.	Pittsburgh	1828
Delaware	Chester.	Sept. 26, 1789.	Media	1819
Millin	Cumberland and Northumberland.	Sept. 19, 1789.	Lewistown	1790
Somerset	Bedford.	April 17, 1795.	Somerset	1795
Lycoming	Northumberland.	April 13, 1796.	Williamsport	1796
Greene	Washington.	Feb. 9, 1796.	Waynesburg	1796
Wayne	Northampton	Mar. 31, 1798.	Honesdale	1826
Adams	York.	Jan. 22, 1800.	Gettysburg	1780
Centre	Millin, Northumberland, Lycoming, and Huntingdon.	Feb. 13, 1800.	Belleville	1795
Armstrong	Allegheny, Westmoreland, and Lycoming.	Mar. 12, 1800.	Kittanning	1804
Butler	Allegheny	Mar. 12, 1800.	Butler	1803
Beaver	Allegheny and Washington.	Mar. 12, 1800.	Beaver	1791
Bradford	Allegheny	Mar. 12, 1800.	Meadville	1795
Erie	Allegheny	Mar. 12, 1800.	Erie	1765
Mercer	Allegheny	Mar. 12, 1800.	Mercer	1803
Venango	Allegheny and Lycoming.	Mar. 12, 1800.	Franklin	1796
Warren	Allegheny and Lycoming.	Mar. 12, 1800.	Warren	1795
Indiana	Westmoreland and Lycoming.	Mar. 30, 1803.	Indiana	1803
Jefferson	Lycoming.	Mar. 26, 1804.	Brookville	1830
M'Kean	Lycoming.	Mar. 26, 1804.	Smithport	1807
Potter	Lycoming.	Mar. 26, 1804.	Coudersport	1807
Tioga	Lycoming.	Mar. 26, 1804.	Wellshoro*	1806
Cambria	Huntingdon, Somerset, and Bedford.	Mar. 29, 1804.	Ebensburg	1805
Clearfield	Lycoming and Northumberland.	Mar. 26, 1804.	Clearfield	1805
Bradford†	Luzerne and Lycoming.	Feb. 21, 1810.	Towanda	1812
Susquehanna	Luzerne.	Feb. 21, 1810.	Montrose	1811
Schuykill	Berks and Northampton.	Mar. 11, 1811.	Pottsville	1816
Lehigh	Northampton	Mar. 6, 1812.	Allentown	1751
Lebanon	Dauphin and Lancaster.	Feb. 19, 1813.	Lebanon	1750
Columbia	Northumberland.	Mar. 22, 1813.	Bloomsburg	1802
Union	Northumberland	Mar. 22, 1813.	Lewisburg	1785
Pike	Wayne	Mar. 26, 1814.	Mifflin	1809
Perry	Cumberland.	Mar. 22, 1820.	New Bloomfield	1822
Amherst	M'Kean.	Mar. 2, 1831.	Millintown	1791
Monroe	Northampton and Pike.	April 1, 1836.	Stroudsburg	1836
Carlton	Venango and Armstrong.	Mar. 11, 1839.	Carlton	1839
Clinton	Lycoming and Centre.	June 21, 1839.	Lock Haven	1833
Wyoming	Luzerne.	April 4, 1842.	Tunkhannock	1790
Carbon	Northampton and Monroe.	Mar. 13, 1843.	Mauch Chunk	1815
Elk	Bedford, Clearfield, and M'Kean.	April 18, 1843.	Highway	1843
Blair	Huntingdon and Bedford.	Feb. 26, 1844.	Hollydaysburg	1812
Sullivan	Lycoming.	Mar. 15, 1847.	Laporte	1839
Forest	Jefferson and Venango.	April 11, 1848.	Thomasia	1832
Fulton	Bedford.	April 19, 1850.	McConnellsburg	1786
Lawrence	Beaver and Mercer.	Mar. 25, 1850.	New Castle	1802
Montour	Columbia.	May 3, 1850.	Danville	1790
Snider	Union.	Mar. 2, 1855.	Middleburg	1800
Cameron	Clinton, Elk, M'Kean, and Potter.	Mar. 29, 1860.	Emporium	1861

\* Chester, Bucks, and Philadelphia were the three original counties established at the first settlement of the Province of Pennsylvania.

† In 1785 part of the purchase of 1734 was added to Westmoreland.

‡ Previous to March 24, 1812, this county was called Ontario, but its name was changed to Bradford on that day.

§ Part of Venango added by act approved October 31, 1866.



## ADAMS COUNTY.

BY AARON SHEELY, GETTYSBURG.

[*With acknowledgments to Edward McPherson, D. J. Benner, and Joseph S. Gitt.*]



DAMS county was originally included within the ample limits of Chester county. Soon after the settlement of Pennsylvania by William Penn, in 1682, the Province was divided by its proprietor into three counties, Bucks, Chester, and Philadelphia. Lancaster county was separated from Chester by act of May 10, 1729, and was the first county established subsequent to the formation of the three original counties. The first division of Lancaster county was by act of August 9, 1749, when York county was separated from it. York, which then included what is now Adams, was the first county erected west of the Susquehanna river, and embraced all that territory bounded on the west and north by the South mountain, on the east by the Susquehanna, and on the south by Maryland. The county being very large, and the distance from the upper end to the county-seat being great, a movement looking to the formation of a new county was set on foot as early as 1790. Much feeling was soon developed in reference to this matter. Those living within easy reach of the old county-town manifested their selfishness by violently opposing the measure, while those residing within the limits of the proposed new county were just as active and zealous in favor of a separation. Public meetings were held, petitions for and remonstrances against the erection of a new county were industriously circulated, signers to each obtained, and presented to the Legislature. Finally, after ten years of contention and strife, the separation took place by virtue of an act of Assembly dated January 22, 1800. The new county was named ADAMS, in honor of John Adams, who was President of the United States from 1797 to 1801. The commissioners to mark and run the line dividing Adams from York county were Jacob Spangler, deputy surveyor of York county, Samuel Sloan, deputy surveyor of Adams county, and William Waugh.

In June, 1790, when the formation of a new county was first agitated, James Cunningham, Jonathan Hooge, and James Johnston were appointed commissioners to fix upon a site for the county seat. After some deliberation the Commissioners selected for this purpose a tract of one hundred and twenty-five acres, in Straban township, belonging to Garret Vanasdal, and described as "lying between the two roads leading from Hunter's and Gettys' towns to the Brick House, including part of each road to Swift run," and being in part the present site of Hunterstown. In 1791 the subject was again agitated. The Reverend Alexander Dobbin and David Moore, Sen., were appointed trustees for the new county, with full powers, for them and their representatives, to take assurances of all offers for the payment of money, or for the conveyance or transfer of any property in trust, for the use of public buildings to be erected in the town of Gettysburg.



Adams county is bounded on the north by Cumberland, east by York, south by the State of Maryland, and west by Franklin. Its length from east to west is 27 miles, and its breadth from north to south is 24 miles. The area is 248 square miles, or about 350,000 acres.

The surface of the county is greatly diversified. The South mountain, the first great chain of hills west of the sea-board, extends along the entire western and northern borders. The other principal elevations are Round, Wolf's, Spangler's, Culp's, and Harper's hills, with Big and Little Round Top, in the central and southern parts. The principal stream is Conewago creek, which has its source in the South mountain, near the dividing line between Adams and Franklin, receiving in its course Opossum creek, Plum run, and Miley's run from the north; and Beaver Dam run, Swift run, Little Conewago, Pine run, Deep run, and Beaver creek from the south, pursuing a winding north and north-east course into York county, through which it passes, and finally finds its way into the Susquehanna near York Haven.

Marsh creek, the second stream in size and importance in the county, also takes its rise in the South mountain, near the source of the Conewago, flows south-east to the Monococy river, in Maryland, draining the southern portions of the county and receiving in its course North Branch, Little Marsh creek, Willoughby's run, Rock creek, and Little's run. The entire length of this stream is about 25 miles, and in its course it furnishes excellent water power for ten grist and flouring mills, besides a large number of saw mills and several factories. The first-mentioned of its tributaries, North Branch, is interesting because of its subterranean source in the South mountain, in Franklin township, some four miles north of Cashtown. The sound of this underground stream is first heard in a wild and rocky ravine a short distance north of the public road leading from Hilltown to Buchanan valley, and near Black Sam's cabin, a rude hut once occupied by an old colored man, who here lived the lonely and solitary life of a hermit. After pursuing a southerly course for about two miles, now roaring and thundering among subterranean rocks, and anon moving so slowly and quietly that its direction can only be determined by a faint gurgling and trickling sound, it finally appears above ground.

Geologically, Adams county belongs to the south-eastern or sea-board district of Pennsylvania, and is an undulating plain of reddish, sandy-clay soil, in the northern and western portions, while in the eastern part a gray micaceous soil is found. The Lawrentian system, the oldest known to geologists, is represented in the South mountain. The Mesozoic, or New Red Sandstone formation, spreads itself thinly over a portion of the county. The principal minerals of importance are copper, found both in a native state and as a carbonate, in the western and central parts of the county; and crystalline iron ore, much of it magnetic, and some hematite. The central part of Franklin township, about a mile east of Cashtown, is particularly rich in magnetic ore of superior quality. The belt of country stretching from near Littlestown to Hanover, York county, near the line of the railroad, also yields annually immense quantities of iron. The great ore beds of the South mountain seem to lie at considerable depths beneath the surface, and with few exceptions, have not been reached. They will undoubtedly, in the near future, become a source of great wealth to this part of



the State. Recent surveys and tests indicate that the iron ore of this county is not only excellent in quality but almost inexhaustible in quantity. Some of the beds of magnetic iron ore are traceable for many miles, having become decomposed along their outcrops in places, thus affording extensive surface mines of brown hematite.

Limestone occurs in large quantities in the northern, eastern, and western parts of the county, and has become a source of great wealth to the people. Thousands of tons of limestone are annually converted into lime, which is used largely by farmers all over the county in the improvement of their land. The liberal use of lime as a fertilizer by farmers has wrought a wondrous change in this county during the last twenty-five years. Broad stretches of worn-out lands that formerly did not produce sufficient to pay the taxes assessed against them, have been rendered fertile and productive by the generous use of this agent. Hundreds of fields that were once too poor to grow even briars and weeds have been, by its use, made to literally blossom as the rose. Many farms that, years ago, only impoverished those who cultivated them, now yield the most abundant crops of grain, grass, fruits, and vegetables, enriching those who till them, and all by the judicious application of lime.

The county exports annually large numbers of horses, cattle, sheep, hogs, and poultry, besides immense quantities of farm and garden products, such as wheat, corn, rye, oats, timothy and clover seed, hay, apples, peaches, grapes, strawberries, butter, and eggs. Much iron ore is also sent out of the county every year, bringing in a good revenue. Though for a time an object of reproach for the poverty of its soil and for its limited resources, Adams county now compares favorably with any county of its size in the State in everything that is necessary to make a county prosperous and its people happy.

Between 1736 and 1740 there were early settlements made by the Scotch-Irish who had previously been residing in the lower end of York county. Among these were William McClellan, Joseph Farris, Hugh McKean, Matthew Black, Robert McPherson, William Black, James Agnew, John Alexander, Moses Jenkins, Richard Hall, Richard Fosset, Adam Hall, James Wilson, John Steel, John Johnson, John Hamilton, Hugh Vogan, John McWharter, Hugh Sweeny, Titus Darley, Thomas Hosack, some of the Allisons, Campbells, Morrisons, Edies, etc. The majority of these early settlers located on an immense tract of land comprising about one-fifth of the available land of Adams county laid out for the Proprietaries' use, and named the Manor of Maske. When the Provincial surveyors arrived for the purpose of running its lines, the settlers upon it, not understanding or not approving the purpose, drove them off by force. Some of the settlers had taken out regular warrants, others had licenses, and some were there probably without either. As a result, the lines were not run till January, 1766, and the return of them was made, on the 7th of April, 1768, to the land office.

The Manor, as then surveyed, is nearly a perfect oblong. The southerly line is 1,887 perches; the northern, 1,900 perches; the western line, 3,842 perches; and the eastern 3,954. It is nearly six miles wide, and about twelve miles long. The southern line is probably a-half mile north of Mason and Dixon's line, and the





northern is about mid-way between Mummasburg and Arendtsville, skirting a point marked on the county map as Texas, on the road from Gettysburg to Middletown, does not quite reach the Conewago creek. The Manor covers the towns of Gettysburg and Mummasburg, the hamlet of Seven Stars, and probably McKnightstown, all of the township of Cumberland, except a small strip of half a mile along the Maryland line, nearly the whole of Freedom, about one-third of Highland, the southeast corner of Franklin, the southern section of Butler, the western fringe of Straban, and a smaller fringe on the west side of Mount Joy. Gettysburg is situated north of the centre, and on the eastern edge of the Manor, and is thus about five and a-half miles from the northern line and seven and a-half from the southern.

The Manor is separated by a narrow strip on the west from Carroll's Tract, or "Carroll's Delight," as it was originally called, and which was surveyed under Maryland authority on the 3d of April, 1732. It was patented August 8, 1735, to Charles, Mary, and Eleanor Carroll, whose agents made sales of warrants for many years, supposing that the land lay within the grant of Lord Baltimore and in the county of Frederick. As originally surveyed, "Carroll's Delight" contained 5,000 acres.

From the period of the organization of the county to the breaking out of the civil war, Adams county presents no striking features in her history, and not until July, 1863, when that terrible conflict between the armies of the two sections of the Union took place within her borders, are the details of sufficient general interest. Leaving these matters, we proceed to narrate the events immediately preceding

### THE BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG.

The month of June, 1863, was probably the darkest period in the history of the great civil war. The conflict had been raging for more than two years with results wholly incommensurate with the means employed. Dissatisfaction with the conduct thereof was general. The conscription, which had been resorted to in most of the States, increased the popular discontent. Rumors of foreign intervention began to darken the political horizon. In the south-west, affairs were in a critical condition. The army of the Potomac had sustained repeated and severe reverses on the soil of Virginia. Such was the aspect of affairs when the enemy, flushed with victory, and his army augmented by large numbers of fresh troops, suddenly assumed the offensive by a bold invasion of the north.

The Confederate army under General Lee left its position near Fredericksburg on the 9th of June, moving in a north-westerly direction, and within a few days the valley of the Shenandoah was freed from the only opposing force by the dispersion of Milroy's command, at Winchester.

On the 22d, Lee threw Ewell's corps across the Potomac, at Shepherdstown and Williamsport, with orders to advance upon Hagerstown, Maryland, Lee following a few days later with the other two corps of his army, commanded respectively by Longstreet and A. P. Hill. From Hagerstown, General Ewell, with Rodes' and Johnson's divisions, preceded by Jenkins' cavalry, marched to Chambersburg, and thence to Carlisle, where he arrived on the 27th. Early's division of Ewell's corps, which had occupied Boonsboro, moved to Greenwood,



a point on the turnpike leading from Chambersburg to Baltimore, eight miles from the former place, whence in pursuance of instructions from Lee, Early marched in the direction of Gettysburg. At Cashtown, eight miles from Gettysburg, Early divided his force, sending Gordon's brigade to Gettysburg with directions to occupy the town, whilst with the remainder of his command he took the more direct road to York by way of Mummasburg, where he encamped for the night. Soon after Gordon's brigade had taken possession of the town, General Early, with his staff, came in from Mummasburg for the purpose of communicating with the borough authorities in regard to subsistence for his troops. Pending these negotiations, it was discovered that several cars at the depot were filled with supplies for Colonel Jennings' 26th regiment, P. V. M. These were at once captured and appropriated by the invaders, and thus the town was undoubtedly spared a burdensome levy. The railroad bridge across Rock creek, half a mile east of the town, was soon fired by order of General Gordon, and whilst it was in a blaze a number of cars were ignited and started down the track, but they passed over the bridge and were consumed a short distance beyond. Altogether about twenty cars were burned, belonging to the Pennsylvania, Northern Central, and Hanover Branch railroad companies, besides three or four belonging to individuals. One of the cars contained a supply of muskets for Colonel Jennings' command, and these were also destroyed, their captors professing to have no use for them.

The Confederate advance consisted of White's cavalry, numbering about 150 men, and as they entered the town they charged up Chambersburg street at a rapid rate, in pursuit of a number of persons on horseback who were hurrying out York and Baltimore streets trying to escape. A few shots were fired, and the fugitives halted. In one instance a member of Bell's cavalry was pursued out the Baltimore turnpike, for a distance of nearly two miles, by a Confederate cavalryman, and, after being vainly halted several times, was shot and instantly killed.

As early as June 11th, the War Department at Washington, as a precautionary measure, assigned Major General W. T. H. Brooks to the Department of the Monongahela, and Major General D. N. Couch to the Department of the Susquehanna, with the headquarters of the latter at Harrisburg. General Couch detailed Major G. O. Haller, of the 7th Regular Infantry, to duty at Gettysburg, with orders to assume command of military operations in the county. His dispositions were made with promptness and energy. On the evening of the 20th he addressed a large public meeting at the Adams county court house, urging the citizens of Gettysburg to prepare for the emergency, as it was evident their homes and firesides were about to be invaded. Sunday morning, the 21st, the City Troop of Philadelphia, under command of Captain Samuel J. Randall, arrived and reported for duty. These men furnished their own uniforms and equipments, a most complete outfit, and gave their services without pay. They did excellent duty on the mountain as scouts, carefully watching and reporting the movements of the enemy. The 26th Regiment, P. V. M., Colonel W. W. Jennings, arrived from Harrisburg on the morning of the 26th. Immediately on their arrival the regiment was sent out on a reconnoitering expedition in the direction of Cashtown, and after



proceeding about three miles they were surprised by White's Confederate cavalry and thirty-six of their number captured. These were taken into Gettysburg as prisoners, and subsequently paroled at the Court House. The next morning, the 27th, one hundred more of the regiment were taken prisoners about three miles out the Mummasburg road, where six hundred of them had encamped. These were paroled at Hunterstown later in the day.

Bell's cavalry, a home company, accepted by the Governor, and formally sworn into the United States service for six months by Major Haller, on the 24th, performed very efficient service as scouts, frequently coming in contact with the enemy, making narrow escapes, and bringing in much valuable information.

On Saturday, the 27th, the enemy left for Hanover, East Berlin, and York. Sunday, the 28th, at 12 M., two regiments of Federal cavalry, about 2,000 strong, commanded by General Cowpland, entered Gettysburg from the direction of Emmitsburg. Tuesday, the 30th, at 9½ A.M., a portion of General Hill's corps, comprising several thousand men, advanced on the turnpike from Cashtown to within two miles of Gettysburg, but being only on a reconnoitering expedition they fell back within an hour.

General Stuart, with the Confederate cavalry, did not cross the Potomac with the rest of Lee's army, but crossed near Harper's Ferry, and managed to elude every cavalry force sent after him, until he reached the town of Hanover, in Pennsylvania, where, on the 29th, he was defeated by Kilpatrick in a fierce engagement of eight hours, after which he moved in the direction of York.

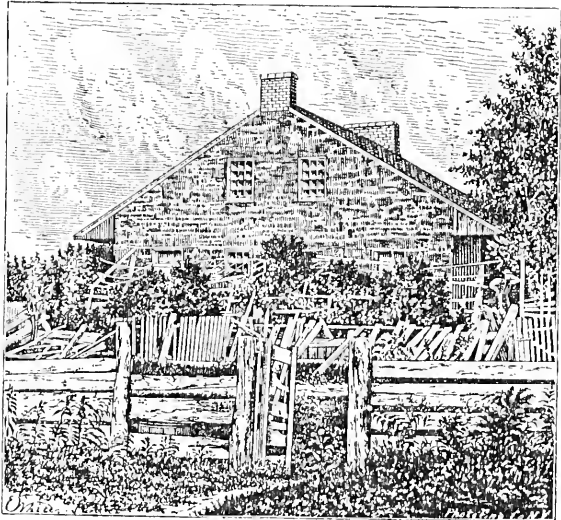
Meanwhile, on the 11th and 12th of June, the Union army had broken up its encampment and marched northward on a line nearly parallel with that of the enemy. The route of the army was kept carefully concealed, and it was not even known that it had crossed the Potomac until the 27th, when the headquarters were at Frederick city, which had been abandoned by the enemy. On this day General Hooker was relieved from the command of the army, which was conferred upon General George G. Meade, of Pennsylvania. On the morning after assuming command, General Meade ordered the main body of his army to march northward into Pennsylvania, in the general direction of Harrisburg, and on a line parallel with the route taken by Lee, but on the east side of South mountain. Major-General Reynolds, commanding the 1st corps, occupied the extreme left of the army of the Potomac, and was instructed by Meade to feel Lee and carefully watch his movements, but not to bring on a general engagement unless it became imperatively necessary to do so. On Tuesday, the 30th, about noon, Buford's Federal cavalry, 6,000 strong, came in on the Emmitsburg road, passed through Gettysburg, and encamped in two divisions a few hundred yards beyond the borough limits, the one on the Chambersburg pike, and the other on the Mummasburg road, placing their artillery in position. The same afternoon the 1st corps of infantry, 8,000 men, under General Reynolds, and the 11th corps, numbering 15,000, commanded by General O. O. Howard, came from Emmitsburg to Marsh creek, five miles south-west of Gettysburg, where they encamped for the night. It now became evident that a great battle was about to be fought in the immediate vicinity of Gettysburg, invested as it was by 29,000 Federal troops, and at least twice this number of Confederates.



Gettysburg is situated on a beautiful plain between two slightly elevated ridges, which have become classic by reason of the important part they were made to play in the grand drama enacted here. The elevation west of the town, a gently rising ground, is known as Seminary ridge, the Lutheran Theological Seminary being located here, and is distant just one mile from the centre of the town, which it overlooks. This ridge extends many miles in a direction almost due north and south from the Seminary, and formed the main line of Confederate defences during the last two days of the battle. It was on this ridge, where the Chambersburg pike crosses it, that General Lee established his headquarters after the first day's engagement. The elevation east of the town is called Cemetery hill, from the fact that Evergreen cemetery, a citizen's burying ground, occupies some eighteen acres of beautiful ground on its eastern and western slopes, on the south side of the Baltimore pike, and about half a mile from the town. This ridge commences a few hundred yards north of the entrance to this cemetery, and extends far to the south in a line parallel to Seminary ridge. Big and Little Round Top are both spurs of this ridge, which formed the main line of Federal defences during the second and third day's fighting. A short distance east of the ceme-

tery this ridge curves sharply to the right, forming two rocky prominences, known respectively as Culp's hill and Spangler's hill, and terminating in Wolf's hill a rough and thickly wooded knob east of Roek creek, which is a sluggish stream winding among these hills.

Not only does Gettysburg possess many natural advantages for the fighting of a great battle in its vicinity, but its numerous and excellent roads give it additional value in a strategic point of view, being situated at the convergence of ten great roads, which radiate from it like the spokes of a wheel. The turnpike from Baltimore, by which the 6th and 12th corps were advancing, comes in on the south-east; the road from Taneytown, by which the 2nd, 3d, and 5th were approaching, comes from the south; that from Emmittsburg, by which the 1st and 11th were advancing, comes in from the south-west; that from Hagers-town, used by Lee as one of his thoroughfares, approaches from the west; that from Chambersburg, by which the corps of Longstreet and Hill were marching, comes in on the north-west; those from Mummasburg, Carlisle, Harrisburg, and



GENERAL LEE'S HEAD-QUARTERS AT GETTYSBURG.  
 (From a Photograph by W. H. Tipton & Co., Gettysburg.)





York, by which Ewell's troops were advancing, coming from the north and north-east; and that from Hanover, used chiefly by the cavalry troops of Kilpatrick and Stuart, coming from the east.

#### THE FIRST DAY'S BATTLE.

On Wednesday, July 1st, at 9½ o'clock in the morning, skirmishing began between General Buford's dismounted cavalry and the advancing Confederates; and by 10 o'clock the artillery was brought into play. Willoughby's run flows immediately west of the position occupied by Buford. Pender's and Heth's divisions of Hill's corps, numbering 20,000 men, had moved down the Chambersburg road, and had posted themselves along the line of the stream just mentioned, followed by Anderson's division of the same corps, and occupied a position near the Hagerstown road. Skirmishing soon brought on a battle, when sharp cannonading commenced on both sides, the gallant Buford bravely holding his ground against a superior force of the enemy.

Meantime General Reynolds, on receiving intelligence from Buford of the presence of the Confederates in the vicinity of Gettysburg, hastily left his encampment on the Emmitsburg road at Marsh creek, five miles distant, and hurried up his corps, at the same time sending word back to General Howard, requesting him, as a prudential measure, to bring up the 11th corps as rapidly as possible. The 11th had also been coming up the Emmitsburg road, but finding it crowded with the wagon train of the 1st corps, they started off on a by-way leading to the Taneytown road, and were still on this by-way when Reynolds' messenger reached them.

When the 1st had reached the Peach orchard, two miles from Gettysburg, and while many of the men were slaking their thirst and filling their canteens with water drawn from Wentz's well, the sound of heavy and rapid cannon firing was heard in the direction of the Chambersburg road beyond Gettysburg. Almost at the same instant Captain Mitchell, a gallant aid upon General Reynolds' staff, came dashing down the road, with orders to the various division commanders to push forward their divisions as rapidly as possible. The 1st corps consisted of three divisions, and marched in the following order: First division under General Wadsworth; Second division under General Doubleday; next came five full batteries of artillery under Colonel Wainwright; and bringing up the rear came the splendid Third division of General Robinson. The order was given to double quick, which was instantly obeyed, the troops keeping the road until they reached the brick house to the right, on Codori's farm, where they took to the fields and marched in the direction of the ridge to the left, which they reached a short distance south of the Seminary. Wadsworth's division, composed of Meredith's and Cutler's brigades, had the advance, with Cutler on the right and Meredith on the left. Arriving at the Seminary, the near presence of the enemy became at once manifest. General Reynolds promptly ordered a battery in position, and rode forward to select ground for a line of battle. Sadly unfortunate for him and for his country, that so sorely needed his well-tryed services, he fell pierced through the head by a ball from a sharp-shooter's rifle, and was borne to the rear mortally wounded. General Abner Doubleday immediately assumed command of the corps, but there was no time to wait for orders



from the new commander. Instantly, right and left, Cutler, with his veterans, and Meredith, with his famous "Iron Brigade," wheeled into line on the double quick. Cutler, having the advance, opened the attack. Meredith became engaged a few minutes later. The fighting on the right was fearful for a while, and resulted in the capture of a portion of Davis' Mississippi brigade, which had taken refuge in an unfinished railroad cut. On the left the struggle was, if possible, still more severe and bloody. A strong force advanced from the woods on the edge of which Reynolds had fallen but a short while before, and, though volley after volley was poured into the column, the men did not waver. The proximity and strength of the enemy at last became so threatening that the second division was ordered to make a charge, which was successful. Many of the enemy were shot, bayoneted, and driven to partial retreat, Archer's brigade of 1,500 men being captured on the banks of Willoughby's run.

Our ranks suffered severely in this demonstration, and it was evident such fighting could not long continue. Wadsworth's brave men, who had been contending for two hours against a superior force of the enemy, began to show signs of exhaustion. Rodes' division of Ewell's corps, numbering 12,000 men, had come up on the right and was pressing the 1st corps so hard that the veterans, who had been holding their ground so long and so firmly against large odds, began to waver. But just at the critical moment, when the sun stood at high noon, General O. O. Howard arrived with the 11th corps, and, posting Steinwehr's division on Cemetery hill as a reserve, marched directly through the town with the divisions of Schurz and Barlow, and at once formed a line of battle to the right of the Chambersburg road along Seminary ridge. A charge was soon made by the entire force in front, comprising the corps of Hill and Ewell, 62,000 strong. The shock was awful. The superior numbers of the enemy enabled them to overlap both flanks of the Union army, threatening them with capture. Finally General Howard found it necessary to order a retreat, and the bleeding and exhausted remnants of the two devoted corps retired through the different streets of the town to Cemetery hill, where they took up a new position, the 1st corps to the left and the 1st and 3d divisions of the 11th corps to the right and rear of Steinwehr. The 11th corps, being heavily pressed, lost about 2,500 prisoners in the retreat through the town.

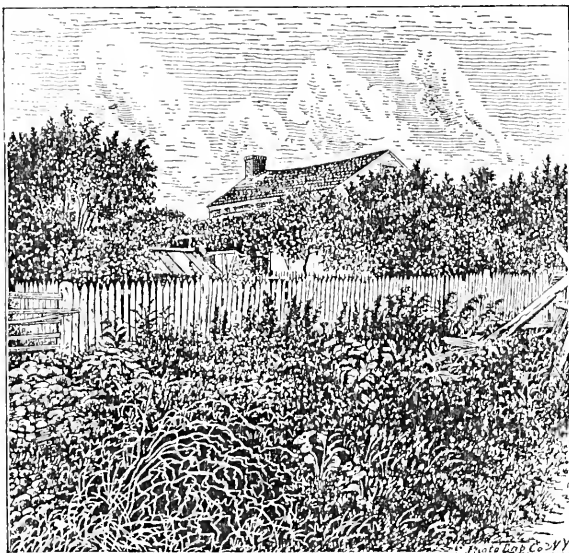
General Meade received intelligence of the engagement at Gettysburg about noon, while he was on Pipe Creek hill, near Taneytown, Maryland, about 14 miles distant, selecting a line of battle. Shortly afterwards a second message arrived announcing the death of General Reynolds. Meade at once dictated an order to General W. S. Hancock, dated 1:10 p.m., directing him to turn his corps, the 2d, over to General Gibbon and proceed to the front, assume command of all the troops there, and make such dispositions as the exigencies of the case might require. Hancock arrived on the field at 3:30 p.m., while the retreat to Cemetery hill was in progress, and did much by his presence and influence to restore order and inspire the men with confidence in themselves and their new position. By half-past four p.m. the troops were securely posted in their new position, and the effective fire of artillery and sharpshooters prevented further pursuit by the enemy. About 5 o'clock in the evening General Sickles arrived from Emmitsburg with the principal part of the 3d corps, and took



position on Cemetery ridge to the left of Howard, occupying nearly the whole of the line to Round Top. An hour later, Slocum's 12th corps came up the Baltimore turnpike and occupied the extreme right of the line, embracing Culp's, Spangler's, and Wolf's hills. Thus ended the action of the first day

#### THE SECOND DAY'S BATTLE.

On the morning of the 2d, the following were the dispositions of the two armies, General Meade, who arrived on the battle-field about eleven o'clock the night previous, assuming the active direction of affairs: The 12th corps, General Slocum commanding, was placed on his right; General Williams



GENERAL MEADE'S HEAD-QUARTERS AT GETTYSBURG.

[From a Photograph by W. H. Tipton & Co., Gettysburg.]

commanding the 1st division of the 12th corps took the extreme right, his right resting on Rock creek, with one brigade thrown to the east of the creek to occupy Wolf's hill, and to protect the extreme right flank. The remainder of Williams' division occupied an irregular line stretching from the creek to Culp's hill, by the way of Spangler's spring. General Geary, commanding the 2d division, occupied Culp's hill, and joined unto the 11th corps in position on Cemetery hill.

To the south of Cemetery hill were, first, the remnants of the 1st corps under Doubleday. Continuing the line toward the left, were the 2nd corps (Hancock's), the 3d (Sickles'), and later in the day, the 5th (Sykes') occupying the naturally entrenched heights of Little Round Top. On the part of the Confederates, General Longstreet's corps had the right, with Hood's and McLaw's divisions in order; General A. P. Hill's corps had the centre, with Anderson's, Heth's, and Pender's divisions in order; General Ewell's corps had the left, with Rodes', Early's, and Johnson's divisions in order. The 6th corps (General Sedgwick's) did not arrive until late in the day, and was held in reserve and used where its presence was most needed. Lockwood's brigade of Maryland troops arrived on the field with the 6th corps and was temporarily assigned to the 12th corps, and relieved one of Williams' brigades that had been protecting Wolf's hill. General Meade established his headquarters on the Taneytown road, a short distance to the rear of his line. General Lee had his headquarters on the Chambersburg road, a short distance to the rear of the Seminary ridge.



Both commanders were thus in superior positions to communicate promptly and easily with all parts of their lines. The Confederate forces were now all in position with the exception of Pickett's division, of Longstreet's corps, which had been detailed at Chambersburg to guard the wagon trains and to keep open Lee's communication with the Potomac against any flank movement from Harrisburg, by the Cumberland Valley.

Strategically the positions of the two armies were in accordance with the topography of the ground heretofore described; the Federal army occupying Cemetery hill, as a centre, with flanks resting upon the elevated lines, on the right, to Wolf's hill, and, on the left, to Little and Big Round Tops, which admirably and effectually protected the left flank of the army, as Wolf's hill and Rock creek did the right. The movements of troops on the right were fully masked by heavy timber, the left being more open. From Round Top to Cemetery hill the Union line generally faced the west, but from this hill to the extreme left the line curved back on itself so much that it faced nearly in the opposite direction. This curved line gave General Meade a great advantage in speedily moving troops from one flank to the other. The Confederates, on Seminary Ridge, had a line of very similar form, but necessarily much longer. A comparison of the two lines shows that the Federal line was only one-third of that of their adversaries.

The night, and Thursday till mid-day, passed in comparative silence; what little firing was done was confined to the skirmish line. But the two armies were not idle; artillery was brought up, the heavy guns that arrived with the 2d corps were put in position, regiments and brigades marched and counter-marched from one part of the line to another, weak points were strengthened, salients were covered with double lines, mattock and spade and shovel were in useful requisition, rifle pits dotted the line, wood fences were swept away and combined with stone walls to give additional strength to the temporary defences, orderlies dashed from point to point bearing orders that were as promptly obeyed; the heavy rumble of army wagons showed that provisions and ammunition were being distributed to the men, and ambulances hurrying to and fro pointed out plainly that the work of death was soon to begin.

At 3 o'clock, the artillery on the Federal and on the Confederate sides was in position; and everything seemed ready for the work of death to commence. It was only a few minutes before 4 o'clock when a gun from Seminary ridge was fired. In an instant both lines were a blaze of artillery and musketry, and the action became general on the Federal left. It soon became evident that the enemy's object here was to crush Sickles. Hood's and McLaw's divisions moved from under their cover on Seminary ridge, in solid columns, across an open space, and engaged Sickles, at the peach orchard, in a hand-to-hand fight. Ward's and DeTrobriand's brigades, of Birney's division, of the 3d corps, received the main force of the enemy's onset. The remainder of Birney's division was also hotly engaged. Gallantly the regiments and brigades met the attack—ably supported by a deadly artillery fire—volley for volley of the enemy was returned, inch by inch they yielded the ground, back over the ridge into the meadows of wheat and corn were they driven, but so stubbornly did they contest it that they had to abandon many of their wounded. A new impulse—a rally, a





cheer, and back their force was driven; and the brigades re-occupied their first position.

Fresh regiments filled up the gap made in the Confederate ranks—the shock of battle again was felt, the plain became enveloped in smoke, and the left of the 3d corps (Birney's division) was once more driven back. Cheering his men on by his words, General Sickles did all that a brave commander could do. Passing towards the left of his corps, into the Peach orchard, General Sickles' foot was carried off by a cannon shot. The command of the corps now devolved on Birney. The retreat of Birney's left was accelerated by the fact that General Longstreet's right was prolonged by the interval of two brigades beyond his (Birney's) left; and a quick flank movement of these brigades would have completely enveloped his shattered troops.

The right of the 3d corps fared no better. Birney's division having given way, exposed Humphreys' division and Graham's brigade on the right—still advanced to the Emmittsburg road—to the fiercest assaults of the enemy, both on flank and front. These officers saw that nothing but the best generalship could extricate their commands, as their right was separated from the 2d corps by half a mile of ground, their left was exposed by Birney's retreat, and the enemy was pressing them on all sides. Left without supports, Humphreys determined to do his best to get his command out of the dilemma. Drawing off his men by detail, reforming his line of battle, attacking the enemy at every vantage ground with overwhelming impetuosity, taking advantage of his enemy's weakness, with the skilled eye of an engineer, to increase his own chances of escape, Humphreys commenced his retrograde movement from the line of the Emmittsburg road with 5,000 men, and formed a line to the left of the 2d corps, on the extension of Cemetery Hill, with 3,000 men—a loss of 2,000 men bearing testimony in the language of blood to the desperation of the fight. Humphreys' division was now in the position originally contemplated for it by General Meade, in his general instructions to corps commanders. In its new position the division was still assaulted by the enemy, but its right protected by the 2d corps and its left by the timber stretching towards Little Round Top, it used its vantage of the high ground in such a manner as to repel every assault of the enemy, who at last retired beyond the Emmittsburg road.

Even if the 3d corps was driven from its first position along its whole line, and the Confederates were left in possession of the field, yet one important effort had to be made before Longstreet had performed satisfactorily the work assigned him by General Lee—and that was to occupy Little and Big Round Top. This was the prize that eclipsed all others in the eyes of the Confederate commander-in-chief, and to secure it was the main object of the fight of this day on his right. It was to accomplish this that Longstreet was directed to project two of Hood's brigades beyond the left of Sickles, and, forcing back the 3d corps with the remaining brigades and Anderson's division, these two brigades were at the proper moment to make a dash for these hills; and once their rocky crests in possession, it would have been next to impossible to dislodge them.

While these brigades were moving forward, General Meade was making such dispositions of his troops as frustrated the design of the enemy on these hills, and probably saved the army. General Meade had seen that Sickles could not maintain



his isolated position at the commencement of the action, and immediately dispatched aid from his reserves. General Warren, engineer-in-chief on General Meade's staff, noticing the nakedness of Little Round Top, and its importance as the key to the Federal left, hastily detached General Vincent's brigade, of the 5th corps, and ordered it into position on its summit. By a rapid movement General Vincent reached the height, and had scarcely time to advantageously form his men on the rocky and broken summit, and construct a few hastily formed rifle-pits, before the exultant Confederates, debouching from the heavy timber into the open space at the foot of the hill, and, with a yell and a rush, attempted to scale the rocky citadel. Like the rugged, weather-beaten rocks behind whose immovable ramparts the men fought, Vincent's brigade met the enemy's shock. But the most determined bravery must yield before overwhelming numbers, and Vincent and his handful of men were borne down and would have become, together with the hill, the prize, had not General Weed, fortunately at that moment, arrived on the ground with his brigade. This new enemy was too much for the Confederates, and they retired from the hill—but not before both Generals Weed and Vincent had laid down their lives in its defence.

Birney's old division, which was the first to retreat from the line of the Emmitsburg road, sought the cover of the two brigades of General Barnes' division—5th corps—sent to its relief. These brigades joined battle with the Confederates, in the woods some distance in front of Little Round Top, and so overwhelming were they assailed—the assailants encouraged by the prospects of an easy victory—that they were soon routed. Then Caldwell's division—temporarily detached from Hancock's corps, to relieve the pressing necessities of this position, but slightly more to the right, by a detour along the flanks of Little Round Top, entered the low skirt of woodland, where they became at once hotly engaged. With unparalleled courage, inch by inch, from rock to rock, and from tree to tree, this division disputed the ground, but the impetuosity of the Confederates was irresistible—human effort could not stand before it, the little advantage of one moment was swept away in the general disaster, and, broken, overpowered, the division sought safety in flight, with the loss of one-half their number, and having to lament the death of two of its brave brigade commanders—Cross and Zook, falling at the heads of their commands.

General Ayers' division—mainly composed of regulars—now took the place that had been so disastrous to Barnes and Caldwell. This division stood like a wall of adamant to the fiercest shocks of the Confederates; and had defied every attempt to break its ranks, until being out-flanked, it manœuvred so as to form a new front, and under this advantage covered its retreat to the defences of Little Round Top.

The intermediate low ground from Round Top to the timber—the position of the Confederates—was now unoccupied. A long and hearty cheer arose from the Confederate lines, the dead in the woods behind them, the groans of the wounded around them, were alike forgotten in the thought that they had beaten the foe—that they had only to move forward to occupy the desired summit, and then they could rest their weary frames. The line was formed; and debouching from the cover of timber, every eye sought the heights beyond; and no wonder it is that a shudder passed over them and an involuntary "halt," for from the



crest of the hill, in the rays of the setting sun gleamed the brightness of an impassable wall of steel, and from every accessible crag and spur frowned down the gaping mouths of light and heavy artillery. In addition to the artillery, General Meade had thoroughly garnished the hill with fresh troops from the 5th and 6th corps.

But the pause was only for a moment. General Crawford's division of the Pennsylvania Reserves, with General McCandless' brigade in advance, moved quickly and in compact order down the slope of the hill; and with a volley and an order to charge, his men rushed upon the enemy with that determination and steadiness that contributed to the decision of more than one battle field. But Longstreet's troops were too used to success during the day, and thought the final victory too near their grasp, to yield without a desperate struggle. With words of cheer and examples of daring the Confederate officers urged on their men; for a few moments the result was in doubt; just then McCandless' brigade poured a destructive volley into the enemy's ranks, and the fight was decided at this point. Night was slowly settling down; the Confederates sought the shelter of a wheat field some distance in the rear, and there passed the night. Crawford's men occupied the timber—under cover of a stone wall, that had been the scene of such bloody fighting during the day.

But while the exciting scenes just mentioned were taking place in front of Round Top, while Sickles and Longstreet were massing their strength on a field that was favorable to the latter in all except the last grand struggle, it must not be thought that the remaining corps, divisions, and brigades were lying quietly on their arms uninterested spectators of the exciting scenes in their immediate vicinity. General Lee, in initiating the attack on the 3d corps, had other plans in view. The attack on Sickles and the possession of Little and Big Round Tops were the most important of Lee's plans, yet it was equally important that both Hill and Ewell should so threaten the Union lines that General Meade would not be able to weaken them by sending reinforcements to his left. In succession after the attack on the 3d corps, the conflict extended along the Federal line, and the 2d corps with the left of the 1st became hotly engaged. The action was of short duration, and resulted in the repulse of the Confederates, but not before General Hancock was wounded in the thigh, and General Gibbon, upon whom the command of the 2d corps devolved after the fall of Hancock, was wounded in the shoulder.

General Howard, already on the morning of the first day's fight, before the disaster to his own corps, saw the strategic importance of Cemetery and Culp's hills, and immediately detailed for their protection Steinwehr's division of his corps. As soon as General Meade arrived on the field, he at a glance saw that these two points were the keys to the Federal position, and felt the necessity of properly strengthening them by massed artillery in such positions as commanded the approaches. In addition to the artillery, Cemetery hill was protected at this hour by the 11th corps, Culp's hill by one brigade of General Geary's division of the 12th corps, the remaining two brigades having at an earlier hour been sent to the left of the line and having not yet returned, and General Williams' division, of the same corps, deployed farther to the right, by Spangler's hill, to cover the approaches by the way of Rock creek.



General Ewell had his whole corps by this time in position, and, in accordance with General Lee's plan of battle, detailed three brigades to carry the works on Cemetery hill, among which brigades were the celebrated Louisiana Tigers. Through the east end of the town and across the open field they came in solid column, exposed to a murderous fire from artillery and musketry. Not a waver in their line, though under a deadly fire, up to the foot of the hill, then with a rush they charged to the very mouths of the guns. Protected as the Federals were by hastily constructed earthworks, they poured volley after volley into the advancing ranks. For a few moments there was a hand to hand fight over the very guns, the Federal cannoniers even using rammers and handspikes when they were unable to serve their pieces any longer. So nearly were the Confederates in possession of this point, that they succeeded in spiking two guns. There is no doubt that the success of the Confederates in driving back the artillerymen, and thus capturing the point, was mainly due to the fact that the support of the artillery did not act with that promptness and determination that should characterize efficient troops. These supports were the shattered regiments of the 11th corps.

But just at the critical moment, when two guns were already spiked and the artillerymen were driven from more guns, General Richard Coulter's brigade, of the 6th corps, fell into a position commanding the threatened line, and at the command "Charge," precipitated itself upon the enemy. The fight was renewed with increased fury; the enemy were determined not to give up the victory so nearly won; Coulter's men at the point of the bayonet pressed them backward inch by inch; again they rallied; again were they repulsed. Their reinforcements did not arrive, and at last Early and his brigades were beaten back, and sought safety in flight. Early in this attack lost one-half his men, and was compelled by the steady fire from the lately beleaguered hill, to abandon his dead and wounded where they fell. Thus the second attack on the Federal lines during the day had failed of success, though at one period both promised victory for General Lee.

General Lee had now attacked in detail every part of the Federal line except one, and that was the position of the 12th corps, extending from Cemetery hill to Rock creek, with General Geary's division, now reduced to Greene's brigade, on Culp's hill, and Williams' division, on Spangler's hill, and Lockwood's Maryland brigade, temporarily assigned, on Wolf's hill. Greene's position was the weakest, as he had with his brigade to cover the division front, General Geary, with the remaining brigades, not yet having returned from the left. But his men were not idle, and pick and shovel were used to so good effect, that his men were protected by a line of rifle-pits following the line of the hills to the creek. The whole line was situated in a dense belt of timber. At 8½ o'clock, P.M., Johnson's division, of Ewell's corps, advanced under cover of the darkness and timber close to the Federal lines, and began a vigorous and simultaneous attack on the 12th corps from Culp's hill to Wolf's hill. The Federal batteries on Culp's Hill commanded to a certain extent an enfilading fire on the advancing enemy, and thus did admirable service from behind their earth-works in lifting the brunt of an overwhelming attack from Geary's line. Lockwood, on Wolf's hill, from among the rocky covers fought the enemy with success. In consequence of the broken and irregular formation of the hill, the fight was more on the guerilla order, each man for himself. After several hours stubborn fighting,





the Confederate left was driven back, except several small commands, which secured a lodgment in the timber near McAllister's dam, and surrendered as prisoners the next morning when they discovered that they were isolated and surrounded.

Farther towards the left, Williams' division held the ground in the timber and open meadow around Spangler's spring. His right was pushed back to McAllister's dam, by a superior force of the enemy, who tried to force his lines on the west bank of Rock creek, but being exposed to the fire of a Federal battery on the Baltimore road, they fell back out of reach of Williams' line. Between Williams' division and the batteries on Culp's hill, lay Greene's brigade. As though knowing intuitively that this was the weakest point of the 12th corps, General Lee made this the principal point of attack, and to Generals Stewart and Walker, of Ewell's corps, was assigned the duty of directing the assault. Again and again did these Generals hurl their forces against Greene, and again and again were they repulsed. Greene's men, from behind their rifle-pits, delivered volley after volley into the rapidly-thinning ranks of the foe. After several assaults, Walker and Stewart drew off their commands, reduced by the fight more than one-half, and left Greene in undisputed possession of the ground.

Between Greene and Williams was a gap made vacant by the withdrawal of Geary's two brigades, and which was but poorly garnished by the details from Greene. This weak position was also sharply attacked, and everything was carried away before the Confederates. Advancing through this gap by the southern flank of Culp's hill, a considerable Confederate force passed around the flanks of the Federal lines, and, without any opposition, reached a position a little to the east of the Baltimore road and within a third of a mile of General Meade's headquarters. Probably fearing a trap, as they saw no enemy, they withdrew by the same way they came and took up their quarters for the remainder of the night under cover of the very rifle pits dug by their enemy.

Thus closed the second day's battle. General Meade's losses had been heavy; Sickles had been driven back from his first line; Caldwell's, Barnes', and Ayers' divisions had been badly cut up; Generals Hancock and Gibbon were wounded; Generals Vincent, Weed, Zook, and Cross were killed; two guns were spiked, but, on the other hand, the new line of the 3d corps was infinitely better adapted to defence in front, and guarded by natural fortifications on its outer flank; the enemy had failed in their assaults at all but one small gap between Greene and Williams; Meade's army was jubilant over its successes; the men felt as though the tide of invasion was again to be rolled back to the soil where treason first drew the sword; his line was stronger now than at any previous hour of the engagement, and he felt more able to repel attack.

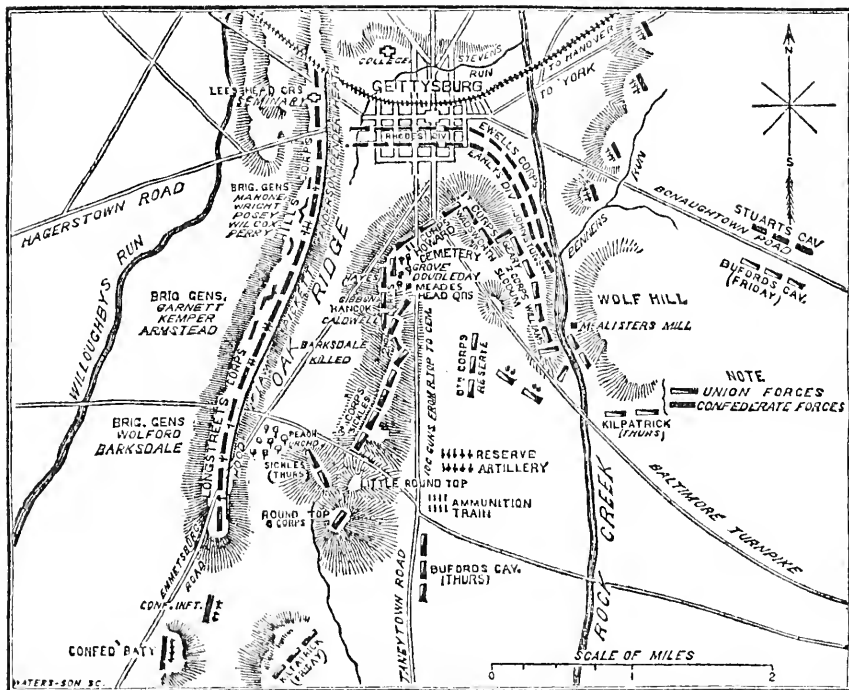
#### THE THIRD DAY'S BATTLE.

During the night, Pickett's division of Longstreet's corps came up from Chambersburg and took position between Anderson and Heth, nearly opposite the Federal left centre. Rodes, also, withdrew the main part of his division from the town, uniting with Early's command in front of the Federal right in such a way as to take advantage, as soon as morning opened, of the break made



in the right of Geary's division the evening previous. McGowan's and Daniel's brigades, of Hill's corps, were moved to the support of Johnson's line in front of Culp's hill, while Smith's and Walker's brigades, of Longstreet's corps, were also sent to the Confederate left.

At an early hour Colonel Best, who had placed his artillery on Powers' hill, an advantageous position on the Baltimore road to the rear of Cemetery hill, opened a furious cannonade, to dislodge the Confederates from their position in Geary's line. For an hour the storm of shot and shell raged. There had been



PLAN OF THE BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG.

no reply yet from the enemy. Then General Geary, having returned from Round Top with two brigades, and General Shaler, with a brigade of the 6th corps, began the attack, and for an hour and a half the battle raged with unexampled fury in the timber of Spangler's hill and spring. Steadily the Federals advanced, driving the enemy from point to point, taking advantage promptly of every defection in the foe's ranks, and ably supported by part of the 5th corps and Humphreys' division of the 3d corps. The ground was obstinately contested, and Geary was making slow work in dislodging the enemy, when Greene executed a flank movement so as to give his brigade a more commanding position, and Lockwood's brigade, on Wolf's hill, being reinforced and forming an advance line, secured an enfilade fire. Assaulted now in both flanks as well as in front, the enemy were compelled to fall back, but only to take up a new line—make a last stand. Geary, now being in possession of his



original line, made a bold dash on the new line of the enemy, who, failing of promised reinforcements, made but one effort to stem the tide of defeat and then sought safety in flight. Thus the Confederates were dislodged from their advantages of the evening before, but at a heavy loss for both sides. General Meade's line was now again intact from extreme right to extreme left, the enemy having been repulsed at every point. Thus closed the battle on the Federal right.

The next act in this bloody drama was the great duel with cannon between the two armies, preparatory to Pickett's grand charge. "The movements of the enemy (Confederates)," says the *Annual Encyclopedia*, "thus far had been made rather to cover up his designs than as serious efforts against General Meade. The battle of the previous day had demonstrated that the issue of the struggle turned on the occupation of Cemetery hill. To get this, therefore, was the object of General Lee. Early in the morning preparations had been made by General Lee for a general attack on General Meade's whole line, while a large force was concentrated against his centre for the purpose of taking by force the ground he occupied." With this object in view and for the purpose of preparing for the infantry assault, General Lee massed his artillery in a line that enveloped more than one-half of the point against which the attack was to be directed, namely, Cemetery Hill, and the positions of the 1st and 2d corps on the prolongation of this hill towards Round Top. "General Longstreet massed a large number of long range guns—fifty-five in number—" says the correspondent of the *Richmond Enquirer*, writing from the battle-field, "upon the crest of a slight eminence just in front of Perry's and Wilcox's brigades, and a little to the left of the heights upon which they were to open. Lieutenant-General Hill massed some sixty guns along the hill in front of Posey's and Mahone's brigades and almost immediately in front of the heights." These parks of artillery were increased by batteries in position farther towards the flanks.

General Meade had not been idle during these hours. Satisfied that General Lee's intentions were to make a general assault on Cemetery hill and the lines of the 1st and 2d corps, he did what any good commander would have done, namely, strengthened this part of his position. He put his artillery in position, battery after battery forming in park, until he had at least one hundred guns in line. The infantry divisions and brigades were protected by reserve lines wherever it was thought there was the greatest danger of penetration in the anticipated charge.

At 1 o'clock the signal gun was fired and the cannonading began—cannonading that, for number of pieces, intensity of fire and duration, has never had its equal on the Western Continent and scarcely a superior in the annals of European warfare. It is thus described by a spectator in the Federal lines: "The storm broke upon us so suddenly that soldiers and officers, who leaped as it began from their tents or lazy seats on the grass, were stricken in their rising with mortal wounds, and died—some with cigars between their teeth, some with pieces of food in their fingers, and one at least—a pale young German from Pennsylvania—with a miniature of his sister in his hands. Horses fell, shrieking such awful cries as Cooper told of, and writhing themselves about in mortal agony. The boards of fences, scattered by explosion, flew in splinters



through the air. The earth, torn up in clouds, blinded the eyes of hurrying men; and through the branches of the trees and among the gravestones of the cemetery a shower of destruction crashed ceaselessly." From Batchelder's Illustrated Tourist's Guide, the following account of the artillery duel and the movements of Federal troops is taken: "At one o'clock the artillery fire opened, and for two hours the heaviest artillery duel ever experienced on this continent was kept up. When it closed, the infantry (Confederate) advanced and like an avalanche swept majestically across the plain. It was received with a fearful hurricane of missiles, solid shot, spherical case, shrapnell, shell, canister, and every invention known to modern warfare. Still on it came, up to the very works behind which lay the Union troops. The Union line was broken at the 'copse' of trees, and forced back over the ridge; and for a moment of terrible suspense, victory hung trembling in the balance. Hall's brigade on Webb's left (Webb being in command of the temporarily broken line) rushed to his assistance, and Hays' division rose from the stone wall and delivered a perfect sheet of flame. Woodruff's battery, in the grove to our right, was run forward, turned to the left and swept the whole valley with canister. The 8th Ohio volunteers, on the skirmish line beyond the grove and the Emmittsburg road, 'changed front forward on left company;' Stannard's brigade, on Hall's left, moved by the right flank, 'changed front forward on first battalion;' Webb's first line united with his reserve, and all opened a converging fire of musketry, and the repulse was complete; 4,500 men threw down their arms and came in as prisoners."

The correspondent of the Richmond *Enquirer* gives the following graphic picture of the artillery duel and Pickett's charge which followed: "The fire of our guns was concentrated upon the enemy's line on the heights stormed the day before by Wright's brigade. Our fire drew a most terrific one from the enemy's batteries, posted along the heights from a point near Cemetery hill to the point in their line opposite to the position of Wilcox. I have never yet heard such artillery firing. The enemy must have had over one hundred guns, which, in addition to our one hundred and fifteen, made the air hideous with most discordant noise; the very earth shook beneath our feet, and the hills and rocks seemed to reel like a drunken man. For one and a half hours this most terrific firing was continued, during which time the shrieking of shells, the crash of falling timber, the fragments of rock flying through the air shattered from the cliffs by solid shot, the heavy mutterings from the valley between the opposing armies, the splash of bursting shrapnell and the fierce neighing of wounded artillery horses, made a picture terribly grand and sublime, but which my pen utterly fails to describe. Now the storming party was moved up, Pickett's division in advance, supported on the right by Wilcox's brigade, and on the left by Heth's division commanded by Pettigrew. The left of Pickett's division occupied the same ground over which Wright had passed the day before. I stood upon an eminence and watched this advance with great interest; I had seen brave men pass over that fatal valley the day before; I had witnessed their death struggle with the foe on the opposite heights; I had observed their return with shattered ranks, a bleeding mass, but with unstained banners; now I saw their valiant comrades prepare for the same





bloody trial, and already felt that their efforts would be vain, unless their supports should be as true as steel and as brave as lions. Now they move forward; with steady, measured tread they advance upon the foe. Their banners float defiantly in the breeze, as onward in beautiful order they press across the plain. I have never seen since the war began (and I have been in all the great fights of this army) troops enter a fight in such splendid order as did this splendid division of Pickett's. Now Pettigrew's command emerge from the woods upon Pickett's left, and sweep down the slope of the hill to the valley beneath, and some two or three hundred yards in the rear of Pickett. I saw by the wavering of this line as they entered the conflict that they wanted the firmness of nerve and steadiness of tread which so characterized Pickett's men, and I felt that these men would not, could not stand the tremendous ordeal to which they would be soon subjected. These were mostly raw troops which had been recently brought from the South, and who had, perhaps, never been under fire—who certainly had never been in any very severe fight—and I trembled for their conduct. Just as Pickett was getting well under the enemy's fire, our batteries ceased firing. This was a fearful moment for Pickett and his brave command. Why do not our guns re-open their fire? is the inquiry that rises upon every lip. Still our batteries are as silent as death! But on press Pickett's brave Virginians; and now the enemy open upon them from more than fifty guns, a terrible fire of grape, shell, and canister. On, on they move in unbroken line, delivering a deadly fire as they advance. Now they have reached the Emmitsburg road, and here they meet a severe fire from the heavy masses of the enemy's infantry, posted behind the stone fence, while their artillery, now free from the annoyance of our artillery, turn their whole fire upon this devoted band. Still they remain firm. Now again they advance; they storm the stone fence; the Yankees fly. The enemy's batteries are, one by one, silenced in quick succession as Pickett's men deliver their fire at the gunners and drive them from their pieces. I see Kemper and Armistead plant their banners in the enemy's works. I heard their glad shouts of victory.

"Let us look after Pettigrew's division," continues the same correspondent. "Where are they now? While the victorious shout of the gallant Virginians is still ringing in my ears, I turn my eyes to the left, and there, all over the plain in utmost confusion, is scattered this strong division. Their line is broken; they are flying, apparently panic-stricken, to the rear. The gallant Pettigrew is wounded, but he still retains command, and is vainly striving to rally his men. Still the moving mass rush pell-mell to the rear, and Pickett is left alone to contend with the hordes of the enemy now pouring in on him on every side. Garnett falls, killed by a minie ball, and Kemper, the brave and chivalrous, reels under a mortal wound and is taken to the rear. Now the enemy move around strong flanking bodies of infantry, and are rapidly gaining Pickett's rear. The order is given to fall back, and our men commence the movement, doggedly contending for every inch of ground. The enemy press heavily our retreating line, and many noble spirits who had passed safely through the fiery ordeal of the advance charge, now fall on the right and on the left. Armistead is wounded and left in the enemy's hands. At this critical moment the shattered remnant of Wright's



Georgia brigade is moved forward to cover their retreat, and the fight closes here."

During this attack on General Meade's left centre, Generals Longstreet and Ewell threatened the Federal flanks, but without any apparent success. With the repulse of Pickett closed General Lee's aggressive movements, and from this on he acted mainly on the defensive.

The Federal ammunition and provision trains had been placed in position to the rear of Round Top as a place of security. While the assault by Pickett was being made against the Federal left centre, Hood's and McLaw's divisions attempted to gain possession of these trains by executing a flank movement to the south of Round Top, by turning the flank of the 6th corps. The enemy advanced in three lines and were meeting with considerable success when General Kilpatrick, whose cavalry division had been on duty protecting the Federal left flank, made a vigorous attack on the flank of the rear line of the enemy. This threw the enemy in confusion, and Kilpatrick moving his left rapidly forward, exposed the foe to the danger of being completely enveloped and cut off from their supports. The Pennsylvania Reserves, under McCandless, pressed hotly upon the enemy in front of Round Top and drove them back in disorder, leaving part of a battery, three hundred prisoners, and five thousand stand of arms in the hands of this gallant command. At the same time General Gregg and his cavalry made an assault, in accordance with orders, on Ewell's left and Stuart's cavalry, and met with decisive success.

This closed the battle of Gettysburg—a battle unsurpassed in desperate fighting, distinguished bravery on both sides, and heavy losses, in any of the many battles of the war—a battle than which none was as important in ultimate results. Up to this time the general average of results was in favor of the Confederate forces; although defeated in numerous engagements, the troops of the Confederacy were handled in such a manner that victory resulted even out of defeat. Never had the chances of the Confederacy been so bright nor their hopes of success so apparently assured. All three of its armies were flushed with recent victories; Lee's army with the victory of Chancellorsville; the army of the Tennessee with a series of out-maneuvres of their Federal opponents, and General Grant's hammering away at Vicksburg it was confidently predicted would result in defeat. When General Lee decided on the Pennsylvania invasion, although undertaken contrary to the advice and far-seeing counsels of discerning Southerners, including even Mr. Davis, the President of the Confederacy, he felt, and the world endorsed it, that he was at the head of an army that had never known defeat. This confidence is further indicated by General Lee changing the character of the war from a defensive to an aggressive one. Although not anxious to precipitate a general engagement, and manœuvring in such a manner as to avoid it, yet General Lee did not wish the world to understand by this conduct that he entertained any doubts of the result of such an engagement. General Lee's plan of the invasion, no doubt, included the burden of the support of both armies by the Northern States, and at the same time to so manœuvre his army and so take position that the Federal army would have to assume the attack and thus expose New York, Philadelphia, Baltimore, and Washington to his control. He had fully weighed the military energy and capacities for moving large bodies



of men with rapidity from one base to another, as shown by the previous Federal commanders; but Meade's promptness and celerity in following him upon the east slope of the mountains completely disconcerted his calculations. When Reynolds and Hill began the fight on Wednesday morning, and Ewell's corps crushed down all opposition, so that the advantages of the day were in favor of the Southern army, General Lee had no idea that he was in front of the whole army of the Potomac. The result of the first day's fight confirmed this theory; and the Confederate forces were inspired with such unbounded enthusiasm at the success of Wednesday's fighting that General Lee could not doubtlessly have prevented an attack by his troops even when he learned that he was confronted by the whole army of the Potomac. Howard's selection and Hancock's wise defences of Cemetery hill, and the lines on elevated ground both towards the right and left which were protected by Wolf's hill and Little and Big Round Top, did much to ensure the success of the Federal forces and repel the repeated assaults of the enemy. Notwithstanding General Lee's orders and congratulations to his troops shortly after the battle convinced his men even against the facts that their defeat was not so great as it was in reality, this battle was the great turning point of the war. The army of Northern Virginia, whose boast had been that it had never suffered defeat, received here a blow from which it never recovered, sustained losses which all the governmental machinery could never replace. From this date on to the close of the war, never was the Confederacy able to put such an army into the field, and was compelled after this time to act on the defensive instead of initiating campaigns.

The following is as nearly an official list of the casualties of the battles as is obtainable. The Federal losses were four thousand eight hundred and thirty-four killed, including those who died in the various general hospitals located on the field by the surgeons in charge; fourteen thousand seven hundred and nine wounded, and six thousand six hundred and forty-three missing, of whom nearly four thousand were taken prisoners, mostly from Howard's corps in the first day's fight; making a total loss of twenty-five thousand one hundred and eighty-six. Among the killed were Generals Reynolds, Vincent, Weed, Zook, Cross, and Farnsworth—the last named falling in Kilpatrick's charge on Hood's command on the extreme left, late on Friday afternoon. The list of wounded included Major-Generals Sickles, Hancock, Butterfield, Doubleday, and Birney, and Brigadier-Generals Barlow, Barnes, Gibbon, Hunt, Graham, Paul, and Willard.

The Confederate loss was six thousand five hundred killed; twenty-six thousand wounded; nine thousand prisoners, and four thousand stragglers; making a grand total loss of over forty thousand men, besides three guns, forty-one standards, and twenty-five thousand stand of small arms. Their retreat was so hasty that many of their dead were buried by the Union forces, and their means of conveyance so inadequate that several thousand of their wounded fell into the Federal hands, an insufficient number of surgeons being left with the wounded to give them the proper surgical attention. Among the dead were Major-Generals Pender, and Brigadier-Generals Barksdale (died on the battle field), Armistead (died in Federal hospital several days after), Garnett (in Pickett's charge), and Semmes; the wounded were Major-Generals Hood, Heth, and Trimble, and Brigadier-Generals Kemper, Scales, Anderson, Pettigrew, wounded in the battle field and killed



at Falling Waters, Hampton, Jones, and Jenkins. Generals Archer and Kemper were among the prisoners taken—the former captured with the Mississippi brigade in the first day's fight, the latter abandoned in the Seminary hospital as mortally wounded on the retreat of his command. The excess in killed and wounded among the Confederates is due to the fact that General Lee was compelled, being the attacking party, to fight his men on more open ground. The numerical strength of the two armies is rather difficult to determine, but it is a safe statement to put General Lee's army, when it crossed the Potomac, at one hundred and five thousand men, with ninety-five thousand actively engaged; the Federal seventy-five thousand, with sixty-five thousand actively engaged.

Friday night passed away without any alarms—the Federals in doubt whether the fight was to be renewed on the following day, while General Lee was perfecting his arrangements to successfully conduct his retrograde movement to the Potomac and the valley of the Shenandoah. Under the cover of the darkness General Ewell's corps was withdrawn from its line through the town and placed in the works on Seminary ridge. At an early hour on Saturday morning strong details from both armies began the solemn work of burying the dead and collecting the wounded into the general hospitals. The dead of both armies were interred after the usual hasty manner of such burying parties, on the field where they fell. (Afterwards the Union dead were collected together in the National cemetery, with the exception of between one thousand and twelve hundred who were removed to their homes in the loyal States. The Confederate dead remained in their hasty graves, in the cultivated fields and rocky timber land, with very little effort made to distinguish them from each other until after the war, when the bodies as far as possible were raised, cofined, and removed to places of interment among their friends in the South.) The morning was hazy, and for several hours the rain fell in torrents. From an early hour General Lee was sending towards Hagerstown such of his wounded as could bear transportation or had been removed within his lines during the progress of the battle. After noon, he began withdrawing, by the roads leading through the mountain passes, his artillery and wagon trains, with which latter he was heavily loaded down—the product of the rich Pennsylvania farms upon which contributions had been levied right and left. By dark the whole Confederate army was in motion in the same direction, its retreat concealed and protected by a heavy rear column. The route taken was by Fairfield and the Monterey mountain gap. On Monday General Lee reached Hagerstown, and took position with his army.

The pursuit by General Meade is thus given in his report: "The 5th and 6th of July were employed in succoring the wounded and burying the dead. Major General Sedgwick, commanding the 6th corps, having pushed the pursuit of the enemy as far as the Fairfield pass and the mountains, and reporting that the pass was very strong—one in which a small force of the enemy could hold in check and delay for a considerable time any pursuing force—I determined to follow the enemy by a flank movement, and accordingly, leaving McIntosh's brigade of cavalry and Neil's brigade of infantry to continue harrassing the enemy, I put the army in motion for Middletown (Maryland), and orders were immediately sent to Major-General French, at Frederick, to re-occupy Harper's Ferry, and send a force to occupy Turner's Pass, in South mountain. I subse-





quently ascertained that Major-General French had not only anticipated these orders in part, but had pushed a cavalry force to Williamsport and Falling Waters, where they destroyed the enemy's pontoon bridge and captured its guard. Buford was at the same time sent to Williamsport and Hagerstown. The duty above assigned to the cavalry was most successfully accomplished, the enemy being greatly harrassed, his trains destroyed, and many captures of guns and prisoners made. After halting a day at Middletown to procure necessary supplies and bring up trains, the army moved through South mountain, and by the 12th of July was in front of the enemy, who occupied a strong position on the heights near the marsh which runs in advance of Williamsport. In taking this position, several skirmishes and affairs had been had with the enemy, principally by the cavalry and the 6th corps. The 13th was occupied in reconnoissances of the enemy's position and preparations for an attack, but on advancing on the morning of the 14th, it was ascertained that he had retired the night previous by the bridge at Falling Waters and ford at Williamsport. The cavalry overtook the rear guard at Falling Waters, capturing two guns and numerous prisoners. Previous to the retreat of the enemy, Gregg's division of cavalry was crossed at Harper's Ferry, and coming up with the rear of the enemy at Charlestown and Shepardstown, had a spirited contest, in which the enemy was driven to Martinsburg and Winchester, and pursued and harrassed in his retreat."

"The pursuit was resumed by a flank movement," continues General Meade in his report, "of the army, crossing the Potomac at Berlin and moving down the Loudon valley. The cavalry were immediately pushed into several passes of the Blue ridge, and having learned from servants of the withdrawal of the Confederate army from the lower valley of the Shenandoah, the army (the 3d corps, Major General French, being in advance), was moved into Manassas gap, in the hope of being able to intercept a portion of the enemy in possession of the gap, which was disputed so successfully as to enable the rear guard to withdraw by the way of Strasburg. The Confederate army retiring to the Rapidan, a position was taken with this army on the line of the Rappahannock, and the campaign terminated about the close of July."

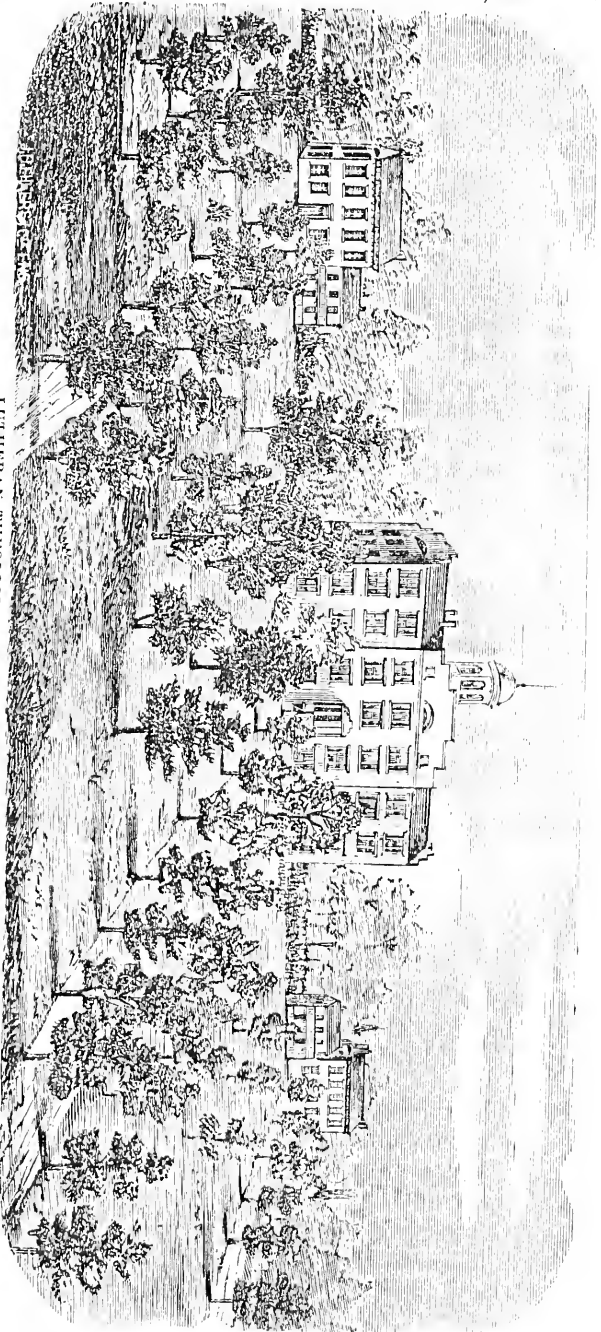
The history of this battle would be incomplete without recording the part taken in it by the raw troops organized mostly in the States of Pennsylvania and New York, and assembled at Harrisburg by orders from the War Department. General Couch, the commander of this department, did all he could to organize for active service these troops, in connection with General W. F. Smith, who was assigned to the command of the 1st division. This division took position opposite Harrisburg when General Lee's army was advancing by the Cumberland valley, and constructed a system of earth-works for defence. As soon as Lee's retreat became known General Smith advanced up the valley with six thousand infantry, two batteries, and a small force of cavalry, and at Carlisle met General W. H. H. Lee, who expected to meet Ewell there. Lee attacked Smith with artillery, but the latter was so well posted that the attack was soon abandoned. General Smith advanced towards Chambersburg, followed by General Dana with the second division of Couch's command. General Couch now transferred his headquarters to Chambersburg, but General Lee soon after



this withdrew with his whole army to the south side of the Potomac, and these two divisions saw no further service at this time.

GETTYSBURG, a post borough and the county seat, stands on a beautiful plain midway between two slightly elevated ridges a little more than a mile apart—the one to the west being known as Seminary ridge, while the one to the south-east is called Cemetery hill—and is within easy view of the South mountain, eight miles distant, which sweeps in a majestic curve far as the eye can reach to the south and north-east. It is surrounded by a fertile and well cultivated country, which exports annually large quantities of farm produce. It is noted for its pure and salubrious air, and has long been esteemed as one of the healthiest districts in the State. The town was laid out by James Gettys about the year 1780, and has been named after him. It became the county seat of Adams in 1800, and incorporated as a borough in 1807. The court house, jail, and almshouse are large and commodious buildings, and are well adapted to their several uses. The private dwellings are generally built in a neat

LUTHERAN THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY AT GETTYSBURG.





and substantial manner, while a few of those more recently erected display much taste and elegance in their architecture and surroundings. Gettysburg branch of the Hanover Junction, Hanover, and Gettysburg railroad has its western terminus here, and is doing a fair business. It has changed hands several times, and is at present owned and worked by the Hanover company. It was formally opened to business on Thursday, December 16, 1859.

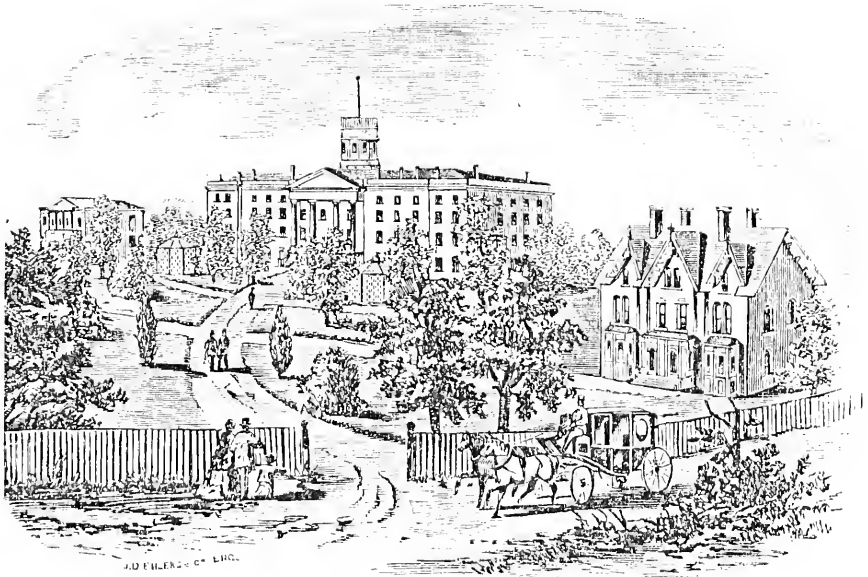
A Lutheran Theological Seminary is located here, and is in a flourishing condition. This highly important and useful Institution, established by the General Synod, was opened for the reception of students in 1826. Dr. S. S. Schmucker, who was the first professor, served in that position for almost forty years. Over five hundred men have been students in this seminary. It is under the control of a Board of Directors, chosen by eight surrounding synods. The present faculty consist of Rev. James A. Brown, D.D., professor of didactic theology, and chairman of the faculty; Rev. Charles A. Hay, D.D., professor of Hebrew and the Old Testament exegesis, German language and literature, and pastoral theology; Rev. E. J. Wolf, A.M., professor of Greek and New Testament exegesis, Biblical and ecclesiastical history and archæology; Rev. J. G. Morris, D.D., lecturer on pulpit eloquence and the relations of science and revelation. Through the liberality of Rev. S. A. Holman, A.M., a lectureship on the Augsburg Confession has been endowed, and also another on "Methods in Ministerial Work," by John L. Rice, Esq., of Baltimore. An appropriate celebration of the fiftieth anniversary and a general reunion has recently taken place in connection with the commencement in June, 1876.

The seminary edifice is a plain but handsome four-story brick building, 40 by 100 feet, occupying a commanding eminence on a ridge about half a mile to the west of the town, of which it commands a beautiful view. A number of rooms have been furnished by congregations and benevolent individuals, by which the expenses of indigent students are materially diminished. At a short distance on each side of the seminary are fine, large brick houses, occupied by professors in the institution. The library of the seminary is one of the most valuable collections of theological works in this country, containing many volumes written in all the languages of Europe, and treating of every branch of theological science. A large number of these were procured in Germany by the Rev. Benjamin Kurtz, D.D., and many others, consisting of the latest and best works of English and American theological literature, were subsequently obtained through the personal exertions of Dr. Schmucker.

Pennsylvania College is charmingly situated in the town. It had its origin in the wants of the community in general, and in those of the Theological Seminary in particular. Some of the applicants for admission to that institution being found deficient in classical attainments, it was resolved in 1827 to establish a preparatory school, to be under the direction of the Lutheran Church, and appointed Rev. S. S. Schmucker, D.D., and Rev. J. Herbst to select a teacher and make the necessary arrangements for the establishment of the school. Rev. D. Jacobs, A.M., was chosen as teacher, and in June, 1827, the school went into operation, as a preparatory department of the seminary. From this humble beginning it gradually rose to importance and influence. The school building was sold for debt in 1829, and was purchased by Dr. Schmucker, who divided the



price of the purchase into shares of fifty dollars each, which he induced prominent ministers in different parts of the country to purchase. Certain articles of agreement, which were duly executed, gave to the stockholders the management of the fiscal affairs of the school, and to the directors and professors of the Theological Seminary the selection of the teachers and the regulation of the course of study and discipline, and giving to the school the title of Gettysburg Gymnasium. Under the new management the number of pupils increased very rapidly. Rev. D. Jacobs died in 1830, and was succeeded in 1831 by Rev. H. L.



PENNSYLVANIA COLLEGE, GETTYSBURG.

Baugher, A.M., as Principal. The number of pupils continuing to increase, measures were adopted a few years later by which a charter was obtained from the Legislature incorporating the institution under the name of Pennsylvania College. The college was organized, under very favorable auspices, on the 4th of July, 1832, and went into full operation in October following. Professors in the different departments were at once appointed, Drs. Schmucker and Hazelius, of the Theological Seminary, serving temporarily and gratuitously, the former as professor of intellectual and moral philosophy, the latter as professor of the Latin language. Rev. H. L. Baugher and Professor M. Jacobs, who had already established a high reputation as teachers in the Gymnasium, were regularly appointed, the former as professor of the Greek language and literature, and the latter as professor of mathematics and the physical sciences. Through the strenuous exertions of Thaddeus Stevens, who then (1833) represented Adams county in the Legislature, fifteen thousand dollars were appropriated by the Commonwealth to this institution, payable in five years. Without this opportune succor, it is doubtful if Pennsylvania College would have become an established fact. In October, 1834, Rev. C. P. Krauth, D.D., a gentleman of





ripe scholarship, became president of the college. From this time the college entered upon a career of great success and prosperity, other teachers and professors being added from time to time, as the needs of the institution required and its means justified. In connection with the college, and as a feeder to it, there is a preparatory department, in which instruction is given in all the branches usually embraced in a thorough English course, and affording to those who desire to prepare for business, or for college, every advantage for acquiring a knowledge of the elements of Latin, Greek, and mathematics. A large and commodious building was erected a few years ago on Carlisle Street, several hundred yards east of the college, for the use of the preparatory department, and has been named Stevens Hall, in honor of Thaddens Stevens, a life-long friend of the college, who donated \$500 for that purpose.

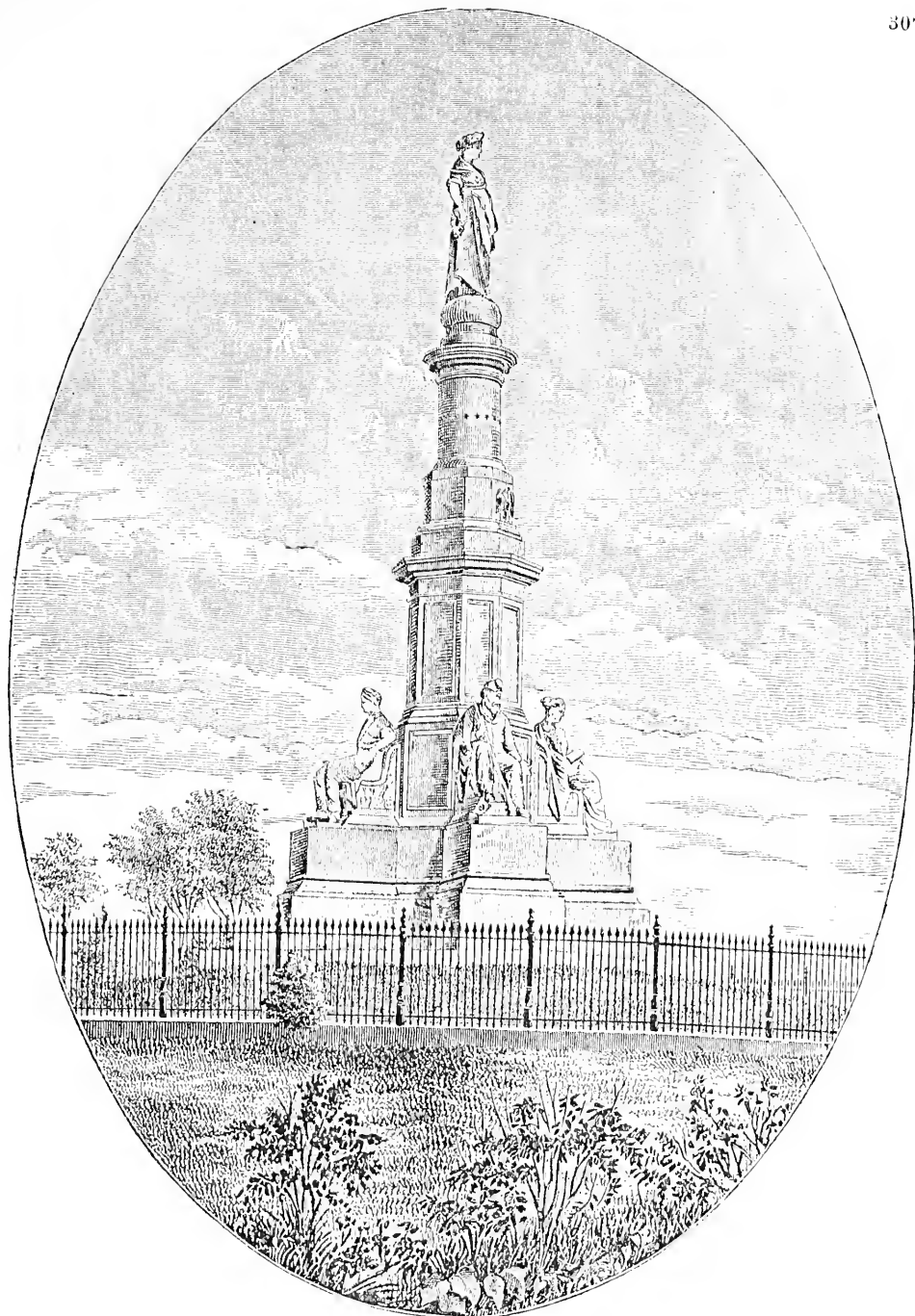
Through the liberality of some of the friends of the college, an observatory has been erected and furnished with a full equipment of astronomical and meteorological instruments. A large equatorial telescope has been mounted, a transit instrument, an astronomical clock, and chronograph have been purchased, and are freely used for the general purposes of class instruction.

A large gymnasium has also recently been erected, affording opportunity to students for exercise, recreation, and general physical culture. The students attend, under such regulations as they themselves, in their Gymnasium Association, establish, and ample time is afforded for voluntary exercise. The college library contains 7,200 valuable works. Each of the libraries of the two literary societies contains 6,000 volumes of well selected and standard volumes, to which additions are constantly made by donations and by appropriations of money for that purpose.

Linnaen Hall stands a few rods west of the college building, contains a large and valuable collection of zoological specimens, minerals, fossils, coins, relics, antiquities, and other curiosities. The botanical collection is large and well arranged, and contains a full representation of American flora. Few colleges possess a more complete cabinet of minerals than the one now belonging to Pennsylvania College.

The Soldiers' National Cemetery is by far the most attractive and sadly beautiful of the many points of interest on the field of Gettysburg. Here, beneath the soil they defended so well, repose the brave men who, after surviving many a hard-fought engagement, came at last to die on these beautiful hills and plains. Here, under the sod which so many of them drenched with their life's blood, rest the heroes who saved a nation, and whose noble deeds will ever merit a grateful people's remembrance. This cemetery embraces seventeen acres of gently rising ground south of the Baltimore turnpike, and adjoining Evergreen Cemetery. Owing to the necessary haste with which everything had to be done during the battle, and for some days subsequent to it, many of our brave soldiers were but insufficiently buried. Indeed, many of those who fell during the first day's fight remained unburied until Monday, the sixth day following after Lee's retreat, when decomposition had so far progressed as to render anything like proper interment impossible. A few bodies received no burial whatever, and were left to be devoured by hogs and birds. In many cases the bodies were left as they fell, and were covered only by heaping a little loose earth over them. The rains





NATIONAL MONUMENT AT GETTYSBURG.  
[From a Photograph by W. H. Tipton & Co., Gettysburg.]



soon washing off this meagre covering, the bodies were left exposed. As a general thing the marks on the graves, where marked at all, were but temporary, and were liable to be speedily obliterated by the action of the weather. Such was the spectacle that presented itself to Governor Curtin, who, shortly after the battle, visited the hospitals in and around Gettysburg for the purpose of ministering to the wants of the wounded and dying. The Governor and a few friends, among whom was David Wills, of Gettysburg, at once conceived the idea of taking measures for collecting these remains and burying them decently and in order, in a cemetery to be provided for the purpose. Mr. Wills accordingly submitted a proposition and plan for this purpose, by letter dated July 24, 1863, to Governor Curtin. The Governor promptly approved the measure, and directed Mr. Wills to correspond with the Governors of the different States with a view to securing their co-operation and aid. The project was seconded with great promptness by all the executives addressed on the subject. Grounds favorably situated were selected by Mr. Wills, as agent for Governor Curtin, and purchased for the State of Pennsylvania, "for the specific purpose of the burial of the soldiers who fell in defence of the Union in the battle of Gettysburg, and that lots in this cemetery should be gratuitously tendered to each State having such dead on the field. The expenses of the removal of the dead, of the laying out, ornamenting, and enclosing the grounds, and erecting a lodge for the keeper, and of constructing a suitable monument to the memory of the dead, to be borne by the several States, and assessed in proportion to their population."

The grounds embraced in this cemetery are those on which the Federal line of battle rested on the second and third days of July, and constitute the most prominent and important position on the whole battle-field. They have been tastefully laid out with walks and lawns, and planted with trees and shrubs. The cemetery proper is located on the central and highest portion of the grounds, next the citizens' burial-ground, and is in the form of a semi-circle, within which the bodies of the fallen soldiers are interred in sections, a large granite block with suitable inscription marking the section for each State respectively, with the number of bodies in each. The head-stones to the graves are all alike, and form a continuous line of granite blocks, rising nine inches above the ground, and having the name, company, and regiment, of each soldier sculptured on it.

The entrance to the cemetery-grounds is on the Baltimore turnpike, through a large iron gateway, appropriately ornamented, with a beautiful iron fence the whole length of the front.

The interments in the National Cemetery are as follows: Maine, 104; New Hampshire, 49; Vermont, 61; Massachusetts, 159; Rhode Island, 12; Connecticut, 22; New York, 867; New Jersey, 78; Pennsylvania, 534; Delaware, 15; Maryland, 22; West Virginia, 11; Ohio, 131; Indiana, 80; Illinois, 6; Michigan, 171; Wisconsin, 73; Minnesota, 52; United States regulars, 138; three lots with unknown dead, 979—total, 3,564.

The care of the cemetery by commissioners from so many States being found inconvenient and burdensome, it was resolved by the board of managers, June 22, 1871, to enter into negotiations with the Secretary of War for its transfer to the General Government. After some correspondence and several conferences.



the cemetery was finally transferred to the United States, and on the 1st day of May, 1872, the National Government took formal and complete possession and control of it.

The National monument, so grand in conception, so happy in design, and so beautiful in execution, occupies a commanding position near the semi-circle of graves, and was erected by the several States in memory of the brave men who here offered up their lives on the altar of their country. The design of the monument is purely historical, and has been executed in a manner so strikingly natural and truthful that any discerning mind will at a glance comprehend its full meaning and purpose.

The superstructure is sixty feet high, and consists of a massive pedestal of light grey granite, from Westerly, Rhode Island, twenty-five feet square at the base, and is crowned with a colossal statue of white marble, representing the GENIUS OF LIBERTY. Standing upon a three-quarter globe, she holds with her right hand the victor's wreath of laurel, while with her left she clasps the victorious sword.

Projecting from the angles of the pedestals are four buttresses, supporting an equal number of allegorical statues of white marble, representing respectively, WAR, HISTORY, PEACE, and PLENTY. . . . WAR is personified by a statue of an American soldier, who, resting from the conflict, relates to HISTORY the story of the battle which this monument is intended to commemorate. . . . HISTORY, in listening attitude, records with stylus and tablet the achievements of the field, and the names of the honored dead. . . . PEACE is symbolized by a statue of the American mechanic, characterized by appropriate accessories. . . . PLENTY is represented by a female figure, with a sheaf of wheat and the fruits of the earth, typifying peace and abundance as the soldier's crowning triumph.

This beautiful monument and statuary were designed by J. G. Batterson, of Hartford, Connecticut, and were executed in Italy under the immediate supervision of Randolph Rogers, the distinguished American sculptor. The main die of the pedestal is octagonal in form, paneled upon each face. The cornice and plinth above are also octagonal, and are heavily moulded. Upon this plinth rests an octagonal moulded base bearing upon its face, in high relief, the National arms. The upper die and cap are circular in form, the die being encircled by stars equal in number with the States, whose sons gave up their lives as the price of the victory won at Gettysburg.

This monument, as it stands, cost \$50,000. The purchase of the ground, the removal and re-interring of the dead, the granite head-stones, the stone wall and iron fence, the gateway and the porter's lodge, and the laying out and ornamentation of the grounds, cost about \$80,000. The Reynolds statue cost \$10,000—thus making the cost of the cemetery, and everything pertaining to it, about \$140,000.

The first object of special interest that presents itself on entering the cemetery is the beautiful statue erected to the memory of Major-General John Fulton Reynolds, who fell early in the first day's action. It is of bronze, of heroic size, standing on a pedestal of Quincy granite. The right hand, holding a field glass, hangs loosely at his side, while the left grasps the hilt of his





sword. The face is turned towards the north-west, the direction from which the enemy was advancing, and the direction in which he was looking when he received his death wound. The statue was cast at the foundry of Messrs. Robert Wood & Co., Philadelphia, from a model furnished by Mr. J. Q. A. Ward, of New York. The artist has given his subject an easy, graceful, and life-like attitude, and makes him look every inch the true soldier that he was.



MONUMENT TO GENERAL REYNOLDS, GETTYSBURG.

[From a Photograph by W. H. Tipton & Co., Gettysburg.]

through the place, has added much to its business prosperity. The town is pleasantly located, in a fertile and highly improved country, and presents a fine appearance. The town was formerly a part of Germany township, having been incorporated as a borough by decree of Court, February 23, 1864.

PETERSBURG, or YORK SPRINGS, a post borough in the northern part of the county, between Huntington and Latimore townships, was incorporated by decree of Court of Quarter Sessions, August 20, 1868. It is on the Carlisle and Hanover turnpike, fourteen miles from the former and sixteen from the latter place. It is also fourteen miles from Gettysburg and twenty-one from York, the State road leading to Harrisburg passing through the place. A railroad from Dillsburg, York county, to this place has been graded but not completed. The town was laid out about the year 1803, by Peter Fleck, who, with Isaac Saddle, erected the first two houses in the place. Soon afterwards Jacob Gardner, Joshua Speakman, Vincent Pilkington, and others, added dwellings. Near by are the York sulphur springs, a favorite resort for many citizens of Philadelphia and Baltimore. Their medicinal qualities have been highly extolled.

NEW OXFORD, a post borough, and until recently embraced in Oxford township, is on the railroad from Gettysburg to Hanover, ten miles from the former

The Katalysine springs, which have become so celebrated as a resort for invalids, are situate two miles west of Gettysburg, near Willoughby's run, and are embraced within the area of the first day's battle-field.

LITTLESTOWN, formerly called Petersburg, is the second town in size and importance in the county, and in 1870 contained a population of 847. It is on the Gettysburg and Baltimore turnpike, and is ten miles south-east from the former place. The Frederick and Pennsylvania Line railroad passing



and six miles from the latter place. It was laid out by Henry Kuhn, in 1792, and was erected into a borough by decree of Court, August 20th, 1874. It contains four churches belonging respectively to the Lutherans, the Reformed, the Methodists, and the Roman Catholics. A collegiate and medical institute was established here some years ago by Dr. Pfeiffer, but it never received sufficient patronage and support to justify its continuance.

ABBOTTSTOWN, or Berwick borough, is a post village on the turnpike leading from York to Gettysburg, fourteen miles from either place. Two turnpikes, the one leading from York to Gettysburg, and the other from Hanover to East Berlin, intersect within the borough. The town was laid out in 1753 by John Abbott. The first lot sold here was purchased by Jacob Pattison, October 19, 1763. Beaver creek, a tributary of the Conewago, flows near by the town, forming the boundary line between York and Adams counties. The town was incorporated as a borough in 1835.

EAST BERLIN is a pleasantly situated post town in the northern part of Hamilton township. It was laid out in 1764 by John Frankenberger, an early settler, who named it Berlin. Mr. Frankenberger, the proprietor, disposed of his interest, in 1774, to Peter Houshill, who, in 1782, sold to Andrew Comfort. In 1794 John Hildebrand became proprietor. The first house erected after the laying out of the town was built by Charles Himes, in 1765; the second, by James Sarbach, in 1766; the third, by James Mackey, in 1767, who opened the first store. The first English school taught in this part of the country was opened here, in 1769, by Robert John Chester, an Englishman. The Conewago flowing hard by and affording excellent mill power, Peter Lane, a German, erected a grist mill at the west end of the town about the year 1769, which was swept away by a freshet thirty years afterwards.

BENDERSVILLE, formerly Wilsonville, is in Menallen township, ten miles north of Gettysburg, on the State road leading from the latter place to Newville, Cumberland county. It is near the base of the South mountain, five miles from Laurel forge, and the same distance from Pine Grove furnace. It was laid out about the year 1835, but did not thrive till 1840, when an impetus was given it by the erection of some twenty houses. Nestling behind a semi-circular ridge, the village presents a neat appearance. It is noted for its pure air, for its healthful location, and for its attention given to the cultivation of all kinds of fruits and vegetables, of which it has the best in the county. An association was formed here in the early part of 1860, called the Menallen Agricultural Club, the object of which was the consideration of subjects and topics of interest to farmers and fruit growers. The meetings of the society were held regularly in the public-school house, and soon created so much interest in the community that measures were adopted by the society, aided by the citizens, for the holding of an agricultural exhibition in the autumn of the same year. The exhibition proved so successful that it at once became permanent. After a few years the society, together with its buildings and fixtures, was moved to Gettysburg, where its meetings and exhibitions have since been regularly held, under the name and title of the Adams County Agricultural Society.

HUNTERSTOWN, formerly called Woodstoe, is a post village in the central part of Straban township, on the road leading from Gettysburg to East Berlin,



five miles from the former, and eleven miles from the latter place. . . . FAIRFIELD, or Millerstown, is a post town of Hamiltonban township, on the Hagers-town and Gettysburg road, eight miles west from the latter place. . . . MIDDLETOWN, a post village of Butler township, is seven miles north of Gettysburg, on the road leading from the latter place to Bendersville. The name of its post-office is Bigler. . . . MECHANICSVILLE, or Bragtown, is a small village in the extreme northern part of the county, distant from Gettysburg eighteen miles. It was laid out by Joseph Griest. . . . MCSHERRYSTOWN, a post village in Conewago township, is two miles west of Hanover, York county, on the road leading from the latter place to Gettysburg. It is one mile in length, being built chiefly along one street. . . . HAMPTON, a post town of Reading township, on the turnpike leading from Carlisle to Baltimore, twelve miles east from Gettysburg, six from Petersburg, and ten from Hanover, was laid out in 1814 by Dr. John B. Arnold and Daniel Deardorff. . . . HEIDLERSBURG, a small post town in Tyrone township, on the State road leading from Gettysburg to Harrisburg, is ten miles from the former and twenty-five miles from the latter place. The State road and the Menallen road, leading from Chambersburg to York, intersect at right angles at this place. . . . MUMMASBURG is a small village in Franklin township, at the terminus of the Gettysburg and Mummasburg turnpike, five miles from the former place. . . . ARENDTSTVILLE, a handsome and thriving post town in the north-eastern angle of Franklin township, was laid out by a Mr. Arendt about the year 1820. It is pleasantly located at the intersection of the Menallen and Shippensburg roads, eight miles north of Gettysburg. . . . BECHERSVILLE, a small village about a mile east of Arendtsville, on the road from the latter place to Gettysburg, contains a woolen factory, a tannery, and about a dozen dwellings. . . . NEW CHESTER, or Pinetown, so called because of a belt of pine timber contiguous to it, is a post village in Straban township, and was laid out by Henry Yartzsaal in 1804. It is nine miles east from Gettysburg, within several hundred yards of one of the bends of the Big Conewago. . . . CASHTOWN, a fine village in Franklin township, at the foot of the South mountain, is eight miles north-west from Gettysburg, on the Chambersburg turnpike. . . . HILLTOWN is a small hamlet, one mile north of Cashtown, on the road leading from Mummasburg to Chambersburg. . . . NEW SALEM, a pretty village on the Chambersburg and Gettysburg turnpike, six miles north-west from the latter place, was laid out in 1860 by John Hartman, who, in January of that year, purchased of Albert Van Dyke, administrator of the McKnight estate, the greater part of the ground now embraced within the limits of the village, paying \$6,000 for the same. A number of lots were soon sold, upon which improvements were commenced the following spring. The location being a good one, the village has steadily grown until it has become quite a thriving place. . . . SEVEN STARS is a small village on the Chambersburg turnpike, four miles from Gettysburg, where the old "Tape Worm" railroad crosses the turnpike.

ORGANIZATION OF TOWNSHIPS.—Berwick—A township of York county before division in 1800.

Butler—Out of parts of Franklin and Menallen—August 20, 1849



Conewago—Out of those parts of Manheim and Heidelberg townships, York county, which fell within the lines of Adams—May 25, 1801.

Cumberland—A township of York county before division in 1800.

Franklin—A township of York county before division in 1800.

Freedom—Out of Liberty, January 22, 1833.

Germany—A township of York county before division in 1800.

Hamilton—Of part of Berwick township, August 20, 1810—area, 10,016½ acres.

Hamiltonban—A township of York county before division in 1800.

Highland—The territory of Highland—taken from Cumberland, Franklin, and Hamiltonban—was annexed to Freedom in 1861, and made an independent township November 16, 1863.

Huntington—A township of York county before division in 1800.

Latimore—Out of parts of Huntington and those parts of Warrington and Monaghan townships, York county, which fell within the lines of Adams county, August 19, 1807. Area, 13,733 acres and 143 perches.

Liberty—Out of parts of Hamiltonban township, August 25, 1800.

Menallen—A township of York county before division in 1800.

Mountjoy—A township of York county before division in 1800.

Mount Pleasant—A township of York county before division in 1800.

Oxford—Of part of Berwick. April 19, 1847.

Reading—A township of York county before division in 1800.

Straban—A township of York county before division in 1800.

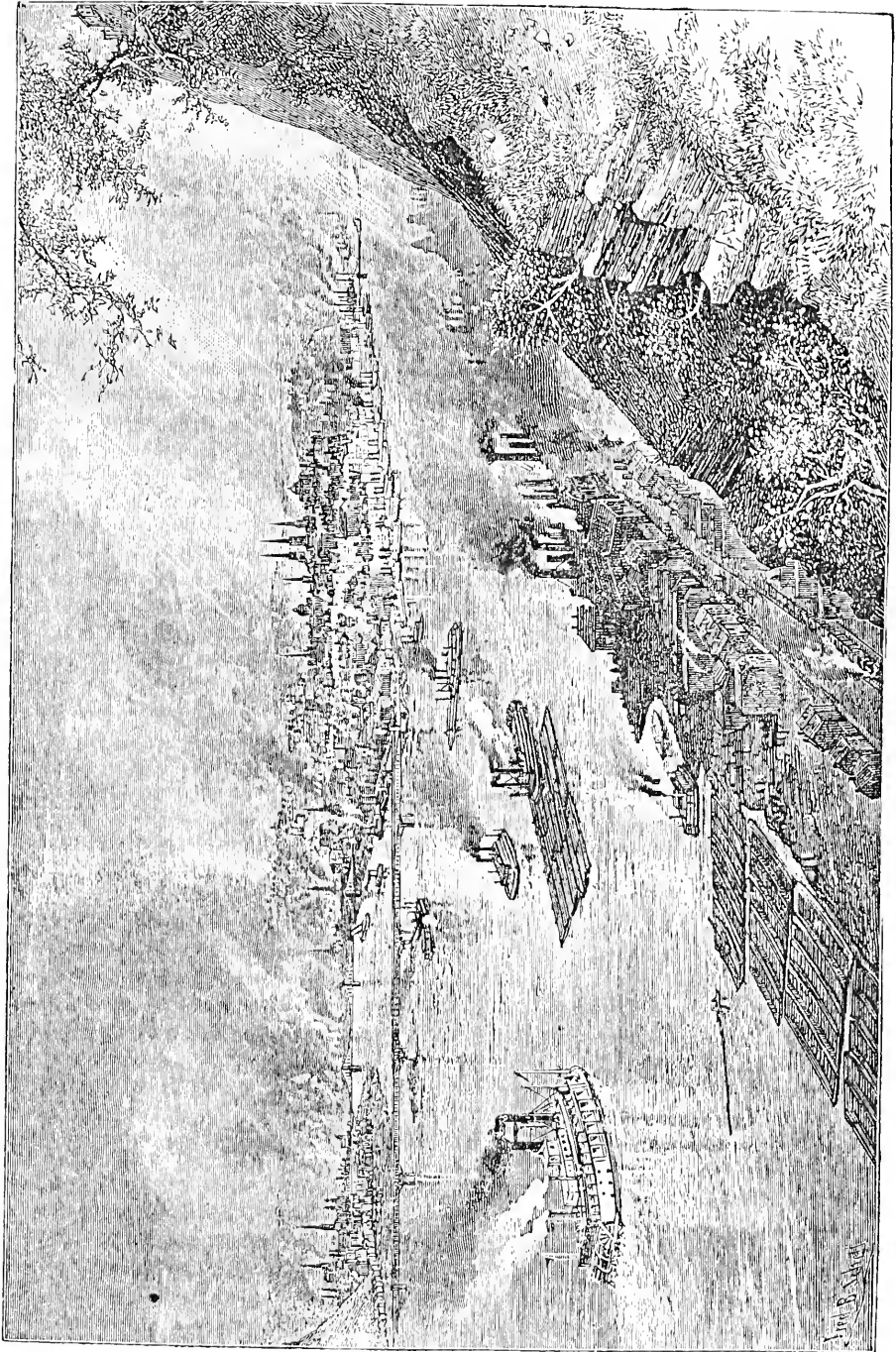
Tyrone—A township of York county before division in 1800.

Union—Of parts of Conewago, Germany, and Mount Pleasant, January 25, 1841.

Of the twelve districts noted as existing in York county before its division in 1800, all except Franklin existed prior to 1749, when York county was erected out of parts of Lancaster. From 1749 to 1800, there appears to have been no subdivision of what is now Adams county, except in the creation of Franklin township, out of, probably, Hamiltonban and Menallen. There is no record of the date, but it was probably after the year 1768.







VIEW OF PITTSBURGH, LOOKING UP THE OHIO.



## ALLEGHENY COUNTY.

[With acknowledgments to William M. Dartington and Thomas J. Bigham.]



THE county of Allegheny was organized by virtue of the act of Assembly of September 24, 1788, which recites: "That all those parts of Westmoreland and Washington counties lying within the limits and bounds hereinafter described, shall be, and hereby are, erected into a separate county; that is to say, beginning at the mouth of Flaherty's run, on the south side of the Ohio river; from thence, by a strait line, to the plantation on which Joseph Scott, Esquire, now lives, on Montour's run, to include the same; from thence, by a strait line, to the mouth of Miller's run, on Chartier's creek;



ALLEGHENY COUNTY COURT HOUSE.

from thence, by a strait line, to the mouth of Perry's mill run, on the east side of Monongahela river; thence up the said river to the mouth of Becheta's run; thence, by a strait line, to the mouth of Sewickly creek, on Youghiogheny river; thence, down the said river, to the mouth of Crawford's run; thence, by a strait line, to the mouth of Brush creek, on Turtle creek; thence, up Turtle creek, to the main fork thereof; thence, by a northerly line, until it strikes Puckety's creek; thence down the said creek to the Allegheny river; thence up the Allegheny river to the northern boundary of the State; thence along the same to the river Ohio; and thence, up the same, to the place of beginning; to be henceforth known and called by the name of Allegheny county." The commissioners to run the boundary lines between the counties of Westmoreland, Washington, and Allegheny were Eli Coulter, Peter Kidd, and Benjamin Lodge.

In 1789 an additional part of Washington county was annexed; and by an act of April 3, 1792, upwards of 200,000 acres on Lake Erie, purchased by the State from the general government, was declared to be part of Allegheny county



These extended limits of the county were subsequently reduced by the counties formed west and north of the Allegheny river.

Allegheny county is bounded on the north by Butler; east by Westmoreland; south and south-west by Washington, and north-west by Beaver. The county forms an irregular figure about twenty-six miles in diameter, and contains an area of 754 square miles, or 482,560 acres. The surface of the county is undulating, and near the rivers and principal creeks, broken and hilly, many of the elevations being precipitous, and occasionally furrowed into deep ravines. The upland is rolling, and very little can be called flat, except the bottom lands along the streams. Within the limits of the county are comprised the very populous country around the confluence of the Allegheny and Monongahela rivers with the Ohio, and of the Youghiogheny with the Monongahela. Besides these navigable streams there are, tributary to them, Chartier's, Peters', Turtle, Plum, Deer, and Pine creeks, with a number of less important streams.

The county is situated in the heart of the bituminous coal formation of the Appalachian field; and it derives its chief importance from the inexhaustible supply and enormous development of this valuable fuel. The amount of capital invested in the mines of the county according to the census of 1870 was estimated at \$12,169,000, and twenty-two thousand seven hundred and ten acres were under development. The value of these may be placed at \$8,690,000; \$438,000 was invested in cars, tools, and the articles necessary to mining. The live stock employed was valued at \$287,000. Upwards of \$1,200,000 were invested in houses. The various improvements, such as railway tracks, trestles, etc., cannot be less than \$1,625,000. The list embraces one hundred and thirteen collieries in active operation, employing eight thousand miners. The amount of coal mined annually is upwards of one hundred million bushels. Nearly thirty million bushels are consumed in and around the city of Pittsburgh, numbers of the manufacturing establishments consuming from one to three thousand bushels of coal per day. From fifty to fifty-five million bushels are exported by river alone annually. The amount exported by rail approaches eighteen million bushels. Upwards of twenty million bushels of coke are made annually in eight hundred and fifty-six ovens.

In a review of the industrial resources of Allegheny county, we speak principally of those developed in the city of Pittsburgh and the towns in its immediate vicinity. No other county in the United States contains two cities of the first class. It is not in coal alone that the strength of this section is shown. In those things which coal enables artizans of Pittsburgh to produce, is her power equally apparent. As nearly as can be ascertained, one-half of the glass factories in the United States are located at Pittsburgh, where there are forty firms engaged in the manufacture of glass, who run sixty factories producing the various descriptions of green, window, flint, and lime glass, employing over four thousand workmen, and producing between four and five millions' worth of glass.

In iron and steel Pittsburgh claims and maintains to be the great market of the country. The exact money market of this great trade has always been difficult to arrive at. Much of the iron has been shipped by rail to the various points, and much by river. By figures we have at command of the shipments of plate, bar, sheet, and rod iron and steel from Pittsburgh in the year 1875, it would seem



that there were exported, *by rail alone*, to twenty-four different States, over 143,000 tons, and 80,000 kegs of nails between twenty different States. These railroad exportations, it must not be forgotten, are not probably half the manufacture. That of castings there were shipped by rail alone 5,143,008 pounds in 1874 to twenty-two different States, and that by *one* railroad alone there was received in 1874 into the city, 107,000 tons of pig iron and blooms, exclusive of the yield of six or eight furnaces running in the city of Pittsburgh, nor the imports by river and other railroads. It is estimated that of shipments made from Pittsburgh, at least as much is sent by river as by rail. There are over thirty iron rolling mills in Pittsburgh, six steel mills, and between fifty and sixty iron foundries. These figures but feebly indicate the full extent of the great iron and steel trade of the city, of which the sales alone of articles made of iron subject to tax, made and returned in the city, was, from March 1875 to March 1876, over \$27,000,000. In 1876 the amount of capital invested was \$70,000,000, and the annual value of the products \$39,000,000.

Oil is another great staple, and there are in Pittsburgh fifty-eight refineries, in which is invested a capital of over \$12,000,000 in buildings and machinery, and in the tanks and barges necessary to the carrying on of the business, nearly \$6,000,000 more. The oil trade for the three years from January, 1873, to January, 1876, amounted to about \$50,000,000, or an average of about \$11,000,000 annually. During these three years the entire exportation of petroleum from the United States was 217,948,602 gallons, and the shipments east from Pittsburgh was 132,396,179 gallons, showing that Pittsburgh supplied over sixty per cent. of the whole foreign exportation of petroleum in the period cited.

The history of Allegheny county presents a greater variety of startling incidents than almost any other portion of the State. Great Britain, France, Great Britain again, Virginia, the United States and Pennsylvania have each in turn exercised sovereignty either over the whole or greatest part of the county. Since its first settlement was captured in war, first by Contrecoeur in 1754, and by Forbes in 1758—once besieged by Indians in 1763—blown up and burned by the French in 1758—it was the field of controversy between neighboring States in 1774, and finally the scene of civil war in 1794.

When the white man appeared in the region around the head-waters of the Ohio river, the occupants of the soil were principally Shawanese, with some roving bands of the Six Nations and scattered wigwams of the Delawares. It is more than probable that the "mound builders," whose traces were more noticeable in the Western States than in Pennsylvania, were the primeval inhabitants, judging from descriptions of the remains of ancient fortifications within the limits of Allegheny county, the principal one of which was located on Chartier's creek, about seven or eight miles from Pittsburgh. From the description of a traveler who passed through the western country in 1807, we learn that it consisted of an oblong elevated square two hundred feet long, one hundred and forty feet broad, and nine feet high, level on the summit and nearly perpendicular at the sides, the centre of each of the sides towards the stream projecting, forming gradual ascents to the top, equally regular and about six feet wide. Near the centre of the fort was a circular mound nearly thirty feet in diameter, and five feet high. At the corner near the river was a semi-circular parapet





L'AN 1749 DV REGNE DE LOUIS XV ROY DE  
 FRANCE NOVS GEORON COMMANDANT DVN IS DE  
 TACHEMENT ENVOYÉ PAR MONSIEVR LE MARC DE LA  
 CALISSONNIERE COMMANDANT GENERAL DE LA  
 NOUVELLE FRANCE POUR RETABLIR LA TRANQUILLITE  
 DANS QUELQUES VILLAGES SAUVAGES DE CES CANTONS  
 AVONS ENTERRE CETTE PLAQUE A BENTHE DE LA  
 RIVIERE CHENODANICHETHA LE 18 AOUT  
 PRES DE LA RIVIERE OYO AUTREMENT BELLE  
 RIVIERE POUR MONVMENT DV RENOVVELLEMENT DE  
 POSSESSION QUE NOVS AVONS PRIS DE LA DITTE  
 RIVIERE OYO ET DE TOUTES CEILLES QUI Y TOMBENT  
 ET DE TOUTES LES TERRES DES DEUX COTES JUSTIVE  
 AUX SOURCES DES DITES RIVIES VINSI QUE ONT  
 JOUY OV DV JOVR LES PRECEDENTS ROYS DE FRANCE  
 ET IVILS SONT MAINTENVS PAR LES ARMES ET  
 PAR LES TRAITTES SPECIALEMENT PAR CEUX DE  
 RUSWICK DVTRICHT ET DAIX LA CHEPELLE



crowned with a mound which guarded an opening in the wall near by. Scarcely a vestige now remains, but we have seen it recently stated that a small mound is still to be seen on the ridge at McKee's rocks below the mouth of the same stream. It was the locality of Shingas, the famous Indian warrior.

There were numerous Indian villages within the present limits of Allegheny county, but except in the historical details of one hundred and twenty years ago, nothing remains of the royalty which swayed the inhabitants of the Ohio. The principal of these was Shannopin's town. It was situated, says Mr. Darlington, on the banks of the Allegheny river, now in the corporate limits of the city of Pittsburgh. It was small, had about twenty families of Delawares, and was much frequented by the traders. By it ran the main Indian path from the East to the West. In April, 1730, Governor Thomas, at Philadelphia, received a message from "the Chiefs of ye Delewares at Allegaening, on the main road," taken down (written) by Edmund Cartledge, and interpreted by James Letort, noted traders. Among the names signed to the letter is that of "Shannopin his  $\times$  mark." The chief's message was to explain the cause of the death of a white man named Hart, and the wounding of another, Robeson, occasioned by rum, the bringing such great quantities into the woods, they desired the Governor to suppress, as well as to limit the number of traders. Shannopin's name is signed to several documents in the archives of the State. He appeared occasionally at Councils held with the Governor. He died in 1740.

Towards the close of the seventeenth century the French, through the adventures and discoveries of LaSalle, Marquette, and others, gained a most excellent knowledge of the country of the Ohio and Mississippi, and at once measures were adopted looking to the extension of the French empire, claiming the vast territory west of the Alleghenies. As early as 1719 the French began actively to erect a line of forts for the purpose of connecting Canada with the valley of the Mississippi, but it was not until 1749 that measures were taken to extend their trade with the Indians on the Allegheny. The year previous a movement had been made towards a permanent settlement on the Ohio river by the English colonies. Thomas Lee, one of His Majesty's council in Virginia, formed the design of effecting a settlement on the wild lands west of the Allegheny mountains, through the agency of an association of gentlemen. Before this date there were no English residents in those regions. A few traders wandered from tribe to tribe, and dwelt among the Indians, but they neither cultivated nor occupied the land. Mr. Lee associated with himself Mr. Hanbury, a merchant from London, and twelve persons in Virginia and Maryland, composing the "Ohio Land Company." One-half million acres of land were granted them, to be taken principally on the south side of the Ohio, between the Monongahela and Kanahawa, and on which they were required to settle one hundred families and erect and maintain a fort. The Englishmen claimed title under a charter of Charles II., strengthened by a treaty with the Six Nations.

In 1749, Captain Louis Celoron, a French officer, was dispatched by the Governor-General of New France (Canada) to take possession of the country along the Allegheny and Ohio rivers. He performed that duty, and deposited leaden plates bearing inscriptions at the mouths of the prominent streams. Several of the plates were eventually secured. The one placed at Venango was



dated 29th July, 1749,\* at forks of the Ohio, 3d August, 1749, and at mouth of Kanahawa, 18th August, 1749.

In 1750 Christopher Gist was dispatched by the Ohio Company to make explorations, and also an examination of the Ohio on the south side to within fifteen miles of the Falls. In June, 1752, a conference was held at Logstown, fourteen miles below Pittsburgh, on the right bank of the Ohio, with the Indian chiefs of the neighboring tribes. The commissioners, consisting of Colonel Fry, Captain Loamax, and Mr. Patton, desired an explanation of the treaty held at Lancaster in 1744, when the Delaware Indians ceded to the English the lands on the Ohio. The chiefs objected, stating that there was "no sale of lands west of the warrior's road which ran at the foot of the Allegheny ridge." The Commissioners finally induced them, by the offer of presents, to ratify the treaty and relinquish the Indian title to lands south of the Ohio and east of the Kanahawa.

Soon after the treaty at Logstown, Gist was appointed surveyor of the Ohio Company, and directed to lay out a town and fort near the mouth of Chartier's creek. It seems, however, that this project was abandoned, and subsequently the location was changed to the forks of the Ohio.

About this time (1753) the French, as referred to previously, were carrying out their grand scheme for uniting Canada with Louisiana, and it was decided to erect one fort at Logstown and one at the junction of the Allegheny and Monongahela. In the prosecution of this scheme, and to enforce their claim to the whole country on the Ohio, they seized the storehouse at the former place belonging to the traders, with all the goods and skins, amounting to the value of twenty thousand pounds.

In the fall of 1753, accounts were received that a considerable French force had arrived at Presqu'Isle, on their way to the Ohio; and in October of that year, George Washington was selected as a messenger, to proceed by the way of Logstown to the French commandant, wherever he might be found, to demand information as to the object of the French troops. Washington departed immediately from Williamsburg, and arrived at the forks about the 23d or 24th of November, 1753. He examined the point, and thought it a favorable position for a fort. He then proceeded to Logstown—and thence to the French commandant at Le Bœuf, from whom he received a very unsatisfactory reply.

Immediately on the return of Washington to Virginia, Captain Trent, with a company of troops, was directed to proceed to the Ohio, and establish himself at that locality. In the early part of 1754 was commenced the first building on the site where Pittsburgh now stands. Of the arrival of the French convoy, the capitulation and the retiring of the English, and of the important events which transpired in this section of Pennsylvania during the expeditions of Generals Braddock, Forbes, and Bonquet, we have alluded in the general history. By reference thereto, it will be seen that the French retained possession of Fort Duquesne from the 17th of April, 1754, to the 24th of November, 1758. This position, of course, gave them an influence over the neighboring Indians, which was so used as to inflict upon the frontier settlers much distress and bloodshed. The importance of this position, in a military point of view, was duly appreci-

---

\* For translation of the one at French creek, see History of Venango county.



ated by the English, and early and energetic efforts were therefore adopted to expel the French.

Upon its occupancy by General Forbes' army in 1758, the English proceeded to the erection of works for the defence of the post. A small square stockade with a bastion at each angle was constructed on the banks of the Monongahela between the present site of Liberty and West streets in Pittsburgh. This was only intended for temporary use, for in the year following, General Stanwix erected more substantial works, which in honor of the then British Premier, he named Fort Pitt.

In 1764, Colonel Bouquet built a redoubt on the site of the fort which is still standing. It is simply a square stone building, and is located north of Penn street west of Point street, a few feet back of Brewery alley.

The first town of Pittsburgh was built near the Fort, in 1760. It was divided into the upper and lower town. In a carefully prepared list of the houses and inhabitants outside of the fort, made for Colonel Bouquet, April 15, 1761, by Captain William Clapham, and headed "A return of the number of houses, of the names of owners, and number of men, women, and children, in each house, Fort Pitt, April 14, 1761," the number of inhabitants is two hundred and thirty-three men, women, and children, with the addition of ninety-five officers, soldiers, and their families residing in the town, making the whole number three hundred and thirty-two. Houses, one hundred and four. The lower town was nearest the fort, the upper on the higher ground, principally along the bank of the Monongahela, extending as far as the present Market Street. In this list of the early inhabitants are the well-known names of George Croghan, William Trent, John Ormsby, John Campbell, Ephraim Blaine, and Thomas Small.

Settlements were also made along the Monongahela and its tributaries, and the inhabitants seem to have enjoyed comparative quiet, until the year 1763, when, during the Pontiac war, Fort Pitt was completely surrounded by the savage foe, who cut off all communication with the interior of the country, and greatly annoyed the garrison by an incessant discharge of musketry and arrows. The post was finally relieved by Colonel Bouquet, who in the following year retaliated by marching with a sufficient force to the Muskingum, and there dictated terms of peace to the hostile tribes of the north-west.

The second town of Pittsburgh was laid out in 1765, by Colonel John Campbell, by permission of the commanding officer at Fort Pitt. It comprised the ground within Water, Market, Second, and Ferry streets. Campbell's plan of lots was subsequently incorporated unaltered in the survey made by George Woods for the Penns in 1784, and is known as the "Old Military Plan." Two of the houses built on lots in that plan are now standing on Water street, near Ferry. They are constructed of hewn logs weatherboarded. These, with the two on the southeast corner of Penn and Marbury (Third) street, formerly owned and occupied by General Richard Butler and his brother, Colonel William, are the oldest in Pittsburgh or west of the Alleghenies. Of course the old brick redoubt of Colonel Bouquet before referred to, between the Point and Penn street, is excepted. It, however, was not originally built for a dwelling-house, but as an outwork or addition to Fort Pitt.

From this period until the close of the Revolutionary war but little improve-





ment was made at Fort Pitt. The fear of Indian hostilities, or the actual existence of Indian warfare, prevented immigration. In 1775, the number of dwelling-houses within the limits of Fort Pitt did not, according to the most authentic accounts, exceed twenty-five or thirty.

During the Revolution, the Penn family being adherents of the British government, the Assembly confiscated all their property except certain manors &c., of which surveys had been actually made and returned into the land-office prior to the 4th of July, 1776, and also except any estates which the Proprietaries held in their private capacities by devise, purchase, or descent. Pittsburgh, and the country eastward of it and south of the Monongahela, containing 5,766 acres, composed one of these manors (surveyed in 1769), and of course remained as the property of the Penns. In the spring of 1784, arrangements were made by Trench Francis, the agent of the Proprietaries, to lay out the Manor of Pittsburgh in town and out-lots, and to sell them without delay. For this purpose he engaged George Woods, of Bedford, an experienced surveyor, to execute the work. The manor lots found a ready sale, and in 1786, Judge Brackenridge, then a young attorney in the new town, estimated the number of houses at one hundred, and the population at about five hundred. Previous to this there were no buildings outside the fort, except those already noticed occupied by Indian traders and a few mechanics and soldiers' families.

The inhabitants of Allegheny county took a conspicuous part in the "Whiskey Insurrection" of 1794. Liberty poles were erected and people assembled in arms and compelled the officers of the Excise to leave the country or resign. Their object was to compel a repeal of the law and not to subvert the government, but they unfortunately pursued the wrong course to effect their object.

From 1790 to 1800, says Harris, the business of Pittsburgh and the West was small, but gradually improving. The fur trade was the most important. Considerable supplies of goods were received from the Illinois country by barges. On the 19th of May, 1798, the galley *President Adams* was launched at Pittsburgh. She was the first vessel built then competent for a sea voyage, and was constructed by order of the government of the United States, in its preparations for the threatened war with France. In July, the Senator Ross was ready to launch, but on account of low water it was not accomplished until the spring of 1799.

In the spring of 1797, arrangements were made by James O'Hara and Isaac Craig, for the erection of the first glass works in Pittsburgh, and William Eichbaum, superintendent of glass works at the Schuylkill, near Philadelphia, engaged to direct the building of the works. This was the beginning of that business now so extensively carried on. So many difficulties, however, were encountered that after a few years Major Craig retired. General O'Hara persevered, and after a very large expenditure of money and labor succeeded in the manufacture of glass. During this year the first paper-mill west of the Alleghenies was erected at Pittsburgh.

In 1802-3 Pittsburgh and the country around it were greatly excited by the impeachment and subsequent removal of Alexander Addison, then president judge of the judicial district. This was owing to party spirit which during the administration of the elder Adams ran exceedingly high.



From 1802 to 1805 four ships, three brigs, and three schooners were built at Pittsburgh, while two vessels were constructed at Elizabethtown.

On the first day of January, 1804, a branch of the Bank of Pennsylvania was established here in a stone building on the east side of Second Street, between Ferry Street and Chancery Lane. During that year the first iron foundry was erected by Joseph McClurg.

The year 1811 inaugurated a revolution in the commerce and noted an epoch in the history of Pittsburgh well worthy of commemoration. In this year the genius of Fulton and the theory of Fitch had a practical and successful test in the application of steam as a propelling power to vessels against a strong current. The year previous [1810], Messrs. Fulton, Livingston, and Rossevelt, constituting a firm, organized for the purpose of testing Fulton's plan, commenced the building of a boat, the dimensions of which were—keel, a hundred and thirty-eight feet; burden, some three hundred tons, cabin below deck, port-holes, bow-sprit, &c. Forty thousand dollars were invested in this enterprise, and in March, 1811, the first steamboat ever built or run on western waters was launched at Pittsburgh, and duly christened the *New Orleans*. On the 24th of December this steamboat left for the Crescent city. The *New Orleans* arrived safely at her destination. Shortly after she went into the regular packet trade between Natchez and New Orleans, in which she continued two years, clearing \$20,000 the first. In 1814 she was snagged and lost near Baton Rouge.

The second steamboat constructed at this port was the *Comet*, launched in 1813. In 1814 the Mississippi steamboat company built the *Vesuvius* and *Etna*. From this time onward, for a period of fifty years, the number of boats constructed at Pittsburgh was immense, and the progress and development of the place was rapid.

During the war of 1812, Pittsburgh sent a company into the North-western territory to join the command of General Harrison that won a lasting fame for its bravery. It was named the Pittsburgh Blues, and was under the command of Captain James R. Butler. The Blues fought at Fort Meigs and Mississineway, losing a number of their men in those contests.

Pittsburgh, by an act of Assembly at the sessions of 1815-16, became a city—taking its date from March 18, 1816. At the first election for municipal officers under the city charter, Major Ebenezer Denny was chosen mayor.

In August 1825, a convention of the friends of internal improvements, consisting of delegates from forty-six counties of the State, met at Harrisburg, and passed resolutions in favor of "opening an entire and complete communication from the Susquehanna to the Allegheny and Ohio, and from the Allegheny to Lake Erie, by the nearest and most practicable route." The Juniata and Conemaugh was reported the "most practicable route" by the commission appointed by the Governor in 1824, to explore a route for a canal from Harrisburg to Pittsburgh. The report was adopted and the work let. In the fall of 1827 water was let into the levels at Leechburg from the "seven-mile" or Leechburg dam, but the inexperience of the contractors and workmen who had built the canal below caused innumerable difficulties. To remedy the evil occupied the balance of the fall and winter.

The first canal boat ever built or run west of the mountains, was the *General*



Abner Lacock. She was built at Apollo, Armstrong county, by Philip Dally, under the auspices of Patrick Leonard of Pittsburgh. She was intended as a freight and passenger packet, had berths and curtains, after the style of the steamboats of those days.

In the fall of 1834, the Philadelphia and Columbia, and the Allegheny portage railroads were completed, giving a through line to Pittsburgh, and the same month an emigrant's boat from the North Branch of the Susquehanna, passed over the inclined planes on trucks with the family in it, was launched at Johnstown, reached Pittsburgh, was run into the Ohio, and pursued its course down that river to Cairo, and was towed up the Mississippi to St. Louis. The completion of this through route gave to Pittsburgh a fresh impetus, and tended largely toward the opening up of the mineral resources of Western Pennsylvania. The salt of the Kiskiminetas soon became an important branch of traffic and barter in the east, and gave employment to a large number of men. Blast furnaces, bloomeries, etc., sprang into existence along its line, and a general life and thrift was manifest from Pittsburgh to Philadelphia. In Pittsburgh, for a time, the forwarding and commission business absorbed all other branches of trade with capitalists. The business man who had not stock or some kind of an interest in some of the lines of boats on the canals, or the steamboats or other modes of transportation on the rivers, was not regarded as either wealthy or enterprising.

In 1834, an experimental trip was made from Pittsburgh to Johnstown with a little steamboat, but not proving satisfactory for many reasons, all ideas of applying steam to canal boats was abandoned.

In 1835 the Erie canal, or the greater portion of it, was put into operation, opening up another large mineral and agricultural field to Pittsburgh, where the products found a ready market, and augmented the amount of business done there. The boats reached Pittsburgh by being towed by steam-tugs up the Ohio from the mouth of Beaver creek, twenty-six miles below the city. Soon after this a canal called the Cross-cut was built, connecting the Erie with the Ohio canal at Akron, Ohio. The junction of the Erie and Cross-cut was made at the mouth of the Mahoning river, in the Beaver valley, some four miles below New Castle. By this connection, long before there was a railroad in the West, freight could be shipped to Cleveland, Erie, Buffalo, Detroit, Portsmouth, Chillicothe, and other intermediate points, without breaking bulk. All these advantages, taken in connection with the fact of Pittsburgh being the head of navigation of the western and south-western waters, it is little to be wondered at that she became a nucleus for all branches of trade, and a power in the manufacturing world.

In 1836 was commenced the improving of the Monongahela by locks and dams, to meet the efforts of Marylanders east of the mountains, and opening a channel of commerce with Pittsburgh by way of the Potomac canal to Cumberland, and the Cumberland pike to Brownsville. After much opposition the work was completed in 1844, and it proved to be one of the greatest features of the Iron City's success. The pools or slack water offered ample harbors for the loading of coal boats and barges, and the coal trade of the Monongahela has ever since been the source of great revenue to the company which, under the

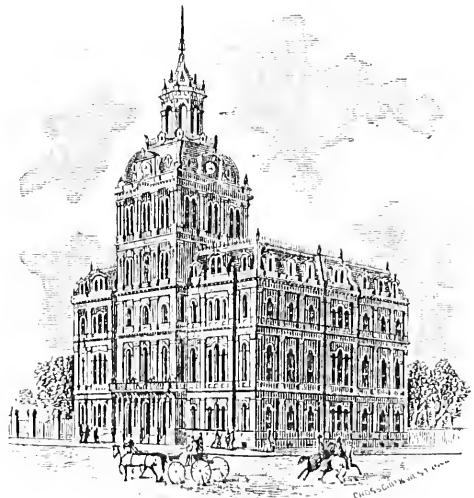


lead of General James K. Moorhead, constructed it, to the exporters and the public generally. In 1839 the Valley Forge, the first iron steamboat made in the United States, was built at Pittsburgh.

On the tenth day of April, 1845, occurred the great fire at Pittsburgh, burning over a space of fifty-six acres. The aggregate loss of property amounted to over five millions of dollars, and many families were rendered homeless. Aid came in freely from the neighboring towns and cities, while the Legislature, then in session, made an appropriation of fifty thousand dollars to relieve the distressed inhabitants, of which amount, however, only thirty thousand dollars was drawn from the Treasury. On the 29th of March, 1872, the consolidation of the Southside with Pittsburgh was effected by an act of the Assembly, which bill received the sanction of the Governor on the 2d of April, following. The Southside included eleven boroughs, having a population of 35,000—Birmingham, East Birmingham, Ormsby, Allentown, St. Clair, South Pittsburgh, Monongahela, Mt. Washington, Union, West Pittsburgh, and Temperanceville. Although the details herewith given are in fact the history of Pittsburgh itself, there are other matters connected with that city to which we will make reference.

PITTSBURGH is the second city of Pennsylvania in population and importance. It is substantially and compactly built, and contains many fine residences, particularly in the east section. A large number of the principal avenues are graded and paved. Horse cars run through the principal streets and to the suburbs. Seven bridges span the Allegheny river and five the Monongahela.

From its situation, Pittsburgh enjoys excellent commercial facilities, and has become the centre of an extensive commerce with the Western States; of its industrial resources we have referred to in full. The extent of its iron manufactories has given it the appellation of the "Iron City," while the heavy pall of smoke that constantly overhangs it, produced by burning bituminous coal in all the dwelling-houses and manufacturing establishments, has caused it to be styled the "Smoky City." Smithfield street is the principal business thoroughfare, and trade is very active in Penn and Liberty streets and Fifth avenue, which contain many handsome retail stores. Among the public buildings are the municipal hall, corner of Smithfield and Virgin streets, costing seven hundred and fifty thousand dollars, with a granite front and a massive central tower; the Court House, a solid stone edifice, corner of Fifth avenue and Grant street, with a columned portico, and surmounted by a dome; the custom house

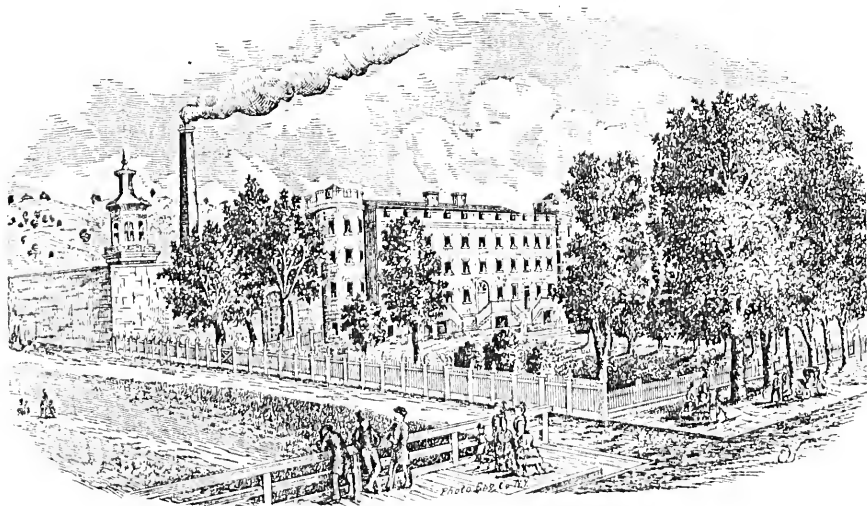


CITY HALL, PITTSBURGH.





and post office, a commodious structure of stone, corner of Smithfield street and Fifth avenue; and the United States Arsenal, a group of spacious buildings standing in the midst of ornamental grounds in the northeast section of the city. The new and elegant building of the Mercantile Library is in Penn street; it cost two hundred and fifty thousand dollars, and contains fifteen thousand volumes and a well supplied reading-room; the Young Men's Christian Association has a good reading-room at the corner of Penn and Sixth streets. There are in the city two theatres, an Opera House, an Academy of Music, and several public halls. The Western University, founded in 1819, has a handsome building in the southeast part of the city, near the Monongahela, and in 1876 had seventeen instructors and two hundred and fifty-two students; it has a library of twenty-five hundred volumes, extensive philosophical and chemical apparatus, and a



WESTERN PENITENTIARY, ALLEGHENY CITY.

cabinet containing over ten thousand specimens in geology, mineralogy, conchology, and zoology. The Pittsburgh Female College (Methodist) is a flourishing institution. Several of the public school buildings are large and substantial. Among the principal charitable institutions within the limits of the city, are the City General Hospital, the Homœopathic Hospital and Dispensary, the Mercy Hospital, the Episcopal Church Home, and the Roman Catholic Orphan Asylum. The Convent of the Sisters of Mercy is the oldest house of the order in America.

The Western penitentiary, in the ancient Norman style, situated on Ohio street, Sherman avenue, and West Park, Allegheny City, was erected by authority of the Legislature of March 8, 1818. It was completed for occupancy about 1827, and cost over half a million dollars. It was originally intended to be conducted on the solitary confinement principle, but recently the "congregate" system has been adopted.



The Western Pennsylvania Hospital for the Insane is at Dixmont. It is properly a private institution, although the State has constructed the buildings, which are capable of accommodating over four hundred patients, and otherwise aided it. The area of the grounds connected with it is three hundred and fifty acres. The buildings cost half a million dollars. Indigent insane have by law the preference of "paying" patients.

The Western Reform school located at Morganza on the Pittsburgh and Washington railroad has recently been completed. It is designed for incorrigible or vagrant girls and boys. The ground and buildings cost half a million dollars. One main building for boys and another for girls. This institution is hereafter to be conducted on the family system. The entire arrangement when in full operation will make it the finest institution on this plan in the United States. It is managed by a board of trustees, of which Thomas J. Bigham is president—appointed by the Governor.

Besides the foregoing public institutions there are several other establishments of similar character—Allegheny City poor-house at Claremont, seven miles from the city; City farm for Pittsburgh, situated on the left bank of the Monongahela about two miles above the city limits, containing 149 acres, and extensive buildings; Allegheny county home, situated near Chartiers' Valley railroad about seven miles from Pittsburgh, on a farm of two hundred and five acres; and the Allegheny county workhouse, situated on the right bank of the Allegheny, about seven miles above Allegheny City, at Claremont station, West Pennsylvania railroad, on fifty acres of land. The latter institution has been self-sustaining. It has been under the superintendence of Henry Cordier, who has been the most successful in managing an institution for stubborn persons.

ALLEGHENY CITY is situated on the west bank of the Allegheny river, opposite Pittsburgh, with which it is connected by several fine bridges. Its manufacturing interests are large, and the elegant residences of many Pittsburgh merchants may be seen here occupying commanding positions. The city has now a population of 75,000. The City Hall is on the square at the crossing of Ohio and Federal streets, and the Allegheny Library is close by. Theological Seminary (Presbyterian) was established here in 1827. It is situated on a lofty insulated ridge 100 feet above the river, and affords a magnificent prospect. The Theological Seminary of the United Presbyterian Church, established in 1826, and the Allegheny Theological Institute, organized in 1840 by the synod of the Reformed Presbyterian Church, are also located here. The Allegheny Observatory, situated on an elevated site north of the city, is a department of the Western University of Pittsburgh. The Public Park lies around the centre of the city; it contains 100 acres, and is adorned with several tiny lakelets and a monument to Humboldt. On a lofty crest near the Allegheny, in the east part of the city, stands the Soldiers' Monument, erected to the memory of the 4,000 men of Allegheny county who lost their lives in the civil war. It consists of a graceful column, surrounded at the base with statues of an infantry man, a cavalryman, an artillerist, and a sailor, and surmounted by a bronze female figure of colossal size.

MCKEESPORT is laid out upon a wide plain which affords ample room for a large city. Situated at the junction of the Monongahela and Youghiogheny



rivers, it enjoys the business derived from the extensive coal trade on both streams, and under its influence has increased rapidly in population and wealth. The town is well laid out with fine wide streets, and a large proportion of the houses are well constructed of brick. The population numbers now about 12,000; in 1842 it had only 500. It is one of the principal stations of the Pittsburgh and Connellsville railroad, and by that road and its connections its inhabitants have easy access to all the Eastern and Western cities. Surrounded on all sides by a fine basin of coal, and possessed of superior advantages by either the Monongahela slack-water or the railroad for transportation to any of the cities of the United States, it is a choice spot for the location of manufacturers of such articles as find their market elsewhere than at the places where they are made. The near access which is had from this point to the fine iron ores and forests which abound further up the valley of the Youghiogheny, the superiority of the coal, its abundance and low cost, with the transportation advantages before mentioned, seem to point out this location as one in which must eventually gather a large number and variety of manufacturing in metals and wood. Perhaps no other town in Western Pennsylvania has so many elements of future growth. The close of the present century may show a city of 40,000 inhabitants.

EAST and WEST ELIZABETH boroughs are six miles above McKeesport—one on each side of the Monongahela river. They have in a less degree the same elements as McKeesport. Population nearly 5,000. . . . BRADDOCK borough is on the north bank of the Monongahela river, located upon the site of the famous battle ground of July 9, 1755, known in history as the defeat of Braddock. This town is situated eight miles above Pittsburgh and four miles below McKeesport, and receives the overflow from both points. The Pennsylvania and Baltimore and Ohio railroads both pass through it. Though only commenced as a village some eight years since, it has already a population of over 5,000. The Edgar Thompson steel works for the manufacture of steel rails, in successful operation, is located here. . . . The boroughs of ETNA and SHARPSBURGH, five or six miles above Pittsburgh on the Allegheny river, contain a population of some 10,000, chiefly engaged in the manufacture of iron. The offices are in Pittsburgh, but the mills are located in these boroughs. The furnaces of the Isabella company consume immense quantities of iron ore, chiefly brought from the Lake Superior region. Three rolling mills are also located here. . . . The borough of TARENTUM, twelve miles above, is also of late growing into importance. Population about 3,000. . . . NATRONA borough, some three miles above, is the result of the Pennsylvania Salt Manufacturing company. This company produces several important products, and have built up a village of 2,000 inhabitants, chiefly employed in its industrial departments. . . . Commencing about seven miles below Pittsburgh, on the north side of the Ohio river, the villages of Dixmont, Haysville, Sewickly, and Lutsdale, dot the line of the Chicago railway. These are the dwelling-places of Pittsburghers whose days are spent in the city and nights in these villages. They cover a space of some eight miles, and probably include a population of 10,000. . . . MANSFIELD, and its suburbs on the line of the Pan-Handle railroad, six miles south of Pittsburgh, is an important mining, and will become



a manufacturing point. The Chartiers' Valley railroad connects this village with Washington, Pennsylvania, and the Pan-Handle railroad with Cincinnati and St. Louis. The development of coal mines along the route of these two railroads is likely in the near future to build up a large mining and manufacturing population, with Mansfield as its centre.

POPULATION OF PENNSYLVANIA BY COUNTIES—1790 TO 1870.

COUNTIES.	1790.	1800.	1810.	1820.	1830.	1840.	1850.	1860.	1870.
Adams.....		13,172	15,152	19,370	21,379	23,044	25,981	28,006	30,315
Allegheny.....	10,309	15,087	25,317	24,921	55,552	81,235	113,290	178,821	262,294
Armstrong.....		2,209	6,143	10,321	17,701	23,365	29,569	35,797	43,382
Beaver.....		5,776	12,165	15,340	24,183	29,368	29,689	29,140	36,118
Bedford.....		12,039	15,716	20,218	21,592	29,335	23,652	26,736	29,635
Berks.....	30,179	32,307	43,116	46,375	53,132	64,669	77,129	93,818	106,701
Blair.....							21,777	27,829	38,051
Bradford.....				11,554	19,746	32,769	42,331	48,731	53,204
Butler.....		3,916	7,316	10,133	14,581	22,378	30,346	35,594	36,510
Bucks.....	25,491	27,496	32,371	37,842	45,715	48,107	56,091	63,578	64,336
Cambridg.....			2,117	3,287	7,076		17,773	29,155	36,599
Cameron.....									4,273
Carbon.....							15,689	21,033	28,141
Centre.....	7,562	13,609	10,681	13,796	18,879	24,492	23,355	27,000	34,118
Chester.....	27,937	32,093	39,596	44,451	50,910	57,515	66,438	74,578	77,805
Charlton.....			879	2,312	4,803		21,595	24,983	26,537
Clearfield.....						7,834	12,586	18,759	25,741
Clinton.....				17,621	20,059	24,267	27,710	32,765	35,211
Columbia.....		2,316	6,178	9,397	16,050	31,724	37,419	48,755	63,822
Crawford.....		25,356	26,757	23,646	29,226	30,953	34,327	40,098	43,912
Cumberland.....	18,243	22,576	31,828	21,633	25,243	30,118	35,754	46,756	60,740
Dauphin.....	16,177	22,576	14,731	11,610	17,323	19,791	24,679	30,597	39,403
Delaware.....	9,453	12,859					31,594	39,415	43,259
Elk.....		1,468	3,758	8,511	17,011	31,311	28,742	49,432	65,973
Erie.....		20,159	24,714	27,285	29,172	35,574	39,112	39,009	43,854
Fayette.....	13,325	19,639	23,083	31,892	35,037	37,793	39,394	42,123	45,365
Fulton.....	15,655						7,567	9,131	9,360
Forest.....								893	4,010
Greene.....		8,605	12,541	15,551	18,029	19,147		23,887	28,887
Huntington.....	7,565	13,005	14,773	20,139	27,115	35,484	24,786	24,140	31,251
Indiana.....		6,214	8,882	14,252	20,782	27,170	33,687	36,158	36,158
Jefferson.....		161		591	2,025	7,253	13,518	18,276	21,626
Lancaster.....	36,147	43,403	53,927	67,979	76,539	84,203	114,089	146,986	171,390
Lawrence.....							38,914	116,314	121,310
Lebanon.....				16,975	20,557	25,877	29,071	31,831	34,086
Lehigh.....				18,895	22,256	25,787	32,179	3,763	56,796
Luzerne.....				29,027	27,379	44,066	56,072	10,244	109,915
Lycoming.....	4,904	5,114	13,068	13,517	17,636	22,049	26,257	27,369	47,626
McKean.....			142	728	1,489	2,853	6,254	8,859	8,859
Mercer.....		3,228	8,277	11,681	19,729	32,873	33,172	36,856	49,377
Mifflin.....			12,132	16,613	21,600	11,692	14,980	16,310	17,558
Montgomery.....		24,136	29,703	35,739	39,406	47,211	53,291	70,580	18,362
Montour.....							13,259	13,653	15,341
Northampton.....	21,259	20,692	38,145	31,765	39,482	40,396	49,355	47,494	61,432
Northumberland.....	17,161	37,797	36,327	15,421	18,133	20,027	23,272	25,922	41,411
Philadelphia.....	64,391	81,009	111,210	112,281	144,261	17,096	29,068	22,793	25,447
Pike.....				135,637	188,797	258,667	408,762	563,529	674,022
Potter.....				2,891	4,843	3,832	5,881	7,155	8,436
Schenck.....			29	186	1,265	3,371	6,048	11,470	11,470
Schuykill.....				11,311	29,741	29,053	69,713	89,510	116,428
Somerset.....		10,133	11,251	13,974	17,762	19,650	24,416	26,778	28,226
Snyder.....								15,045	15,045
Sullivan.....								5,637	6,191
Susquehanna.....					9,969	21,195	25,688	36,267	37,523
Tioga.....		1,637	4,021	8,975	15,498	23,767	31,044	35,067	35,067
Union.....				18,619	20,795	22,787	26,083	11,145	15,976
Venango.....		1,139	3,069	4,915	9,470	17,900	18,310	25,043	47,925
Warren.....		293	827	1,676	4,697	9,278	13,671	19,190	23,867
Washington.....	23,869	23,292	36,249	46,078	47,734	41,273	44,339	32,359	35,183
Wayne.....		2,562	4,125	4,127	7,065	11,818	21,890	32,359	35,183
Westmoreland.....	16,018	22,726	26,392	30,510	38,100	42,639	51,796	53,736	64,710
Wyoming.....							10,655	12,540	15,580
York.....	37,747	25,613	31,958	38,747	42,859	47,010	57,459	68,200	76,134
Totals.....	434,373	602,365	810,091	1,017,507	1,348,233	1,724,033	2,311,786	2,906,215	3,21,951





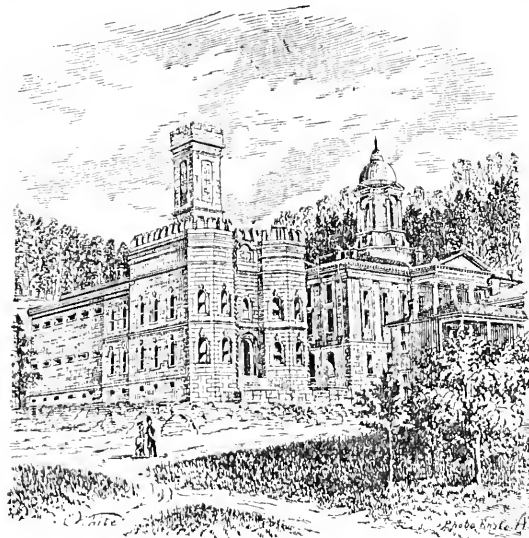
## ARMSTRONG COUNTY.

BY A. D. GLENN, EDDYVILLE.



ARMSTRONG county was formed by the act of 12th of March, 1800, from parts of Lycoming, Westmoreland, and Allegheny. It received its name from General John Armstrong, who commanded the expedition against the Indians at Kittanning in 1756. In 1802 commissioners were appointed to locate the county seat, and upon their report in 1804 the present site was laid out. James Sloan, James Mathews, and

Alexander Walker were appointed the first commissioners to locate the county seat and organize the county, but the latter declined to serve. The county was fully organized for judicial purposes in 1805. Since the establishment of the county, its size has been considerably curtailed by the formation of Clarion. Average length, 25 miles; breadth, 25 miles; area, about 625 square miles. It is bounded on the north by Clarion, on the east by Jefferson and Indiana, on the south by Westmoreland, and on the west by Butler. The surface of the county is diversified,



ARMSTRONG COUNTY PUBLIC BUILDINGS.

[From a Photograph by Shadle, Kittanning.]

but generally rolling or hilly, particularly those parts lying adjacent to streams of water.

The Allegheny river is the largest stream of water flowing through the county. It forms the eastern boundary of a narrow strip of territory belonging to Armstrong county, extending from above Parker to the mouth of Redbank creek, where the Allegheny river first enters the county, flowing a distance of about thirty-six miles through the county, separating it into two somewhat unequal parts, and passing out of the county at the confluence of the Kiskimetas. It was considered by both the aborigines and the French as identical with the Ohio, and the Monongahela an affluent. *O-hee-o* in the Seneca, and *Allegheny* in the Delaware language, having the same signification, *fair water*—hence



the French name, *La Belle Rivière*. Before the construction of the Allegheny Valley railroad, this river afforded by means of steamboats an easy and rapid transit between various towns along the river, but the days of steamboats are past on this river except those used in towing oil barges. The Kiskiminetas river forms the southern boundary of the county emptying into the Allegheny one mile north of Freeport. The Pennsylvania canal passed along this river and was fed by it, but now canal, aqueduct, and dams, are among things of the past—the use of the canal being superseded by the more rapid means of transit afforded by the West Pennsylvania railroad. Redbank creek forms the northern boundary. Mahoning creek, formerly called by the Indians Mohulbaectetam, enters the county near Milton, separating Wayne and Redbank townships, flowing through Mahoning township separating Madison and Pine, falls into the Allegheny river ten miles north of Kittanning. Crooked creek rises in Indiana county, flows in a westerly direction and empties into the Allegheny five miles below Kittanning. It is exceedingly crooked, hence its name. Cowanshannoc, Pine, Buffalo, Plum, Sugar, and Bear creeks, all tributaries of the Allegheny, with numerous smaller streams, furnish abundant water.

In addition to water transportation there are three railroads: the Allegheny Valley, which extends along the left or eastern bank of the Allegheny river; the West Pennsylvania, which passes along the southern boundary, but on the opposite side of the Kiskiminetas river; the Low Grade Division of the Allegheny Valley railroad, which passes along the northern boundary, but on the north side of Redbank creek.

Bituminous coal is found in all parts of the county; the usual thickness of the vein being about four feet. Very extensive coal works are in operation in Mahoning township, about one and a half miles from the borough of New Bethlehem, in Clarion county, and the same distance from the Low Grade Division of the Allegheny Valley railroad, with which it is connected by a branch road constructed by the Redbank Mining Land coal company. The principal vein consists of cannel coal, with an average thickness of nine feet. Operations were commenced in 1870, but no coal was shipped until 1872. The coal is of an excellent quality, and is forwarded to all the eastern cities. It is said there are but four other veins of similar coal in the United States. Thirty-eight thousand tons have been shipped the last two years (1874–75). In addition to this vein of cannel coal, the company own two veins of bituminous coal, one four feet, the other three feet nine inches; all three in 70 feet perpendicular of the hill. The capacity of the works is three hundred tons per day. A somewhat similar vein to this is found on the Thompson farm in Redbank township; it is about six feet. Another extensive works the Mahoning Coal company is operating at the mouth of Mahoning on the Allegheny Valley railroad. It has bituminous coal alone.

Iron ore is found in the creeks and river hills in the northern part of the county. Caldwell's and Stewartson's furnaces on Mahoning, and Pine creek furnace on Pine creek, are now (1876) in operation. These produce pig iron, as also did Monticello at the mouth of Cowanshannoc, but it has ceased operations.

That part of the county lying north of Brady's Bend and between Butler county and the Allegheny river, is included in what is generally termed "The



Lower Oil Fields." The first attempt to develop the oil resources of this territory were made in 1860 by Thomas McConnell, W. D. Robinson, Smith K. Campbell, and Colonel J. B. Findlay, of Kittanning, but oil was not "struck" until October, 1865. The following account of the drilling of the first well at Parker's Landing is taken from Henry's "History of Petroleum:":

"In the winter of 1864-5 the oil excitements of the upper and lower Oil creek regions were at their height, and Mr. William D. Robinson very earnestly conceived the idea that oil deposits existed in the region of his third of a century's residence. He had examined and carefully noted the then generally received opinion of "surface indications," and soon reached the conviction that oil could be found there. He purchased thirty-six acres of the old homestead farm, lying on the Allegheny river and now forming a portion of Parker's Landing. This thirty-six acres of land he made the basis of a stock company. In the spring of 1865 he commenced his first well under the auspices of this company, and *this was the first oil-well drilled at Parker's Landing.* The embarrassment attending the first effort to find oil at Parker's Landing may be estimated by those familiar with new territory. All the machinery for the well had to be boated from Pittsburgh or Oil City, and there was neither derrick nor development between these two points, fifty and sixty miles from a machine shop, if a break occurred. Pittsburgh, Oil City, or Titusville, were the nearest points for repairs. It required the entire summer of 1865—nearly six months—to complete this well. In October, 1865, the sand pump brought up the unmistakable evidence of a 'third sand' or oil-rock. The well was tubed and started off at about ten barrels per day. It averaged the first year nineteen barrels per day, and oil was sold from it during its first two or three months' production at eight dollars per barrel. The well continued to produce for a long time, and was a source of much profit to the company."

This was the beginning of the oil development, but afterwards the hills around Parker became dotted over with derricks, and a vast quantity of the oleaginous fluid has been obtained. Large wells were afterwards struck in Perry township, at Armstrong run, near Queenstown, and on the head-waters of Pine run. There was a burning well at the latter place. On both runs towns were rapidly built, but soon disappeared when the oil territory gave out. At Armstrong run a school-house was built for the use of the new town, and by the close of the first term the town had mostly been removed and the school-house itself emigrated to a different locality.

In former years considerable salt was manufactured in the county, but at present nearly all the works have ceased to manufacture. Salt water at various depths is found in different sections. A vein of what is supposed to be roofing-slate has been discovered in Redbank township. Limestone has been found in all parts of the county. According to a tradition of the Complanter Indians, a lead mine on the Mahoning creek was known to their fathers. So strong are they in this belief, some thirty years since they sent two of their number to find the mine, but without success.

The site of Kittanning was originally occupied by an Indian village of that name. From this point a path crossed the mountains to Black Log valley, Standing Stone (now Huntingdon), and other places in the central part of the



State, along which the Indians passed to and fro. It was to this place that in September, 1756, the expedition of General John Armstrong was sent, the details of which, resulting in the destruction of the town and the overthrow of the Indians, we have previously given. Subsequently, in 1780, another fierce encounter with the natives took place within the limits of the county at Mahoning, ten miles distant from Kittanning. At this period General Brodhead was in command of Fort Pitt, and Captain Samuel Brady was frequently sent out with a scouting party into the Indian country north and west of the fort to watch the movements of the savages. Captain Brady was a native of Cumberland county, born in 1758, but soon after removed with his father to the West Branch of Susquehanna, a few miles above Northumberland. Cradled amid the alarms and excitements of a frontier exposed to savage warfare, Brady's military propensities were very early developed. He eagerly sought a post in the Revolutionary army; was at the siege of Boston; a lieutenant at the massacre of the Paoli; and in 1779 was ordered to Fort Pitt with the regiment under General Brodhead. A short time previous to this both his father and brother had fallen by the hands of Indians; and from that moment Brady took a solemn oath of vengeance against all Indians, and his future life was devoted to the fulfilment of his vow. His success as a partisan had acquired for him its usual results—approbation with some, and envy with others. Some of his brother officers censured the commandant for affording him such frequent opportunities for honorable distinction. At length open complaint was made, accompanied by a request, in the nature of a demand, that others should be permitted to share with Brady the perils and honors of the service abroad from the fort. The General apprised Brady of what had passed, who readily acquiesced in the propriety of the proposed arrangements, and an opportunity was not long wanting for testing its efficiency. The Indians made an inroad into the Sewickly settlement, committing the most barbarous murders of men, women, and children; stealing such property as was portable, and destroying all else. The alarm was brought to Pittsburgh, and a party of soldiers, under the command of the emulous officers, despatched for the protection of the settlements, and chastisement of the foe. From this expedition Brady was of course excluded; but the restraint was irksome to his feelings. The day after the detachment had marched, Brady solicited permission from his commander to take a small party for the purpose of "catching the Indians;" but was refused. By dint of importunity, however, he at length wrung from him a reluctant consent, and the command of *free men*; to this he added his *pet* Indian, and made hasty preparation. Instead of moving towards Sewickly, as the first detachment had done, he crossed the Allegheny at Pittsburgh, and proceeded up the river. Conjecturing that the Indians had descended that stream in canoes, till near the settlement, he was careful to examine the mouths of all creeks coming into it, particularly from the south-east. At the mouth of the Big Mahoning, about six miles above Kittanning, the canoes were seen drawn up to its western bank. He instantly retreated down the river, and waited for night. As soon as it was dark, he made a raft, and crossed to the Kittanning side. He then proceeded up to the creek, and found that the Indians had, in the meantime, crossed the stream, as their canoes were drawn to its upper or north-eastern bank.

The country on both sides of Mahoning, at its mouth, is rough and moun-





tainous; and the stream, which was then high, very rapid. Several ineffectual attempts were made to wade it, which they at length succeeded in doing, three or four miles above the canoes. Next a fire was made, their clothing dried, and arms inspected; and the party moved towards the Indian camp, which was pitched on the second bank of the river. Brady placed his men at some distance, on the lower or first bank. The Indians had brought from Sewickly a stallion, which they had fettered and turned to pasture on the lower bank. An Indian, probably the owner under the *law of arms*, came frequently down to him, and occasioned the party no little trouble. The horse, too, seemed willing to keep their company, and it required considerable circumspection to avoid all intercourse with either. Brady became so provoked that he had a strong inclination to tomahawk the Indian, but his calmer judgment repudiated the act, as likely to put to hazard a more decisive and important achievement. At length the Indians seemed quiet, and the Captain determined to pay them a closer visit. He had got quite near their fires; his *pet* Indian had caught him by the hair and gave it a pluck, intimating the advice to retire, which he would not venture to whisper; but finding Brady regardless of it, had crawled off—when the Captain, who was scanning their numbers and the position of their guns, observed one throw off his blanket and rise to his feet. It was altogether impracticable for Brady to move without being seen. He instantly decided to remain where he was, and risk what might happen. He drew his head slowly beneath the brow of the bank, putting his forehead to the earth for concealment. His next sensation was that of warm water poured into the hollow of his neck, as from the spout of a teapot, which, trickling down his back over the chilled skin, produced a feeling that even his iron nerves could scarce master. He felt quietly for his tomahawk, and had it been about him he probably would have used it; but he had divested himself even of that when preparing to approach the fires, lest by striking against the stones or gravel, it might give an alarm. He was compelled, therefore, *nolens volens*, to submit to this very unpleasant operation, until it should please his warriorship to refrain, which he soon did, and returning to his place wrapped himself up in his blanket, and composed himself for sleep as if nothing had happened. Brady returned to and posted his men, and in the deepest silence all awaited the break of day. When it appeared, the Indians arose and stood around their fires, exulting, doubtless, in the scalps they had taken, the plunder they had acquired, and the injury they had inflicted on their enemies. Precarious joy—short-lived triumph! The *avenger of blood* was beside them! At a signal given, seven rifles cracked, and five Indians were dead ere they fell. Brady's well-known war-ery was heard, his party was among them, and their guns (mostly empty) were all secured. The remaining Indians instantly fled and disappeared. One was pursued by the trace of his blood, which he seems to have succeeded in staunching. The *pet* Indian then imitated the cry of a young wolf, which was answered by the wounded man, and the pursuit again renewed. A second time the wolf cry was given and answered, and the pursuit continued into a windfall. Here he must have espied his pursuers, for he answered no more. Brady found his remains there three weeks afterwards, being led to the place by ravens that were preying on the carcass. The horse was unfettered, the plunder gathered, and the party commenced their return to Pittsburgh, most of them



descending in the Indian canoes. Three days after their return, the first detachment came. They reported that they had followed the Indians closely, but that the latter had got into their canoes and made their escape.

It was not therefore until the danger of savage encroachments ceased, almost the close of the century, that settlements were made within the present limits of Armstrong county. The land in the neighborhood of Kittanning remained in possession of the Armstrong family; and when the establishment of the county was proposed, Dr. Armstrong, of Carlisle, a son of the General, made a donation of the site of the town to the county, on condition of receiving one-half of the proceeds of the sales of lots. Robert Brown and David Reynolds were among the first who erected dwellings at the old Indian town. The former went there in 1798, with several hunters. He first settled on the opposite bank of the river. At that time there were very few settlers in the region. Jeremiah Loughery, an old frontiersman, who had been in Armstrong's expedition, lingered around the place for many years. He had no family, and wandered from house to house, staying all night with people, and repaying their hospitality with anecdotes of his adventures. The early settlers of that day found it necessary to be always prepared for Indian warfare, and for hunting the beasts of the forest; indeed, their character generally throughout the surrounding region was a mixture of the frontiersman, the hunter, and the agriculturist. All wore hunting shirts, and went barefoot, or wore moccasins.

The early pioneers were from the eastern sections of the State, many of them Germans who, through their thrift and frugality, soon transformed the wilderness into a garden of beauty. Upon the treaty of Fort McIntosh, peace spread her benign influence over the forests and fields of Armstrong, and the peaceable pursuits of the agriculturist gave confidence to emigration, and gradually, without any of those incidents that comprise an eventful history of a locality, Armstrong county has progressed in all the essentials which go to make up an influential community—population, enterprise, industry, and wealth.

Until after the lapse of almost three-quarters of a century, little of moment transpired within the limits of the county to be placed on record. Then the great civil conflict created such a powerful revulsion in popular feeling that Armstrong county presents its history in the great Rebellion. During that struggle she performed her duty nobly. Captain William Sirwell organized a company of three months' men, and was mustered in as Company B, 9th Regiment Pennsylvania volunteers, at Harrisburg, April 22, 1861. In the same year a camp was formed on the old fair-ground on the banks of the Allegheny river immediately above Kittanning. It was named Camp Orr, after General Robert Orr, an old and prominent citizen of the county. There were two regiments (three-years' men) and a company of cavalry recruited at this camp. The first regiment, 78th Pennsylvania volunteer infantry, under the command of Colonel Sirwell, left Kittanning on the 14th of October, 1861, arriving in Pittsburgh that afternoon. On the 18th of October, accompanied by the 77th and 79th regiments, Pennsylvania volunteers, and Muehler's battery of artillery, under command of General James S. Negley, they moved to Louisville, Kentucky, *via* the Ohio river. From Louisville they moved south along the Louisville and Nashville railroad, first camping near Nolin creek. The 78th was attached to the army of the Cumber-



land, and so remained till the close of its term of service, when it returned to Kittanning to be mustered out. This regiment participated in many engagements, and made for itself a highly honorable record. Of this regiment Companies B, F, G, I, and K, were from Armstrong county.

The second regiment, 103d Pennsylvania volunteers, left Camp Orr at Harrisburg, on the 24th of February, 1862. This regiment, under command of Colonel Theodore F. Lehman, joined the army of the Potomac, but was subsequently sent further south, suffered severely through sickness in camp, death in battle, and starvation in Southern prisons. But a small percentage of the regiment ever returned. Only one entire company (Captain Hamilton's) belonging to this regiment was recruited in Armstrong county, though a large number of the men in several of the other companies were citizens of Armstrong.

The following fully organized companies served in different regiments: Company M, 2d Pennsylvania cavalry; Company D, 62nd Pennsylvania infantry; Companies B and C, and part of E and F, 139th infantry; Company K, 14th cavalry; Battery No. 204 (5th heavy artillery); and Company H of the 10th, and Companies A and G, 22nd militia (1862). Besides these there were a great many of the citizens of the county scattered in different regiments of this and other States.

Since that period little of moment has transpired, save the excitement and incidents due to the discovery and development of oil.

KITTANNING, the county seat, is situated on the left bank of the Allegheny river, forty-five miles north-east of Pittsburgh. It is pleasantly located on the bottom land adjoining the river. Kittanning was laid out in 1804, and incorporated as a borough in 1821. It contains the usual county buildings, one of which—the jail—deserves special mention. The jail and sheriff's house are built together, the entire length being 114 feet by 50 feet in width. The jail is two stories in height, contains twenty-four cells, each 8x14, 13 feet in height, hall 18x68. A cast-iron balustrade three feet in width projects from the second tier of cells and extends entirely around the hall. The sheriff's house contains nine rooms, including dining-room and kitchen; flooring of yellow-pine, doors four inches thick, made of oak with boiler-iron between firmly bolted together; the windows are protected by 1½ inches round iron. The foundations—seven feet in width—are sunk to the solid rock twenty-four feet below the surface. The entire structure, including cornice, window caps, and tower, are of fine-cut stone from the Catfish quarry in Clarion county. The sheriff's house is furnished with all the modern improvements—bath-rooms on both floors, gas, and hot and cold water throughout the building. The cupola rises 108 feet from the ground. James McCullough, Jr., of Kittanning, was the architect, and superintended the erection of the building. It was erected in 1870-73 at a cost of \$268,000. From its cost and color it has been euphoniously dubbed the "White Elephant." The court house is a plain, substantial structure.

The BRADY'S BEND (or Great Western, as it was formally called) iron works are situated on the right bank of the Allegheny, twenty-five miles above Kittanning. The rolling-mill is on the river at the mouth of the creek, the furnaces about a mile up the stream. Their lands and the village built thereon stretches out three or four miles up the valley of the Sugar creek and its branches. A rail-



road extends from the depot of the Allegheny Valley railroad in East Brady, on the opposite side of the river, three miles up the Sugar creek; another runs from the furnaces to the coke yard on the summit. On the former, locomotives draw the cars; on the latter, the empty cars are drawn to the top by horse-power, which return loaded by the force of gravitation. There was a population of about 3,000 here at one time, and about \$400,000 paid out annually to employees, but for some cause—probably the reduction in price of railroad iron—the company failed, and the works at present stand idle. The place affords, when the works are in operation, an excellent home-market for produce. The place derives its name from a large bend in the river named after Captain Samuel Brady, who had an encounter with Indians near the present site of the rolling-mill. This seems to be the southern limit of the lower oil fields, as oil has never been found south of this point in the county. About a mile north of the furnaces, up a deep ravine, is the borough of QUEENSTOWN, a smart village which has received quite an impetus from the discovery of oil within and adjoining the borough limits.

MANORVILLE, about one mile below Kittanning on the Allegheny river, with a population of 330, has an oil refinery, tannery, brick works, and an extensive lime-stone quarry. . . . WORTHINGTON is situated six miles west of Kittanning, on the Butler turnpike. Near it are the Buffalo woolen-mills, a tannery, and some minor enterprises.

PARKER CITY is situated on the Allegheny river, eighty-two miles north of Pittsburgh, and is the centre of the Armstrong, Butler, and Clarion county oil regions. During the years 1818 to 1822, when the Bear creek furnace was built, quite a flourishing town grew up in the part now known as the Second ward; it was then, and until the incorporation of Parker City, known as Lawrenceburg. When this furnace blew out about 1840, the town rapidly disappeared until only two or three houses remained. About the year 1869 the part known as the First ward had but two or three dwellings. In this year the oil excitement began, and a town sprung up as if by magic. These developments spread rapidly and people flocked to the place, and in 1873 the town of Parker's Landing and borough of Lawrenceburg were incorporated under the name of the City of Parker. The Parkers were the original inhabitants, and owned the greater part of the land on which the city now stands. This family gave the city its name. It contains five churches. Population about 3,500. The principal business is that of producing oil; the traffic in petroleum is carried on at this place very largely; the bulk of the vast product of the region is handled at this place. The first well was put down in 1865 by W. D. Robinson for the Clarion oil company, but not much was done until 1869. Parker is on the line of the Allegheny Valley railroad, and is the eastern terminus of the Parker and Karns City railroad, a narrow gauge road running into the Butler county oil regions.

FREEPORT, situated on the west bank of the Allegheny river at the mouth or Buffalo creek, was laid out by David Todd, about the year 1800. The Pennsylvania canal crossed the Allegheny about a mile above Freeport, at the confluence of the Kiskiminetas river, and passed through this town. It added much to its prosperity, but the closing of the canal gave Freeport a check, from which it has scarcely recovered. The West Pennsylvania railroad, crossing the river at the junction of the Kiskiminetas and Allegheny rivers, passes through





Freeport; also the Butler Branch railroad connects with the main line at this place. These improvements have aided somewhat in restoring its former vigor.

APOLLO is situated on the Kiskiminetas river, about ten miles from its confluence with the Allegheny. It was laid out in 1815, by William Johnston and J. R. Speer, and named Warren, after an old Indian chief of that name—the site of the village being called Warren's Sleeping Ground. The first settlers were Isaac McLaughlin, Robert Stewart, Abraham Ludwick, and Catharine Cochran, mother of ex-Judge Cochran. In 1848 it was incorporated as a borough, and its name changed to Apollo. Until 1827 the citizens of Apollo (or, as then called, Warren) had to go to Greensburg, Westmoreland county, or to Kittanning, Armstrong county, for their mail matter. In that year a post office was established. Milton Dally was the first postmaster. The first store was kept by John McIlvaine, the first hotel by Peter Risher. The cemetery is supposed to be located on an old Indian burying ground. Of the Indian chiefs who made this their stopping place the name of but one—Raughnewag—is remembered. The Pennsylvania canal passed through this town and aided much in building it up. The canal was permanently closed in 1864. The town now possesses the facilities offered for transportation by the Western Pennsylvania railroad, which passes on the opposite side of the river. The present population is about 1,600.

LEECHBURGH is situated on the Kiskiminetas river, seven miles from its mouth. It was settled about the opening of the Pennsylvania canal. After the canal was closed it seemed at a stand-still for several years, until Rogers & Burchfield, proprietors of the iron works in Apollo, started a works in this place. This gave the town new life, and it became quite a thrifty, enterprising village. A few years since, some parties desiring to test the territory for oil, drilled a well several rods from the Westmoreland end of the bridge. No oil was found, but a heavy flow of gas. This gas ran to waste for some time, but at length Messrs. Rogers & Burchfield, conceiving it might be utilized, conveyed it by means of iron pipes from the well across the bridge to their rolling-mill, and introduced under their furnaces. It was found to work admirably, and resulted in a large saving in fuel, not only furnishing heat and light for the works, but a pipe projecting far above the roof of the establishment sends forth with great force a constant stream of gas, which burns night and day, illuminating the whole town.

DAYTON, a thriving village in Wayne township, is situated in the midst of a fine farming country. The first settlers were Peter Kammerdinner, Jesse Cable, James McQuown, Guyer & Laughlin, Dr. Goodheart, James Coleman, and Thomas H. Marshall. The town was never regularly laid out, but lots sold to suit purchasers. It was named about 1853; incorporated as a borough in 1873; present population, 575. Near to the limits of the borough is the Glade Run (Presbyterian) Church, and Glade Run Academ. Glade Run and Dayton Academies were opened about twenty-five years ago. The Soldiers' Orphan school, established in 1866, is beautifully situated on a small eminence overlooking the town and surrounding country, and near to a fine grove—belonging to the school lot—of natural forest trees.

ELDERTON borough (formerly called Middletown) is situated on a high hill



just midway on the pike between Kittanning and Indiana, containing three churches, an academy, school house, bank, several stores, two hotels, foundry, etc. It has an elevated and healthy location, and contains some fine private residences. WHITESBURGH post village, a small collection of houses, is on the pike five miles west of Elderton. BLANKET HILL post office is about midway between Whitesburgh and Kittanning.

RURAL VILLAGE is situated on the Kittanning and Clearfield turnpike, twelve miles east of Kittanning, in one of the healthiest and best grain-growing sections of the western part of the State. It was settled in 1835 by John Patterson, Alexander Foster, Sr., Hamlet Totten, and others, and contains a population of 200.

MIDDLESEX (Cowansville post office), is situated eight miles from Kittanning, on the Brady's Bend road, and contains twenty or twenty-five dwellings. Its first residents were William McClatchy, Solomon Bruner, and R. G. Porterfield. The post office was established in 1848, through the influence of John Cowan, hence the name. The town was laid out by William McClatchy about 1850.

OAKLAND (formerly called Texas) is nine miles from the mouth of Mahoning, on the Brookville road. It was settled about 1843 by Joseph Baughman, Samuel Copenhaver, Isaac Sanderson, and William R. Sanderson, by whom it was laid out.

PETNEYVILLE was settled by David Putney in 1834, and who now lives in the village at the advanced age of 85. At that time it was a laurel thicket. It is on Mahoning creek, about twenty miles from the county seat. Two miles above this, on Mahoning creek, is EDDYVILLE post office, a small village.

SLATE LICK is located at the cross-roads leading from Kittanning to Pittsburgh, and from Freeport to Brady's Bend, in South Buffalo township. The place derived its name from a deer lick in the immediate vicinity.



CENTENNIAL MEDAL—OBERSE.



## BEAVER COUNTY.

BY JAMES PATTERSON, BEAVER FALLS.



BEAVER COUNTY was erected March 12, 1800. It was formed out of parts of Allegheny and Washington counties. Jonathan Coulter, Joseph Hemphill, and Denny McClure, were named as commissioners for the erection of public buildings. Beaver town was named in the act as the county seat.

The county was organized for judicial purposes April 2, 1803. The first court was held February 6, 1804, at the house of Abner Lacock, on the lot in which John Clark for many years kept a hotel. Jesse Moore was the first president judge; Abner Lacock, John H. Redick, and Joseph Caldwell, were the first associates, and sat with Judge Moore. David Johnson was the first prothonotary, and was the first teacher in Canonsburg academy, July, 1791. William Henry was the first sheriff. Judge Moore was succeeded by Solomon Roberts, and he by William Wilkins; then came Charles Shaler, followed by John Bredin; then Daniel Agnew, etc., etc. At the first term, 1804, the following named attorneys were admitted to practice in Beaver county, viz.: Alexander Addison, Thomas Collins, Steel Sample, A. W. Foster, John Bannister Gibson, Sample S. King, Obediah Jennings, William Wilkins, Henry Haslet, James Allison, John Simmonson, David Redick, Parker Campbell, David Hays, C. S. Sample, Henry Baldwin, Thomas G. Johnston, Isaac Kerr, James Mountain, Robert Moore, William Ayr, and William Sarwell. Many of these became afterwards distinguished men in the State and nation, holding high and responsible positions. Judge Moore's circuit included five counties ending at Erie, and holding court in each five weeks in the year.

The county is bounded on the north by Mercer county, on the east by Butler, on the south-east by Allegheny, on the south by Washington, and on the west by the States of Ohio and Virginia.

The Ohio river flows through the southern portion of the county, which it enters fourteen miles below Pittsburgh, and runs a northerly course for about twelve miles, where the Beaver river falls into it, and then turns south-west and crosses the county by that course fifteen miles, receiving the Big Sewickly above the mouth of Beaver river, and the Raccoon creek below it.

The Mahoning river and Shenango, uniting in Lawrence county, form the Beaver river, with the Slippery Rock and Conoquenessing creeks, which flow into it near to the dividing line from Lawrence county, flows southward through nearly the middle of the county, and empties into the Ohio at Rochester, and near the borough of Beaver. Within the first five miles from its mouth there is a natural fall and rapids in quick succession of sixty-five feet in the aggregate, which natural fall, with a dam erected at the head (making a pool or "slack water," reaching back some seven miles to the mouth of the Conoquenessing



creek), make the whole fall of water for manufacturing uses eighty to eighty-five feet. Besides these rivers and creeks there are many important streams in this county, which form collectively an almost incalculable amount of water power for factories, work-shops, &c.

The population of the county when formed in 1800 was, as per the census of that year, 5,776, almost all of which was found to be on the south side of the Ohio, and engaged in agriculture. The length of the county north and south is 26 $\frac{3}{4}$  miles; width east and west, 18 $\frac{1}{2}$  miles; area in acres, 298,240—square miles, 44 $\frac{1}{2}$ .

Beaver county belongs to the secondary geological formation. Valuable and extensive beds of bituminous coal, with strata of limestone, occur in almost every part of the county. Near Darlington is a bed of cannel coal, eight or ten feet thick and greater, under which is a foot or more of good common bituminous coal. This cannel coal is also found in other parts of the county, and near to the Beaver and Ohio rivers. Cannel coal is light, compact, ignites easily and quickly, and burns with a strong blaze. Much of it is sent, during the navigation of the Erie canal, to New York city for the making of gas.

Coal No. 4, known as the Cannel coal vein, can be almost always found when sought at the proper horizon; but with few exceptions is thin and of no value—or of but little. In the valley of the Little Beaver river it lies near the grade of railroad, and near Cannelton there is a “pocket” varying in thickness from three to twenty-two feet of cannel, underlaid with one foot of bituminous of such purity that it is hauled by wagons for use by blacksmiths for twenty miles around. The quality of the cannel is such as to compete with the English and Peytonia cannels, and for its cheerfulness and cleanliness has become the favorite household fuel of New York City. The sales to that city alone will aggregate ten thousand tons annually during the past twenty years. The cannel coal was first discovered here in 1832, and was known as slate coal commonly, and a mine opened. The selling price was so low for a number of years as to supply the place of wood, having twice the heating-power of wood, and igniting as easily. About the year 1850 a railroad was built from the mine to the Pittsburgh, Fort Wayne, and Chicago railroad, and during the past twenty-five years the mine has been steadily worked. During the forty-three years’ operation, over one hundred acres have been mined out; and still the supply seems to be inexhaustible. The coal is underlaid with a “mother” shale which is literally full of fossil remains, fishes and mollusks. Suites of beautiful preserved fossils from this mine form the pride of many cabinets in Europe as well as in our own country. Iron ore of various kinds has been and is to be found in many parts of the county.

That part of the county which lies on the south side of the Ohio river is somewhat hilly, but generally more of a rolling character, much cut with streams of water, and relieved by many fine valleys of good, rich bottom lands, and altogether well suited for sheep husbandry and the cultivation of wheat and the cereal grains. That part being on the north side of the Ohio is of a rolling, gently undulating surface, excepting points immediately upon the banks of the rivers, and the soil is well adapted to every variety of farming and stock raising.

The county has been justly distinguished since the year 1830 for the quantity





and quality of its wool. Bituminous coals of excellent quality, camel coal, limestone in inexhaustible quantities, fire clays, suitable for making fire bricks for furnaces, etc., superior free sandstone, for building, are to be found in many localities in great abundance, and at the most advantageous points for economical use and for transportation abroad. There are few places to be found anywhere where so many and great advantages are offered for manufacturers as are possessed by Beaver county. Among these may be named that which first attracts the attention of strangers, viz., the greatness of the water power—particularly of the Beaver river, and the great ease with which it can be made available for manufacturing and mechanical purposes; and its other advantages for the economical manufacture and transportation of raw material and various articles of merchandize. The Ohio river affords one of the cheapest modes of transportation to and from the largest extent of country and population than by any other river or mode of conveyance of raw or manufactured goods. Railroads, running to all points of the compass, afford additional facilities for speedy travel and transportation, the advantages of which to manufacturers are steadily on the increase.

It is only recently, and since the close of the late war, that the great advantages of this county for economical manufacturing have been generally or widely appreciated by manufacturers or capitalists. This was owing to several causes; a few of the most prominent and influential of which may be stated: In the first place, danger from the Indians prevented settlers and enterprising people from venturing into the territory west of the Ohio until after 1796, and comparatively few even of those who had previously bought from the State and paid it for tracts of land, dared venture to make improvements for some years after that time; and those who first entered were mostly farmers. And another cause was that, until after the year 1830, and the completion of the Pennsylvania public improvements from Philadelphia to Pittsburgh, the great travel and transportation of merchandise, etc., between the great cities of the east and the country west of the Alleghenies were by the way of the New York canals to the lakes, or south by way of Baltimore and the national turnpike to Wheeling, Virginia, and partly over the Pennsylvania turnpike roads from Philadelphia to Pittsburgh, and from Pittsburgh down the Ohio by steamboats. And all these missed any sight of Beaver county's natural beauties and advantages. The price of passage in a stage coach from Philadelphia to Pittsburgh, for some time before and after 1830, was \$18 to \$20 and \$22; and freight charges by Conestoga wagons were, from Philadelphia to Pittsburgh, from three cents to five cents per pound; and the time occupied in travel between the two cities in the fastest stage line was three and one-half to four days and nights; and even until the railroads from Philadelphia to Pittsburgh were in operation, or until telegraphic lines were established, an answer to a letter sent from Beaver post office could not be received at that office in less time than eight to ten days. And even after the completion of the public works, and until about the close of our last war, the close proximity of Beaver to Pittsburgh, instead of working to promote the growth of Beaver county, operated to its disadvantage in various ways. The Pittsburghers labored to impress upon strangers from the East and elsewhere who were looking and inquiring for sites to engage in the erection of



works, factories, &c., that coal in Pittsburgh was so cheap, and an engine of sufficient power for their purposes would cost so little, and could be got upon such terms there, and which could all be paid out of their daily profits, and had so many hard things to urge against water power generally, and there particularly, that they—seekers—were deterred from locating in Beaver county.

Another fact—as argued—which operated against establishing industrial works in Beaver, was that Beaver county had no banking accommodations; whereas, Pittsburgh had a great abundance of banking and exchange facilities; that while a business man or a manufacturer wishing to get his bills of exchange cashed would be required, under the rules, if living out of the county—city—to furnish two acceptable city endorsers, or go to a broker and pay him according as he could make terms.

Before the Pennsylvania public improvements were completed, the market for flour, grain, manufactured goods of all kinds, was the “home market” and the Ohio river and western waters, up to the year 1830. The war of 1812 with Great Britain caused a check upon the growth and prosperity of the county in population and business. Many of the citizens entered the army and went to the frontiers, and generally supported the government most zealously.

The law of April, 1792, opened up the “territory north and west of the Ohio” to occupancy, which was previously an uninhabited wilderness, and had been in possession of the Indians until after General Wayne’s treaty of Greenville in 1795, and for a year or more thereafter considered to be unsafe for families to settle in. Under this law of 1792 great troubles arose, and great litigation and almost never-ending lawsuits grew out of disputes between those claiming “title under purchase from the State,” and those claiming under “settlement and improvement.” This retarded the growth and improvement of Beaver for more than fifty years. One case may be named as a proof for this. General Daniel Brodhead, an officer in service under General George Washington, when in command at Fort Pitt, became well acquainted with the “Falls of Beaver and the Black Walnut Bottom on the west side of Beaver river.” Aware of the great value of the site for manufacturing purposes, when this law of April, 1792, was passed, he, on the day of its passage, made purchase of warrants for two tracts of four hundred acres each, covering the Black Walnut Bottom and the “middle falls of Beaver.” In August, 1801, he sold these two tracts of land to David Hoopes, of Chester county, for three thousand dollars, receiving one hundred dollars on account, binding himself to make good title and give possession at a fixed time. David Hoopes, with a company of friends, went out the same year to take possession of the land, and to begin building mills, etc., but found it in possession of “settlers,” claiming the land under “settlement and improvement.” He was obliged to buy fifty acres, embracing some of the bottom and water power, and the next year began making improvements. An iron-blast furnace was built, also a grist-mill, saw-mill, &c.; and in 1806 a town plot was made, lots sold, and under various firms—Hoopes, Townsend & Co.; J. Wilson & Co.; Barker, Greege & Co.; and O. Ormsby. Until the year 1818, a large business was done in the “Brighton” estate, when, owing to the general financial depression, the furnaces could not be worked with profit, and the mills, furnace, forge, &c., were permitted to become dilapi-



dated and ruinous. Previous to this time, the Harmony Society, then located in Butler county, would have purchased the place—these two tracts of land and the improvements thereon—for \$32,000, but for the disputes about the title of a large part thereof. Had it not been for this *defect* in title, this numerous and influential society would have taken and improved it instead of removing to the State of Indiana, which they did shortly afterwards. General Brodhead instituted suit in the United States Court of Equity in Philadelphia, and obtaining a judgment, in his favor dispossessed the original settlers, some of them leasing part of the land from him and others leaving the place altogether.

The population in 1810 was 12,168, which had increased at the census of 1820 to 15,340. The most important event during the decade thereafter, causing the increase of population, business, etc., was the coming into the county of the Harmony Society from Harmony, Indiana, in the year 1825, and locating upon a large tract of land on the Ohio river, possessing one of the most beautiful of the very many sites for a town or city, upon which they laid out the town of Economy, and erected factories, mills, and workshops. The Society added largely to the population, and made a market for many agricultural products, wool, etc. Their industry, economy in gardening, and in fruit culture, had a most inspiring and stimulating effect, constantly growing to the present time.

The population had increased by the census of 1830 to 24,206. The influence of a protective tariff and the United States bank, which had done so much for Eastern Pennsylvania, had for good reached even west and north of the Ohio river to Beaver county. James Patterson, a citizen of Philadelphia, on a visit to Pittsburgh and the West, was by an accident induced to visit Beaver county, in the spring of 1829, and falling in love with the water-power, etc., at Brighton, on the Beaver river, purchased the estate embracing about thirteen hundred acres. The old works were in a state of ruin and decay. He removed his family, machinery, etc., the same year, and began some improvements of the property. He erected a flour-mill, in which, during a number of years, he did a thriving business in purchasing wheat in the country around, making extra family flour for the Philadelphia market. During the working of the Pennsylvania public improvements, large quantities were sent to the East. He also built a cotton factory, spinning coarse yarns for a market, and much of which he had made by local weavers into plaids, checks, etc., and giving employment to many work-people, spreading more money through the country than had ever been done before. At this time, and until the good effects of the working of the canals, etc., after completion were felt, the price of wheat at the Falls was forty to fifty cents per bushel—fifty cents per day for a laboring man, or a country carpenter; very good coal delivered for four and one-half to five cents per bushel. The price paid the digger was one cent and five-eighths per bushel. The purchase and cash price paid to Mr. Oliver Ormsby, of (near) Pittsburgh, Allegheny county, made quite an impression, and was the cause of much real estate in the county changing hands and many improvements of importance being made. The progress and completion in the county of the State canal to New Castle, produced a sensible effect upon the spirits of the people and upon values generally.

The people of the county received with great approval the public school law,



and put it in force by building school-houses, etc., early after its passage, and it has grown with the people since, until it is now a great power for good.

The chartering by the State of Pennsylvania of the United States Bank, and establishing a branch thereof in New Brighton, had considerable influence at the time and for a few years thereafter, in stimulating and promoting real business and improvements, as also of all manner of wild speculation. Manufacturers and owners of real estate were induced not only to enlarge their factories, and work shops, but to build additional ones, and to embark in new and large business operations, requiring much money, which they were led to believe they could obtain abundantly from their branch bank. Every thing went on swimmingly till the mother bank in Philadelphia failed, and assigned the indebtedness due to the branch in New Brighton to Philadelphia Bank "Trustees," when great distress and ruin fell upon many of the people and the business of the county, and values of real estate and other property were prostrate and almost entirely without a price in the market. The effects of the so-called panic of 1873 are not to be compared with the consequences of this failure of the United States Bank in Beaver county.

Under the labor, influence, and cost of a citizen of the county, a very large amount of these debts due in Beaver county, approximating \$200,000, was compromised and paid, by the assignments of cash, real estate, bank stocks, etc., to the very great benefit of debtor and creditor. By these compromises, most of the manufacturers were enabled, at least in a small way, to resume operations, and gradually, but slowly, confidence and business revived again.

The population of the county, as per census of 1840, had grown to be 29,368. During the time from 1840 to 1850 the county interests continued to labor under the bad influences of the failure of the bank referred to, and the general depression of business and losses incurred by some of her manufacturers by the great fire of 1845 in Pittsburgh, but trade and population gradually improved.

The census of 1850 showed the population to be 26,689. This reduction in the number of inhabitants was caused by the act of the Legislature, March 20, 1849, by which a part of Beaver county territory was taken to form Lawrence county, and Beaver lost thereby 9,130 of her citizens. The contract for building the Ohio and Pennsylvania railroad through this county was made April 24, 1850. The first locomotive passed up Beaver creek as far as Block House run, July 30, 1851. The first "excursion train" came from Pittsburgh, 23d October, 1851, and passed beyond the summit towards Alliance, Ohio.

Under the influence of general prosperity in the East, and under the hopes inspired by the railroad enterprises in and through the county, an eastern company purchased, in 1853, through a real estate agent, James Patterson's estate, mills, etc., at Brighton, on the Beaver, and also from Ovid Pinney his large property at Rochester, on the Ohio. Great expectations were formed of the good results to the general interests from this purchase and the improvements which were expected to follow. But after a very sickly existence and unwise management, and the loss of the cotton factory and the original machinery therein from fire, by the act of an incendiary, and much damage to the property otherwise, the company utterly failed, and the owner, holding a mortgage for most of the purchase money, had a long and most vexatious suit





at law to dispossess them, and was sued for \$70,000 damages, because in the deed of mortgage it was stipulated that one per cent. should annually be paid, over six per cent., to cover State or municipal taxes upon money at interest.

The census of 1860 finds the population to be 29,140. The panic of 1857 had a very bad influence upon business in the county, as had also the two first years of our late war.

The great majority of the people sustained the Government in the war with great zeal and spirit, promptly furnishing volunteers and recruits for the army as required of them, and as promptly paid all taxes and income. Each borough and township was made a military district, and furnished its quota of men as they were called, and paid their recruits in cash at the time, the bounty agreed upon to each, the county incurring no debt or obligation for this purpose. And owing to this fact the county has for a number of years past been free from debt. There is probably no county in the State which in proportion to population put more soldiers in the army than did Beaver.

An effort was made during two sessions of Congress, in the years 1861-2 and 1862-3, to induce the government to purchase the Brighton estate, with its great water powers, for the erection of a National armory for making large and small guns, and for which a committee of National engineers, appointed by the government in 1825, had recommended it after careful examination of many sites in the West—but which, owing mainly to the opposition of the Pittsburgh "Board of Trade," which pressed for its location *in* Pittsburgh—was unsuccessful. Failing to induce manufacturers or capitalists from abroad to buy and improve the property for their own and the general benefit, the Harmony Society of Economy undertook the task to induce private manufacturers to buy lots, water powers, etc., and in that way do in a retail way what Mr. Patterson had failed to do by wholesale. The Society, accordingly, in the year 1866, had made a new survey of the town—Brighton—very much enlarging its boundaries, and appointed H. F. & J. Reeves, real estate agents, to offer for sale building lots, water lots, houses and lots, etc., etc., at low prices to improvers. The lots sold quickly under this management, and the town grew in population and business very rapidly, and the people asked to be incorporated into a borough, and were so in the year 1870. It is now believed to be the *largest* manufacturing town in this county, and one of the largest in Western Pennsylvania, outside of Pittsburgh. The population as per the census of 1870 was 3,112. The taxables assessed in December, 1875, were 1,104 (eleven hundred and four); number of children enrolled January 1, 1876, was 782 (seven hundred and eighty-two). The whole population will not therefore be less than 4,500.

The census of 1870 makes the whole population of Beaver 37,612, and it is at this time [1876] over 45,000. The population increase per cent. from 1850 to 1860 was nine (9) per cent.; from 1860 to 1870 it was twenty-five (25) per cent.

The old Pennsylvania Beaver division of the canal owned by the Erie canal company, which for many years had been doing no good to the company or the people, was sold, and the Harmony Society finally became the owner of the title, then sold off the dams, canal-bed, and tow-path, from the lower end of New Brighton up the river to the mouth of the Conequeenessing creek—which makes the water power available for manufacturing purposes much greater at Beaver



Falls than ever before. The Erie canal used for passing boats very much of the water, and *wasted* much more needlessly, and doing *little* good most of the time.

Much is said and often repeated of the hardships and sufferings endured by "the early pioneers" who first settled upon our frontiers to clear up the land and make themselves a home and a farm; but their lives and fortunes are most happy and successful when compared with the lives and fortunes of those who first undertook the task of improving the natural advantages and to build up a business for their own and the country's best welfare in this county. The whole history and experience of those who first began the improvements on the Beaver at Brighton, from Hoopes, Townsend & Co., until Oliver Ormsby became the owner, showed nothing but a continual contest with adverse circumstances and obstructions of all sorts, and of troubles, and *discords*, and *opposition* from their neighbors, and while being friends were themselves very *unfriendly* one with another; and which continued as long as most of the parties lived, and exists with some to this day. A gentleman who was one of the *firms* owning and operating the works, and the best business man of them all, left Beaver county with so strong a hatred and antipathy to those people and the place, that he would not put his foot ashore in Beaver county, when he came up to receive a certain sum of money from Mr. Patterson, and to deliver an important title paper which he had held.

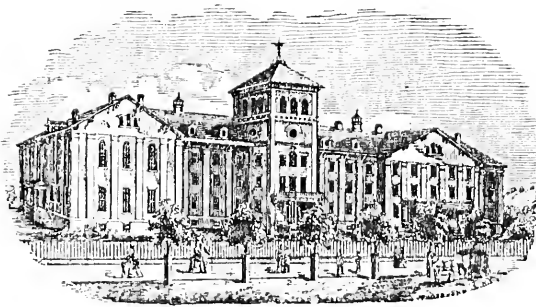
The future prospects for the county are most promising. A railroad, the Pittsburgh and Erie, has been recently located, from Pittsburgh coming down the Ohio through this county on the south side, crossing the Ohio at Beaver, and running up the Beaver from there through Fallston, Beaver Falls, etc., up to the junction of the Mahoning river, beyond, westward and northward. In the not far distant future, the valleys on the sides of our rivers presenting the routes of iron railways built at low grades, and being made at a cheaper cost than they have been hitherto, will carry freights at all seasons, at a rate and under circumstances which shippers will prefer to any thing which could be offered even upon an improved navigation of the Ohio river. This, too, would work greatly to the benefit of Beaver county, where exist so many of the elements required for economical manufacturing. In a short time, too, the coal now sent down southward by the Ohio from Pittsburgh will not be required there, which will work much in favor of manufacturers in Pittsburgh and vicinity.

BEAVER borough was laid out by the State surveyor and approved and confirmed by the Assembly, March 6, 1793. The site is that upon which General McIntosh built the fort named after him in 1778. The town was first named McIntosh, but subsequently called after the name of the stream. General Washington, on an exploring expedition down the Ohio, A.D. 1770, stopped at the mouth of Beaver, and speaks of the site in his diary as a fine body of land. It was also the site of a so-called French built town as early as 1754. The lots of ground as laid out were sold on the 12th day of July, by commissioners appointed for the purpose, viz., David Bradford, James Marshall, and Andrew Swearingen. The sale began in Washington, Pa., and continued from day to day, and finished August 12, 1793, nearly all of the lots being sold.

Among the first purchasers, and who afterwards moved to the town, were James Allison, Robert John, and Charles Davidson, Guion Greer, Thomas



Henry, David Johnston, Samuel Johnston, Joseph Lawrence, and James Lyon. The town was formed into a borough, March 29, 1802, and originally extended east of the Beaver, including much of what is now Rochester and all Bridgewater. Beaver is beautifully situated on a high plateau of land, giving a large view of the Ohio on both sides above and below the town, which is rarely equalled. It is favored with very good and never-failing springs of water, conveyed in pipes generally through the streets; the atmosphere is pure and healthy, as the county generally is proved to be; and the population by the census of 1870 was 1,120. It has recently made rapid increase in numbers and in value of general improvements. There is no place on the river better suited as a place for a home, churches, and schools, with quiet and good order prevailing. Prior to 1829, the Presbyterian brick church, now standing, was the only one south of Darlington and for many miles up or down the river. In this church the Rev. A. B. Quay was pastor, and alternated his labors between it and the service of the Colonization Society as their agent, according as his health permitted. He was a scholar and Christian minister of zeal and great service to his church and society. He died here worn out in the service, much respected and regretted. The first Methodist church was erected about 1830. The present building is of recent construction. There are also United Presbyterian and Roman Catholic



BEAVER COLLEGE AT BEAVER.

churches. The "Beaver College and Musical Institute," well-known and very highly appreciated, is located here, of which the Hon. Daniel Agnew is president and Rev. R. T. Taylor principal. At the upper end of the town is the "Beaver Female Seminary," under the charge of the Rev. Thomas Kennedy, and is in a prosperous and promising condition.

BRIDGEWATER borough was formed from a portion of Beaver, a part of Sharon, and another small part of Fallston, and lies along the Beaver from Fallston line down to the Ohio river. The population by the census of 1870 was 1,119, and it is estimated by resident citizens to have much increased in numbers since that time. There are three iron foundries, two saw, and one grist mill; two wagon factories, three tanneries, and many minor industries. The first bridge across the Beaver river is at this place, and is a good, solid Pennsylvania bridge. Robert Derragh, a very early pioneer in Beaver county, opened a store at this locality. He served one term as State Senator from Beaver and Washington. He died at the advanced age of ninety-five. The Hon. John Dickey lived in the bounds of this borough many years, and died in it. Wm. Davidson, George Hinds, and John Boles, settled here at an early date.



The "Beaver Point," on the Ohio end of the borough, is a beautiful location at the junction of the Ohio and Beaver rivers. It was for many years a great forwarding place for agricultural products down the river Ohio, and the landing and storing of goods from New Orleans, upwards, and from Pittsburgh, further east. The land at this point was bought early after 1803 by the Harmony Society, upon which they built a warehouse for storing goods received and shipped by the river, and which they sold before their removal from Butler county, West. It was used for the same purpose as late, at least, as 1850. Upon the locks of the canal entering the Ohio, was erected the first steamboat built for carrying passengers to and from Beaver to Pittsburgh, by John Dickey and others, of a size as they calculated would pass through those locks. It did pass through once, and was found to be too tight a fit, consuming too much time in the transit. She ran for a time from below the locks, and it being found that she was too small for that trade, was sold to go down the river, and the steamboats Beaver, Fallston, and New Castle were subsequently built and put in successful operation, landing for a time at this place, and also at Rochester, where large warehouses were erected to accommodate the trade.

FALLSTON is built on the west bank of the Beaver on a narrow bottom, at the foot of a high bluff or hill, and was as early as 1830 famous for the variety of its manufactures. It was at that time the chief and almost only point of mechanical and manufacturing industry in the county, excepting at Economy. Wool, paper, linseed oil, scythies, baskets, carpets, lasts, etc., were among the manufactures of the town in that day, but do not now exist there, and are superseded by larger and more important works.

A road under the hills, called the "narrows," about a mile long, lies between this place and Beaver Falls. A good substantial covered bridge divides it from New Brighton, which last named place owes much of its population and wealth to the people and industries of this always busy and industrious town. About one-third of the distance between Beaver Falls and Fallston there is a dam built across the Beaver for the common use of New Brighton and Fallston. The water power which this dam and the race-way affords is immense, each side being entitled to one-half thereof. A race-way is conducted down the narrows through the town to the works where it gives some seventeen or eighteen feet fall for use. It was among the first to improve the power of these water-falls for manufacturing purposes. John Pugh and Evan Pugh, David Townsend, Benjamin Townsend, Abel Townsend, and Thomas Thorniley, were among the early settlers.

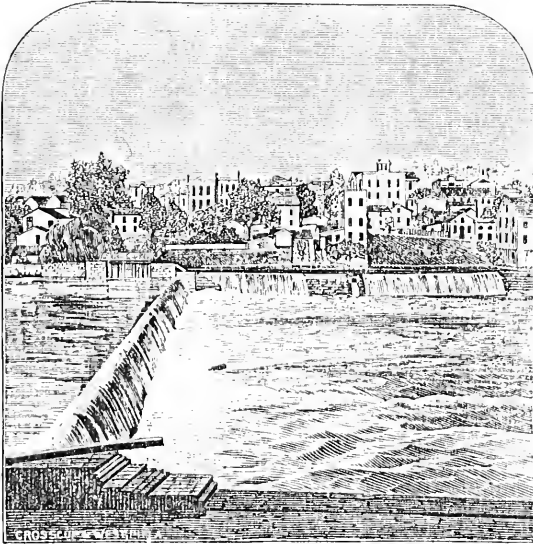
Miner, Champlin & Co., in 1828, established a factory for making buckets, tubs, etc., which became in time a great business, and at a later day under the firm of Miner & Merrick, was one of the very best managed and most successful works of the kind in this country. Owing to the nature of the enterprise and the development of the West the enterprise could no longer be made to pay, and it is dead. In 1826 a wire-works was erected and started by Reese, Townsend & Co. William P. Townsend & Co., the present proprietors, have in recent years built a solid and perfect stone building of large capacity for the business. A large business has been successfully carried on for some years past in making superior white lead kegs. Besides these establishments, there are the extensive saw-mills of Miner & Co.; M. & S. H. Darragh's machine and engine works





Herron & Kennedy's flour and grist-mill; and John Thorniley's stove foundry. The town has grown and extended over the second bench or plateau, south of the water-power works. In 1831 an academy was built which was used for educational and religious purposes. The Presbyterians of the Falls of Beaver generally were organized into a church body, and had children baptized in it shortly after its erection by the Rev. Mr. Hughs, of Darlington, before the church building was erected in New Brighton.

The history of manufactures in this place is very suggestive, particularly in an economical view. In 1830, and for a short time before and after that period



VIEW OF NEW BRIGHTON.

[From a Photograph by H. Noss, New Brighton.]

wool carding for the farmers was a large business of the place. The farmers would bring their wool here to be carded, and when done would take it home and spin it into yarn, and either weave it at home or bring it, which was most commonly the case, to the woolen-mills to be made into goods for male and female wear. In a short time, however, they came to believe it best to sell their wool for cash, and trade in the stores for goods for wearing apparel. This ruined the business of wool carding, and in a great degree the business of the woolen factories.

NEW BRIGHTON is situated on the eastern side of the Beaver, and is connected with Beaver Falls by a covered toll bridge built and finished by Le Barron in 1833-4, and is a solid structure. A short distance above this the iron bridge of the Pittsburgh, Fort Wayne, and Chicago railroad company crosses it also. In 1829 David Townsend purchased from Thomas Bradford, of Philadelphia, the tract of land, No. 93, upon which the best part of the town has been since built. Mr. Townsend had purchased this tract by articles of agreement from the latter, some considerable time previous, but paid no money on it, but was to pay 2,000 dollars on a fixed day in the summer or early autumn of 1829. As early as 1801, David and Benjamin Townsend bought tract No. 94. Tract No. 95 was bought by James Patterson in July, 1829, from Oliver Ormsby, the title to the tract being then in the name of David Shields, of Allegheny county, as it had been from an early day. In 1829 the only improvement upon No. 94 was the house of W. Webster and that of the large stone flour mill, unfinished, and perhaps a small one story house near where the



Novelty Works now are, and back east of the rising ground. Benjamin Townsend had then built the house where E. P. Townsend now lives.

The town, as it now stands, covers the western end, or part of the two "benches," of them, Nos. 95, 94, 93, 92, and 91. The manufacturing business of the counties was then mainly done in Fallston, and the owners of the works lived there. After the purchase of No. 93, David Townsend laid it out as the streets, etc., are now; the No. 94 was previously laid out as it is now. The first improvements, except the stone mill, were begun on No. 92. This town has its water powers under the control of a water company, as has the Fallston owners their water powers; and they both joined a short time ago in building a strong and safe new dam, and made also improvements in their race-way and head-gates. They have now under good and safe command a very large water power of about eighteen feet fall. There were built and started many works upon this race-way for various kinds of manufacture. Circumstances have changed the character of many of them; fire destroyed some, and for various reasons the business in others has been altered. When David Townsend died, his executors sold the lots at public sale, and many of them were purchased by business men in Fallston, who built and improved upon them and themselves occupied them. By the progress of the canal to completion and when completed, through the town, a great impulse was given to its growth. The establishment of the U. S. Branch Bank here also helped it greatly, but the finishing of the Ohio and Pennsylvania railroad to the town, with the great partiality of the engineers and officers shown to it, made a wonderful addition to its business and advancement. To all these good influences may be added the fact, that large tracts of land, north-west of New Brighton, owned by the heirs of Benjamin Chew, Senr., were put into market and sold rapidly to good, industrious settlers, who cleared the lands and improved the markets and business of the town; to this also was added the same effects caused by the sales of large tracts of land owned by Thomas Bradford, by his grandson, B. R. Bradford, as agent resident in Beaver county.

New Brighton suffered severely, as did the whole of the county, by the failure of the United States Bank. Adversities from various causes were visited, and fell upon some individuals and business firms; but the general course of the town has been very successful, much more so than usual with young towns in a new country.

There lived, and yet are living, in this town numbers of persons who deserve to be mentioned and gratefully remembered for their influence upon the industries and growth of this town, Fallston, and the county generally, prominent among whom was John Pugh. He was a professional miller, and did much, in his purchase of wheat for his mills in Fallston, to promote the agricultural interests of the county; and as a president of the Branch Bank, in co-operation with the cashier, Dr. W. H. Denny, did much to promote business at the Falls and in the county generally. Robert Townsend was a model business man, and a friend to the Falls. David Townsend, William Townsend, Benjamin Wilde, John Miner, Silas Merriek, W. T. Kennedy, and others, both living and dead, were most influential.



The town is now lighted by gas, and is steadily improving, and is altogether a delightful place of residence, and destined to a much larger growth.

The industries of New Brighton are deserving of special notice in a description of the town, but our limited space forbids. In 1842, the Keystone woolen mills was established for the manufacture of cloths and cassimeres, by William Wilde, who for a period of over thirty years successfully managed the enterprise. It is now owned by Mr. Bancroft, of New York, who proposes to devote the manufacture chiefly to flannels and water-proof. In addition to these works, there are the Novelty Works, employed in the manufacture of knitting machines, three large flouring mills, the Pennsylvania bridge and machinery works of White & Sons, Merriek's grate and front works, and the Pioneer flag mills of Bently & Gerring, all giving employment to a large number of persons, and by their success adding much to the prosperity of this enterprising borough. There are nine churches of as many denominations.

The site upon which Brighton and Beaver Falls was in part first laid out had the first improvements made upon it in the summer of 1801 by David Hoopes & Co., who had made the purchase previously referred to, but were obliged to purchase again from the occupant fifty acres, and some time thereafter another fifty acres, on which the erection of a grist and saw mills, forge, charcoal furnace for pigs, hollow-ware, stoves, etc., was commenced and put into successful operation. In 1806, Isaac Wilson & Co., now the owners, had surveyed and laid out a plot of a town and sold lots to improvers, built dwelling-houses, etc., and a large business was done, to the great benefit of the county, by the four or five firms which succeeded each other as owners in quick succession. They called the new town "Brighton." Oliver Ormsby kept the works in operation, under the superintendence of James Glen and John Dickey, until about 1818, when, owing to the general depression in business, caused by the peace of 1814 with England, which removed all let and hindrance to English and other foreign iron and other manufactured goods flooding our country, to the ruin of home industry and all values, and to other causes, it suspended. Thus this place and its work, for so many years the chief and almost the only point of manufacturing industry in the county, remained dead in ruins, until the year 1829, when it was purchased by James Patterson, long a citizen of Philadelphia, from Mr. Ormsby, and under his labors and expenditures it again was rebuilt, and became a point from which considerable money was spread abroad through the county and country around in the payment of labor, wheat, wool, etc., for twenty years and more. Mr. Patterson had great difficulty in consummating the purchase with Ormsby, in consequence of he and the other owners of Gen. Brodhead's title to the land, having brought in a bill of \$10,000 damages against the General for money they had been obliged to pay to those in possession for wool, ores, land, etc., which they held against the balance due the General for the original purchase from him—he not having given them possession, as he was bound to have done. The General's heirs would not make deed without the balance due being paid them. Mr. Patterson, to avoid law suits and trouble, agreed, finally, to pay the amount due the General's heirs. Notwithstanding all this, he was destined to contend at law through many vexatious and costly damaging suits, to make good his titles and become free from his opponents, who were many and influential.



The suits growing out of the disputed parts of the two portions of land sold by General Brodhead to David Hoopes & Co., in 1801—and which the former began in the United States Court in Philadelphia in 1812, and obtained a judgment in his favor and had the United States marshal dispossess the occupants—were, unfortunately, not terminated finally until about the year 1865 or '6, when the United States Supreme Court in banc decided the last of them in favor of James Patterson, which made General Brodhead's title good; after there having been in his favor one verdict in Beaver County Court, affirmed in the State Supreme Court, and twice in the United States District Court of Pennsylvania. It was the same case in which, when one of the lawyers was pleading before Judge David Green, for a new trial, a verdict having been rendered for Mr. Patterson, the judge on the bench said to him, "that in all his experience, which whether as a surveyor, a lawyer, or a judge, in Pennsylvania State, county, and in the United States courts, he had never known a case of land ejectionment come into court so weak in every respect as this one which he was attorney for, nor one so strong and clear as that of the plaintiff, Mr. Patterson." These suits were costly and more vexatious and very injurious to the best interests of the country, and were prosecuted not by the original settlers, or claimants, but by neighboring proprietors, who, while improving their own properties, were tempted to disregard "party lines" in doing so, owing to the absence and neglect of the owner of the Brighton estate.

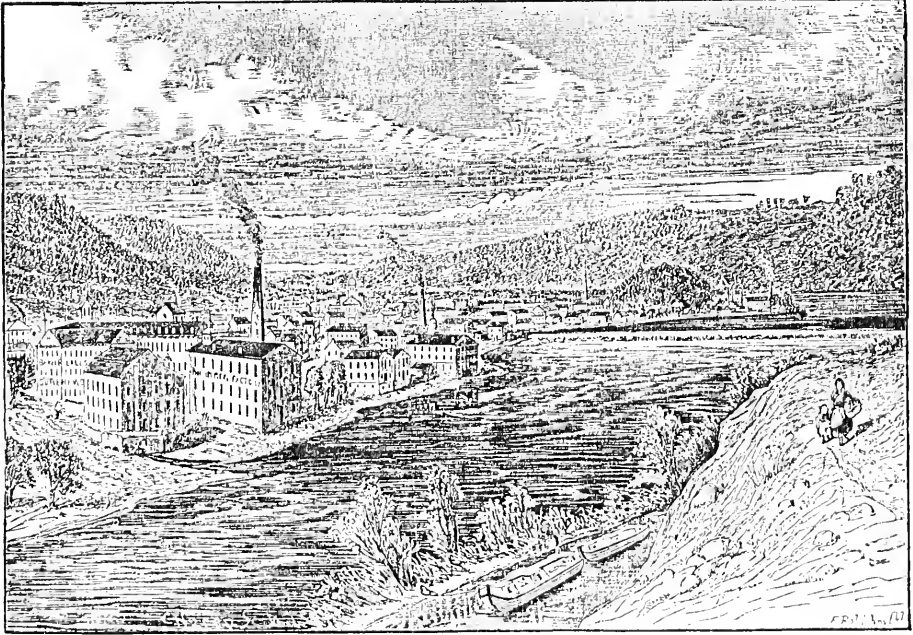
In the year 1830 Brighton had no post office. In 1831 James Patterson was appointed postmaster, when by law it was entitled to a mail by horse twice a week. The postmaster carried it at his own expense daily for many years from Beaver town. There are now thirty-eight post offices in the county, and Beaver Falls receives two mails daily from the East by rail and one from the West. Lease & Robertson, paper makers, made agreement with Mr. Patterson to build a paper mill in Brighton, in 1831, to be driven by steam power, for which, and heating purposes, the latter agreed to supply the coal from his coal banks, delivered at the mill, for ten years time for four and a-half cents per bushel. Experience proved the fact to Mr. Robertson, after running his mill by steam power some years, that he could make paper much more economically by water power than by that of steam, even with coal costing under four and a-half cents per bushel, when he bought land and water-power at the head of the Falls, and built a paper mill, which he operated successfully many years, allowing his steam mill to go to decay and ruin, after removing such paper machinery as he could use in his new mill. Mr. Robertson, in the manufacture of paper and wall paper, gave employment to many, thereby aiding in promoting the general interest.

Having failed in his last efforts to make sale of the whole property to the United State government, for an armory and foundry for big cannon, Mr. Patterson surrendered the property to the Harmony Society, who undertook the task of inducing private parties to buy by retail lots for dwellings, water lots for mills, etc. They revised the plot of Brighton, very much enlarging it, extending it along the Beaver nearly if not quite, three miles, over ground remarkably well suited by nature for a town or city, and changed its name from Brighton to that of BEAVER FALLS. One reason for this change was that the place had been known by the name of Beaver Falls in the county in its earliest days; and





another reason, that New Brighton having, under the influences of the canal passing through it, and afterwards by the Ohio and Pittsburgh railroad stopping in it and passing through its streets and much favoring it, grown much larger than "Brighton"—people were in the habit of dropping "New" and calling their town Brighton, and calling Brighton proper "Old Brighton." This made confusion, and the people of Brighton were willing to adopt a name about which there could be no other "claimant"—at least in the county.



VIEW OF BEAVER FALLS.

[From a Penzell Sketch, by Robjohns.]

Beaver Falls has now grown to be one of the most important and well-established manufacturing and successful business towns, not only in the county, but in Western Pennsylvania. In the census of 1870 the population was found to be 3,112, which at present exceeds 4,500. There has been built upon a triangular lot, surrounded by sixty-foot streets—the gift of the Society—a large, three-story school-house, at a cost of somewhere near \$30,000, for the public schools.

The town begins south of the toll bridge across the Beaver, connecting Beaver Falls with New Brighton, and just at the mouth, or northern end, of the road called the "narrows," on the banks of Beaver, between Fallston and Beaver Falls, the hills bearing to the north-west for some distance, and then turning to bear north-eastward, and the Beaver shore bearing from the bridge north-eastwardly for some distance, and then bending north-westward, makes the plot of the town and valley much in the shape of a pear—the narrows being the stem. In it is the toll bridge—the bridge of the Pittsburgh and Chicago railroad. The width of the Beaver where this railroad bridge crosses the river is five hundred



feet. The first dam above this bridge across the Beaver is seven hundred and forty feet long, giving a fall of water for mill purposes of about twenty feet, flowing the water back nearly two miles, near to another dam across that stream, affording a fall of about the same value, and flowing a pool of water back about seven miles to the mouth of the Conequenessing creek. The town extends north of this dam for a considerable distance. These two dams can and will at a very early day be made to give jointly not less than forty feet of fall, with a much greater supply of water than was ever at command for mill and manufacturing purposes.

In the hills lying west of the town are veins of very good bituminous coal. Those mostly now worked are a little over three feet thick. The hills also on the east bank of the river have the same veins with a greater thickness. The Pittsburgh and Chicago railroad runs at the foot of the hills on the west side of the town.

There is a gas company, which supplies the borough with gas for the town lamps, etc., etc. There is also a water company, which may be said at present to consist of the Harmony Society, which has put up water works, pumping the water for general use from a very large supply under the rocks underlying the town, by improved machinery and great power. Pipes are laid through most of the streets, and many houses supplied thereby.

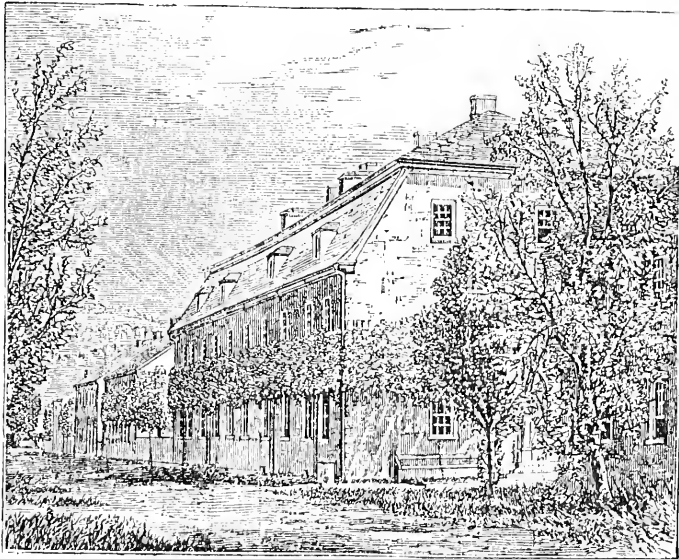
The industries of Beaver Falls are on such a large scale and of such vast importance that although it would be desirable to describe them fully, we can merely allude to them, to show how extensive are the manufacturing facilities of the town, a very Pittsburgh in miniature, and rapidly growing in wealth and consequence. Steel works of Abel Pedder & Co., started in 1875; Beaver Falls cutlery, one of the first enterprises built in the town, giving employment to over three hundred persons, including one hundred Chinese brought from the Pacific in 1873; the Pittsburgh hinge company and Western file company have large and extensive works; the axe and hoe works of Joseph Graff & Company; Beaver Falls company's operative foundry; saw works of Emerson, Ford & Co.; Economy stove and hollow ware works; shovelworks, H. M. Meyers & Co.; and the Beaver Falls flour mills.

In addition to the foregoing extensive manufacturing establishments, there are quite a number which, although of minor importance, in the aggregate employ many hands, such as planing mills, casket works, machine shops, foundries, paper mill, carriage and glass works; and beside all these industries, there are several coal mines—the whole going to make up such varied manufacturing enterprises, that show the active means of the prosperity of Beaver Falls.

**Economy.**—The site of this town of economy and industry was purchased by Rev. George Rapp for the Harmony Society, then living in New Harmony, Indiana, and to which the Society removed in the year 1825, having lived ten years, increasing in numbers and wealth during their residence there, although previously, as a Society, living in Harmony, Butler county, Pa., ten years prior to their moving to Indiana. This site, upon which they built their new town of Economy, is one of the most beautiful anywhere upon the banks of the Ohio or elsewhere. It is on elevated ground, sloping gently back



from the river. Their number then above seven hundred souls; and at once began the erection of dwellings, mills, and factories, such as are usually necessary for so large a population in a busy manufacturing town. Rev. George Rapp, as spiritual head, "Father," and Frederick Rapp, as temporal business manager, were still with them as in Butler county and in Indiana State. Their thus coming again into Pennsylvania had very great influence upon the general interests and prosperity of this county, which continued to increase by their enterprise and their power for good to all. They built an extensive



ASSEMBLY HALL AT ECONOMY.

woolen factory, where a very large quantity of wool was manufactured into blankets, sattinets, etc., for which they purchased large quantities of the wool raised in the county; they erected a cotton factory, spinning coarse cottons for sale, and weaving much of it into sheetings, shirtings, and many other branches of manufactures; and cleared and cultivated many acres of good lands. Everything went on prosperously until the appearance in the society of a man calling himself Count Leon—an enthusiast and impostor, as he finally proved himself to have been—when, under his influence and that of the women and others brought with him, discord and ill-feelings arose, which ended in a division of the society, about one-third of their number leaving the Society with Count Leon, under the wise counsels of Father Rapp, by a compromise, paying them in cash one hundred and five thousand dollars (\$105,000) to leave the place altogether, which they did. They purchased and formed a new society, under Leon, at what is now known as Phillipsburg, on the Ohio, opposite Beaver. The Society, after the departure from among them of the discontented, lived prosperously and happy under the lead of "Father Rapp" until his death, which occurred on the 7th of August, 1847. He was a most remarkable man in



many respects. "He made and left his impress on the Society, which still exists as he left it, only with diminution in numbers." And it may be further said, that this impression was even more remarkable upon those of the Society who left it with Leon, after having been long years under his training and spiritual influences—that while going out with Leon and into the world to do for themselves, as many did from the time of first leaving, and all of them afterwards, each and all of them continued without exception to conduct themselves as good citizens, moral and upright, and many of them to-day are among the best people of the county.

The influence of the Society was all good and influential in all the country around them, in economy, gardening, farming generally, sheep raising, etc. Upon the death of George Rapp, R. L. Baker and Jacob Henrici were formally elected trustees of the society, and took charge of all temporal interests. Under their administration, as the numbers of the society decreased naturally, and their factories ceased to be operated at home, they extended their attention, under the special care particularly of Mr. Jacob Henrici, to outside enterprises, as had not been done during the lifetime of Father Rapp, and with great and marked benefit to the interests of the Society and to the objects and neighborhoods where this attention and influence were directed. During the lifetime of Mr. Baker, the reputation and respect for these trustees as good business men, of large and liberal views, were generally very much increased. The influence of the Society, under their trusteeship, extended far and wide. They showed themselves ready and willing to aid every good work which promised to promote the public welfare. Though conscientiously non-combatants, they were most zealous and hearty supporters of the government during the war, and not only contributed money for the relief of the soldiers, but paid large bounties for substitutes for any who were drafted for the army, or called for from their military division of the country. Under their direction the Darlington cannal coal field was developed, and a very superior railroad made, some six or seven miles long, from the mines extending to New Galilee, connecting with the Pittsburgh, Fort Wayne, and Chicago railway. Their means and enterprise were mainly instrumental in making the Little Saw-Mill railroad, which brought and brings yet out such large quantities of good coal of so much benefit to the many rolling mills and other interests in that neighborhood and for export. But in the midst of this beneficial labor, R. L. Baker, that faithful trustee and good Christian man, died, much beloved and regretted in and out of the Society. He lived devoted to what he believed to be religious duty, self-denying, and faithful to all duties.

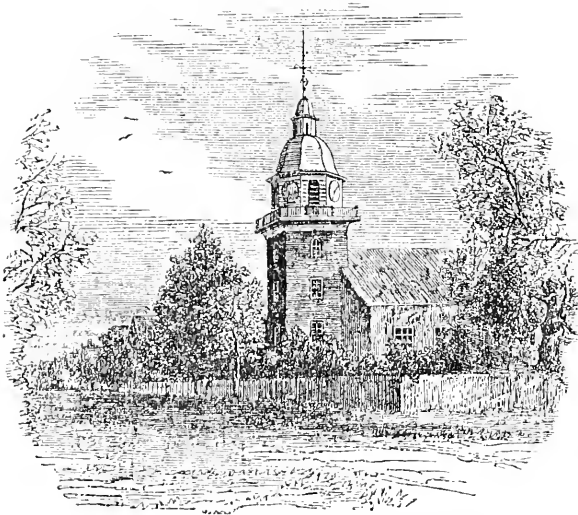
After the death of their beloved "Baker," the Harmonists elected Jonathan Lenz as a trustee with Jacob Henrici—the latter as senior and spiritual leader. Mr. Lenz had been one of the first in the Society, and was greatly respected. Beaver Falls had made much progress in the development of its natural advantages, under the care and nursing of Baker and Henrici, in which Mr. Baker had taken great interest, and to whom it owes its name of Beaver Falls; and this efficient care and interest have been since extended, to the immense benefit of the town and its various interests, and to the whole county, and with a good and certain prospect of valuable pecuniary benefits, in the near future, of the Society.





And it is firmly believed that "Beaver Falls" will prove to be in all time, as it is now, the most material monument in the memory of the "Harmony Society" and its trustees, of any other which they may or can leave of the good they have or may do on earth.

The members of the Society are now all old or elderly men and women, with quite a number of persons, mainly young, who live with them. They are the same economical, industrious, frugal people they ever were. Their church is a fine building, which has a large clock in the steeple, with bells; and during the whole of the existence of this church and the society at Economy it would have been and would now be a good lesson of how Christian people should conduct themselves in entering the "House of God," while they remain there, and for their departure. In this church, upon the bell ringing, the people enter, and in a very short time all are quietly seated, are grave and



CHURCH OF THE HARMONISTS, ECONOMY.

soberly attentive during the services, and after, depart orderly, none entering or departing during the time of worship. The trustees, Messrs. Henrici and Lenz, are fully and actively occupied in the discharge of all their various and special duties and cares. Their and the Society's whole lives have been examples worthy of study, and, in almost all things, of imitation.

ROCHESTER borough is situated on the east side of the Beaver river, at the junction of that stream with the Ohio, and contains about 2,500 inhabitants. It has an extensive front upon the Ohio river, with a very good landing for steamboats to load and unload freights and passengers. It is favorably situated for manufacturing, which is now being carried on to a considerable extent. The Rochester Tumbler company's glass works is located here, and doing a large business; also the Rochester casket manufactory; the Rochester foundry; Pendleton & Bros.' fire-brick works; Scott, Boyle & Williams' lumber yard and saw mill company; L. H. Oatman's lumber yard, saw and planing mills; Monroe Miller & Co.'s planing mills, sash and door factory; William Miller's planing mill and sash and door factory; Whitfield & Co.'s planing mill and sash and door factory; which, together with other minor works, give employment to a large number of employees. The advantages of shipping to all points of the country are unsurpassed. In addition to the Ohio river, there are the Pittsburgh, Fort Wayne and Chicago railroad, the Cleveland and Pittsburgh railroad, the



Erie and Pittsburgh railroad, the Mahoning Valley railroad, the New Castle and Franklin railroad, all passing and stopping here each way.

The attention of capitalists was first attracted to this point about 1835. Ovid Pinney came here about that time and purchased a large amount of land, and laid out a town, but owing to the crash of 1838 to 1840, a damper fell on the place, from which it did not recover till 1850, when the Pittsburgh, Fort Wayne and Chicago railroad and the Cleveland and Pittsburgh railroad were commenced, and a new impetus given to the place. The early pioneers here were the Rev. Francis Reno, and his sons Lewis and William, Atlas E. Lacock, William Porter, George Hinds, Sylvester Dunham, Samuel and John Stiles, Wilson Frazer, John Boles, Charles and John M. Lukens, Hamilton Clark, Clark Parks & Co., James A. Sholes, Frederick C. H. Speyerer, George C. Speyerer. The proprietors of the tumbler glass works deserve much credit, for in their enterprise and public spirit, have drilled wells for gas for manufacturing uses at their works, which they have succeeded in obtaining.

PHILIPSBURG is situated on the south side of the Ohio river, opposite the mouth of the Beaver river, and was occupied and improved as a boat yard for building steam boats, keel boats, etc., for quite a number of years before 1832, when they sold the lands and improvements, as stated, to Count Leon. Their purchase included some eight hundred acres of land, which were purchased for the seceders from the Economy Society and others. They changed their name to New Philadelphia Society and their town New Philadelphia. They erected a hotel, factories, etc., and proposed to rival Economy in manufacturing. They organized a society, and Count Leon as president, and a board of twelve managers, which lasted some eighteen months, and then dissolved and the property divided. Those that remained after the dissolution of the society formed a company, and carried on a woolen and grist mills for eight years, and then dissolved. Count Leon with his followers went southward. The large buildings were sold to Dr. Acker, who opened a water cure, which was highly successful for years. He sold to Dr. Baels, who also met with success. Here for ten years has been located one of the State's Soldiers' Orphan schools—Pennsylvania's great charity—under the superintendence of Rev. W. G. Taylor, D. D. This school has been considered among the best and most successful of the schools in the State. The school building is 40x44 feet, three stories, with wings 30x36 feet. The dwelling is 110x44 feet, four stories. The arrangement and adaptation of these buildings are complete. There are two hundred and ten acres of ground connected with the school. The buildings and grounds were furnished at the private expense of Dr. Taylor. The present population of the village is about six hundred, of which two hundred are in the Orphans' Home. Philipsburg is a fine site for manufacturing, and will no doubt be so improved if the railroad from Pittsburgh comes down on the south side and crosses the Ohio from there to Beaver.

FREEDOM borough is situated on the north-west bank of the Ohio river above Rochester and adjoining it. It was founded in 1832, by Stephen Philips and Jonathan Betz, who entered into partnership for steamboat building, for which the place was deemed well suited, and where a great many good and large and small boats have been built by this firm and that of Philips and Graham. By the



census of 1870 the population was six hundred and thirty-four, and as the place is prosperous and growing, the present number may be estimated at eight hundred. The chief business of the place is steamboat building. The Excelsior Oil Company is located here and do a large business. There is a saw mill, lath, shingle, sash, and door factory, five brick works, and other minor industrial establishments.

DARLINGTON is a village nine miles north-west of Beaver, and was a thriving place in stage coach times and before railroads. Since then it has barely held its own. It was many years well and favorably known for its church and academy, where many received from the Rev. Mr. Hughs and other teachers a good education. It is situated on the Little Beaver, in the midst of a thriving country and mining district.

There is on the Ohio river, above Freedom, the town of BADEN, through which passes the railroad, and also REMINGTON; and below Beaver, on the Ohio and the Cleveland and Pittsburgh railroad, the large and prosperous town of INDUSTRY, and another equally so, SMITH'S FERRY, at the mouth of Little Beaver, up which creek there are in operation one hundred and fifty producing oil wells, total production of oil being one hundred and ten barrels per day. A pipe three and a half miles long with a branch brings the oil to Smith's Ferry. There are three refineries, two at Smith's Ferry. A growing town, NEW GALLEE, is on the Pittsburgh, Fort Wayne, and Chicago railway, some seven miles north-west from Beaver Falls, and near to Darlington.

Above Beaver Falls on the Beaver and the railroad to Erie and the West, there are Homewood, Clinton, etc. In fact it may be said that along the Ohio through the county and on the railroads, population and towns are almost, and ultimately will be, continuous; and so in the county up and on the Beaver river, from its mouth to the Lawrence line.

A thriving town near the Washington county line should be mentioned.—FRANKFORT, near which is the Frankfort Springs, a favorite resort for health and recreation in the summer months.



CENTENNIAL MEDAL—REVERSE.



## BEDFORD COUNTY.

BY CHARLES N. HICKOK, BEDFORD.

[In consenting to furnish a synopsis of the early history of Bedford county, the writer anticipated difficulties in producing a full and reliable paper, but until he had fairly commenced the work, he had not the most remote idea of the many obstacles there were in the way of a conscientious performance of this duty, and nothing but the fact that his word had been given to his friend, the general Editor of this work, prevented the relinquishment, at an early day, of a task, to say the best of it, very discouraging. The data, rendered by the lapse of time obscure and meagre, could be found, even for this short sketch, only after much and laborious search. Circumstances, the occurrence of which were evident, required sometimes weeks of patient labor to establish as facts by the records, and others were substantiated only by incidental and collateral proofs, almost as legendary as the occurrences themselves. While what has been here recorded as history is, we think, reliable, many things interesting, if only they could have been proven true, have been rejected, because the author was not sure upon which side of the doubtful line that divides romance from history they were located. In the labor incurred, the writer gratefully acknowledges the aid of the following named friends, without whose kind co-operation he is conscious his efforts must have proved abortive, viz.: William P. Schell, John Cessna, Samuel L. Russell, John Mower, John P. Reed, Joseph W. Tate, and Samuel Ketterman, Esquires, and others.]



THE county of Bedford was created March 9, 1771, by an act of the General Assembly of the Province of Pennsylvania, entitled "An act for erecting a part of the county of Cumberland into a separate county;" and the commissioners appointed to "run, mark out, and distinguish the boundary lines between the said counties of Cumberland and Bedford," were Robert McCrea, William Miller, and Robert Moore. The reason assigned for the erection of the new county was "the great hardships the inhabitants of the western parts of the county of Cumberland lie under, from being so remote from the present seat of judicature and the public offices." The boundary lines were defined as follows, "that is to say, beginning where the Province line crosses the Tuscarora mountain, and running along the summit of that mountain to the gap near the head of Path valley; thence with a north line to the Juniata; thence with the Juniata to the mouth of Shaver's creek; thence north-east to the line of Berks county; thence along the Berks county line north-westward to the western boundaries of the Province; thence southward, according to the western boundary of the Province, to the south-west corner of the Province; and from thence eastward with the southern line of the Province to the place of beginning," embracing, as the reader will perceive, the entire south-western portion of the State, from the West Branch of the Susquehanna and the Cove, or Tuscarora mountain, westward to the Ohio and Virginia line. The lines thus set forth, by the act passed "in the eleventh year of the present reign" (George III.), not being considered sufficiently explicit, a subsequent act was passed, March 21, 1772, in which the limits were more definitely explained, "to the end that the boundaries of the county of Bedford may be

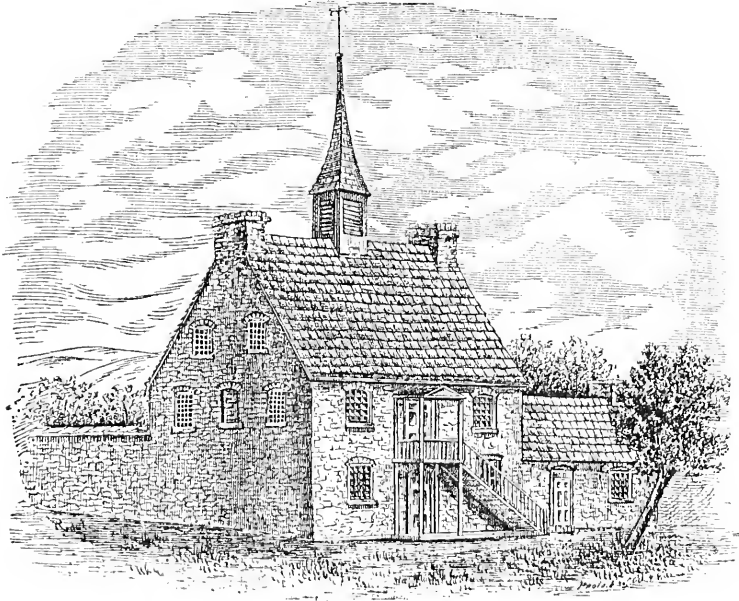




certainly known," and George Woods, William Elliott, Robert Moore, and Robert McCrea were appointed to carry the order of the General Assembly into effect.

The area of this county, once so immense, has been gradually restricted, by the erection of Northumberland county, in 1772, Westmoreland in 1773, Huntingdon in 1787, Somerset in 1795, Cambria in 1804, Blair in 1846, and Fulton in 1850; and the one jurisdiction has, in time, been divided and sub-divided, until some twenty counties, or portions of counties, now occupy the territory of the original county of Bedford.

The name it bears was evidently given to it from the fact that the town of



THE PROVINCIAL COURT HOUSE AND JAIL AT BEDFORD.

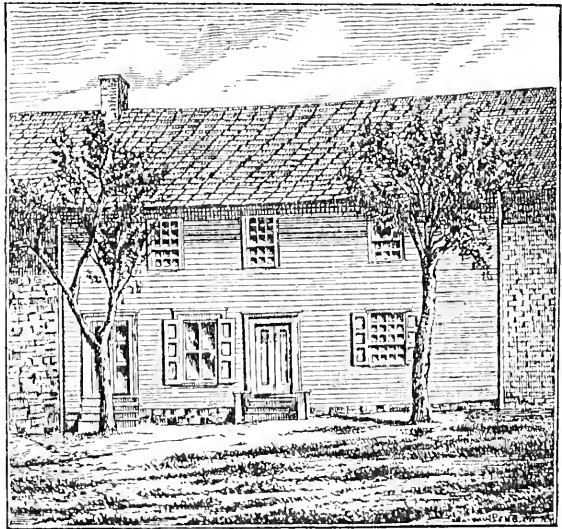
[From a Sketch by John Mower, Esq., taken from memory.]

Bedford was selected as its county seat. The town was doubtless so called from the fort of that name there located. In fact, this name was assigned to the town by Governor John Penn, when, by his order, it was laid out in 1766, although it was commonly so designated as early as 1759 or 1760, and there is some reason for believing at a still earlier period. The reasons for thus naming the fort are, so far as we can learn, only traditionary. It is more than probable, however, that the tradition, in one instance, is correct, viz.: That the fort erected at Raystown, during the latter part of the reign of George II., received its name in honor of one of the dukes of the house of Bedford, in England. Various other reasons are assigned, but they are, to say the least, questionable.

The reasons the writer of this paper has for concluding that the defence known as Fort Bedford was erected toward the close of the reign of King



George II., viz., not earlier than 1755 nor later than 1759, are as follows: There is circumstantial and incidental evidence almost as conclusive as positive proof, that protective and defensive works of some kind existed at Raystown (Bedford) for several years prior to General Braddock's expedition in 1755. The earliest traditions are very obscure as to the date of the first settlement of the locality. One Rea, whose previous or subsequent history is unknown, settled there in 1751, and the hamlet and the branch of the Juniata on whose banks it was built, doubtless derived their name from him, but there are intimations that there were settlements in the vicinity earlier still, and that fully a decade before Forbes' expedition in 1758, it was a defended settlement, or there was there a defence of some kind to which the settlers, scattered within an area of thirty or forty miles, could fly for protection against the incursions of the savages. Always, prior to that year (1758), so far as we can discover, all letters and official papers were dated at "Raystown," "Camp at Raystown," or "Fort at Raystown." General Forbes, while encamped there when on his expedition for the relief of the garrison at Fort Duquesne, dates his letters from "Camp at Raystown." In 1759 and thereafter, these dates change. In August of that year, General Stanwix, on his way to the borders of the Province on Lake Erie, dates his official papers at "Bedford," and "Fort Bedford." This is the earliest mention we have discovered of "Fort Bedford."



THE OLD FORT BEDFORD HOUSE.  
[From a Photograph by T. R. Gettys, Bedford.]

In July, 1755, immediately after Braddock's disaster, Colonel James Burd proposed cutting a road from Fort Cumberland to "Ray's Town," and suggested erecting a fort at that place, "to shut up the other road and save the back inhabitants." While this proposition of Colonel Burd's might, as isolated evidence, be considered as indicating that no work of defence was in existence at Raystown at that time, there is ample collateral evidence that a fort of some kind was then standing, but from lack of size, or strength, or from decay, it was insufficient for the exigencies of the time, and hence his proposal to build. A fort, such as he suggested, must have been erected prior to 1759. In fact, the "Old Fort House," a view of which we present to our readers, and which is still standing (1876) in good condition, and a large and commodious building for the period in which it was erected, is known to have been



the officers' quarters in the fort before that time, and was designated as the "King's House."

The act of 1771, providing for the erection of Bedford county, also contained the following clause, to wit: "That it shall and may be lawful to and for Arthur St. Clair, Bernard Dougherty, esquires; Thomas Coulter, William Procter, and George Woods, gentlemen; or any of them, to purchase and take assurance to them and their heirs of a piece of land situate in some convenient place in said town (Bedford), in trust and for the use of the inhabitants of the said county, and thereon to erect and build a court house and prison, sufficient to accommodate the public service of said county, and for the use and conveniency of the inhabitants."

In pursuance of the foregoing, a purchase was made and the deed recorded as the "Deed of James McCashlin to Arthur St. Clair, Bernard Dougherty, George Woods, and William Procter, esquires; and Thomas Coulter, gentleman, trustees appointed by the General Assembly of the Province to erect a jail and court house in the county of Bedford, for lot No. 6, bounded partly by the public square, dated November 10, 1771, consideration one hundred pounds." The lot No. 6 referred to, is that now occupied by the residence of Mrs. Samuel H. Tate, on the north-east corner of the square. Why the public buildings were not placed there, as at first intended, and were built instead in the north-west quarter of the square, is not now and probably never will be known. There was, however, so I am informed by several old citizens, a log structure on the corner of this lot (No. 6) temporarily occupied as a court house, and probably built to be used for that purpose, while the more permanent one was in the slow process of erection, and between this building and the north line of the lot, and standing back from Juliann street, to the rear of where H. D. Tate's law office now is, was, in the recollection of many of the present citizens, a low, one-story log house that was built for and used as a jail for several years. A letter we have just been shown by Chief Burgess Sansom, written many years ago by his uncle, Rev. James Sansom, speaks of his father (Rev. James) having delivered the logs for the first court house.

The permanent "court house and prison," built on the portion of the square in front of where the Lutheran church now stands, was an unusually extensive and substantial building for that day, being massively constructed of the blue limestone of the vicinity. It was demolished about the year 1838, by order of the court, it having been declared a nuisance, after a greater and much less excusable nuisance had been perpetrated in the erection of the present public structure on the opposite quarter of the square; thus, so long as it shall be permitted to stand, deforming what is otherwise one of the most beautiful town parks in the Commonwealth.

The engraving of the old provincial buildings is a reproduction of a pencil sketch, by John Mower, Esq., the oldest living member of the Bedford bar, and the only individual, who was contemporary with it, whose fine artistic taste and skill could have been brought to bear to rescue it from oblivion. A number of the old citizens who remembered the building, but could not recall it in detail, pronounce this sketch perfect. The jail, with its dark dungeon for convicts, its cell for ordinary criminals, and its debtor's prison with the grated window,



occupied the lower story to the left of the centre door. The balance of the first floor, on the right, was the jailor's residence, in the wings of which, in early days, the elections were held. The court room comprised the entire second story, and was entered by the stair-case from without. In one corner of the court room a flight of steps led to the third story, or attic, under the high roof, in which were the grand jury and other jury rooms.

The early courts of the county were not held as now by "men learned in the law," but by "justices nominated and authorized by the Governor for the time being, by commissions under the broad seal of the Province." The first "court of quarter sessions of the peace and jail delivery" was held April 16, 1771, "before William Procter, Jr., Robert Cluggage, Robert Hanna, George Wilson, William Lochery, and William McConnell, Esquires, justices of our Lord the King, to hear and determine divers felonies and misdemeanors committed in said county." The other justices appointed and commissioned by George III., with the above, were John Frazer, Bernard Dougherty, Arthur St. Clair, William Crawford, James Milligan, Thomas Gist, Dorsey Penticost, Alexander McKee, and George Woods. The first commissioners were Robert Hanna, Dorsey Penticost, and John Stevenson. The first grand jury were James Anderson, Charles Cessna, James McCashlin, Thomas Kenton, Allen Rose, George Milliken, John Moore, Robert Culbertson, George Funk, John Huff, Rinard Wolfe, Valentine Shadacer, Thomas Hay, Samuel Drennin, Edward Rose, Samuel Skinner, William Parker, Christopher Miller, Thomas Croyal, Adam Sam, Jacob Fisher, and David Rinard. William Procter was the first sheriff. Arthur St. Clair was appointed first prothonotary, recorder, and clerk of court, by Governor John Penn, March 12, 1771, and deputy register for the probate of wills, 18th of same month, by Benjamin Chew, Register General.

The first deed recorded in the archives of the county is that of George Croghan to John Campbell, Esq., merchant of Fort Pitt, dated 29th November, 1770. It recites, that "Whereas Johonoissa, Scanyadia, and Caseantinica, chiefs or sachems of the Six Nations of Indians, did by the deed duly dated August, A.D. 1749, sell to the said Croghan in fee a certain tract of land on the south side of the Monongahela river, beginning at the mouth of Turtle creek, and thence down the said river to its junction with the Ohio, computed to be ten miles," etc. The second paper recorded is an affidavit of James Pollock, on the 4th April, 1771, that he lost a note for three pounds. The third paper recorded is a "mortgage made 14th January, 1771, between Francis Howard, now of Fort Pitt, ensign in his Majesty's 18th reg't of Foot, and Edward Hand, of the same, surgeon mate in said reg't, on both sides of Chartier's creek, for 1636 acres of land. Acknowledged before Charles Edmunston, Capt. 18th Reg't. commanding."

The next record is of the deed heretofore mentioned of lot No. 6, to the commissioners. Then comes a deed of John Hardin, dated 15th February, 1772, to John Hardin, Jr., "in consideration of natural love and affection, for his lands this side of Laurel Hill, negroes, stock, and other substances, moveable and immoveable."

The last paper we shall mention as throwing some vague light upon the early





settlement of Bedford county, is a deed of the Indians to Garrett (Gerrard?) Pendergrass. We give a copy of the deed in full, as interesting, not alone from the fact that it is a conveyance of the ground on which Allegheny City now stands, then in Bedford county, but also that this conveyance was in lieu, as the reader will see, of the ground on which Bedford is built, and which having belonged to Pendergrass at a very early day—he was evidently dispossessed of previous to the settlement of Ray at the place. This is one of a number of the incidental proofs which justify the reader in believing that the early settlement of Bedford was even earlier than we have been accustomed to suppose. The deed is as follows, viz :

“ Know all men by these presents, that whereas a certain Garrett Pendergrass, Senior, of Bedford settlement, in the Province of Pennsylvania, and County of Cumberland, was settled some number of years past by leave of the chiefs and deputy's of the Six Nations of Indians, on a Tract of Land where Bedford is now situate, while the said land was yet the property of us and our said Chiefs and deputy's, Said Pendergrass being dispossessed of said lands In the time of the war between the French and English, and before Said Pendergrass could saifly return to live on said land it was Entered upon by people who have from time to time and yet continues to keep said Pendergrass from the enjoyment of said tract of Land, and said Pendergrass, at the last treaty held at Fort Pitt with the representatives of the Six Nations, informed our said chiefs or their representatives or deputy's that he was deprived of the above tract of land as above mentioned, whereupon us and our said deputy's did then at the said treaty, give him, the said Pendergrass, our leave in writing under our hands to settle on a tract of land called the Long Reach near the mouth of the Yaughyagain, but the said last mentioned tract being at the time of the said treaty, or before it, improved by some other person or persons, contrary to our expectations, for which reason the said Pendergrass has not obtained possession of the latter mentioned tract and cannot quietly enjoy neither of the two above mentioned Tracts ; Know ye, therefore, that we the under or within bound subscribers, who have hereunto caused our names to be set, and have put our marks, the first of us assigning being one of the chiefs and the other two deputy's off the said Six nations, do give and grant to the said Garrett Pendergrass, his heirs and trustees forever, our full leave and liberty of us, and for and in behalf of the said Six Nations to settle on a tract of land on the north side of the Aligania River opposite to Fort Pitt, in form of a Cemi Cirele from said landing ; hereby granting to him and his heirs, trustees, and assigns, full liberty to build houses, make improvements, and cultivate the said tract of land or any part thereof, and that he, the said Pendergrass may the more quietly enjoy the said land, and any benefit that him, his heirs, or assigns shall make or can make thereby, we do for ourselves and in behalf of the said Six Nations discharge all people whatsoever from molesting or disturbing him the said Pendergrass, his heirs, trustees, or assigns, in the possession or quiet enjoyment of the said land, or any part thereof, and we do by these presents, firmly engage and promise to answer all objections that any Indian tribe or tribes may have to the making of the above settlement.

“ In witness whereof we have caused our names to be subscribed, and have



hereunto set our marks, in the month of February, in the year of our Lord God one thousand seven hundred and seventy.

ANONGUIT, (mark), a turtle.

ENISHSHERA, or Captain Henry Mountare, (his | mark).

CONNERRACA-HECAT, or the White Mingo, (his mark), a circle, O.

“Signed and agreed to before James Elliott.

“GARRETT PENDERGRASS, JR.”

“BEDFORD, SS.

“Came before me, the subscriber, one of his Majesty's justices of the peace of said county, the within named Indians, viz.: Anonguit, Enishshera, or Captain Henry Mountare, and Connehraca-hecat, or the White Mingo, and acknowledged the within instrument of writing, or bill of sale, to be their act and deed, and desired the same might be recorded as such. Given under my hand and seal in the month of February, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and seventy.

“JAMES ELLIOTT.

“Recorded 19th September, 1772.”

The first attorney sworn in was Robert Magraw, at the first session of the courts of the county, April 16, 1771, on motion of Bernard Dougherty, one of the justices, there being no attorney to make the motion. Afterwards, at the same session, on motion of Robert Magraw, the following were admitted to practice, viz.: Andrew Ross, Philip Pandleton, Robert Galbraith, David Sample, and James Wilson, and at the ensuing term, July 16, 1771, David Grier, David Espy, and George Brent were admitted.

The names recommended to the Governor for license as tavern-keepers in 1771, were Margaret Frazer, Jean Woods, Frederic Naugel, George Funk, John Campbell, Joseph Irwin, John Miller, and Samuel Paxton. The old inns, or tavern-houses of Frederic Naugel and George Funk are still standing on West Pitt Street, and were famous in their day as synonyms of good cheer for “man and beast.” That of George Funk was the aristocratic inn (hotels were unknown at that day), and the headquarters of the judges, lawyers, and military officers. The last of the Funk family died about fifteen years ago, and the descendants of Frederic Naugel are still with us, one of them (Frederic) still living on the farm, adjoining the town, owned by his ancestor. The first judge “learned in the law” appears to have been James Riddle, who died in Chambersburg in 1838, leaving an honorable record.

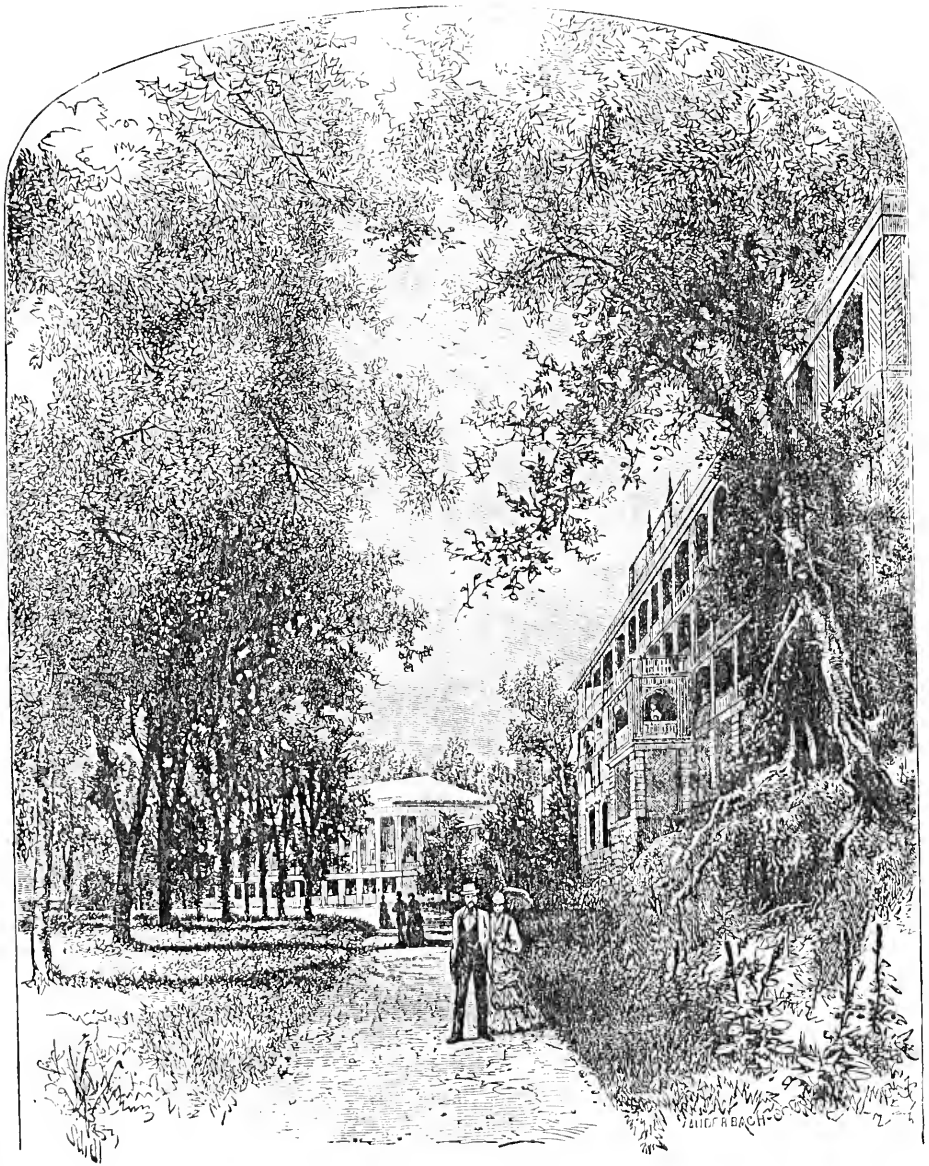
The members, from Bedford county, of the convention which adopted the State Constitution of September 28, 1776, were Benjamin Elliott; Thomas Coulter, ancestor of Judge Coulter of Westmoreland; John Burd; John Wilkins, father of Judge Wilkins, late of Pittsburgh; John Cessna, great-grandfather of Hon. John Cessna of Bedford; Thomas Smith, and Joseph Powell.

The members of the State Constitutional Convention of February 5, 1790, were Joseph Powell, and John Piper, afterward member of the House of Representatives of Pennsylvania, of whom it is recorded that he made a leap across the open circle beneath the dome of the State House at Harrisburg, while it was unfinished as to the railing around it. From numerous traditions he was a remarkable athlete.

It will hardly be considered an unpardonable digression to mention here a



number of names intimately associated with the history of Bedford county, in its courts and offices, who, at various periods, have become prominent in State and



VIEW AT BEDFORD SPRINGS.

National affairs, viz.: Hon. Thomas Smith, who held several appointments of trust under the government, and was afterwards judge of the Supreme Court; Hon. Jonathan Walker, judge of the court, father of Hon. Robert J. Walker,



United States Senator from Mississippi, and Secretary of the National Treasury, who resided here in his boyhood, and received his early education here; Hon. Charles Huston, judge, afterwards supreme judge; Hon. John Tod, judge, afterwards supreme judge, lived and died here; Hon. Jeremiah S. Black, judge, afterwards supreme judge, Secretary of State of United States, Secretary of War, and Attorney General United States; Hon. William Wilkins, judge, United States Senator, Minister to Russia, and Secretary of War of United States, lived in early life with his father in the house one mile north of Bedford, on the Hollidaysburg road, now occupied by Samuel Carney; Hon. John S. Carlisle, United States Senator from West Virginia, is the son of a Bedford lawyer; General Arthur St. Clair, of Revolutionary fame, was the first prothonotary and register of Bedford county; Hon. David Mann, father of William F. and D. F. Mann, a gentleman of sterling worth, was appointed prothonotary in 1809 by Governor Snyder, and reappointed by Governor Findlay, serving twelve years, was State senator in 1821, and Auditor-General under Governor Shulze, 1824-'27. Hon. Job Mann, nephew of the above, was prothonotary for twelve years, afterwards State Treasurer of Pennsylvania and representative in Congress; Hon. Alexander Thompson, judge, and member of Congress, a man of remarkable uprightness, purity, and simplicity of character; Hon. James M. Russell, nephew of the first law judge of the county (Riddle), was a lawyer here for over fifty years, a representative in Congress, and a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1837-'38; Hon. S. M. Barclay, a prominent lawyer and senator of the State; Hon. Alexander King, judge of the district and State Senator; Hon. Francis Jordan, Secretary of State of Pennsylvania, is a native of Bedford county, studied law, was admitted and practiced in early life at the Bedford bar; Hon. Alexander L. Russell, son of James M., member of the Bedford bar, afterwards Secretary of State and Adjutant-General of Pennsylvania; Hon. Samuel L. Russell, brother of the above, a member of the Bedford bar, and member of Congress, and of the Constitutional Convention of 1872-'73; Hon. John Cessna, member of the bar, speaker of the Pennsylvania House of Representatives in 1851 and 1863, member of the forty-first and forty-third Congress, and filled many other important public and party offices; Hon. William P. Schell, member of the bar, also Speaker of Pennsylvania House of Representatives. There are and have been many others whom Bedford might claim, who have had honorable influence in public affairs, but we are restricted by want of space to the above mentioned.

The original townships, several of which will be recognized as now belonging to other localities, were Ayr, Bedford, Cumberland, Barree, Dublin, Colerain, Brother's Valley, Fairfield, Mt. Pleasant, Hempfield, Pitt (now Allegheny county), Tyrone, Spring Hill, Rosstrevor, Armstrong (now Armstrong county), and Tullilcagne. The present townships are Bedford, Broad Top, Colerain, Cumberland Valley, Hopewell, Harrison, Juniata, Londonderry, Liberty, Monroe, Napier, East Providence, West Providence, East St. Clair, West St. Clair, Southampton, Snake Spring, Union, Middle Woodbury, and South Woodbury.

The early record of Bedford county abounds in the fearful incidents usual to wild and perilous border life, which if narrated here would make this sketch, albeit veritable history, seem a romance. Our space, however, is limited, and we must forbear. Often and terrible were the visitations of the savages to the





homes of the early settlers, and the obliterations of entire families, and the dispersion or destruction of settlements were of not infrequent occurrence. One incident of the kind—the massacre of the Tull family—is an illustration of the remark, and we allude to it to the exclusion of others as thrilling and dire, because the circumstance has been perpetuated in the memories of the inhabitants from the locality, having ever since borne the name of the fated family. Every school child in the county knows of or has heard of “Tull’s Hill.” It lies on the Pittsburgh turnpike, six miles west of Bedford, and has its name from the murder in 1777 by the Indians of a family of that name, consisting of the parents and nine children. The writer many years ago saw an old citizen, who when a young man of nineteen years, passed the smouldering ruins of the Tull cabin the day of the massacre, and saw the mutilated remains of the victims. He made his escape to Fort Bedford. We give the following extract of an account of this massacre, which was written by John Mower, Esq., some thirty years ago. “There were ten children, nine daughters and a son; but at the time referred to the son was absent. At that time the Indians were particularly troublesome, and the inhabitants had abandoned their improvements and taken refuge in the fort; but Tull’s family disregarded the danger and remained on their improvements. One Williams, who had made a settlement about three miles west of Tull’s, and near where the town of Schellsburg now stands, had returned to his farm to sow some flaxseed; he had a son with him, and remained out about a week. The road to his improvement passed Tull’s house. On their return, as they approached Tull’s, they saw a smoke, and coming nearer, discovered that it arose from the burning ruins of Tull’s house. Upon a nearer approach, the son saw an object in the garden, which by a slight movement had attracted his attention, and looking more closely, they found it was the old man just expiring. At the same moment, the son discovered on the ground near him an Indian paint-bag. They at once understood the whole matter, and knowing that the Indians were still near, fled at once to the fort. Next day a force went out from the fort to examine, and after some search, found the mother with an infant in her arms, both scalped. A short distance in the same direction, they found the eldest daughter also scalped. A short distance from her, the next daughter in the same situation, and scattered about at intervals, the rest of the children but one, who, from circumstances, they supposed had been burned.”

The following extract from the *Pennsylvania Gazette* of August 30, 1764, incidentally explains the perilous state of affairs at that time, and this continued to be the condition of things, at intervals, until 1780. The extract is as follows: “All appears quiet at present along the frontier, except about Bedford, where there are, according to intelligence from thence, some of the savages lying in wait for opportunity of doing mischief. They attempted, very lately, to take a man that was fishing, but he got off. The people are returning over the hills to their places, which we are afraid is too soon.”

General Bonquet writes to Governor Penn, August 25, 1764, as follows: “A party of thirty or forty Indians have killed, near Bedford, one Isaac Stimble, an industrious inhabitant of Ligonier; taken some horses loaded with merchants’ goods, and shot some cattle, after Colonel Reed’s detachment had passed that post.”



We learn, also, from Rev. Dr. Dorr's Historical account of Christ and St. Peter's churches, Philadelphia, that in July, 1763, the "back inhabitants," Bedford, with other points, were in such distressed condition from the "inroads of the savages," that the congregations of Christ and St. Peter's Episcopal churches of Philadelphia, at the instance of their Rector, Rev. Richard Peters, contributed the sum of £662 3s. for their relief, and after corresponding with the minister and wardens of the Episcopal church, at Carlisle, for information, sent "supplies of flour, rice, medicine, and other necessaries, together with two chests of arms and half a barrel of powder, four hundred pounds of lead, two hundred of swan shot, and one thousand flints."

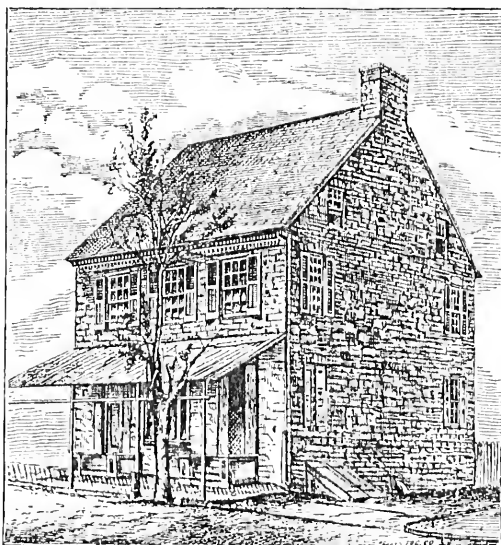
The inhabitants of Bedford county have always been with the advance of their fellow-citizens of other localities in furnishing brave men for the defence of the rights of their country.

Reference to the archives and records of the Commonwealth shows that in the early French and Indian wars, the war of the Revolution, the late war with England, the Mexican war, and the recent civil war, Bedford county has always furnished, never less, and often more, than its full quota of those who voluntarily gave their services, in the camp and in the field, to their country.

We are indebted to Hon. William P. Schell for the data of the following geographical and geological description of the county:

All of the geological strata within the limits of Pennsylvania, from the Trenton or lower limestone up to and including the coal formation, are found in the county. The great Apalachian chain of mountains have their tread north-east and south-west through the county. The western boundary is formed by the Great and the Little Allegheny mountains, which abound in coal, iron ore, and fire-clay. The eastern boundary is formed by Ray's Hill and Broad Top mountains. They contain a very superior coal, known as the Broad Top, semi-bituminous, and also iron.

The central portion of the county is traversed by several mountain ranges—Terrace, Tussey's, Dunning's, Ewit's, Will's, and Buffalo mountains, all of which contain one or more valuable seams of fossil iron ore, excepting the first named, which contains an excellent red hematite ore. There are over two hundred square miles of fossil iron ore within the limits of the county. Embosomed in these



ESPY HOUSE—WASHINGTON'S HEAD-QUARTERS, 1774.  
[From a Photograph by T. R. Gettys, Bedford.]



mountain ranges are some of the most beautiful and fertile limestone valleys to be found anywhere. Many of them are of the same geological formation as Lebanon valley, the great Cumberland valley, and the limestone land of Lancaster county.

Morrison's cove is some eight miles in width, and extends some twelve miles in this county and through Blair and Centre counties. The land is as fertile and as well improved as any part of the "garden spot of the State"—Lancaster county. Snake Spring valley, Friend's cove, and Milligan's cove are also composed of the Trenton or lower strata of limestone. These valleys are generally underlaid with a very rich brown and red hematite iron ore. There are also several very beautiful and fertile valleys of the upper or Hilderberg limestone formation, to wit: Bedford, Cumberland valley, Dutch Corner, St. Clair, and Will's Creek valleys. Chestnut ridge, near Schellsburg, is also of the same formation. Within a distance of ten miles, on an east and west line, may be found every geological stratum within the State, except those beneath the Trenton limestone.

Bedford county is, without doubt, one of the richest iron counties in the State, as it contains almost every variety of ore—the fossil, the hematite; and the carbonaceous ores. Iron can be made at lower rates than elsewhere in the State, as coal, iron ore, and limestone are found in great abundance in close proximity, and these are all intersected by a railroad running diagonally north-east and south-west, through the entire length of the county.

The natural scenery of Bedford county is perhaps unsurpassed for picturesqueness and variety. The wild mountain views alternate with rare rural scenes. The valleys especially attract the attention of tourists, and some of the landscapes are pronounced, by persons traveled in this and other lands, as beautiful as any the sun shines upon. The climate is pure and healthful.

The manufacturing facilities of the county are as yet comparatively undeveloped. There are several extensive iron furnaces, some of which have been nearly a century in operation. One, the Bloomfield furnace, in Morrison's cove, furnishes iron of such peculiarly excellent and tenacious quality that it was exclusively used during the recent war for the manufacture of the immense cannon used by the government. There are several manufactories of woolen goods, planing mills, and a large number of extensive steam tanneries, but in all these industries, especially the iron interest, the reserve supply of material untouched is simply inexhaustible.

The town of BEDFORD was laid out in June, 1766, by order issued by Governor John Penn to the Surveyor-General of the Province, John Lukens, and it was incorporated as a borough, by act of Assembly of the State, 13th March, 1795. The original plan of the town, which has been enlarged by subsequent additions, was similar to all the old towns of the Penns, having equally sized squares, divided by streets intersecting each other at right angles, and a central park or square. It had three streets running east and west, viz., Penn, Pitt, and John, the two latter being on the north and south, and each sixty feet in width, and the first named being central, between the other two, and eighty feet in width. These are crossed at regular intervals by six other streets, running north and south, named respectively, Juliann, Thomas, Richard, Bed-



ford, East, and West streets, each of the width of sixty feet. The personal names, feminine and masculine, perhaps more home-like than euphonious, which some of these streets bear, were given (so says tradition) by John Lukens in honor of members of the Governor's family. The limits of the borough have been gradually enlarged, until to-day it covers an area of one mile from east to west, by one and a quarter miles north to south.

At the time of the survey by John Lukens, the streets of Raystown, viz., the road from the east to Fort Pitt and the path south to Fort Cumberland, entered the hamlet on lines parallel with the Old Fort, or King's house. The survey of Lukens changed these courses, for his orders were to "lay out the streets parallel with and at right angles with Colonel Bouquet's house." This house is the large limestone mansion known as the "Woods house," that stands on Pitt street, directly opposite the Old Fort house, and is now the residence of A. B. Carn. It is, even for the present day, a spacious, elegant mansion, massive and durable in style, and unless it should be removed to make way for business houses, will be as strong and secure a century hence as it is now. Why it was called Colonel Bouquet's house is not now known, unless it being his head-quarters in 1758, when he remained some time at Bedford with his force of 7,850 men, and his again occupying it temporarily in 1763, associated his name with it. It is sure he never owned it, nor had his permanent residence in Bedford. The house was built prior to 1758, tradition says by a Captain Klem, a Scotchman, and at an early day came into the possession of George Woods, Esquire, one of the King's justices, and was for several generations the residence of himself and descendants, having passed out of the family within the last thirty years.

The only buildings contemporary, or nearly so, with it now standing are the Old Fort or King's house; the Funk and Nawgel taverns, on West Pitt street; the old Barclay house in the south-east suburb, known as the "Grove;" the "Espy house," a picture of which is given, interesting as Washington's head-quarters in October, 1794, when he came to Bedford on his expedition to the western counties during the Whiskey Insurrection. It is also a matter worthy of note that General Arthur St. Clair had his first prothonotary's office, in 1771 and 1772, in the basement of the rear building of the Espy house. The Old Fort, or "King's house," stands at an angle eccentric from the town lines, facing a private square at the intersection of Pitt and Juliann streets. It is a somewhat singular circumstance, in this land of change, that this property is now owned by a descendant (David F. Mann) of one of the first home officers commissioned in the war of the Revolution, Captain Andrew Mann, father of the late Hon. David Mann. The old house is built of oak logs, and is yet substantial and in good preservation. It had a smooth clay floor on the first story, still to be seen under the modern flooring, and split logs flooring the second story. The building is now covered with weather boarding, but the clap-boarding of the gable ends is still to be seen from the inside, fastened with immense wrought-iron spikes. In the old Nawgel tavern, the old split oak floor, nailed with the same huge home-made spikes, is to be seen.

Lying to the eastward of the King's house, and sloping downward to what is now East street, was the "King's orchard," some fifteen acres planted in apple





trees, the last one of which was standing as lately as about 1855, having survived its companions many years. This orchard seems to have been used in early times as a burial-place for the settlers and soldiers of the fort, the graves being scattered without regard to order all over the space alluded to, some singly, others in small clusters, as evidenced by the frequent exhumation of human remains, from the early years of the borough to the present time, in excavating for buildings and other purposes. These remains are still occasionally brought to the surface in the ordinary work of cultivating the gardens in the compactly built portion of the town which was once the King's orchard. But a dozen years ago, in digging the cellar for the brick house on the north side of Penn street, immediately east of the Presbyterian church, the workmen discovered what were evidently the remains of two adult persons in early manhood and womanhood, probably man and wife, who had, from indications shown by the appearance of the bones, met deaths of violence. In the forehead of the female skeleton was the perforation made by the leaden bullet which was found in the cavity of the skull. After the town was surveyed in 1766, the interments seem to have been principally confined, for some thirty years, to the Episcopal burial-ground on Penn street, east of Richard, also a part of the King's orchard, which, at the laying out of the town, was donated by Governor Penn to "the Church for a burial-place." In removing the remains of the dead from this old graveyard to the new cemetery, some ten years since, remains of several, supposed to be British officers, were among those taken up. In the grave of one, thought by the old inhabitants to be that of a Colonel Campbell, were found, besides the massive coffin handles, a breast-pin containing a lady's miniature, and a pair of very rich, old fashioned, gold linked sleeve-buttons. The remains of Justice Bernard Dougherty, Judge Scott, and others of the early pioneers, were deposited in this ground.

In the old graveyard on Juliann street, south of the original borough line, also donated by order of Governor Penn to the "Lutherans and Calvinists of the town," commonly known as the Presbyterian graveyard, also lie the remains of many of the first settlers. It is in this ground that John Tod, judge of the Supreme Court, is buried. There is also another tomb in this enclosure, around which cluster interesting memories—it is that of Colonel Levin Powell, of Virginia, who died in Bedford while visiting the springs for his health in 1810. He was the Colonel Powell in connection with whose name the following characteristic anecdote is narrated. Colonel Powell was a candidate for Congress in the district in which Washington resided, and they were not on amicable terms, although of the same party. As the General alighted from his horse and walked up to the polls to announce his vote, as was the custom of the time in Virginia, the crowd, curious to know how he would vote, under the circumstances, followed him. Washington observing this, exclaimed, in words that have passed into a proverb: "Gentlemen, I vote for principles, not men," and then directed the clerk to record his vote for Colonel Levin Powell.

The early settlers of Bedford were principally English, also the Scotch-Irish, and the German element were largely represented. The descendants of a number of the pioneers still reside here, and many of them are among our first citizens. For many years the society of the town was characterized by English customs



and hospitality, and like Carlisle, Chambersburg, and some other of the colonial towns, was intelligent, select, refined, and aristocratic.

The town is beautifully situated on the Raystown branch of the Juniata, in the midst of a most charming landscape, in a valley the beauties of which have formed the theme of many a poet's verse and tourist's praise. For healthfulness of location, exquisiteness of scenery, and salubrity of climate, it has few rivals. It is well built, has wide streets well paved, and is much remarked upon for the beauty and number of its shade trees. Its public edifices, court house, churches, and school buildings, are handsome and in good architectural style, and its private residences are uniformly good, and some of them quite beautiful; these are for the most part brick and stone. The town stands upon what for many years was the great thoroughfare between the East and West—the turnpike leading from Philadelphia and Baltimore to Pittsburgh and Wheeling; and until the completing of the Baltimore and Ohio railroad on the south, and the Pennsylvania Central on the north, the entire road, from Chambersburg to Pittsburgh, was teeming day and night with coaches, Conestoga wagons, and private conveyances, and every interest of the town and country was prosperous. After the opening out of the railroads above mentioned, the old place was figuratively "laid on the shelf," until the completing, in 1872, of its railroad connecting the Pennsylvania and Maryland railroads, since which time its prosperity has been on the increase. Its population has since then doubled, its inhabitants now numbering 2,500. The Bedford and Bridgeport railroad runs on the north side of the river, about two hundred yards from its main street, with which it is connected by two bridges, one of them an iron bridge of remarkable durability and beauty. There is considerable wealth concentrated here, and there is little of poverty. The citizens, as a class, are industrious, moral, and prosperous. It has one of the finest graded schools in the State. Its churches are, the Presbyterian, Catholic, Reformed, Lutheran, Episcopal, Methodist, and two African Methodist.

EVERETT, formerly Waynesburg and Bloody Run, the second in size of the towns of Bedford county, is a thriving borough of twelve hundred inhabitants, situated on the Raystown branch of the Juniata, and the Chambersburg and Bedford turnpike, eight miles from the latter place. The Huntingdon and Broad Top railroad, which connects with the Bedford and Bridgeport railroad at Mount Dallas, one mile west of the town, has a depot here. The town is handsomely built, and improving rapidly, and is inhabited by a moral, energetic, intelligent, and hospitable people. The private residences are principally built of brick and frame.

Colonel Joseph W. Tate writes to me concerning its early history: "In reference to the borough of Bloody Run, now Everett, I find the facts to be as follows: In a deed dated 7th March, 1787, from John Musser, of Lancaster, Pennsylvania, to Michael Barndollar, of Frederick county, Md., there was conveyed four hundred acres of land. This was comprised in two warrants, one in the name of William Thompson, for 250 acres, the other in name of James Elliott, for 150 acres, which includes the creek or branch called Bloody run. On the first day of February, 1800, under articles of agreement, Michael Barndollar conveyed eighty acres of the western part of the above warrants unto Samuel Tate, of Shippensburg, Pennsylvania. The above eighty acres included the Juniata river



and the stream Bloody run, from its mouth to a survey in the name of Robert Culbertson. On 13th October, 1800, Samuel Tate was by Michael Barndollar constituted attorney to procure patents for the above described lands."

This was the beginning of the hamlet of Bloody Run, which finally grew into a village, and afterward was incorporated as a borough. The name was changed, a few years ago, for one perhaps more euphonious—Everett, which at times has caused some embarrassment to tourists who were in search of the historic battleground of Bloody Run.

Colonel Tate goes on to remark that "the battle with the Indians, from which the old town derived its name, was fought on the Culbertson tract, a short distance east of the steam mill, and south of Spring's. Traces of the old road can yet be seen on Culbertson's hill, west of where J. W. Barndollar's railroad warehouse now stands. The first Methodist church and graveyard were on the boundary of R. Culbertson's survey. Prior to building the Methodist church, the graveyard was west of the old stone church, and near the old log school-house. There was another graveyard at an early day, on the point west of where Bloody run empties into the Raystown branch."

There are various and conflicting accounts as to the affair which gave the name of Bloody run to this stream and for many years to the town. The following, published in a London (England) paper in 1765, is perhaps as authentic as any other, viz.: "The convoy of eighty horses, loaded with goods, chiefly on his Majesty's account, as presents to the Indians, and part on account of Indian traders, were surprised in a narrow and dangerous defile in the mountains by a body of armed men. A number of horses were killed, and the whole of the goods carried away by the plunderers. *The rivulet was dyed with blood, and ran into the settlement below, carrying with it the stain of crime upon its surface.*"

The foregoing is as explicit as a report borne across the Atlantic from the wilds of the west at that day could well be. It was not in a mountain defile, however, that the *mêlée* occurred; it was in a hollow among the hills, near the river, and not far from the base of the mountain, and the truth, as far as we can gather, is about this: The traders above referred to were doing, as some are doing in our western border to-day, gratifying their passion for lucre at the sacrifice of the public good, viz., surreptitiously furnishing the savages with the implements and *materiel* of war, by which they were enabled to carry on more readily their predatory and murderous attacks upon the settlers and their families. It were well, perhaps, if there were now, as then, stern men who, on their own individual responsibility, would correct the evil by visiting summary vengeance upon the sordid knaves.

SCHELLSBURG.—I am indebted to John P. Reed, Esq., grandson of the founder of Schellsburg, for the following sketch: "Schellsburg, 'the loveliest village of the plain,' is situated on the eastern slope of Chestnut ridge, one of the foothills of the Allegheny mountains, nine miles west of Bedford, on the turnpike leading to Pittsburgh. It was laid out by John Schell, a native of Goshenhoppen, Montgomery county, Pennsylvania, in the year 1810, who was forced to leave his early home on account of the 'alien and sedition law,' and his 'liberty pole' proclivities. He came to Bedford county about the year 1800, and stopped at 'Nine Mile town,' west of Bedford, and bought the tract of land patented as



'Nine Mile town,' and an adjoining tract patented in the name of 'Pekin,' about five hundred acres, from Samuel Davidson and John Anderson, of Bedford, in 1801, and on these lands, on the road leading from Bedford to Fort Pitt, he laid out the village of Schellsburg. It grew apace, and the Legislature, by act of 19th of March, 1838, made it a borough. It is a beautiful and substantial village of about five hundred inhabitants, situated near the foot of a picturesque ridge, surrounded by beautiful meadows and fields, forming quite an extended plain, with a fine view of the distant Buffalo ridge and the Wills mountains. John Schell donated several lots for church and educational purposes, and some ten acres of level land, on the summit of the ridge, for a church and cemetery. Here was built, mainly through his efforts, the first church (a union church of the German Reformed and Lutheran denominations) in that part of the county, which remains to-day a relic of the labors of the pioneers of this section, and is used now only as a mortuary chapel of the beautiful burial-ground that surrounds it. In the village, the Reformed, Lutheran, Methodist, and Presbyterian people are represented by churches, and a creditable brick school-house supplies the wants of the villagers in that regard. A town hall is now also in process of erection. At an early day the town was the centre of business for thirty miles in a westerly and northerly direction; now the business is more diffused."

The other boroughs of the county are WOODBURY, in Morrison's cove; ST. CLAIRSVILLE, ten miles north of Bedford, named in honor of Arthur St. Clair; RAINSBURG, in Friend's cove, nine miles south-east from Bedford; SEXTON, on the Huntingdon and Broad Top railroad, in the north-east end of the county; COALDALE, on Broad Top mountain; PLEASANTVILLE, in the north-west section, where are located a large steam tannery and grist mills; and BRIDGEPORT, at the junction of the Bedford and Bridgeport with the Pittsburgh and Connellsville railroad.

The medicinal springs of Bedford are so widely and justly celebrated, that no sketch of this locality can be complete without some reference thereto. These springs rank foremost in Pennsylvania on account of their mineral properties and medicinal effects, and their mountain elevation and scenery. They are a mile and a half from the town of Bedford, from which they derive their name. Besides the mineral spring, as it is called, there are found in close proximity a chalybeate spring, a powerful limestone one, a sulphur, and two sweet springs. The discovery of the remedial virtues of the Bedford waters only dates half a century back. In the year 1804, a mechanic of Bedford, Jacob Fletcher, when fishing for trout in the stream near the principal fountain, was attracted by the beauty and singularity of the waters flowing from the bank, and drank freely from them. They proved purgative and sudorific. He had suffered many years from rheumatic pains and formidable ulcers on the legs. On the ensuing night he was more free from pain, and slept more tranquilly than usual; and this unexpected relief induced him to drink daily of the waters, and to bathe his limbs in the fountain. In a few weeks he was entirely cured. The happy effect which they had on this patient led others, laboring under various chronic diseases, to the springs. In the summer of 1805, many valetudinarians came in carriages and encamped in the valley, to seek from the munificent hand of nature their lost health. Since that period the springs have become widely famous.



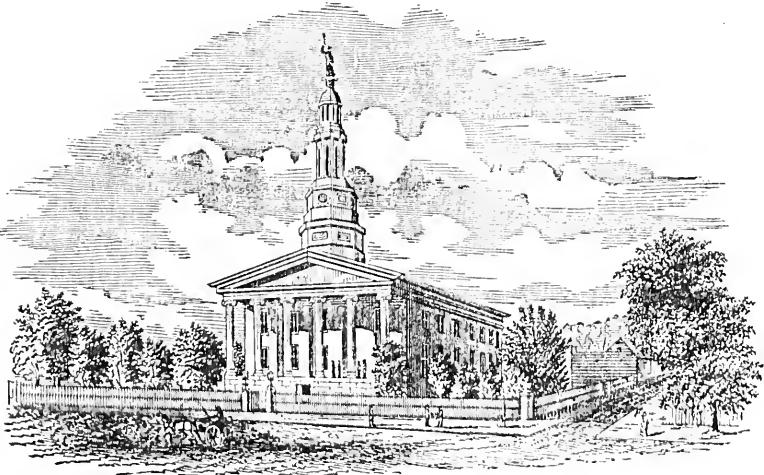


## BERKS COUNTY.

BY J. LAWRENCE GETZ, READING.



BERKS county (named after Berkshire in England, where the Penn family held large landed estates) was originally formed from parts of Philadelphia county east of the river Schuylkill, and from parts of Chester and Lancaster west of the same river, by an act of the General Assembly, approved March 11th, 1752, by the Hon. James Hamilton, Governor of the Province. By the same act, Edward Scull, of Philadelphia county, Benjamin Lightfoot, of Chester, and Thomas Cookson, of Lancaster, were appointed commissioners to run the boundary lines. Its subdivisions at that



BERKS COUNTY COURT HOUSE, READING.

[From a Photograph by Saylor, Reading.]

time consisted of sixteen townships, of which Albany, Alsace, Amity, Colebrookdale, Douglass, Exeter, Hereford, and Oley, were taken from Philadelphia county; Bern, Bethel, Caernarvon, Cumru, Heidelberg, Robeson, and Tulpehocken, from Lancaster county; and Union township from Chester county.

Berks was reduced to its present limits by annexing the extreme northern part to Northumberland, 1772; and by the erection of Schuylkill county out of an additional northern part of its territory, 1811. It is bounded on the north by Schuylkill; on the north-east by Lehigh; on the south-east by Montgomery and Chester; and on the south-west by Lancaster and Lebanon. Average length, 32 miles; breadth, 28 miles; area, 927 square miles, embracing 593,280 acres.

By the petition which was presented to the General Assembly, February 4th,



1752, asking for the erection of a county to be called Berks, the population of the territory included within the then proposed limits was estimated at seven thousand. By the several decennial censuses of the United States government, taken from 1790 to 1870, inclusive, the population of the county was enumerated as follows: 1790, 30,179; 1800, 32,407; 1810, 43,146; 1820, 46,275; 1830, 53,152; 1840, 64,569; 1850, 77,129; 1860, 93,818; 1870, 106,701; 1876 (estimated), 120,000.

The topographical features of the county are diversified. Broad fertile plains and valleys intermingle with rough hills and mountains incapable of cultivation by the plow. But as compensation for the sterile surface of the latter, many of them contain enormous mineral wealth in the shape of iron, which awaits development, and will yet become the source of incalculable profit to the future inheritors of the soil. The southern portion of the county is traversed in a south-westerly course by the South mountain range, here and there broken into irregular spurs. In the northern part there are several elevated ridges. The Kittatinny or Blue mountain forms the boundary line between Berks and Schuylkill.

The principal stream in Berks county is the river Schuylkill ("hidden creek"), so named by the Dutch, who were the first explorers of this region, and who, it is said, in their explorations of the Delaware river, passed the mouth of the Schuylkill without perceiving its existence. The Indian name of the river was *Man ai-un-k*. It rises in the carboniferous highlands of Schuylkill county, and flowing in a south-easterly direction, breaks through the Blue ridge at Port Clinton, and flows down by Hamburg, and passing Reading, becomes the dividing line between the counties of Montgomery and Chester a few miles above Pottstown. Several of its large tributaries flow through Berks county, the principal one of which is the Tulpehocken creek, rising in Lebanon county, and flowing E.S.E., empties into the Schuylkill near Reading. The Maiden creek, another tributary, rises in the north-eastern part of the county, and flows into the Schuylkill six miles above Reading. The Manatawny rises in the south-eastern part of the county, and empties into the Schuylkill at Pottstown. There are several smaller streams in the county, viz.: Saucony, a branch of the Maiden creek; Northkill, which empties into the Tulpehocken near Bernville; Cacoosing and Spring creeks, which are branches of the Tulpehocken; and Allegheny and Monocacy creeks, emptying into the Schuylkill below Reading. The Little Swatara rises at the foot of the Blue mountain, and flows in a south-westerly direction, through Lebanon county, and unites with the Great Swatara near Jonestown. These streams furnish ample water power for mills, furnaces, forges, and other manufactories.

The agricultural resources of Berks are very large, and the county ranks in this respect as the third in the State, being excelled only by Chester and Lancaster. The soil generally (with the exceptions noted on a preceding page) is of good quality, and under thorough culture. One-third is fertile limestone land, very productive in wheat and other cereals. In the southern part the red shale formation prevails. Well cultivated fields in every section testify to both the fertility of the soil and the persevering industry of the large rural population which is principally engaged in agricultural pursuits. In 1870 the total



estimated value of all farm productions, including betterments and additions to stock, was \$9,150,789. The surplus agricultural products are sent principally to the markets of Philadelphia, New York, and the Schuylkill coal regions.

The chief mineral wealth of Berks consists in iron ore, which occurs in various parts of the county. At Mount Pleasant, in Colebrookdale township; in Oley township; at Boyertown; at Moselem, in Richmond township; and at several other points, beds of good quality of ore are profitably worked. The products of these mines form the principal supply for the numerous furnaces in the county.

An approximate idea of the extent and productive value of the various manufactories of iron in Berks county is given in the following table, compiled from the census of 1870, which contains the only reliable data accessible to the writer:

MANUFACTORIES.	No. of works.	Hands employed.	Capital.	Wages.	Value of materials consumed.	Products.
Bloomeries . . . . .	3	16	\$62,500	\$5,133	\$40,415	\$59,220
Forged and rolled . . . . .	19	1,027	2,199,659	581,260	2,196,684	2,983,755
Bolts, nuts, etc. . . . .	2	26	110,000	13,564	52,309	71,000
Nails and spikes . . . . .	3	140	180,000	66,250	288,472	383,500
Wrought tubes . . . . .	1	241	750,000	108,410	437,206	569,631
Pig iron . . . . .	17	1,244	2,378,600	332,945	1,415,166	2,041,025
Castings, all kinds . . . . .	15	492	626,500	211,623	403,890	718,559
Machinery (not specified)	6	68	72,990	23,090	14,480	68,750
Engines and boilers . . . . .	3	112	95,500	40,600	42,350	107,640
Total . . . . .	69	3,366	\$6,475,749	\$1,382,875	\$4,890,972	\$7,003,083

PRINCIPAL INDUSTRIES OF THE COUNTY OTHER THAN IRON.

MANUFACTORIES.	Establishments.	Hands employed.	Capital.	Wages.	Value of materials.	Products.
Canal boats . . . . .	3	121	\$59,500	\$46,470	\$106,401	\$155,801
Boots and shoes . . . . .	11	177	70,900	60,150	89,622	170,417
Bricks . . . . .	29	356	191,160	81,416	97,915	260,110
Carriages and wagons . . . . .	54	185	67,950	40,846	44,064	137,233
Clothing . . . . .	59	307	88,375	54,647	137,143	228,801
Cotton goods . . . . .	5	341	198,400	77,450	175,574	299,550
Flouring mill products . . . . .	63	154	557,550	29,555	1,127,265	1,308,233
Hats and caps . . . . .	16	432	391,188	177,460	458,299	951,880
Leather tanned . . . . .	38	113	180,765	26,191	281,499	348,564
Do. carried . . . . .	39	74	111,525	15,777	250,961	314,831
Malt liquors . . . . .	5	66	421,600	36,720	150,715	257,679
Sash, doors, and blinds . . . . .	6	130	56,500	61,417	112,852	211,861
Cigars . . . . .	38	282	89,500	49,910	86,198	196,543
Woolen goods . . . . .	13	227	197,780	57,473	158,795	285,435



The number of manufacturing establishments of all descriptions in Berks county, as returned by the census of 1870, was 1,440. Total number of hands employed, 8,991; capital invested, \$11,182,603; wages paid annually, \$2,711,231; materials consumed, \$10,646,049; value of products, \$16,242,453. Estimated value in 1875, being 50 per centum added, \$24,365,179.

It has been the fashion with writers for the press, for the most part unacquainted with the history and character of the inhabitants of Berks county, to represent them as an ignorant people, inimical to education. To such an extent has this misrepresentation been carried, that, up to a very recent period, the "Dumb Dutch" of Berks had become a by-word of reproach against this people indiscriminately. Nothing could be farther from the truth. In every settlement of Berks county, from the earliest dates, the school house was reared contemporaneously with the church; secular education went hand in hand with religious instruction, and the schoolmaster was regarded as second only to the pastor in the importance of his functions. It is true that the Germans of Berks county, with their characteristic jealousy of all innovations upon their established customs and institutions, were slow to adopt the provisions of the common school law of Pennsylvania, which they looked upon with suspicion, as an attempt by the State to usurp authority in a matter which they believed to belong exclusively to themselves as a local and domestic regulation of which they were best qualified to have the control. Whether right or wrong in this view is no longer a question of practical importance. Suffice it to say that, when the school system came to be fairly understood, it was readily accepted and faithfully administered, and in no county in the State do its operations and results to-day present a more gratifying exhibit. Exclusive of the city of Reading, the county is sub-divided into fifty school districts, with four hundred and twenty-five schools, which are kept open upon an average of six months in the year. The number of teachers employed during the school year just closed was 430; average number of pupils in attendance, 12,374. The annual taxation of the people for the support of these schools amounts to nearly \$105,000, and no tax is more willingly paid. The school houses are all substantially built, and many of them have been constructed after the most improved models of school architecture.

The earliest internal improvements which brought Berks county into direct communication with other sections of the State were the three great turnpike roads, namely, the Reading and Perkiomen, from Philadelphia to Reading, fifty-two miles; the Centre, an extension of the former, from Reading to Sunbury, eighty-two miles; and the Berks and Dauphin, from Reading to Harrisburg, fifty-two miles. These highways have been preserved in good repair at a very small annual expenditure, and attest the wisdom and engineering skill of the old surveyors by whom they were constructed. The turnpikes were succeeded by the canals, of which the Union canal is the oldest, having been projected in 1821, and opened to navigation in 1826. It commences at Middletown, on the Susquehanna, and enters the Schuylkill at Reading. The Schuylkill canal, although projected at a later date, was completed about the same time. It extends from Port Carbon, in the Schuylkill coal region, follows the course of the river down through Reading, and terminates at Fairmount, Philadelphia. Its whole length





is one hundred and eight miles. It is now operated, under lease, by the Reading railroad company.

The county is intersected by railroads in almost every direction, chief of which is the main line of the Philadelphia and Reading railroad, completed through from Philadelphia to Pottsville, ninety-three miles, in 1842. All the other lines of railway, with one exception, although constructed by independent companies, have now passed under the control of that great corporation, either by consolidation or lease. The Lebanon Valley branch, from Reading to Harrisburg, fifty-four miles, connects with the Pennsylvania railroad at the latter city. The East Pennsylvania branch, from Reading to Allentown, thirty-six miles, connects with the Lehigh Valley railroad at that station, and forms a link in what is known as the Allentown route from New York to the West. The Reading and Columbia, and Lancaster branch, forty miles, connects at Columbia with railways to York and Port Deposit. The Berks and Lehigh branch, forty-three miles, from Reading to Slatington, connects at that point with the Lehigh Valley railroad. The other branches are the Colebrookdale, twelve miles, from Pottstown to Barto, and the Kutztown, four and one-half miles, from Topton to Kutztown, which are elsewhere noticed. The exception referred to is the Wilmington and Reading railroad, sixty-four miles, connecting with the Pennsylvania railroad at Coatesville, and with the Philadelphia, Wilmington, and Baltimore railroad at Wilmington.

The South Mountain and Boston railroad, now under construction, and a portion of the Pennsylvania division of which has been graded, passes in a direct line from east to west, through the northern portion of Berks county, along the fertile valley of the Tulpehocken. This road will extend from the Susquehanna river, near Harrisburg, on the south-west, in a north-easterly course to the Hudson river, opposite Poughkeepsie, New York. When completed, it will form a connection with Reading by means of the Straustown branch, twenty miles in length, from the main line which takes Straustown in its route. This branch passes through the borough of Bernville.

The first settlements within the present limits of Berks county were made between the years 1704 to 1712, by some English members of the Society of Friends, French Huguenots, and German emigrants from the Palatinate, in *Wahlink*, or *Oley*, a name which signifies, in the Indian tongue, "a tract of land encompassed by hills." Among the Friends who first domiciled here were Arthur Lee and George Boone, the ancestor of Daniel Boone, the famous pioneer of Kentucky. Prominent among the first German settlers at or near Oley was Hans Keim, the ancestor of the Keim family of Reading. The Huguenots who settled in Berks first endeavored to find a home in New York. Abraham De Turek, of Oley, one of their descendants, in a letter dated March, 1844, to I. D. Rupp, author of the "History of Berks County," wrote:

"My ancestor, Isaac Turk, or De Turek, lived in France, and being a Huguenot, was obliged to flee to Frankenthal in the Palatinate. He emigrated to America in the days of Queen Anne (1709), settled in the State of New York, in the neighborhood of Esopns, and removed to Oley 1712. The patent of my land is dated 1712."

About 1714 or 1715, a few Swedes settled in Amity township. There still



stands a relic of this settlement—a two story house, built of the native sandstone, on the east bank of the Schuylkill, at the village of Douglassville, in the front wall of which there is a stone bearing the initials and date “I. M. I., 1716.”

A settlement was begun in Tulpehocken, in 1723, by some Germans who had fled from the Palatinate in 1708 or 1709, and taken refuge in England at the invitation of Queen Anne. In December, 1709, three thousand of these refugees embarked at London in ten ships for New York. Nearly one-half of them perished on the voyage. The survivors arrived at New York in June, 1710, and settled at various points on the Hudson. In the winter of 1712–13, about fifty families took up lands and established their homes on the Schoharie, within the limits of the present county of Schoharie. Others soon joined them there, and after encountering the various trials and hardships incident to the immigrant for several years, they brought much of the land under culture, and founded flourishing hamlets in the midst of rich fields of corn and productive gardens. But while rejoicing in the prospect of peace and prosperity, they were suddenly notified that the lands which they had improved belonged to the State, and that they must relinquish them to the lawful claimant. Submitting patiently to adverse fate, they sadly left their homes on the Schoharie for Pennsylvania, where they found an asylum among the Indians. Piloted by a friendly Indian, in the spring of 1723, they finally reached the head of the Tulpehocken creek, and settled on Indian lands about eighteen miles west of Reading. Having provided temporary shelter for their wives and children, their next care was to send deputies to Lieutenant-Governor Keith, to ask permission to settle on the Tulpehocken creek. He granted their petition on condition that they would, as soon as possible, make full satisfaction to the Proprietary or his agent, for such lands as should be allotted them. A few years later, fifty other families removed from the Schoharie to Tulpehocken. This new accession aroused the hostility of the natives. At a council, held June 5, 1728, in Philadelphia, in the presence of a large audience, one of the chiefs, Allummapees, otherwise Sassoonan, king of the Delawares, plaintively alluded to the encroachments upon his people which had been made by the Germans. In addressing James Logan, president of the council, he said: “I am now an old man and must soon die; my children may wonder to see their father's lands gone from them, without receiving anything for them, and they left with no place of their own to live on. This may occasion a difference between their children and us hereafter. I would willingly prevent any misunderstanding that may happen.”

In 1729 there was another accession of Palatines, prominent among whom was Conrad Weiser, who afterwards played an important part in the colonial history of Berks county. To quiet and fully satisfy the Indians, Thomas Penn, son of the Proprietary of Pennsylvania, purchased the lands in this region from the Indians in 1732, and from him the settlers derived valid titles to the lands they occupied.

But the attempts to preserve peace between the German settlers of Berks county and the Indians were all unavailing. To relate in detail all the atrocities committed by the natives from 1744 to 1764, would exceed the compass of this limited sketch. In 1744, when war was declared between Great



Britain and France, the latter easily succeeded in exciting the hostility of the Indians against the English, and the French found them not only willing but eager to join them in their acts of plunder and rapine. Soon after Braddock's defeat at Fort Duquesne, in July, 1755, the Indians made marauding incursions into Berks county from the direction of the Blue mountain. They devastated, by fire and slaughter, many parts of the county. Hundreds of houses were laid in ashes, hundreds of persons were scalped and slain, and many, without distinction as to age or sex, were taken captives by the savages, and subjected to tortures from which death was a blessed release. Conrad Weiser, who was then commander of the Provincial forces in Berks, wrote numerous letters which are still in existence, to Lieutenant-Governor Morris, giving thrilling accounts of the deplorable condition of the settlements. In one letter, dated the latter part of 1755, he wrote: "This country is in a dismal condition. It can't hold out long. Consternation, poverty, confusion everywhere." Alarms of this kind continued in Berks and other counties till 1778, when the Indians were finally driven beyond the Allegheny mountains.

Although the first settlers of Berks county were chiefly Germans, the colonial records show that emigrants of other European nationalities also sought and found homes here. Reference has been made to the settlements of Friends and French Huguenots in Oley, and of Swedes in Amity. Besides these, there were settlements of Huguenots in Alsace township, contiguous to Reading, and in Greenwich, on the border of Lehigh county; in Bern, of Swiss; in Brecknock, Caernarvon, and Cumru, of Welsh; in Maiden Creek, of Friends; in Robeson, of Friends, English, and Welsh; and in Union, of Swedes, English, and Welsh. A few Dutch families settled in Pike township, about 1730, and their descendants still reside there upon the ancestral estates. John Pott, a descendant of one of these families, built the first furnace in Pottsville, and gave the name to the town, which has since become the great depot of the Schuylkill coal region. He is also credited with having been the discoverer of the utility of anthracite coal. Hereford township, in the extreme eastern corner of the county bordering upon Montgomery and Lehigh, was settled principally by "Schwenkfelders," a religious sect founded by Kaspar von Schwenkfeld, a nobleman of Silesia. His adherents were persecuted by both Roman Catholics and Protestants, and in 1734 a considerable number of them emigrated to Pennsylvania, and settled on contiguous lands in Berks, Montgomery, and Lehigh. Their descendants in these counties still number about three hundred families and eight hundred members, and have five churches and school-houses.

The inhabitants of Berks, being for the most part composed of immigrants, and the descendants of immigrants, who had either been driven from or voluntarily left their native country to escape from civil oppression or religious persecution, it was natural that they should have been among the first to espouse the cause of the Colonies in resisting the usurpations of the British Crown. In June, 1775, after the first blood had been shed for American freedom in the battles of Lexington and Bunker Hill, the Assembly, in session at Philadelphia, recommended to the commissioners and assessors of Berks county "to immediately provide four hundred firelocks with bayonets, cartridge boxes with twenty-three rounds of



cartridges in every box, and knapsacks for the immediate use of drafted soldiers." This recommendation was promptly adopted.

At a meeting held at Reading, January 2, 1776, Edward Biddle, Jonathan Potts, Mark Bird, Christopher Schultz, John Patton, Sebastian Levan, and Baltzer Gehr, were appointed delegates to a convention, held at Philadelphia, January 22, 1776, to devise measures for effectual resistance to the mother country; and Edward Biddle, Jonathan Potts, William Rehrer, Christopher Witman, and Mark Bird, were constituted a committee of correspondence. When, on July 4, 1776, the delegates of the "Associators of Pennsylvania" met at Lancaster, to choose two brigadier-generals to command the battalions and forces of Pennsylvania, Berks county was represented by Colonels Bird, Patton, and Levan; Majors Gabriel Hiester, Jones, Lindemuth, and Lœffler; Lieutenants Cremer, Lutz, Rice, and Miller; Adjutant S. Eby; Captains Keim and May; and privates Hartman, Filbert, Morgan, Tolbert, Spohn, Wenrich, Moser, Seltzer, Winter, Lerch, Wister, and Smack.

While this convention was being held, the representatives in Congress unanimously declared the thirteen Colonies free and independent States. This act gave an impetus to the struggle which induced the patriots of Berks to make common cause with their brethren already in arms, by enlisting for active service whenever their country should call them into the field.

During the winter of 1776-77, when the British were in possession of Philadelphia, Reading was the resort of many fugitive families from the metropolis, and it is related that, notwithstanding the gloomy prospects of the army under Washington, the little town became the scene of much gaiety. The society of the refugees received accessions of visitors from time to time—officers of the army, and others, who found relief from the contemplation of the common suffering in card parties, balls, sleighing excursions, and kindred pleasures. General Mifflin (afterwards Governor of the Commonwealth) held a country-seat named "Angelica," three miles south-east of Reading, which subsequently became the property of the county, and is now occupied by the alms-house and county hospital buildings. He was out of command in the army at this time, and was residing here. It was during this dark interval of the war that Reading became the head-quarters of the "Conway Cabal," which had for its object the deposition of Washington as Commander-in-Chief, and the substitution of General Gates. General Mifflin was, for a time, a leading spirit among these malcontents, but subsequently regretted the step he had taken, apologized for his conduct, and was restored to favor.

During the same period, a body of Hessian prisoners, who had been captured at Trenton in December, 1776, together with some British, and the principal Scotch Royalists who had been captured in North Carolina, were brought to Reading, and confined in a sort of rude barracks on Penn's Mount, east of the town, where they remained some time. To protect themselves against the inclemency of the winter, they built huts from the stones which they found there in great abundance, the ruins of which may still be traced by the curious antiquary. These prisoners were under the command of Captain Philip Miller, of Reading, who fought in the battle of Trenton.

At the beginning of the year 1777, the number of available efficient men in





Berks was reported at about four thousand. On the 5th and 6th days of May, in that year, they met at convenient places to elect field officers, and formed themselves into companies and classes, agreeably to law.

July 28, 1777, the Council of Safety at Philadelphia, in the exigency of affairs, when the invasion of Pennsylvania by the British was apprehended, ordered Colonel Jacob Morgan, of Berks, forthwith to embody one class of the militia of the county and send them to Chester. The command was promptly complied with, the militia exhibiting the warmest zeal in the cause upon which the future fate of the American States depended. Some of the inhabitants, however, here as elsewhere, were not equally zealous, assigning as a reason for not responding to the call, that they were unprovided with arms, ammunition, and other necessities.

In August following, a second class of the militia of Berks were ordered out, the force, including officers and privates, aggregating six hundred and fifty-six "hearty and able men." In November, the fifth and sixth classes were notified to appear at Reading, with all the arms, accoutrements, and blankets they could procure. There was at this time a great want of arms and ammunition. In this exigency, proper persons were appointed by the commissioners to go from house to house to collect arms, blankets, and whatever could be made available for the service, and forward them to the commissioners.

In July, 1780, a requisition was made upon Berks to furnish, monthly, six hundred barrels of flour, six hundred tons of forage, two hundred horses, and twenty wagons.

The last order from the Council of Safety was issued September 11, 1781, for three classes of the militia of Berks county. This, as well as the several previous requisitions, both for men and munitions of war, as well as for supplies for subsistence, were promptly complied with.

During the entire period of the Revolutionary struggle, from 1775 to 1783, Pennsylvania furnished 29,555 "effective men." Of these, 7,357 were militia, and 22,198 were regular Continental troops. Of this number Berks county furnished its full quota.

In the Whiskey Insurrection of 1794, the town of Reading furnished a company of volunteers to aid in subduing the malcontents in the west.

In the war of 1812-14, Berks county furnished two full regiments of militia and volunteers, which constituted the Second Brigade Pennsylvania Militia, under command of General John Addams, of Reading. Jeremiah Shappell and John Lotz were Colonels of the First and Second regiments respectively. The captains of the several companies were: George Zieber, Jacob Marshall, Thomas Moore, John Manger, George Marx, George Ritter, Jonathan Jones, Henry Willotz, John May, John Christian, Gabriel Old, Daniel De B. Keim, and William Hain. These troops marched to the defence of Baltimore in the fall of 1814, when that city was threatened by the British, and remained in camp there until the conclusion of peace.

When war was declared between the United States and Mexico (1846) three companies of volunteers were recruited in Reading and the vicinity, and tendered their services to the government. Only one of them was accepted, the Reading Artillerists, Captain Thomas S. Leoser, which became Company A of



the Second Pennsylvania regiment, and did gallant service under General Scott in all the engagements from Vera Cruz to the capture of the city of Mexico.

In the late war of the rebellion Berks county attested her devotion to the cause of the Union by sending into the field forty-eight full companies of volunteers, who served in various regiments, chiefly in the Army of the Potomac, and many of these gallant men, officers and privates, yielded up their lives a willing sacrifice upon the altar of their country. In every sanguinary engagement of the campaign their names were found in the list of killed, wounded, and prisoners. The future historian will do justice to their memories. The drafts of 1863, which were obnoxious to the people of many districts and resisted in some, met with no obstacles to their enforcement here, and two full regiments of drafted men were obtained, who willingly submitted to the decrees of war, and faithfully served out the term for which they were recruited. It deserves to be noted here that the Ringgold Light Artillery of Reading, Captain James McKnight, was the first company that reported at Harrisburg in response to President Lincoln's proclamation of April 15, 1861, calling for 75,000 men, and was one of the five Pennsylvania companies that first arrived at Washington for the defence of the Capital.

The territorial subdivisions of Berks consist of the city of Reading, eight boroughs and forty-one townships. The following table gives the date of formation, population, and valuation of taxable property of each :

DISTRICTS.	Date of Formation.	Population 1870.	Valuation	DISTRICTS.	Date of Formation.	Population 1870.	Valuation
Albany,	1752	1,510	\$1,048,365	Jefferson,	1851	1,133	858,405
Alsace,	1752	1,294	882,273	Kutztown (bor.),	1815	1,045	572,643
Amity,	1752	1,646	1,465,158	Longswamp,	1759	2,910	1,310,366
Bern,	1752	2,124	1,501,092	Maiden Creek,	1752	1,615	1,803,966
Bern, Upper,	1821	2,008	1,774,227	Marion,	1843	1,440	1,641,957
Bernville (bor.),	1850	457	220,053	Maxatawny,	1752	2,531	2,863,344
Bethel,	1752	2,285	1,898,955	Muhlenberg,	1850	1,547	1,626,228
Birdsboro (bor.),	1872	*1,000	660,066	Oley,	1752	1,986	2,875,161
Boyertown (bor.),	1866	690	602,619	Ontelanee,	1850	1,359	1,382,259
Brecknock,	1752	813	534,990	Penn,	1841	1,515	1,243,998
Caernarvon,	1752	927	797,125	Perry,	1849	1,680	1,282,085
Centre,	1842	1,529	1,405,590	Pike,	1813	925	480,177
Colebrookdale,	1752	1,660	1,107,981	Reading,	1783	33,930	34,700,000
Cumru,	1752	2,573	1,785,877	Richmond,	1752	2,874	2,067,956
District,	1759	724	503,358	Robeson,	1752	2,458	1,260,537
Dougllass,	1752	1,072	813,555	Rockland,	1759	1,451	967,170
Earl,	1781	1,022	516,135	Ruscomb Manor,	1759	1,408	682,974
Exeter,	1752	2,239	2,076,834	Spring,	1850	2,253	2,217,398
Fleetwood (bor.),	1873	*600	326,871	Topton (bor.),	1876	*400	—
Greenwich,	1759	2,151	1,462,620	Tulpehocken,	1752	2,013	1,431,669
Hamburg (bor.),	1803	1,590	775,106	Tulpehocken, U.,	1820	1,196	845,865
Heidelberg,	1752	1,193	1,601,625	Union,	1752	2,165	1,169,625
Heidelberg, Lo'r,	1842	2,480	2,302,926	Washington,	1833	1,609	1,483,221
Heidelberg, N'th,	1842	979	772,660	Windsor,	1759	1,211	683,094
Hereford,	1752	1,260	1,277,904	Womelsdorf (bo.),	1837	1,031	531,699

\* Estimated population, 1876.

HAMBURG was settled as early as 1720, by emigrants from the free State of



Hamburg, Germany, and hence when incorporated as a borough, it was appropriately so named. It is beautifully situated on the east bank of the Schuylkill river, sixteen miles north-east of Reading, and has become one of the principal stations on the Philadelphia and Reading railroad between Reading and Pottsville. The projected South Mountain railroad will span the Schuylkill at this point, and run through the northern portion of the town. It has considerable trade and manufactures, and contains many fine buildings, including five churches and three large school houses.

KUTZTOWN was settled by Germans about the year 1733. It is situated on the old post road between Reading and Easton, seventeen miles north-east of Reading. It is now connected with the East Pennsylvania branch of the Philadelphia and Reading railroad at Topton station, by a branch of the (uncompleted) Allentown railroad. Since 1860 Kutztown has increased rapidly in population and business. It is now the most flourishing borough in the county. The Keystone State normal school is located upon a commanding site overlooking the town, and is one of the finest educational institutions in the country. It consists of a central building of simple, but imposing, architectural proportions, crowned with a tower and flanked by wings, the whole presenting a front of two hundred and forty feet. The surrounding grounds have been beautifully improved with parterres of grass and shrubbery, with walks shaded by numerous trees. The main building was originally the "Maxatawny seminary," which was enlarged to its present dimensions during the years 1865-'66. September 13, 1866, the school was officially recognized as the State Normal School of the Third District of Pennsylvania. It has boarding accommodations for three hundred, and school accommodations for four hundred, students. The number of students enrolled in the catalogue of 1875 was five hundred and sixteen, of whom four hundred and seventy-one were males. The whole cost of the buildings and grounds was about \$85,000.

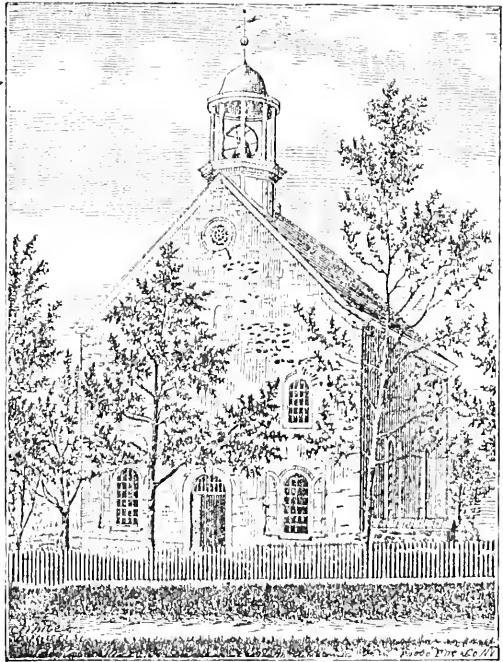
WOMELSDORF was settled in 1723, by some of the German families who had originally found homes in Schoharie county, New York, but were obliged to surrender their lands there in consequence of defective titles. It was laid out as a town by John Wommelsdorf, from whom it derived its name. It is situated near the Tulpehocken creek, on the Berks and Dauphin turnpike road, fourteen miles west of Reading. Conrad Weiser settled near Womelsdorf in 1729, and his remains were interred there in the family burying-ground, which is still preserved intact as a venerated spot. Up to the date of its incorporation as a borough, Womelsdorf was included in Heidelberg township. The Bethany Orphans' Home, founded by the Reformed church, is situated in a beautiful grove of eighty-eight acres of land, near Womelsdorf station on the Lebanon Valley branch of the Philadelphia and Reading railroad, about half a mile south of the borough. The building is large and commodious, and is abundantly supplied with the purest water from the South Mountain spring. Previous to the purchase of the property for the Home, in 1868, it was known as "Manderbach's Springs," and was much frequented by strangers as a summer resort. There is a tradition among the inhabitants of Womelsdorf that Washington tarried there over night, in October, 1794, on his way to take command of the troops who had rendezvoused at Carlisle to march to suppress the Whiskey Insurrection in



Western Pennsylvania, and that, on this occasion, accompanied by General Joseph Hiester and other persons of note, he visited the grave of Conrad Weiser.

BIRDSBORO, formerly included in Robeson township, is a flourishing manufacturing town on the Schuylkill, eight miles south-east of Reading. It is an important station on the main line of the Philadelphia and Reading railroad, and the Wilmington and Reading railroad. The extensive iron works of Messrs. E. & G. Brooke, consisting of furnaces, rolling mill, and nail factory, are situated here, and make it the centre of a large trade. It has several fine churches and many elegant private residences.

BOYERTOWN, set off from Colebrookdale township, is situated on the Colebrookdale railroad, about eight miles from Pottstown, where the latter connects with the Philadelphia and Reading road. Its inhabitants are principally interested in the mining of iron ore, large deposits of rich magnetic ore lying in the immediate vicinity, some of the veins of which extend under a portion of the ground on which the town has been built. The Colebrookdale iron works, two miles distant, are engaged extensively in the manufacture of castings of various kinds, principally wagon-boxes and sad-irons. Boyertown contains two large academies and boarding schools, and is a favorite summer resort for Philadelphians.



THE OLD HAIN'S CHURCH, NEAR WERNERSVILLE.

(From a Photograph by Leaman & Lee, Reading.)

FLEETWOOD, set off from Richmond township, is a station on the East Pennsylvania branch of the Reading railroad, eleven miles east of Reading, and since the completion of that road in 1858, has grown into a thriving manufacturing town.

BERNVILLE is situated on the Union canal, fourteen miles north-west from Reading. It has an industrious population, and several manufacturing establishments of note. The South Mountain railroad, now in process of construction, will pass through the borough, which will give a new impetus to the business of the vicinity.

TOPPON, the youngest borough in the county, set off from Longswamp township, February 12, 1876, is situated eighteen miles north-east of Reading, on the East Pennsylvania railroad, at its junction with the Kutztown branch.





LEESPORT, on the Schuylkill river, and also a station on the Philadelphia and Reading railroad, nine miles north of Reading, is a flourishing village. A large anthracite furnace, owned by the Leesport Iron company, is in operation here.

MORGANTOWN, a village in Caernarvon township on the Conestoga turnpike road, thirteen miles south from Reading, was settled about 1740, by emigrants from North Wales, principally workers in iron, and is one of the few places in Berks county where the German language has never prevailed. It was named after its founder, Colonel Jacob Morgan, a distinguished soldier of the Revolutionary war, and is noted as the birthplace of many men who have become prominent in the public affairs of the country, among whom may be named the Hon. J. Glancy Jones, ex-Member of Congress and Minister to Austria, and the Hon. Hiester Clymer, ex-State Senator and now Member of Congress.

The first inhabitant of Caernarvon was David Jones, a Welsh iron-master, who purchased about one thousand acres of land in 1735, and was the first to successfully develop the iron industry of Pennsylvania. The mines now known as "Jones's Mine Holes," are upon a portion of the original purchase of this pioneer, and for many years were a source of wealth to him and his descendants. An old mansion is still standing on the turnpike, two miles from Morgantown, which was built in 1752 by his son, Jonathan Jones, who afterwards had a colonel's commission in the Revolutionary army. These were the ancestors of the Hon. J. Glancy Jones.

VIRGINSVILLE, hitherto an obscure village in Richmond township, four miles from Kutztown, has become a place of note since the discovery, in 1871, of a remarkable natural curiosity now known as the "Crystal Cave." This subterranean wonder was disclosed by some men engaged in quarrying stone, and is regarded with admiration by all who have examined it. The cave is of vast dimensions, and crystal formations of every shape and color are found within its recesses. Chief among these is a splendid wing-shaped brace of pendants hanging from a lofty projection, and most appropriately named the "Angel's Wings." A large hotel has been built near the cave, and since the village has become a railroad station by the completion of the Berks and Lehigh road, numerous strangers and parties of pleasure visit the place during the summer season.

The whole territory of Berks county is dotted with numerous villages, beautiful in situation, thriving in business, and delightful as rural retreats; but it is the province of the gazetteer rather than the historian to describe them.

CUMRU township is entitled to notice under this head, as being the seat of the county almshouse and hospital buildings, upon a large and highly cultivated farm of over five hundred acres, which was formerly the property of Governor Thomas Mifflin, and where he resided during his intervals of retirement from the public duties of his eventful life. The new hospital for the insane, completed in 1875, is a large and commodious structure, in which all the modern appliances for the comfort and relief of this afflicted class have been introduced. An average of five hundred inmates are subsisted here, mainly from the products of the farm. It is easily accessible from the city, from which it is three miles distant, over an excellent macadamized road.

READING, the seat of justice of Berks county, was named after the ancient



borough of Reading and market-town of Berkshire in England, which it is said to resemble in some of its geographical environs. It was laid out in the fall of 1748, by the agents of Richard and Thomas Penn, then Proprietaries of the Province of Pennsylvania. Settlers were invited to it "as a *new town* of great natural advantages of location, and destined to become a prosperous place." In 1752, when the county of Berks was erected, and Reading was made the capital, it contained 130 dwelling houses, 106 families, and 378 inhabitants. The original settlers were principally Germans, who had emigrated from Wirtemberg and the Palatinate, although a few Friends who settled here under the patronage of the Penns had control of the government prior to the Revolution. The Germans, however, being the more numerous, gave character to the town both in language and customs. For many years the German tongue was almost exclusively spoken, and it is still used in social intercourse and religious worship by a considerable portion of the present population. Reading was incorporated as a borough in 1783, and as a city in 1847. It is beautifully situated on the eastern bank of the Schuylkill river, fifty-two miles east (fifty-four by railroad) of Harrisburg, and fifty-two miles north-west (fifty eight by railroad) of Philadelphia. It is built upon a plain sloping gently from Penn's Mount, an eminence on the eastern side, to the river, which gives it great natural facilities for drainage. The streets are wide and well graded, and generally intersect each other at right angles, and form in their course almost exact indices of the cardinal points of the compass. Reading is abundantly supplied with pure water from various mountain streams which have been from time to time conducted into reservoirs on Penn's Mount, and thence distributed throughout the city. The first spring water was introduced by the Reading water company, a private corporation, in 1822, whose property and franchises were purchased by the city in 1865, for the sum of \$300,000, and since then they have been under the supervision of a board of four commissioners elected at stated terms by the city councils. The Reading gas company was chartered in 1848. The works are situated on the Schuylkill canal, at the foot of Fifth street.

The present boundaries of Reading comprise an area of about four thousand acres, extending three and one-tenth miles north and south, and two and four-tenths miles east and west. Its municipal subdivisions consist of eleven wards, nearly equal in territorial extent and population, each of which elects one member of the select council for a term of three years, and four members of common council (or more, according to the ratio of taxable inhabitants) for a term of two years. The mayor is elected biennially, and has the appointment of the police force of the city, which now consists of a chief, one lieutenant, two sergeants, and thirty-five patrolmen, subject to confirmation by the select council. All laws and ordinances of councils must have the approval of the mayor.

Reading has an efficient volunteer fire department, consisting of ten companies—seven steam-engines, two hook-and-ladder, and one hose company—which are mainly supported by appropriations from the city treasury, at an average annual cost of \$17,000. The councils have general control of the property and apparatus of the companies; and their immediate direction, when in service, is committed to a chief engineer and two assistants, who are elected annually by



the Firemen's Union, an incorporated body composed of delegates representing the several companies composing the department. The fire-alarm telegraph, adopted 1875, has proved of incalculable service in saving the city from destructive conflagrations, by the promptness with which the discovery of fires is signaled, and the exact indication of the locality where the services of the firemen are needed.

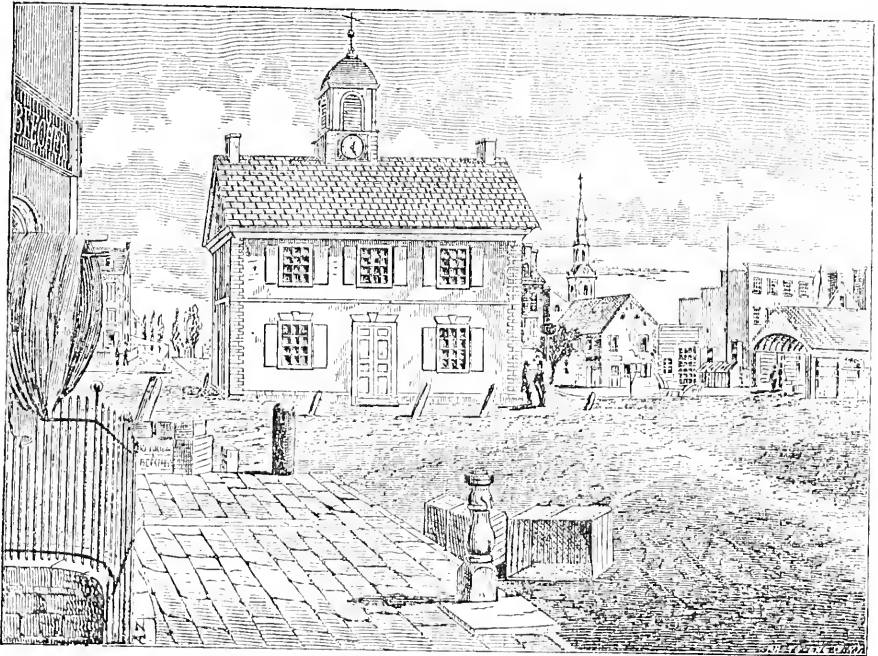
Reading was among the first districts in the Commonwealth to accept the provisions of the Common School law of 1834, and although the progress of the new system of education was at first slow, it gradually grew into favor, until the public schools of Reading attained to a rank entitling them to be classed among the best in the State. The city now constitutes an independent school district, under special laws, and is governed by a board of controllers, composed of four members from each ward. The schools consist of a high school, in charge of a principal and eight assistants, seven grammar schools, six intermediate schools, thirteen secondary schools, and forty primaries. A corps of one hundred and thirty-two teachers are required to conduct these schools—all females except the principal of the high school and four of his assistants. The general supervision of the schools is committed to a city superintendent, elected annually by the board of controllers. Number of school-houses in 1876, twenty-two. Pupils of all grades in attendance, 7,000.

Prior to 1830, the compilers of the gazetteers found nothing worthy of remark in relation to Reading, except that many of its inhabitants were engaged in the manufacture of wool hats. The hat manufacture still constitutes a branch of its productive industry, but it has been long since exceeded by other manufacturing industries, chief among which are the various products of iron—although cotton and woolen goods, boots and shoes, agricultural implements, furniture, leather, bricks, carriages, and indeed almost every article that ministers to the necessity or convenience of man, are produced here for the supply of home and distant markets. The principal workshops of the Philadelphia and Reading railroad company are established here, consisting of forges, rolling mills, foundries, locomotive works, car shops, and others, which give employment to about three thousand laborers and skilled mechanics.

The first public buildings erected in Reading were the court house (1762), the jail (1770), and the State house (1793). The court house stood in the open square, at the intersection of Penn and Fifth streets, which was then the geographical centre of the town. It was a small two-story structure of rubble work, painted red, with nothing pretending to ornament, if we may except a diminutive belfry which contained a small bell and the town clock, the dials of which were never known within the memory of the oldest inhabitant to mark the hours correctly. There was a tradition among the "old wives," that the clock was bewitched, and that no human skill ever could make it go right. Whatever might have been the cause, the fact was so. The old court house was demolished in 1841, having been superseded in 1840 by the completion of the present court house, a large and elegant structure, composed in the Ionic order of Grecian architecture, with basement and portico of sandstone, and a cupola twenty-four feet in diameter at the base, and eighty-four feet in height above the roof. This building was enlarged a few years ago by an addition to the rear, and



now contains two spacious court rooms, commodious offices for the several county officers, a large law library room, jury rooms, vaults, etc. The old jail, a long, low, heavy two-story stone structure, built for durability, certainly if not for ornament, is still standing on the north-east corner of Fifth and Washington streets, with very little alteration in its original appearance, and is occupied for business purposes. If not disturbed by the onward march of improvement, it bids fair to endure for another century. The new county prison, designed and erected in 1846 by the celebrated architect, John Haviland, stands on a commanding site on the south-western slope of Penn's Mount, at the junction of Penn street and Perkiomen avenue. It is built of red sandstone, in the castellated



THE PROVINCIAL COURT HOUSE AT READING.

Erected in 1762, Demolished in 1844.

[From a Drawing by F. A. Holtzwarf, 1832.]

Gothic style, and is a conspicuous ornament of the city, if, indeed, a penal institution can be viewed in an ornamental light. The State house, which, prior to 1840, was occupied by the public offices of the county, and as a town hall, was a plain but substantial two-story brick building, on the north-east corner of Penn and Fifth streets. It was converted into places of business after ceasing to be used for public purposes, and was destroyed by fire, January, 1872.

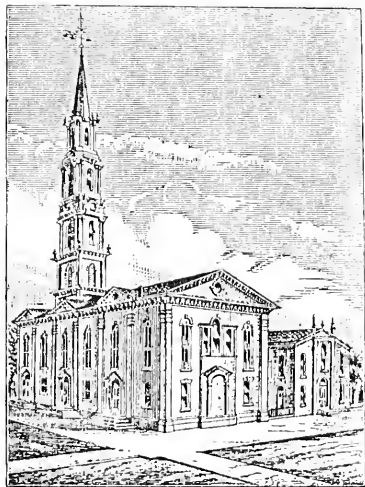
Reading contains many other large and elegant public edifices and private mansions, which give it the appearance of a metropolitan city. Among the former are the Academy of Music, Grand Opera House, market houses, the Keystone Hall, Library Hall, City Hall, Masonic Temple, now in course of erection; St. Joseph's Orphan Asylum, under the charge of the Roman Catholic Sisters





of Charity, the diocesan school of the Protestant Episcopal church, parochial school of St. Paul's Roman Catholic church, and others. The new passenger depot of the Philadelphia and Reading railroad company, in the northern section of the city, where the several branches of this great corporation connect with its main line, is, in convenience of arrangement, architectural taste, eligible location, and beautiful park-like surroundings, one of the most complete structures of the kind in the United States. It has been truly denominated "the pride of the city and the admiration of all travelers."

One of the few houses of ante-revolutionary date, which still stands as a monument of the colonial era of Reading, is the two-story stone building on the north-east corner of the public square at Fifth and Penn streets, now occupied by the Farmers' National Bank. It was erected in 1764, and was originally kept



TRINITY LUTHERAN CHURCH.

as a public-house or tavern (the "hotel" is an institution of later times). Tradition says that Washington was entertained here when on his way to join the troops which had been called out to suppress the Whiskey Insurrection in 1794, and this incident has been so well authenticated that it may be set down as a fact. The building has undergone some alterations and improvements, but is well preserved in nearly its primitive form.

The Friends were the first to make provision for religious instruction in Reading. In 1750 they erected a meeting-house and school-house, plain log structures, on a lot set apart for the purpose in the locality now known as the corner of Washington and Ash streets. These relics of the past century have long since disappeared, and the present generation knows nothing of their

existence, except from the photographs of them which have been fortunately preserved. The next house of religious worship was the German Reformed church, erected about 1762, on the site of the present large and beautiful First Reformed church on Washington street, above Sixth. The Lutheran "Church of the Trinity," on the north-west corner of Washington and Sixth streets, was erected in 1791, and, with the exception of the graceful tapering spire which rises from the tower on the western gable-end to the height of two hundred and one feet six inches, and various improvements in the interior arrangements, stands to-day almost as it stood in its original form. The Roman Catholics built a chapel here in 1791, on the east side of Seventh street, between Franklin and Chestnut, which was occupied for worship until the year 1846, when St. Peter's church, on South-Fifth street, was erected. Up to the year 1824, when the Presbyterian church was organized, the religious services of the churches were conducted exclusively in the German language. The English portion of the inhabitants, whose number was then small, assembled on every alternate Sunday, in the Reading academy,



which stood on the south-west corner of Seventh and Chestnut streets (now occupied by one of the railroad machine shops), where the Rev. John F. Grier, D.D., principal of the academy, ministered to them in their own tongue. The Episcopal church, which occupied the site of the present Christ cathedral, was erected in 1826. The Methodists, although existing as a society previous to that date, erected their first church in 1828; the Baptists about the same period; and the Universalists in 1830. Reading now contains more than thirty church edifices, of which five are Lutheran, five Reformed, four Methodist, three Presbyterian, two Protestant Episcopal, two Roman Catholic, two Baptist, and others representing the various religious denominations in the United States.

The Charles Evans cemetery, founded in 1846 by a munificent donation of land and money from the late Charles Evans, Esq., long a distinguished member of the Berks county bar, is beautifully situated on an eminence in the northern suburb of Reading. It is adorned with an imposing front and gateway on Centre avenue, of dark sandstone, in the pointed Gothic style, and a chapel of red freestone in the same style, designed and constructed



THE CEMETERY GATE AT READING.

[From a Photograph by Saylor, Reading.]

by the late John M. Gries, of Philadelphia (a major in the Union army, killed at the battle of Fair Oaks), which is universally admired as one of the purest gems of Gothic architecture.

In 1810, according to the first official census of record, Reading had a population of 3,462. During the thirty years following, its increase was very gradual, and the census of 1840 reported the number of its inhabitants at 8,392. But from that time onward it took a new departure, and the enumeration of 1850 developed the fact that it had nearly doubled its population within the preceding decade. In 1850, the little rural borough had expanded into the prosperous city of 15,743 inhabitants. Thus, in just one century from the date of the foundation of the town, the prediction of the Penns that it was "destined to become a prosperous place," was fully verified. By the census of 1870, the population was enumerated at 33,930, which may be safely estimated to have increased by this time (1876) to 40,000. To predict the future of Reading is beyond the power of human foreknowledge. Notwithstanding the prevailing depression of its manufacturing industries, resulting from the universal financial panic of 1873, the destiny of this city is assured, and should it increase in the same ratio as it has advanced in the past, a decennial addition of fifty per centum will give it a population of not less than 250,000 fifty years hence.





HORSE SHOE CURVE, NEAR KITTANNING POINT, ON THE PENNSYLVANIA RAILROAD.



## BLAIR COUNTY.

BY A. K. BELL, D.D., HOLLIDAYSBURG.

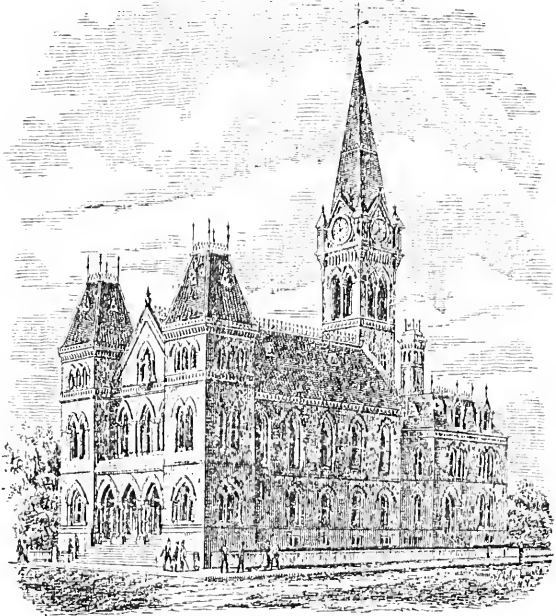


BLAIR COUNTY was formed from parts of Huntingdon and Bedford, by an Act of Assembly, approved the 26th day of February, 1846. The act declares that on and after the fourth Monday of July, 1846, the territory within the townships of North Woodberry and Greenfield, in the county of Bedford, and the territory within the townships of Allegheny, Antis, Snyder, Tyrone, Frankstown, Blair, Huston, Woodberry, and a portion of Morris, in the county of Huntingdon, should constitute a new county, to be known as BLAIR County.

The county takes its name from John Blair, or rather John Blair, Jun., whose home was some four miles west of Hollidaysburg, on the Huntingdon, Cambria, and Indiana turnpike, formerly known as the "Northern pike." He was in his day a man of mark, foremost in every public enterprise, and well deserved the honor thus conferred upon him. Hollidaysburg was made, from the beginning, the county seat.

The general surface of the county is mountainous. Bounded on the west by Cambria, it takes in the eastern slope of the Allegheny mountains. It has Clearfield and Centre counties on the north, Huntingdon on the east, and Bedford on the south. It has within its borders, Brush, Canoe, Dunning's, Short, Cove, and Lock mountains, more or less, one and the same mountains, and all running north and south. These mountains are all rich in minerals, while the valleys are well watered and fertile.

Iron is the principal manufacture of the county. It is an old iron region. Formerly there were a large number of small charcoal furnaces and forges. Prior



BLAIR COUNTY COURT HOUSE.  
(From the Design of the Architect, David S. Gendell.)





to the building of the canal, the iron was hauled in wagons to Pittsburgh, at a cost of some thirty dollars per ton. Most of the old furnaces and forges are no longer worked, giving place to larger furnaces, worked with coke, to rolling mills, and nail factories. The present number of furnaces in use is ten, capable of producing one thousand tons of metal per week, with four rolling mills and two nail factories. The furnaces are known, as Etna in Catharine township, Juniata at Williamsburg, Springfield in Woodberry, Rodman in Taylor, Gap or Martha in Freedom, Frankstown at Frankstown, Number One and Number Two in Hollidaysburg, Allegheny and Bennington in Allegheny. Hollidaysburg has two rolling mills, and two nail factories; Duncansville, a rolling mill and nail factory; and Logan township, a rolling mill. The iron ore of the county, though not specially rich, is abundant and of a superior quality; large quantities are shipped elsewhere.

The agricultural products of the county are considerable and varied, yet not sufficient for the population, which in 1870 was 33,051, and is now, 1876, perhaps 44,000. The farmers are intelligent, enterprising, and well to do. Perhaps in all the State there is not a finer farming neighborhood or better farms than are found in Morrison's Cove and Sinking Spring Valley.

The great Pennsylvania railroad passes through the county, entering its borders some three miles east of Tyrone; and to this road the county owes very largely its prosperity. A branch road leaves the main line at Altoona, running to Hollidaysburg, Newry, Williamsburg, Martinsburg, and Henrietta. This branch is among the most profitable belonging to this great corporation, doing a heavy freight and passenger business. At Bell's Mills, a narrow gauge road connects with the main line, extending some seven miles to Lloydsville, in Cambria county. This is among the first, if not the first, narrow gauge roads in the country, and is a complete success. The scenery along this road is wild beyond description, far superior in every respect to that along the main line from Altoona to Gallitzin. Other branch roads leave the main line at Tyrone, running to Clearfield and Lock Haven. Indeed, "Little Blair" is almost a railroad county, with Altoona, the chief of railroad towns, in her very centre.

The usual Indian troubles, incident to the first settlement of the Juniata valley, marked the early history of what is now Blair county. The stories pertaining thereto have been written and re-written. No doubt the early settlers endured great hardships and privations. The Indians were savage, cruel, and treacherous, sparing neither women nor children. From one standpoint we can but regard them, and rightly, as savages. And yet we must not forget the circumstances surrounding them, and mourn that no one lives to tell the story of their wrongs. That they were wronged and cheated no one doubts; and could we have the story of these wrongs, we might feel that if they did inhuman deeds, they had, at the hands of the whites, great provocations.

The politics of Blair county from its organization have been moderate Republicanism, while many of the most worthy citizens have been and are of Democratic tendencies. Neither party, as a general rule, are able to carry a bad man into office. Good and true men have usually filled the county offices, and fill them this centennial year. Some townships in the county have not for years had a house licensed to sell intoxicating drinks. The common schools, though



not all they should be, are, nevertheless, cherished by the people—their joy and their pride.

Originally, the entire Juniata valley was settled largely by Scotch-Irish Presbyterians, and after them the Lutherans. Both denominations have still a strong hold throughout the valley. Methodists, Baptists, and others, have come in since the first settlements, and have a habitation and a home. In Blair county the Presbyterians would seem to lead in numbers, influence, and wealth. The Lutherans and Methodists are both numerous and active, while the Baptists, the youngest of the leading denominations, are not behind in every good word and work. All in all, we claim for "Little Blair" in her mountain home, an



DISTANT VIEW OF THE ALLEGHENIES.

intelligent, enterprising, and upright citizenship, loyal to themselves, the State, and the Union. During the war for the Union, they may have differed as to measures, but treason found no home in Blair county. The blood of her first-born helped to fill the baptism of the Nation's second baptism.

Sinking Spring valley is noted as the place from whence the Government received lead in the early stages of the Revolutionary war. The mines were most likely known to the French as long ago as 1750. The Indians of this region, after they had obtained fire-arms, could always secure abundance of lead, but from whence was long a secret. General Daniel Roberdeau, member of Congress from Pennsylvania, was appointed in 1778, to proceed to the valley and superintend the mines. They were worked perhaps until the fall of 1779, or until a supply was received through the French.

The Arch Spring and Cave in this valley are among the greatest curiosities to be met with anywhere. The spring comes forth from an opening, arched over by nature, and with a sufficient supply of water to drive a large grist-mill. A



little below the mill the spring disappears; coming again to the surface, it runs some distance and enters a cave, passing under Cave mountain, it flows into the Juniata at Water Street. The locality thus named by the early settlers is frequently alluded to in the Provincial records.

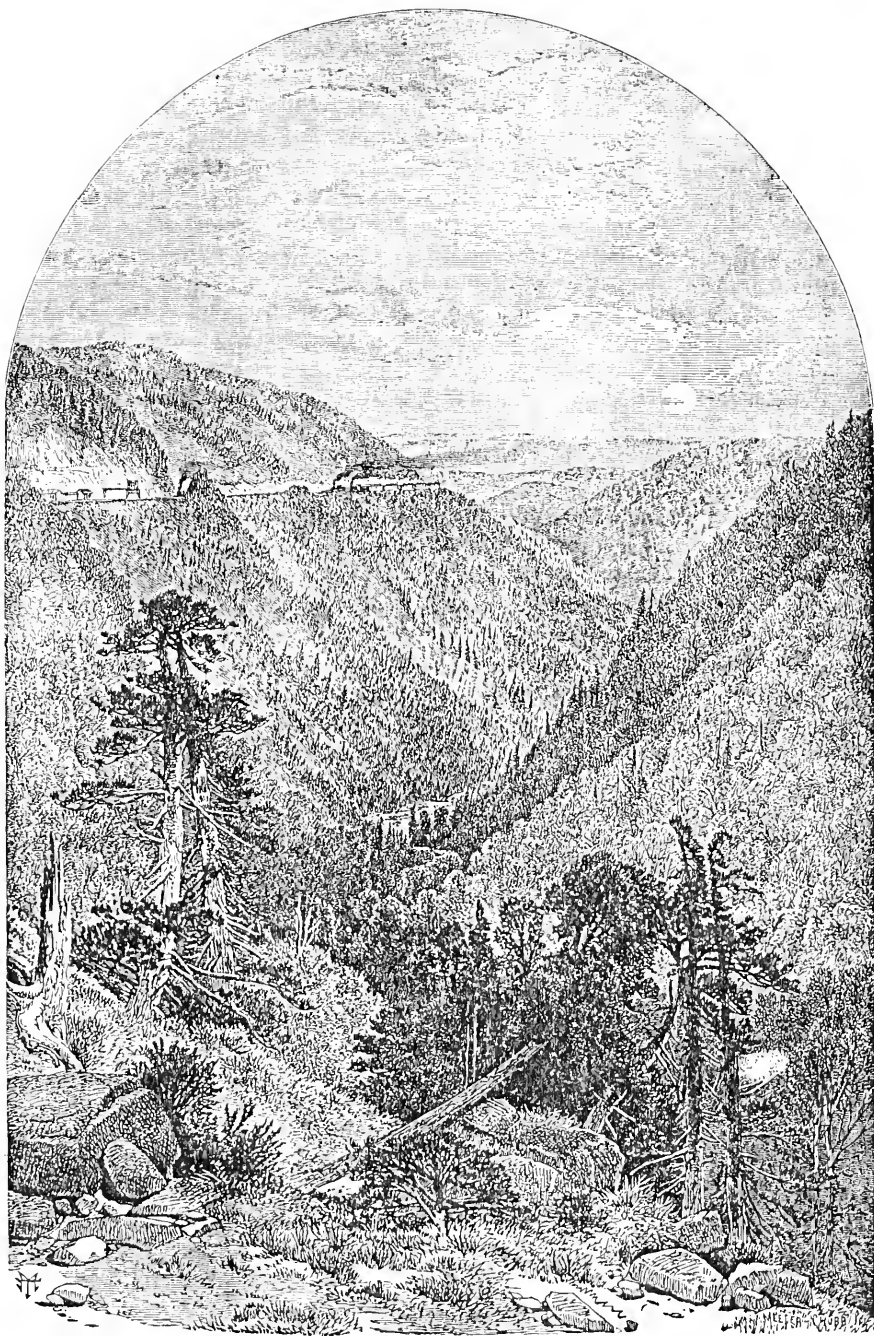
Logan's valley, a valley extending from Tyrone to Altoona, takes its name from Captain Logan (not the Mingo), an Indian chief of the Delaware tribe who, for several years, resided in the locality. One of his homes was at the big spring adjoining Tyrone, and the other at the spring on the farm of David Henshy, Esq., in Antis township. Logan had been deposed by his tribe on account of the loss of an eye, before coming to the Juniata valley. The springs still bear the name of Logan, and are in themselves very fine. The entire valley has felt the quickening influence of the railroad, and do honor to the old Indian chief, who was a true friend of the white man.

Scotch and Canoe valleys are parts of Frankstown and Catharine townships, and are very fertile. Scotch valley is somewhat noted as one of the earliest settlements in the county, and as the home of the Moore family, many of the descendants still residing there. The Moores came from Scotland—the father, Samuel Moore, seven sons, and two daughters. They stopped for a time in Kishacoquillas valley, and then came to Scotch valley, five miles beyond the nearest habitation. This was in 1768. Some time after they were joined by the Irwins, Crawfords, Fraziers, Bells, Stewarts, and others, all Scotchmen. Their descendants are in all the region round about and in parts beyond.

We may not forget as among the valleys of Blair county, its Morrison's cove, but another name for valley. You enter it either at Williamsburg or through the gap at Roaring Spring, itself a curiosity, and the largest spring in the county. Around it, within a few years, a thriving village has sprung up, having a fine paper-mill, foundry, and several churches. And now, in the cove, and as you pass along, you are ready to ask, wherein is old Lancaster better than this before my eyes? Such farms, buildings, deposits of limestone and iron ore, are but seldom met. All in all, Morrison's cove has few equals, viewed from whatever standpoint you may take. In 1749 a few Scotch-Irish families settled in the cove, most of whom perished at the hands of the Indians. The entire cove was afterwards purchased by the Penns for £400, or \$2,000. In 1755 a colony of Dunkards, or German Baptists, settled in the cove, and many of their descendants are still there, retaining well-nigh the same simplicity which marked their fathers—"non-resistants—producers—non-consumers."

HOLLIDAYSBURG still remains the county seat, and for years it was the chief town in all this region. The town takes its name from William and Adam Holliday, who settled here in the year 1768. They were on their way West, but on reaching this point they decided to stop and settle. As Adam drove the first stake in the ground, he remarked to William: "Whoever is alive a hundred years hence will find here a considerable sized town," all of which has been realized. The town took its start with the building of the canal, it being the head of canal navigation east of the mountains. Here for years all goods going east and west were transhipped to boats and cars. The basin, in these days, presented a lively, busy scene. But all this has passed away. The basin has been filled up, and the boatman's horn is heard no more. Nevertheless, Holli-





SCENE AT ALLEGRIPPUS, ON THE PENNSYLVANIA RAILROAD.





daysburg remains a pleasant, prosperous town, with a population, embracing Gaysport and environs, of fully 5,000. The county buildings are among the best in the State, erected at a cost of some \$225,000. Hollidayburg has, moreover, six fine houses of worship—two Catholic, one Baptist, one Lutheran, one Methodist, and one Presbyterian; a superior female seminary, a large hall, and other public buildings. The iron works in the place give employment to a large number of hands, while the local trade is considerable.

ALTOONA is the metropolis of the county, a city of no mean pretensions, and as a railroad town, second to none in the Union. On the location of the Pennsylvania railroad in 1849, the present site, then a farm owned by David Robeson, Esq., was selected for the shops, offices, etc., of this young but now giant corporation. The company now occupy all of one hundred and twenty-two acres, and is still extending its improvements. The Logan House, the grand railroad hotel, is a model establishment. All the Pennsylvania railroad buildings are of the substantial kind, the machinery the very best, giving employment to thousands of men, and turning out such work as is seldom met with elsewhere. Some twelve church buildings speak well for the morals of the town, while the large and commodious school-houses assure the stranger the children are not forgotten. Altoona has three banks, one public hall, one daily and three weekly newspapers. Population in 1870, 10,610, increased in 1876 to perhaps 13,000. All in all, the "Mountain City" is the city of all this region.

TYRONE is another town, the outgrowth of the railroad, and laid out about the same time with Altoona. It is located some fourteen miles east of Altoona, at the mouth of Bald Eagle valley, and takes its name from an old iron works in the neighborhood, known as Tyrone Forges. The rapid growth of Tyrone is owing to two branch roads connecting with the main line at this point, the one running to the coal and lumber region of Clearfield county, the other connecting with the Philadelphia and Erie railroad at Lock Haven. A large coal and lumber trade is here brought upon the main line, making Tyrone station one of the most important between Philadelphia and Pittsburgh. The place has a good local trade, with a population in 1870 of 1,800; has eight churches, two public halls, two banks, three planing-mills, and a steam tannery. A new railroad from Tyrone to Lewisburg is in course of construction, which when completed will somewhat add to the importance of the "little city" among the hills, while it will open up a direct route to the anthracite coal regions.

WILLIAMSBURG, a village in the south-eastern part of the county, in Woodberry township, pleasantly located on the south branch of the Juniata. It was laid out in 1794, by a German named Jacob Ake. One of the finest springs of water to be met with anywhere flows through the town, furnishing water power for a grist-mill, furnace, and other machinery. Population some 900.

FRANKSTOWN, on the Juniata, two miles east of Hollidayburg, is perhaps the oldest village in all this region, having been originally an Indian town known as Assumepachla. Its present name is derived from an old German Indian trader, Stephen Franks, who made this place his home. The Indians remained here until 1755, when they went West, joined the French, and made war on Father Onas, or William Penn. They did so because the year previous the Penns, for a paltry sum, had bought the whole region of the Juniata from the Iroquois at



Albany, N. Y. Prior to the building of the canal, Frankstown was a place of some note on the route from Philadelphia to Pittsburgh; since then it has made but little progress. One of the Cambria iron company's furnaces is at this point, and gives employment to a goodly number of the residents.

MARTINSBURG is an old town, beautiful for situation, in Woodberry township, otherwise Morrison's Cove, and distant some twelve miles from Hollidaysburg, on the Hollidaysburg branch road. It contains several churches, a bank, a planing-mill, a high school, and a foundry. In the midst of one of the finest farming districts, it has considerable local trade.

NEWRY is another old town, situate in Blair township, some four miles west of Hollidaysburg. It has a railroad connecting with the Hollidaysburg branch at Y switches. Newry, prior to the building of the turnpike, was on the main road east and west. At present it has but little trade, yet, withal, it is a pleasant, quiet place, having for many years the only Roman Catholic church in the county.

ORGANIZATION OF TOWNSHIPS.—ALLEGHENY was, prior to the formation of Blair county, in 1846, a township of Huntingdon county. As it then existed, it joined Antis on the north. In 1852, Logan was formed out of Allegheny and Antis; hence, Allegheny is now bounded on the north by Logan, on the west by Cambria county, on the south by Blair and Juniata, and on the east by Frankstown.

ANTIS, like Allegheny, was a part of Huntingdon county. It is said the name is that of a somewhat noted Tory who resided here during the Revolutionary War. In 1852, the southern portion of the township was taken to form Logan. As Antis now stands, it is bounded on the north by Snyder, on the east by Tyrone, on the south by Logan, and on the west by Cambria county.

BLAIR came out from Huntingdon county, and surrounds Hollidaysburg, the county seat. It originally was taken from Allegheny and Frankstown, and as now organized is bounded on the north by Allegheny and Frankstown, on the east by Frankstown and Taylor, on the south by Freedom, and on the west by Allegheny.

CATHARINE was part of Morris in Huntingdon county, and became a township in 1846, by the organization of Blair county. It is bounded on the north and east by Huntingdon county, south by Woodberry, and west by Frankstown and Tyrone.

FRANKSTOWN was a township of Huntingdon county, until the formation of Blair county in 1846. Some changes have since been made in its boundaries, but none of any importance. As it now stands, is bounded on the north by Tyrone and Catharine, on the east by Woodberry and Huston, on the south by Taylor, and on the west by Blair, Allegheny, and Logan.

FREEDOM belonged originally to Bedford county, and as part of Greenfield First, in 1847, Juniata was formed out of Greenfield, and in 1857 Freedom was created out of Juniata. It has Greenfield on the south, Juniata on the west, Blair on the north, and Taylor on the east.

GREENFIELD, an old township of Bedford county, became part of Blair county in 1846. Since then both Freedom and Juniata have been taken from it. It is bounded on the south by Bedford county, on the west by Somerset county, on the north by Juniata and Freedom, and on the east by Taylor.



HUSTON was originally a township of Bedford county. It is bounded on the south by Bedford county, on the east by Huntingdon county, on the north by Woodberry, and on the west by Frankstown.

JUNIATA, taken from Greenfield and organized as a township in 1847. It has Cambria county on the West, Allegheny on the north, Freedom on the east, and Greenfield on the south.

LOGAN was formed in 1850 out of Allegheny and Antis, and lies around Altoona. It is bounded on the north by Antis, on the east by Tyrone and Frankstown, on the south by Allegheny, and on the west by Cambria county.

NORTH WOODBERRY originally belonged to Bedford county. It has Bedford county on the south, Taylor on the west, Huston on the north, Huntingdon county on the east.

SNYDER came from Huntingdon county, and is bounded on the north by Center county, on the east by Huntingdon county, on the south by Antis, and on the west by Cambria county. It has within it the borough of Tyrone.

TAYLOR was formed in 1855, out of North Woodberry and Huston. It has Bedford county on the south; Greenfield, Freedom, and Blair, on the west; Frankstown on the north, and North Woodberry on the east.

TYRONE an old township of Huntingdon county, and until incorporated into Blair county in 1846. It has Logan and Antis on the west, Snyder on the north, Catharine on the east, and Frankstown on the south.

WOODBERRY came from Huntingdon county, and has within it the town of Williamsburg. It is bounded on the south by Huston, west by Frankstown, north by Catharine, and on the east by Huntingdon county.

FIFTEEN townships in all, Allegheny, Antis, Blair, Catharine, Frankstown Snyder, Tyrone, and Woodberry, originally from Huntingdon county; Greenfield, Huston, North Woodberry, from Bedford county; and Freedom, Juniata, Logan, and Taylor, formed since the organization of Blair county, in 1846.

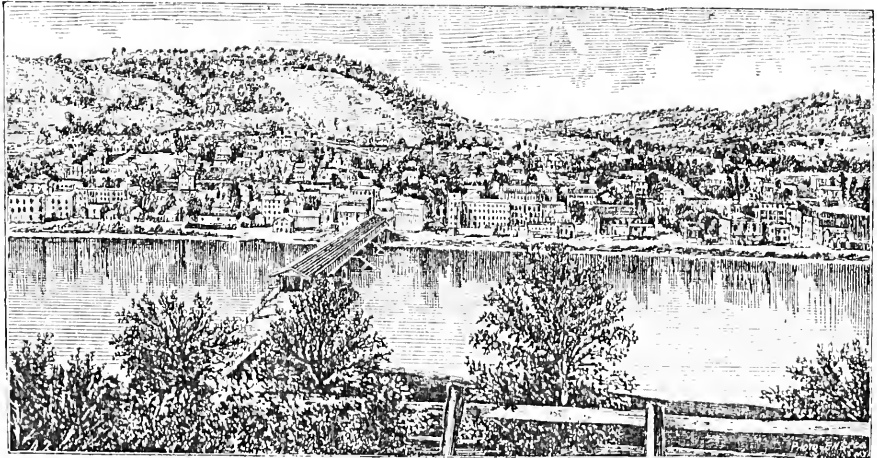


## BRADFORD COUNTY.

BY REV. DAVID CRAFT, WYALUSING.



THAT part of Pennsylvania now known as Bradford county, was formerly included in Northampton. At this time, however, it was the home of the red man, there being not more than two or three white families residing within the county limits at the formation of Northumberland in 1772. By the act of Assembly erecting the county of Luzerne, its boundaries were made to include nearly all of present Bradford, leaving a small triangle in the northwestern part of the county, whose base was about six miles on the State line, and its vertex at the southwestern angle of the county, which was subsequently included in Lycoming.



VIEW OF THE BOROUGH OF TOWANDA.

[From a Photograph by G. H. Wood, Towanda.]

For the purpose of legislating Colonel John Franklin out of the Assembly, to which the people of Luzerne persisted in sending him, and where his earnest and persevering advocacy of the claims of the Connecticut settlers rendered him exceedingly obnoxious to those holding Pennsylvania titles in his district, and to the Pennsylvania Landholders' Association, which exerted great influence in the Legislature, an act was passed April 2, 1804, setting off so much of Luzerne as lies north and west of a line run from the East Branch of the Susquehanna river, where it crosses the State line, thence southerly to the northeast corner of Claverack (one of the townships of the Susquehanna Company), thence by the northwest and southwest sides of Claverack to its southwest corner, which was near the present village of Monroeton, thence by a





line running due west to the line separating the two counties, and attaching it to Lycoming.

On the 21st of February, 1810, an act was passed to erect parts of Luzerne and Lycoming counties into separate county districts, in which the first section provided that "such parts of those counties included within the following lines, to wit: Beginning at the fortieth milestone standing on the north line of the State; thence running south to a point due east of the head of the Wyalusing Falls in the Susquehanna river; thence southwesterly to the nearest point in the Lycoming county line; thence in a direct line to the southeast corner of Tioga county, at the Beaver Dam, on Towanda creek; thence northerly along the east line of Tioga county to the eightieth milestone standing on the north line of the State; thence east along said line to the fortieth milestone, the place of beginning—be and is hereby erected into a separate county, to be henceforth called Ontario county, and the place of holding courts of justice in and for said county shall be fixed by three commissioners to be appointed by the Governor, at any place at a distance not exceeding seven miles from the centre of the county which may be most beneficial to and convenient for the same."

The Governor appointed Samuel Satterlee, Moses Coolbaugh, and Justus Gaylord, trustees of the new county, who employed Jonathan Stevens, Esq., then deputy surveyor for this district, to survey the bounds thereof.

By an act passed March 28, 1811, the trustees of the county of Ontario "are hereby authorized and required to establish a point east of the Slippery Rocks, (so called), at the head of Wyalusing Falls, in the river Susquehanna, for the southeast corner of Ontario county; from thence a line run west to the said Slippery Rocks; from thence a southwesterly course to the nearest point of Lycoming county, is hereby established as the southern boundary of the said county." The remaining lines were left unchanged, and form the present boundaries of the county.

On the 24th of March, 1812, an act was passed which provided for the election of county officers at the regular election of the next October, for organizing the county for judicial purposes, and for changing its name from Ontario to that of Bradford, in honor of William Bradford, formerly Attorney-General of the United States, and directed the courts to be held at the house of William Means, Esq., of Meansville, in Towanda township, until suitable county buildings should be erected.

Bradford was united with Tioga, Susquehanna, Wayne, and Luzerne counties, to form the Eleventh Judicial District. John Bamister Gibson, afterward one of the judges of the Supreme Court, was appointed president judge; John McKean and George Scott were his associates. The other county officers were, Abner C. Rockwell, sheriff; Charles F. Welles, prothonotary, clerk of the sessions and Oyer and Terminer, register and recorder, and clerk of the Orphans Court; William Myer, Justus Gaylord, Jr., and Joseph Kinney, commissioners; Henry Wilson, prosecuting attorney; John Horton, coroner; Harry Spalding, treasurer.

The venires were issued for a jury, and the whole machinery of the organization was put in motion January 18, 1813, the day fixed by law for the new county to go into operation. On this day the commissions of the several officers



were read, and the oaths administered with great pomp and ceremony. There was considerable strife in the neighborhoods around the geographical centre of the new county for the county seat, especially between Wysox, Monroeton, and Towanda, but in consideration of the donation of ample grounds for county buildings, the commissioners located the county seat at Meansville, as it was then called, and the new county commissioners were instructed to proceed with all diligence to erect suitable buildings for the accommodation of the county offices.

As the counties are now organized, Bradford is bounded on the east by Susquehanna, on the east and south by Wyoming, on the south by Sullivan and Lycoming, and on the west by Tioga. Its average length from east to west is a trifle less than forty miles, and its mean breadth from north to south about twenty-nine and one half miles, and includes within its boundary lines one thousand one hundred and seventy-four square miles, or seven hundred fifty-one thousand, three hundred and sixty acres, being in area the third county in the Commonwealth.

The north-east branch of the Susquehanna enters the county from the State of New York, between the fifty-sixth and fifty-seventh mile-stones, and, running about six and a half miles in a south-westerly direction, receives its principal affluent, the Tioga, which finally enters the county near the sixty-second mile stone. The peninsula between the two rivers has been called Tioga-Point from the first settlement of the country. From the junction, the river pursues, with many windings, a mean south-easterly course, and leaves the county at the north-western angle of Wyoming county. Besides these, the principal streams in the west are Seeley's, South, Bentley's, and Orent's creeks, flowing north into the Tioga; the Sugar creek, the Towanda, Durell's creek, and the Sugar run, which empty into the Susquehanna from the west. On the east are the Wappaseening, which runs north; Horn creek, the Wysox, and the Wyalusing, running west into the Susquehanna. These creeks, with their numerous branches, the waters of the Apolaccon in the north-east, of the Tuscarora in the south-east, and of the Loyal Sock in the south-west, and many smaller streams, make Bradford one of the best watered counties in the State.

The surface of the county is uneven, being broken by numerous ridges of high hills, whose general course is from the south-west to the north-east, with spurs running north, which make the water sheds of the streams flowing in that direction. East of the river are high table lands in Tuscarora, Pike, Herrick, Orwell, and Warren townships, which are excellent grazing lands and produce good crops of summer grains, but there are no peaks of any considerable height. In the west are Mt. Pisgah and Mt. Elizabeth, and near the south-eastern corner of the county are the Tyler and Round Top. The principal ranges are the Armenia mountains, in the western part of the county, and the Barclay mountains—the Burnett's hills which formed part of the boundary in the Indian purchase of 1768—between the main and Schraeder branches of the Towanda creek.

The Susquehanna, in its passage through the county, instead of following a natural valley, like most large rivers, breaks through successive ranges of hills, whose precipitous escarpments in some places tower hundreds of feet above the stream, so that on each side it is bordered with alternate sections of hills with



their intervening valleys, thus affording a pleasing variety of landscape to the traveler, and many views of picturesque beauty for the artist. This peculiarity of the Susquehanna valley, if valley it can be called, has produced a scenery which a celebrated Scotch essayist describes "beautiful as the gates of paradise," of almost world-wide reputation.

The flats along the river, usually at the mouths of the larger creeks, are rich bottoms, frequently intersected by a gravel ridge running parallel with the river, and were seats of Indian villages, who had made partial clearings for corn patches long before the country was known to the white man. Along the creeks are fertile alluvial flats of varying width, which, as the river is approached, are bounded by steep hill sides. On the higher lands the soil is heavier, sometimes clayey, but productive.

Agriculture is the chief employment of the people. The county is well adapted to grazing, especially in the northern and western portions of it, where butter is the chief production, for which the county is justly celebrated. Bradford county butter commands a ready sale and the highest price in any market to which it is sent. In some portions of the county considerable attention has been given, of late, to improved varieties of stock, both of horses, cattle, and sheep, and the stock now seen on many of the farms of the county will compare favorably with the finest cattle herds of the country.

Oats, corn, and buckwheat are the principal grains. Good crops of wheat are usually raised on the river and creek flats, but the amount is seldom sufficient for home consumption. Barley, millet, and hops have been grown in small crops, but the experiment has not as yet proved successful. Potatoes are largely cultivated, and many thousands of bushels are annually sent to the market. Within a few years past, hay has become an important article of export, and every season thousands of tons are sent to the coal-producing regions of the State.

The principal mineral productions are coal and flagging. The coal is found on the Barclay mountain, geologically the highest land in the county. It is of the semi-bituminous variety, and is peculiarly adapted to manufacturing, black-smithing, and locomotive uses. At present the mining is carried on by the Erie railway, Fall Creek, and Carbon Run companies. A railroad from the mines connects with the Pennsylvania and New York railroad, at Towanda, and brings several thousand tons annually to the market. Most of the flagging quarries are found along the creeks a short distance from the river. There are also some beds of building stone. These are of the blue-stone variety, easily worked, but enduring a great amount of wear and exposure. The quarrying and shipping of stone has of late become an important industry.

At Austinville, Columbia township, in the western part of the county, considerable quantities of iron ore are mined, which is claimed to be of a superior quality. Iron has been found in other parts of the county, but as yet no attempt has been made to bring it into market.

The whole of Bradford was originally covered with heavy forests, in some parts of pine and hemlock, in others of beech and maple. There were magnificent walnuts along the river; black ash, birch, and oak were frequently found in the forests. For many years the manufacture of lumber and shingles was largely



carried on. These were hauled to the river or larger creeks, rafted and floated down the river to the several markets below. Every spring the river would be thickly dotted with rafts of various kinds and sizes, bearing the fruits of the winter's work, running the hazard of being stranded or being crushed by some mismanagement, to find a market at Harrisburg, Middletown, Baltimore, or Philadelphia, when many times the proceeds would scarcely be sufficient to pay for the rafting and running. The first saw-mill built in the county was by Anthony Rummerfield, on the creek which bears his name, before the Revolutionary war. Since then, there has been a time when they could be counted by the thousand. With the disappearance of the forest, this branch of industry has correspondingly diminished, and the greater facilities of transportation furnished by railroads have made rafting a thing of comparatively rare occurrence. Except from the south-western part of the county, very little lumber is now sent to the market. The water power furnished by the creeks affords facilities for manufacturing of various kinds, but as yet, except for running of grist and saw-mills, it has remained unused. Within a few years past a variety of manufactures have been initiated, which will be noticed under the sketches of the towns where they are located.

When the white people first began to visit this county, Tioga—Diahoga, as it is more frequently written in the journals of the earlier travelers—was the "fore town" of the Iroquois, who at that time held all the Indian tribes of Pennsylvania and New Jersey in subjection, and assigned the Susquehanna valley to the Delawares, whose lands they were selling from time to time to the whites. Tioga was the southern gate to the Confederacy, through which, or by the Mohawk, all strangers must enter their territory or be treated as spies and enemies. Here was stationed a sachem, whose business it was to examine all who applied for admission into the Iroquois country, and whose decision upon all such requests was final. To this point all the great paths led, which were frequented by warriors, hunters, and travelers.

At the mouth of the Sugar creek, Oscului (meaning the *Pierce*) was also an old Indian town, second in importance to Tioga, standing at the junction of the path leading from the West Branch to the Susquehanna, with the great Warrior path down the river. It was a convenient resting place for travelers, and a rendezvous for hunting and war parties. At this place are the remains of what appears to be an ancient fortification, which from its construction and the relics found in it, would indicate that it was constructed by a people allied to the mound builders of the West, and point to an occupancy anterior to that of the Iroquois.

At Wyalusing was an ancient Indian town, traces of which were visible as late as 1750, called Gahontoto, inhabited by a people who were neither Delawares nor Iroquois, called by the latter Tehotitahsae, against whom the Cayugas made war and exterminated them, before the Indians knew the use of fire arms, when they fought with bows and arrows.

At Towanda and Wysox were at various times Indian settlements, but they do not, at least within historic times, seem to have been permanent places of abode. Subsequently Towanda was one of the national burying places for the Nanticokes, after their removal among the Iroquois.

In 1752, Papunhank, a Minsi chieftain of some importance, with about twenty





families, built at Wyalusing. Their houses for the most part were constructed of split logs, one end of which was set into the ground, and upon the other were placed poles which were covered with bark. The description given of this town by travelers would indicate that not only in the structure of their houses, but in the general character of the people, they were far in advance of most of the native settlements. Papunhank frequently visited Philadelphia, where he became acquainted with several Quakers, and acquired some knowledge of Christianity, and, at length, set himself up as a teacher to his people.

In the month of May, 1760, Christian Frederick Post, on his way with a message from the Governor of Pennsylvania to the great Council at Onondaga, stopped over night at the town, and at their request, gave them a sermon from the text, "Behold I bring you tidings of great joy," etc.—Luke ii. 8-11. This without doubt was the first gospel sermon preached in the county. In the meanwhile some other families had come into the town, among whom were Job Chillaway, who had at times acted as government interpreter, and Tom Curtis, both men of intelligence and influence.

Papunhank's people losing confidence in him as a religious teacher, on account of his own bad life, began to consult about taking measures for inviting a white teacher to settle among them. In their councils however, they were divided in opinion, one party being in favor of the Quakers, and the other of the Moravians, and so equal was the strength of the two parties that neither was disposed to yield to the other. Their differences were compromised by agreeing to accept the first teacher who came.

John Woolman, the prominent Quaker evangelist, having made the acquaintance of some of the Wyalusing Indians at Philadelphia, probably of Papunhank himself, after much deliberation, set out in company with Benjamin Parvin, to visit the town, in May, 1763, purposing, if he should be well received, to remain with them and teach them the gospel.

In the meanwhile, news of the awakened interest in religion at Wyalusing coming to the ears of David Zeisberger, the celebrated Moravian apostle to the Indians, he left Bethlehem on the 18th of May, passing Woolman on the mountain below Wilkes-Barre, where they dined together, reached Wyalusing on the 23d, two days before him. Above the Lackawanna, Zeisberger was met by Job Chillaway, who informed him of the conclusion of the council, and accompanied him to Papunhank's town. Here he was received as the divinely sent messenger, to teach them the great words of the Christian religion, and though wearied from the long journey, at once, that very day, set about preaching the gospel to his waiting and anxious hearers. Never had the great preacher a more attentive audience, and never did he speak "the great words" with more fervor and zeal.

Woolman, on his arrival, was kindly received, but was informed that, according to the decisions of their council, Zeisberger must be regarded as their accepted teacher. After remaining five days to assist in inaugurating the good work, and witnessing the kind reception of the gospel, he departed, with many prayers for the abundant success of the mission. This opportune arrival of Zeisberger was the occasion of founding one of the most important and success-



ful missions ever established among our North American Indians. On such apparently trifling events do important results turn.

Zeisberger being so well received, was appointed resident missionary at Wyalusing, by the Mission Board at Bethlehem, and with great success prosecuted his labors here and at Tawandaemenk, an Indian village, consisting of twelve or fourteen Delaware families, relatives of Anthony, his helper, on the flats at the mouth of the Towanda creek.

Scarcely had a month elapsed from the time of Zeisberger's first visit to Wyalusing, before the Pontiac war broke out, and the messengers of that celebrated chieftain were visiting every village on the Susquehanna, urging the Indians to again dig up the hatchet they had so recently buried. Already the emissaries were at Wyalusing before Zeisberger was commanded to leave the town. All was now excitement and commotion; and the intrepid missionary was compelled to suspend the work so auspiciously begun, and of which there seemed such bright prospects of abundant success, but not before he had baptized Papanhank, who received the name of John, and another Indian who was called Peter.

The Moravian Christian Indians, for their greater security during the war, in which they refused to take any part, were removed first to a settlement near Bethlehem, and then to Province Island, in the Delaware river, a little below Philadelphia, where they were sheltered in government barracks during the war. Thither Papanhank and twenty of his followers, who determined to have nothing to do with the war, hastened. Here, cooped up in narrow quarters, subsisting on food to which they were not accustomed, harassed by a multitude of fears, threatened more than once with death, their numbers decimated once and again, after a most distressing confinement of more than seventeen months, at the very first dawn of peace, they emerged from their prison, for such it had proved to be, and again sought a home in the forest. Papanhank invited the whole company to settle in his town on the Susquehanna, and hither, after due consultation, they turned their steps, led by their beloved teachers, Zeisberger and John Jacob Schmick.

On the 3d of April, 1765, the company, consisting of eighty adults and upwards of ninety children, set out from Bethlehem, and after a tedious journey of thirty-six days, arrived at Wyalusing, May 9th. With devout thanksgiving they set the stakes for their new town, and their houses were reared amid joyous songs of praise to Jehovah, for his abundant mercies. During the season, thirty bark covered huts, four log cabins, a mission house, and church, were erected. This town, which was built on the east side of the river, about two miles south of the present village of Wyalusing, and near the Sugar Run station, on the P. and N. Y. railroad, was regularly laid out in lots, on each side of the street, eighty feet in width, running east and west, with an alley ten feet wide between every pair of lots. When the settlement was abandoned, it consisted of thirty-nine log cabins, some of these with shingle roofs, and thirteen huts. In the centre of the town, and in the middle of the street, stood the church, built of square pine logs, with shingle-covered roof and glazed windows, surmounted by a belfry, in which hung a bell, that on the Sabbath, or holy day, as it rung out over the meadows and corn fields of this beautiful valley, and its cheerful tones



were echoed back from the surrounding hill sides, told heathen and Christian that in this one spot, in the wide-spreading wilderness, was a place consecrated to the worship of the true God, whose life-giving words they were invited to come and hear. Within the church, which was thirty-two by twenty feet in dimension, was adorned with two oil paintings, one representing the Nativity, and the other Christ's agony in the garden. We read in the mission diary, that many a dusky warrior was led by the contemplation of these scenes to ask in amazement "who it was that thus humbled himself, and then suffered for the children of men."

The town was surrounded by a post and rail-fence, and every week during the summer season, the streets and alleys were swept by the women with wooden brooms, and the rubbish taken to the river, where every family had a canoe. Adjoining the town were two hundred and fifty acres of plantations enclosed with more than two miles of fences. Their corn patches were extended at intervals for nearly two miles up the Wyalusing, and on the large island in the river between Terrytown, and Wyalusing. Their hay was cut on the natural meadows near the Frenchtown station, they had sugar camps on the Sugar run, found cranberries in the marshes in Wilnot township, and whortleberries on the mountains around Tunkhannock.

The mission received the name of Friedenshütten (Huts of Peace), in 1766. It was a Christian Indian town, in which the men still engaged in the hunt and the chase, the women planted and harvested the fields, but learned to read their Bibles, sing their religious hymns, and believe on the Lord Jesus Christ. Order, harmony, and industry, prevailed. A school-house was built adjoining the church, where both adults and children were taught to read in both Delaware and German, to repeat the ten commandments, the Lord's prayer, the Apostles' creed, and to sing Delaware hymns.

In the church, the daily morning and evening service was held, the Sabbath and usual holy days were observed, and the Lord's Supper regularly celebrated. Their hymns were sung to the accompaniment of a spinnet, made by Joshua, a Mohican Indian, and all the arrangements of a strictly Moravian town were scrupulously enforced. Traders were not allowed to bring any spirituous liquors into the town, and the elders of the congregation enforced the wholesome rules for the peace of the community.

Besides a large number of visitors which constantly thronged the town, the year 1767 witnessed the migration northward of the remnants of what were once two powerful nations, the Tuscaroras in the spring, and the Nanticokes in the autumn. These were entertained at the mission, where quite a number remained all the winter, much to the annoyance of the missionaries.

At Sheshequanink, the site of the present village of Ulster, some Delawares made a settlement soon after the close of the Pontiac war, under a chief named Echobund. Some of Brainerd's New Jersey Indians removed here, among whom were Isaac Stille and Joseph Peepy, both of whom had been in the service of the Province of Pennsylvania as messengers and interpreters; Nicholas Tatemy, Nathaniel Davis, and some others. These frequently came to Friedenshütten to attend religious worship, when at length, after due consideration, and at the repeated and earnest request of the Sheshequin Indians, a station was established at their town, and John Rothe, who had been an assistant at Friedenshütten, was



appointed resident missionary, who entered upon his work early in the year 1769.

Here a small chapel was built and a house for the missionary; but the prosperity of the mission was retarded from various causes, but chiefly on account of the immediate settlements of heathen Indians, who were averse to receiving the gospel, and it ever continued to be an appendage to Friedenshütten. The whole number connected with the mission at this station, at the time of the exodus, was fifty-three, of whom four were communicants, fifteen baptized non-communicants, thirty-one not baptized, besides the missionary, his wife, and child. This child, a son born in May, 1772, was the first white child born in the county.

Several circumstances contributed to render the mission insecure and finally led to its removal. When it was first established at Wyalusing, in accordance with Indian diplomacy, permission was asked of Togahaju, the Cayuga sachem, and viceroy of the Iroquois, for the privilege of building at the place they had selected; but he wished them to remove to Cayuga, where he promised they should have lands, and permission to enjoy the teachings of the missionaries and to practice their religion. But the proposition not being acceptable to the mission, an evasive answer was returned. In reply to a more peremptory summons, Zeisberger and a deputation of the chief men from the mission visited Cayuga, and represented to Togahaju the objections to a removal, the peculiarities of Moravian towns and of their religious services in such strong light, that the sachem withdrew his demand, and added, "heretofore you have only sojourned at Wyalusing, I now set you down there firmly. I give you all the land down from Tioga as far as a man can walk in two days. It is yours. No one shall disturb you. All other Indians shall remove if you desire it." This grant was afterward confirmed by the great council at Onondaga. Thus assured, they remained in peace until the treaty at Fort Stanwix, in November, 1768, when the Six Nations sold the land which had so solemnly been assigned to them, "from under their feet."

As soon as this transaction became known at Friedenshütten, a deputation waited upon Governor Penn, informing him of their settlement and Christian civilization, and the peaceable character of their religious principles, asking that the country surrounding the mission might be held in trust for them. This the Governor declined to allow, but assured them that they never should be disturbed, and that his surveyors should not come within five miles of their town. But even in Pennsylvania it had begun to be fashionable to break faith with the Indians, and within a few months after this assurance had been given, Mr. Stewart was running lines and locating warrants upon the plantations attached to the mission. In addition to this, the controversy between Pennsylvania and the Connecticut people was beginning to assume a serious aspect, and the probabilities were that ere long the whole country would be involved in the conflict.

In September, 1766, Zeisberger left Friedenshütten, in order to preach the gospel to some of the Delaware tribes, on the Ohio river, where he established a mission. Learning the condition of affairs at Wyalusing, and that a removal was in contemplation, Zeisberger was commissioned to bear an invitation to the brethren on the Susquehanna to settle in the Ohio country. The proposition receiving the cordial approval of the Mission Board at Bethlehem, Zeisberger





hastened to Wyalusing, to lay the invitation before the brethren there. A council was called, to which the Sheshequin brethren were summoned, when, after a long and careful deliberation, the invitation was accepted, and the early part of the following summer was fixed upon as the time for their departure.

The Wyalusing mission at this time numbered one hundred and fifty-one souls, of whom fifty-two were communicants; seventy-two were baptized non-communicants; twenty were unbaptized. During the continuance of the mission, ninety-four adults and forty-five infants were baptized, seven couples were united in Christian marriage, and forty-one had died.

With the coming spring, all were busy in making preparations for the contemplated exodus. On the 11th of June, 1772, everything being in readiness, the congregation assembled, for the last time, in their church, when, with thanksgiving to God for His mercies, and prayers for His protection and guidance, they went forth to bid a final adieu to their beautiful homes, their pleasant hunting grounds, and the graves of their kindred, and took up their march toward the setting sun.

The emigrants from Wyalusing were divided into two companies, and each of these was subdivided into several parties. One of these companies went overland, by the Wyalusing path, up the Sugar run, and down the Loyal Sock, *via* Dushore. This company was in charge of Ettwein, who had, at their request, been sent to superintend their removal, and had the care of the horses and cattle; the other, in charge of Rothe, went by canoe down the Susquehanna and up the West Branch, and carried the bulk of their property. The bell was taken down from its turret, and carried by Anthony in his canoe in the van of the fleet, and was tolled until the squadron rounded the mountain a mile and a half below the church. The doors and windows of the church were nailed up, and the buildings left in care of Job Chillaway, who, with Hendricks, remained in the town. The Sheshequin party followed the path up the Towanda and down the Lyeoming. The place of general rendezvous was the Great Island, now Lock Haven. After resting here a few days, they again took up their journey for the place of their destination, on the Big Beaver, in Lawrence county.

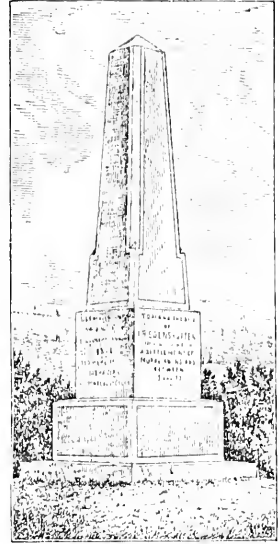
The journey was full of incident, and severely taxed the patience and fortitude of all who participated in it. Tormented with punk flies, which were almost invisible, but whose bite was like burning ashes; overtaken by terrible thunder storms, drenched by heavy rains, encountering multitudes of rattlesnakes, traversing swamps, crossing mountains and streams, now feeling their way along dangerous precipices, then threading deep and narrow ravines, sometimes their path obstructed by fallen trees, and at others obliterated by devastating fires, not a soul was seriously injured, scarcely a hoof was lost, and not a night did one lack for food. The journal of Ettwein is full of interest, but too long for quotation here.

Says the Rev. W. C. Reichel, this migration "marks a new era in the history of the Moravian Mission among the aborigines of this country, which era was characterized by perpetual disturbances and unrest—it also being the era of its gradual decadence extending down into our own times, when there is but a feeble remnant of Christian Indians ministered to by Moravians, dwelling at New Fairfield, Canada, and New Westfield, Kansas. In the veins of some of these



there flows the blood of the Mohicans and Delawares of old Friedenshiitten, the 'deserted village' of the flats of Wyalusing "

A century had elapsed, and the history, and even the location of this remarkable mission was fast fading out from the recollections of men. Their church had been torn down, and its timbers built into a raft, had conveyed a few families with their goods to Wyoming; their houses had been burned by an armed force during the Revolutionary war, every vestige and mark of the town had been removed; even the missionary's well had been covered up, and the spring which had furnished the town with water had been buried under the canal, when in September, 1870, a company of ladies and gentlemen, representing the Moravian Historical Society, visited Wyalusing, and in company with some of the residents of the place, sought out the historic ground, walked around the fertile fields which were the site of the ancient village and its plantations, visited the burying ground, where sleep the dust of more than two-score pious Indians; and on the 14th and 15th of the following June, a large company from Philadelphia, New York, Bethlehem, Nazareth, and Litiz, with a large concourse of people from Wyalusing and the surrounding country, assembled on the consecrated spot, and with beautiful, but solemn ceremonies, dedicated a monument, bearing appropriate inscriptions, which had been erected "to mark the site of Friedenshiitten," that may, for many years to come, remind the passer-by of this interesting page of our local history.



MORAVIAN MONUMENT.

Previous to the exodus of the Moravian Indians, so far as is now known, but two white families were settled within the present limits of the county; these were Rudolph Fox and Peter Scheufeldt, the former on the Towanda flats, and the latter at Asylum, which for many years was called "Shufelt's flats." Both these were Germans, and descendants of Palatine families who had emigrated into New York in the years 1710-15, when, becoming dissatisfied with the location, removed to Pennsylvania. Messrs. Fox and Scheufeldt, following the current of emigration down the Susquehanna, reached the places where they located in May, 1770, and for three years were the only white families resident in the county. Some of the descendants of Mr. Fox now occupy the farm upon which he settled. About 1775 Mr. Scheufeldt removed to the West Branch, where he was killed by the Indians in 1779.

During the years 1773 and 1774, the New England settlements at Wyoming, under the Susquehanna company, were rapidly increased, and the townships first set apart for the settlers being taken up, additional ones were granted to companies of adventurers who wished to locate their rights for purposes of settlement. In May 1774, the township of Standing Stone, then called Wooster, was granted to David Smith and his associates, and settlements were commenced



in it by Lemuel Fitch, Simon Spalding, Anthony Rummerfield, and some others. The same month another township, afterwards called Springfield, but which originally bore the name of Washington, was granted to James Wells, Jeremiah Ross, and others. This is the first instance known to the writer of a place named in honor of the gallant young colonel whose coolness and bravery saved Braddock's army from annihilation, and subsequently, whose skill and patriotism won for him the name of Father of his Country. The plantations attached to the Indian missions, included in this township afforded greater attractions for settlers, who began to occupy them the same year in which the township was granted. Among these were James Wells and Robert Carr, at Wyalusing, Edward Hicks at Sugar Run, and Benjamin Budd at Terrytown. The year before, 1773, Isaac Van Valkenburg and his two sons-in-law, Sebastian and Isaac Strobe, from the town of Claverack on the Hudson, settled at Fairbanks, on the old Indian Meadows, and John Lord in 1774, settled at what is now called Lower Sheshequin.

For the next two or three years settlements were rapidly increased, and the additional townships of Claverack and Ulster were granted; the former, next above that of Standing Stone, covering the flats of Wysox, Towanda, and Sugar creek, granted June 4, 1773; the latter in 1775, covering the Old Tioga and the flats adjoining. The Van Valkenburgs, and Strobes, Samuel Cole and some others, were settlers in Claverack as soon or before the grant was obtained, but owing to the impending troubles of the Revolution no settlements were attempted in Ulster under Connecticut rights until after the peace. In the lower townships, however, the number of settlers had been constantly increasing, and were to be found not only along the river but extending five or six miles up the Wyalusing creek, and in the township of Springfield alone there were thirty-two families, mostly New England people holding titles under the Susquehanna company.

As early as April, 1769, within six months after their Indian purchase, the Proprietary government of Pennsylvania had granted to their friends warrants of survey, which were laid on the best lands along the river, and up the Wyalusing and Wysaukin creeks—the Towanda was not included in the purchase. For the purpose of holding these lands against the New England people, they were let out to lessees or tenants, who came upon them, made improvements, and in some instances removed their families. Many of these were German people from the neighborhood of Philadelphia.

Events were now transpiring in the country which led another class of emigrants to seek a home on these frontiers. The tyrannical acts of the British ministry had precipitated the war of the Revolution. With but very few exceptions the New England settlers were pronounced and active Whigs, and in the very outset of the struggle had taken a decided position on the side of Congress and in favor of the independence of the States. They regarded with suspicion all who were lukewarm in the cause, or for any reason held themselves aloof from the patriotic gatherings and musters, and in some instances arrested and held them in confinement. In consequence of these severe proceedings, quite a number living in the neighborhood of the Wyoming settlements, who for any reason were not in sympathy with the majority of the people there, removed up the



river into this county, where they would be less subject to annoyance and nearer to their friends.

About the same time several disaffected people from the south-eastern part of the province of New York came over and settled on the Susquehanna. These, with a number of deserters from the American army, formed the majority of our population at the close of 1777, and on account of Tioga still being an Indian town, became a dangerous element, ready to foment any disturbance which might distress the Whigs and aid the cause of the British crown. Some of these people had this year joined the British forces at Niagara, had been in the army of St. Leger at the investment of Fort Schuylcr, and held commissions in the British army, but returned to their homes in the autumn, where, to escape arrest, they took the freeman's oath and professed to be patriots.

At the very outset of the Revolutionary struggle, quite a number of our people enlisted in the two independent companies of Wyoming. Among these were Simon Spalding, James Wells, and Perrin Ross, who were commissioned lieutenants, and Justus Gaylord, a sergeant. Wells and Ross were both slain at the battle of Wyoming. About a dozen others were connected with the train bands of Wyoming; altogether, there were twenty or more from these upper settlements, who, in one capacity or another, were serving in the patriot forces of the country.

The vicinity of the Susquehanna settlements to the Indian towns of Sheshequin, Tioga, and Chemung, made the people exceedingly solicitous that the Indians should be kept quiet, and maintain the pledge of neutrality in the contest, which they had given the inhabitants. They were, therefore, treated with great kindness, and frequent deputations passed between these towns and the settlements in the interest of peace. But, notwithstanding the professed neutrality of the savages, it was plainly to be seen that the solicitations of the royalists, the persuasions of British Indian agents, and the reward offered for scalps, were having their effect, and that at any time an Indian war might break out all along the northern border.

To prevent this, if possible, in the latter part of December, 1777, a strong detachment was sent up from Wyoming, as far as Sheshequin, for the purpose of arresting the most active of the British emissaries, and quieting the Indian tribes on the border. It was reported that some deserters were lodged with an Indian by the name of Hopkins, living at Sheshequin, who had received a captain's commission in the British army. The soldiers surrounded his house, and Hopkins, in attempting to escape, was severely wounded. This was the first blood shed in the Susquehanna valley in the Revolutionary war. A short time previous to this, two scouting parties had been captured and taken within the British lines; but the inhabitants had not been molested.

No sooner had this expedition returned to Wyoming, than the enemy commenced hostilities against the unoffending settlers. Lemuel Fitch was taken at Standing Stone, and his house burned. Mr. Fox was captured at Towanda, and Richard Fitzgerald, a neighbor of Fitch, was taken and his stock driven off. Fitzgerald was carried as far as Wysox, where his captors bound him to a flax brake, and told him unless he would hurrah for King George, they would break every bone in his body. "Well," said the stout-hearted old Dutchman, "I an an old-





man, and can't live long at the best, but I will never die a Tory." They released him; Fox made his escape, and Fitch died in captivity.

In the February following, Amos York and Nathan Kingsley, Esq., of Wyalusing, neighbors, who had settled there in 1776, were captured, their goods and stock taken off, and their families left to take care of themselves as they might. Mr. Kingsley made his escape after about nine months' captivity. Of his family while at Mr. Slocum's in Wilkes-Barre, one son was killed, and another taken by the Indians, at the time when Francis Slocum was captured. Mrs. York and her helpless family, with other settlers, retired to Wyoming when the river broke up in the spring; her husband after several months' captivity was released, went to his old home in Connecticut, where he sickened and died in a few days. In May the families of the Van Valkenburgs and Stropes, at Wysauking, were captured, and retained in the hands of the enemy until the close of the war.

Although their settlements were broken up, their families scattered, their friends in captivity, their property destroyed, yet the people abated none of their interest in the welfare of their common country. It is doubtful if any part of the Commonwealth, glorious as her record is during the war for Independence, can produce many instances of a greater percentage of sufferers, and at the same time of active participants in the struggle, than was found in our own county.

Notwithstanding its entire depopulation, Bradford county was the theatre of many important events, subsequently, in the Revolutionary war. It was at Tioga Point that the combined forces of Indians, rangers, and Tories, under Major John Butler, were organized, which devastated Wyoming in the summer of 1778. In the autumn of the same year, Colonel Hartley, with a force of four hundred men, set out from Muncy, on the West Branch, and passing up the Lycoming, and down the Towanda, burned the towns of Tioga and Sheshequin, and re-captured some of the stock stolen at Wyoming the preceding summer. Returning down the river, he burned Wyalusing, and had a sharp but decisive engagement with the enemy on the hill just below the town, and on the southern borders of the county. The next year, the grand army under General Sullivan passed through the county, built Fort Sullivan on Tioga Point, where he awaited the arrival of the division under General Clinton. Here was the base of his communications with the country while destroying the Indian towns and cornfields in central New York. In both these expeditions were the former settlers in this county.

Beside these important movements against the enemy, there were frequent conflicts between scouting parties from Wyoming and bands of prowling Indians, who were usually led in their marauds by white people.

The last of March, 1780, a band of Indians made a descent on the Wyoming settlements, captured Moses Van Campen, murdered and scalped his father, brother, and uncle, captured a boy named Pence, also Abraham Pike, an Irishman, who had been a British soldier, but deserted and joined the American army, and a lad named Rogers, and then bent their way toward Tioga, crossing the river near Tunkhannock. They arrived at Wysox on the third of April, when the whole party, consisting of ten Indians with their four prisoners, lay down to sleep. During the day the captives had formed a plan for effecting their escape. Accordingly, after the savages had fallen asleep, they loosened each other's



bonds, removed the guns, and then with tomahawks proceeded to dispatch their slumbering captors. Four of them were killed, two or three badly wounded, and the rest fled to the woods. After scalping the dead and recovering the scalps the Indians had taken with their other booty, they hastily constructed a raft, and on the 5th of April, were again among their friends. Mr. Miner says of this engagement, "No nobler deed was performed during the Revolutionary war."

On the 9th of June this same year, Captain John Franklin, who was in command of the militia at Wyoming, with five men came up as far as Wysauking, where he surprised and captured a small party of Tories and a considerable amount of booty which was valued at nearly £47 sterling. In the September following, another party came up as far as Tioga, but without any special adventure.

On the 7th of April, 1782, a party of thirteen Indians made a descent on the house of Roswell Franklin, and setting fire to his buildings carried off his wife and four children, one of whom was an infant. A party of eight immediately started in pursuit, and passing the savages, laid wait for them at a ravine in the mountain nearly opposite Asylum. After waiting for some time, the party of Indians were seen advancing, but discovered the ambush which had been laid for them. Placing their captives behind the trunk of a fallen tree, the savages immediately stationed themselves behind trees for shelter, waiting for the attack. Here for several hours each party maintained their ground, until several of the Indians having been killed, the three older children escaped to their friends whose voices they recognized, the chieftain shot Mrs. Franklin, and seizing the infant placed it upon his shoulder and retreated with his party. Mrs. Franklin was buried as decently as circumstances would permit, and the scouts with the three rescued children returned to Wyoming. In this encounter two Americans were wounded and six of the Indians were killed. When the number and position of the parties are considered, and the length of time this engagement was maintained, greater personal bravery and heroism have been rarely met with.

These incidents are of local interest to the people of this county, not only because they transpired upon our territory, but because, except in a single instance, the parties were, many of them, at some time, residents of the county.

Immediately after the close of the Revolutionary war, many of the surviving families returned to their old homes, re-built their houses, and, so to speak, began life anew. Quite a number of soldiers who had taken part in the various expeditions which passed through the county during the war, became acquainted with the broad flats at Sheshequin and Tioga, and resolved to take possession of them as soon as opportunity offered. Accordingly in the fall of 1783, these flats were laid out into farms, and the settlers began to locate upon them. The troubles at Wyoming, known as the second Pennamite war, induced many others, who became wearied with the conflict, to migrate into this county, where at that time comparative peace prevailed.

In consequence of the severe measures instituted against the New England settlers under the Susquehanna company, at a meeting held at Hartford, July 13, 1785, that company resolved to give each man who would come upon their lands and remain there for three years, subject to the orders of the standing committee of the company, one-half share in the purchase. Six hundred shares



were also ordered to be sold for the use of the company in defending their claim. The new impulse given by these measures, the stories of Pennsylvania oppressions and cruelties upon the settlers, who had been pelted and torn by the war during which they had stood as a rampart between the savages and the settlers below them, that were ringing through all New England, the activity of the leading spirits of the company, and the influence of some of the prominent men in Connecticut and Massachusetts, all combined to awaken the deepest interest in the welfare of the settlers, and to lead a large number to emigrate to the purchase. These indiscriminately were known as "Half-Share men," of whom a large proportion became settlers in Bradford county. New townships were surveyed, a multitude of shares were located, so that before the close of the century, the company had assigned every acre of land in the county to those claiming rights under it.

As has just been intimated, the territory of this county is included in what was known as the "Connecticut Claim." Being remote from the lower settlements, it escaped in a great measure those conflicts between the adverse claimants which embroiled Wyoming in what have been called the first and second Pennamite wars.

It was not until 1795, when an act was passed reducing the price of vacant land to six pence per acre, under which speculators secured for themselves warrants, covering thousands of acres, in expectation of realizing immense fortunes, that any disturbance arising from conflicting titles arose.

The policy of the State in quieting the titles of the old settlers, that is, of those who had acquired lands under the Susquehanna company previous to the decree of Trenton, December 30, 1782, in which the jurisdiction of the disputed territory was awarded to Pennsylvania, was foreshadowed in the act of 1787, but was more fully developed in the acts of 1799, and its several supplements. By this law, those settlers in the seventeen townships which had been granted by the company, and actually settled before the decree of Trenton, were confirmed to the settlers. In this county were four such townships, viz.: Springfield, Standing Stone, Claverack, and Ulster. But the grants of Standing Stone and Ulster had failed, because of the want of a sufficient number of settlers, the rules of the company requiring twenty. The provisions of the act, were, however, extended to Ulster by the law of 1810. By these several enactments, the titles were confirmed to the early settlers in these three townships, but they included only a very small part of the county.

There was another class to whom no compromise was offered; these were the "Half Share men," or, as they were sometimes called, the "Wild Yankees," who were induced to come upon the purchase in full faith in the validity of the Susquehanna company's title, and for the purpose of defending it from encroachment by the Pennsylvania landholders. For these, though they were for the most part industrious and honest men, and would have made good citizens, the Commonwealth had a policy, not of conciliation, but of extirpation, or, in the language of one of the judges of the Supreme court, "to cut them up by the roots." Toward these, juries were allowed no discretion, and for them courts could show no mercy.

To this policy, as may be supposed, these settlers did not readily accede, although many of the old settlers endeavored to persuade them to submit to the



oppressive laws which were attempted to be enforced against them, and trust to the generosity of the State to afford them relief. On the other hand, they were urged to maintain their claims at all hazards, by such men as Colonel John Franklin, the Satterlees, the Kingsburys, and Spalding of this county, Colonel John Jenkins of Wyoming, and Ezekiel Hyde of Susquehanna county, men who had been leading spirits in the controversy from the first, and possessed the unbounded confidence of the Connecticut settlers.

In order more successfully to maintain their claim, they banded together under a league, each pledging to defend the others with money or force. As might be expected, acts of violence were committed and many things were done, which, in less exciting times, would have been considered, even by the perpetrators, as atrocious. Settlers under Pennsylvania title were driven off their lands, surveyors who came to locate warrants were compelled to desist, one surveyor had his compass broken and another his chain stolen. A Mr. Erwin, from Easton, was shot dead while standing in the door of the house of Mr. McDullie in Athens; the Rev. Thomas Smiley, at that time living eight or ten miles up the Towanda Creek, while acting as an assistant agent under the Intrusion law, was tarred and feathered near the mouth of the Towanda creek, and warned out of the country.

On the other hand the Pennsylvania party were not idle. The landholders entered into an association for the purpose of protecting their interests. Possessing great influence in the Legislature, laws of great severity were enacted against the "Intruders," as the "Half Share men" were contemptuously called, settlement under the Susquehanna company's title, outside the seventeen townships, was made a crime punishable with severe penalties, recorders were forbidden to admit to record conveyances which did not recite the Pennsylvania title, and the whole machinery of the government was set to destroy root and branch every vestige of the half-share titles. Arrests were numerous, but few, if any, were convicted. A Mr. Spalding, a settler near the present village of Canton, was arrested and sent to jail as an intruder, and while in confinement the sheriff turned his wife and little children out of doors in a deep snow in mid-winter, burned down his house, leaving the homeless, helpless family to take care of themselves as best they could. Several attempts were made to compromise the questions in dispute, but the landholders would assent to no terms until the people would abandon the companies, renounce the Connecticut titles, and pledge themselves to support the laws of the Commonwealth.

After nearly a dozen years of fruitless strife, better counsels prevailed. These contests had debarred settlers from coming upon lands whose titles were in dispute, and the landholders, instead of reaping the fortune they had anticipated, found themselves hopelessly involved in debt, which in many instances resulted in bankruptcy and ruin, and thousands of acres, in Luzerne county and in Bradford, were sold for taxes, many of which were purchased by the settlers. Others began to pursue a more lenient course as a matter of policy, while settlers found it was far better to purchase the State title at reasonable rates than to be forever in difficulty and controversy.

These troubles, of course, retarded the progress both of the settlement and improvement of the county, so that in 1813, the date of its organization, more





than four hundred and fifty thousand acres were assessed as unimproved land, and very much of the remaining two hundred and seventy thousand acres, outside of the two certified townships, was occupied without any form of title by the settler. Since then, however, the amount of unseated lands has rapidly diminished, titles have been perfected, and the increase of population and prosperity has been continuous and permanent.

A few years after the close of the Revolutionary war, a party of Seneca Indians on Pine creek were attacked by the settlers there and two of their number were killed. Already the tribes of the Six Nations were in commotion, a general Indian war was being waged in the West, and British emissaries at Niagara were using all their influence to draw the different tribes in western New York into the contest, and many of their influential sachems had already expressed a willingness to take up the hatchet in the cause of their brethren. The murder of these men, at this time, made the danger of hostilities all the more imminent.

In order to avert the threatened danger, General Washington, President of the United States, under date of September 4, 1790, commissioned Colonel Timothy Pickering, then at Wyoming, a man of great tact and of consummate abilities, who, during the Revolutionary war, had held important offices under the government, to proceed to Painted Post, or some other convenient place, to meet, in behalf of the United States, the Indians, to assure them that the murders committed on Pine creek, on some of their tribe, were causes of displeasure to the United States, and endeavor to heal the difficulties which had been engendered.

It was decided on consultation to hold the conference at Tioga instead of at Painted Post. Colonel Pickering immediately dispatched a trusty messenger to the Senecas, inviting them to a friendly conference, with assurances of good will on the part of the United States, and their willingness to make reparation for the injury which had been done them. The time appointed for the conference was the 25th of the following October.

Colonel Pickering at once began to make active preparations for the forthcoming conference. To Colonel Matthias Hollenback of Wilkes-Barre, who was familiar with Indian habits, and had considerable experience in trade with them, was intrusted the duty of purchasing supplies and presents for the treaty and transporting them to Tioga. When it is remembered that from five hundred to a thousand Indians were expected to attend this treaty, and that the conferences might continue for a fortnight, it will be seen that the work assigned to Colonel Hollenback was no slight task.

The party set out for Tioga early in October. Stopping at Sheshequin, Colonel Pickering secured the services of Colonel Simon Spalding, whose knowledge of Indian character and personal acquaintance with many of their sachems, by whom he was held in high esteem, as well as his good judgment, were peculiarly serviceable in the negotiations, and gratefully acknowledged by Colonel Pickering in his report of the conference.

Reaching Tioga on the 17th, it was not until the 29th that five runners arrived, announcing the approach of five hundred Indians to the conference, and not until the 14th of November that the party began to arrive there. The same



afternoon, Colonel Pickering invited twenty or thirty of their most important chiefs, among whom was the Farmer's Brother, Red Jacket, Good Peter, Big Tree, and Captain Hendrick Aupamut, to an informal conference, where they smoked the pipe, "drank grog, and ate our bread and cheese." It was not until the 17th that the formal conferences began. The questions to be discussed were of peculiar difficulty and delicacy on account of the hostile feeling against the government. Red Jacket and Cornplanter had strong prejudices against the United States, and were willing to enter the league with the Western Indians. Joseph Brandt, though not present, was giving all of his powerful influence against any adjustment of the difficulties. "Colonel John Butler, then commandant at Fort Niagara, and other British officials on the Canadian frontier, were using all possible means to instigate these nations to hostility." To remove these prejudices and counteract these evil influences required all the courage and tact of which Pickering and his associates were masters.

In his opening speech, Colonel Pickering went through the usual formality of pulling the hatchet out of their heads, washing off the blood, and wiping the tears from their eyes with the customary strings of wampum, to which Farmer's Brother, the principal chief, replied. Two days longer were spent in waiting for Fish Carrier, who had been sent to the Indians on the Grand river, bearing Colonel Pickering's letter, and inviting them to the conference. Farmer's Brother and Red Jacket were the principal speakers; the latter was famed as a great aboriginal orator, whose rousing, magnetizing eloquence brought him into great notoriety among the Indian tribes. Colonel Pickering says, "he acted a conspicuous part at the conference, displaying a good understanding, a ready apprehension, and great strength of memory. He was attentive to business at the council fire, and when consulted in private, on matters relating to their peculiar customs, he appeared to be very well acquainted with them, and always gave me the necessary information very intelligently, with perfect candor, and in a most obliging manner."

The conference was continued until the 23d of November. On this day the presents were distributed, the mourning belts were presented to the relatives of the murdered men, with suitable speeches of condolence, and the post was reset in the hole where all their difficulties were buried. "These ceremonies terminated, renewals of friendship secured, a treaty concluded, and satisfaction given and taken on both sides, the council fires were covered up, the Indians returned to their homes, and Colonel Pickering repaired to Philadelphia to make report of his doings."

General Knox, the secretary of war, in his report says, "the proceedings of Colonel Pickering were conducted with ability and judgment, and consistently with the constitution and laws of the United States; and also with the candor and humanity which ought to characterize all the treaties of the general government with the unenlightened natives of the country."

The following year, the work of conciliation was completed at a treaty held at Newtown, now Elmira.

The echoes of the war of our Revolution scarcely had died away, ere they were answered back from the other side of the Atlantic. France had been among the first of the great European nations to recognize our independence, and with



men and money had generously assisted the new-born government in its conflict with her ancient rival. The watchwords of liberty, freedom, and equal rights, had been caught up by a people suffering from the evils of a mismanaged and extravagant government, until they were ready not only to reform the abuses with which centuries of profligacy had burdened the nation, but to run into the other extreme of riot and anarchy. The story of the French Revolution is too familiar with all readers of history to be here repeated. Multitudes who were in sympathy with the ancient order of things, or preferred reformation to revolution, fled the country, and many of them turned their steps toward our own land for protection and a home.

The insurrection of the blacks in the French colony at St. Domingo sent another company of French refugees to our shores. Many of these were not only homeless, but without means, having left everything behind them, and fled for their lives. To the more favored of their countrymen it became a serious question how they could best provide for the necessities of their unfortunate friends, without having them pensioners upon their bounty.

Viscount Louis de Noailles, who was brother-in-law to Lafayette, a general in the French army which assisted in the war of the Revolution, and was selected on the part of the French to receive the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown, and Omer Talon, a banker of Paris, in consultation with John Nicholson and Robert Morris, decided to form a company, purchase a large tract of unimproved land, and selecting a favorable location, colonize such of the refugees as were not otherwise provided for. Accordingly negotiations were entered into with Messrs. Nicholson and Morris, for the purchase of one million acres of wild land, provided a location suitable for a settlement could be secured. The plan which was attempted to be carried out was, that each colonist should have the privilege of purchasing a home lot in the town, or could rent it of the company, and by improving a given number of acres of the wild land, should have liberty of purchasing four hundred acres, at a stipulated price. This plan, which they were led to believe would result in great fortunes to the company, it was found necessary to modify, and finally to abandon.

The place selected for the settlement was a comparatively level plain, lying in the bend of the river, opposite and above the old Indian meadows. On account of the conflicting titles, Mr. Morris applied to Judge Hollenback, to negotiate the purchase of both the Connecticut and Pennsylvania claims, of several hundred acres. This was regularly laid out into village lots, and M. Talon was sent on to oversee the arrangements necessary to be made for the reception of the colonists. The first tree was cut December 1, 1793. Before spring a number of log houses were erected, and the colonists began to flock to their new homes. They called their town Asylum which name it has ever since retained.

They immediately set about surrounding themselves with the appliances of comfort and refinement to which they had been accustomed at home. Stores and shops were opened and filled with goods brought directly from Philadelphia, to which the people flocked from all the surrounding country. They cleared and improved their house lots, and soon transformed the partially cultivated fields into beautiful gardens and meadows. A mill, with a bolt for making flour, was



erected and driven by horse-power. They set up a bakery, where bread, pastry, and even confectionery, were made for the settlement, and a brewery was put in operation for making ale. A weekly post was established with Philadelphia, by which they were kept in communication with the outside world. Quite a number of clearings were commenced on their wild lands, in the back part of Terry township where some houses were built, in Albany township, and Sullivan county. A saw mill was erected at Laddsbury, but not completed. Although the unfortunate Louis XVI. and his accomplished Queen had passed under the guillotine before the settlement had been commenced, yet the news of that event did not reach here until some time after, and the colonists entertained high expectations of being able to afford a secure retreat for the royal family until the storm of the Revolution had passed over. For this purpose, large buildings were put up at the settlement in Terry, but their hopes, as many others which had been awakened in reference to their enterprise, were doomed to disappointment.

Most of the emigrants having been wealthy gentlemen in Paris, and some of them members of the royal household, entirely ignorant of farming, and unused to manual labor, found great difficulty in adapting themselves to their new condition. Yet they endured their privations with fortitude, and cheerfully set about the laborious task of clearing and cultivating the heavily timbered lands, from which they had been led to expect immediately such large returns.

About the same time that Asylum was founded, M. Brevost, a Parisian gentleman of great wealth, celebrated for his benevolence, contracted for a large tract of land on the Chenango river, in the State of New York, where he founded another colony, composed of eight or ten families. But failure to receive from France expected funds, the unfavorable character of the location, discouraged the colonists, and led them to abandon their plantations and remove to Asylum, which although thus increased in numbers, was not much strengthened in wealth or working force.

It is said a Frenchman never forgets the sunny vales of his native land, and never goes to any country where he does not long to return to his own beloved France. In addition to this characteristic love for his native home, there was much to render the colonists discontented with their situation. Ignorance of our language, and of the prices which ought to be paid for labor and supplies led them often to be imposed upon by the cupidity of their Yankee neighbors. Exposure to such unaccustomed hardships and privations was attended with pain and suffering. Then they were disappointed in their expectations of income from their investment, many of them having expended everything in the purchase of land, which was a burden instead of a revenue, annoyed by the poverty of the country, and the difficulty of obtaining supplies, it is no wonder that most of them regarded Asylum as a place to be endured rather than one in which it was desirable to live; and when Napoleon came into power and repealed the laws of expatriation which had been passed against the emigrants, with the promise of the restoration of their confiscated estates on their return, the greater part gladly embraced the opportunity and went back to France. Some of them removed to Philadelphia, and two or three to other parts of the country, but three remained in the vicinity of Asylum. The late Hon. John La Porte, who was Speaker of





the General assembly in 1832, the fifth term of his membership, from 1832 to 1836 a member of Congress, and Surveyor General of Pennsylvania in the years 1845 to 1851, was a descendant of one of those families; those of the others are known as among the best citizens of the county.

During the continuance of the settlement, it was visited by several distinguished personages, who since have obtained a world-wide reputation. In 1795, Louis Philippe spent several weeks at Asylum, enjoying the hospitality of M. Talon. Tallyrand spent some time here; Count de la Rochefoucauld was several days at Asylum while on his journey through the States in 1795-6, and his observations on the character of the colonists afford the fullest account that has been given of them.

In 1796, the town consisted of about fifty log houses, occupied by about forty families. Among the most noted of these, besides those already mentioned were M. De Blacons, a member of the French Constituent Assembly from Dauphine; M. De Montule, a captain of a troop of horse; M. Beaulieu, a captain of infantry in the French service, and who served in this country under Potosky; Dr. Buzzard, a planter from St. Domingo, and M. Dandelot, an officer in the French infantry. But perhaps the best known of all, at least in this country, was M. Dupetit-Thouars, or as he was generally called by the Americans, the Admiral. Wrecked while on voyage in search of La Perouse, he reached Asylum destitute of everything but an unfaltering courage, a genial temper, and the chivalrous pride of a Frenchman. Disdaining to be a pensioner on the bounty of his countrymen, he obtained a grant of four hundred acres in the dense wilderness of now Sullivan county, and went out literally single-handed, having lost an arm in the French naval service, commenced a clearing, built himself a house, returning to Asylum once a week for necessary food and change of apparel. He returned to his native country, obtained a position in the navy, saying he had yet another arm to give to France, was placed in command of the ship *Le Tonnant* and killed in the battle of the Nile. The borough of Dushore, which includes the clearings of this indomitable Frenchman, was named in honor of him, this being nearly the anglicised pronunciation of his name.

Although the first settlers of this county were poor, having enjoyed but few advantages of religious or intellectual culture, and for many years were harassed by the uncertainty of the titles to their lands, yet true to their New England traditions, their first thought, after securing shelter for their families and some means for their subsistence, was to secure the advantages of the church and the school for themselves and their children.

As early as 1791, a Congregational church was organized at Wysouking, and two years afterward, a Presbyterian church, consisting of thirteen members, was organized at Wyalusing. This was probably the first church established on the Presbyterian plan in all Northern Pennsylvania. Both these organizations have continued in existence until the present time, although the former, like most of the churches in the county on the Congregational basis, has adopted the Presbyterian form of government. The same year, 1793, Rev. William Colbert, a Methodist itinerant, was appointed to a circuit, which included all of this county and extended up into the Lake country of New York, who organized the first Methodist class at the house of Wanton Rice, on Schuefeldt's flats—Asylum



The year before, Rev. John Hill had been in the county, but it is not known that he did more than to explore the ground. Rev. Mr. Spafford, a Baptist minister, was, this year, preaching on the Wyalusing creek, and Rev. Thomas Smiley, about the same time, commenced preaching along the river and the Towanda creek, where and on Sugar creek, Baptist churches were soon after organized. The Congregational church of Smithfield was organized in Poultney, Vermont, in February, 1801, previous to the removal of its members to this county. A Universalist society was organized near this time, in the upper part of the county. The whole number of religious societies now in the county is one hundred and thirteen, with a total membership of more than eighty-two hundred, of which the leading denominations are Methodist, Episcopal, Presbyterian, Baptist, and Disciples.

Schools were commenced in the settlements along the river about 1790. The teacher was paid by a subscription taken in the neighborhood, and taught reading, writing, and spelling, with the rudiments of arithmetic. Inferior as these schools were, when measured by the present standard, they were sufficient for the necessities of the times. They were sometimes attended by old and young, and father and son might be seen in the same school studying the same lessons. The Susquehanna company divided their townships into fifty-three equal parts, of which fifty were allowed to the settlers, and of the remaining three, one was assigned to the first minister who settled in the township, one to the church, and the other to the school. In the townships in this county, certificates were issued to a committee appointed by the proprietors of the township, who sold the lots and divided the proceeds among the several neighborhoods in the proportion to the number of families. As early as 1797, an academical association was formed at Athens, funds were secured, and a building erected. In 1813, it was incorporated by an act of the Legislature, and a grant of two thousand dollars was made to the trustees, for which the academy was to furnish free tuition to four poor children, not exceeding two years each, provided there is application made for them. In 1854, the Susquehanna Collegiate Institute was incorporated, a large four-story brick building was put up at the cost of about sixteen thousand dollars, an endowment in scholarships secured, and the institution opened in the fall of 1855, in which normal, preparatory, commercial, and higher English courses have been established, where pupils receive thorough training in the various branches of which these courses are composed, from an efficient corps of teachers. Besides these and several private schools, there are now three hundred and eighty-eight public schools in the county where the elementary branches are taught, besides higher grades in the larger towns in which more than sixteen thousand pupils receive instruction from about six hundred teachers, at an annual expense of about eighty thousand dollars.

The War of 1812 occurred about the time of the organization of the county, and although the martial spirit of the people had been exhibited in keeping up various military organizations, yet neither in this nor in the Mexican war did the county furnish many soldiers who were in actual service.

In the War for the Union, however, Bradford took an earnest and conspicuous part. Her sons rushed to the conflict to maintain the government their fathers



fought to establish. No sooner was the news that Fort Sumter had been fired upon by the rebel hosts flashed over the country than the whole county was ablaze with excitement. At a public meeting held in Towanda, a large number volunteered in answer to the President's call for troops to enforce the demands of the Federal government. This was followed by public meetings held in other parts of the county; companies were organized for military drill, and the sound of the fife and drum were heard on almost every street corner. Nor was this all. The ladies met in almost every neighborhood to prepare such things as were thought needful for those about starting for the field of battle, and supplies for field and hospital. At first these contributions were made without much system, and but little or no account was taken either of the amount or value of the contributions. After the organization of the Sanitary and Christian commissions, auxiliary societies were established and contributions made in nearly every township in the county. Men gave and women worked for these as never before for any benevolent enterprise. It touched the tenderest sympathies of the human heart, and kindled every slumbering spark of patriotism in the breast. In Athens alone, during the year 1864, thirty-five boxes and six hundred and thirty-eight dollars in cash were sent to the Christian commission, and this, perhaps, is but a fair average for the whole county.

As nearly as can now be ascertained, Bradford county sent more than eighteen hundred men into the field, besides emergency men. In the 141st regiment seven companies were from Bradford, besides companies in the Reserve corps and other regiments, and a large number who enlisted in the State of New York. Bradford county soldiers were in every branch of the service; they could be found in all the armies, and the navy upon the seas, in the army of the Potomac from its organization until the surrender of Lee at Appomattox, at Beaufort, with Sherman in his march to the sea, at Nashville and Chattanooga, with Sheridan in the Shenandoah valley; where, in hard service and gallant bravery, they were surpassed by no troops in the Union armies. The record of their deeds is in their country's history, their blood enriched many a battle-field, their sufferings are told in the horrors of rebel prisons, and their bones rest in the National cemeteries.

One indication of the general progress of a community is found in the political divisions required for the convenience, and the ability and willingness to bear the burdens which such divisions impose, therefore the history of township organizations, as well as tables showing increase of population, wealth, and production, indicate the growth in financial ability and homogeneity of the people.

At the March sessions of 1790, the Court divided Luzerne county into eleven townships, two of which, Tioga and Wyalusing, covered the area of the northern part of Wyoming, of Susquehanna, and of Bradford counties, except a narrow strip of the southern border of the latter, a dense, uninhabited wilderness, which was included in Tunkhannock township. By this order Tioga was bounded on the north by the north line of the State; on the south by an east and west line passing through the Standing Stone; and on the east and west by the lines of the county. This township was about fifteen miles in width from north to south, and more than seventy miles long. Wyalusing was bounded on the north



by the south line of Tioga; on the south by an east and west line passing through the mouth of the Meshoppen creek; on the east and west by the county lines. It was about ten miles in breadth, and in length about the same as Tioga.

In 1795, a strip of nearly six miles in width was cut off the south side of Tioga, and erected into a separate township, called Wysox, and in 1797 the remaining part of old Tioga was again divided. The lower part was called Ulster, and the upper part Athens, and thus the name Tioga, which from time immemorial had been attached to the peninsula at the "meeting of the waters," was lost to our county.

These townships were from time to time subdivided, to suit the convenience of the inhabitants, of which the ten following, viz., Athens, Burlington, Canton, Orwell, Smithfield, Towanda, Ulster, Wysox, and parts of Wyalusing and Rush, were included in Bradford. Out of these ten, thirty-seven townships have since been formed.

ALBANY is on the Fowler branch of the Towanda, along which runs the Sullivan and Erie railroad, and took its name from a township of the Susquehanna company, which covered part of its area. It was taken from Asylum and Monroe in 1824. The valley of the creek is narrow and bounded by high hills. The French had made several small clearings in the neighborhood of Laddsbuurg, erected the frame of a saw-mill, and had several sugar camps in the vicinity, but made no attempts at a permanent settlement, and their lands fell into the hands of the celebrated Dr. Priestly, who, to induce settlers to come upon his lands, offered lots of seventy-five acres each to the first four who would locate upon his land. This offer was accepted by Sheffield Wilcox and Horatio Ladd, who with their families moved into the township in 1801. Daniel Miller and a few others came soon after, but the construction of the Berwick and Newtown turnpike in 1817-19, was the means of settling it much more rapidly. Nearly all of the township is now covered with fruitful farms. NEW ALBANY, on the Sullivan and Erie railroad, is a place of considerable business. LADDSBURG has quite a trade in bark and lumber. The opening of the railroad has given an impulse to business along its line, which in a short time will add much to the wealth and business of the township.

ARMENIA is on the western border of the county, from which it is practically cut off by the ranges of the Armenia mountains. It takes its name from the Susquehanna company's township of the same name, which included part of its area, and the high hill which bounds three sides of the township doubtless suggested the name for both. The township was set off from Canton and Troy in 1843. It is uneven, sparsely inhabited, and contains a large proportion of wild land.

ASYLUM was set off from Wyalusing in 1814. It received its name from the French people, whose town was embraced in its territory, which was the Scheu-feldt's flats, or Wooster of former times, on which several families were located previous to the battle of Wyoming. Soon after the close of the Revolutionary war, Robert Alexander and his son purchased the Forsythe farm on the upper end of the flats, Wanton Rice settled below them, and Captain Richard Townley on the lower part. In 1793 these parties sold out their claim to the French, and removed from the county. Stephen Durell came up from Wyoming, where he was one of the earliest settlers, and located near the mouth of the creek, which





bears his name, where he had a small mill ; Amos Bennett, with his two sons-in-law, Benjamin Akely and Richard Benjamin, at the mouth of Bennett's creek, on land occupied by Samuel and Azariah Ketchem before the Revolutionary war, and Samuel Cole returned to his plantation at Macedonia.

ATHENS is situated in a beautiful section of country, at the confluence of the Susquehanna and the Tioga or Chemung rivers. The spot was known during the Revolution and in the early part of this century as Tioga Point. Tioga (meaning *the meeting of the waters*), originally the name of the place, is still the legal name in Pennsylvania of the river, which in New York is called Chemung. Prior to the Revolution, and as far back as 1737, when Conrad Weiser, the celebrated interpreter and Indian agent, made his first visit to the Six Nations, it was the site of the Indian town Diahoga, the most extensive Indian settlement within the jurisdiction of Pennsylvania north of Shamokin, it being on the main trail of the Six Nations from the Wyoming valley to the north. Here the paths diverged, that to Genesee and Niagara following up the Tioga, while that to Onondaga followed for some distance further up the Susquehanna.

The first white man who made this place, then becoming known as Tioga and Tioga Point, his home, was John Secord, who in the early summer of 1778 had here a cabin and some cattle, and tilled the soil. It was at this place in that year that Butler, and perhaps Brandt, with their English and Indians, rendezvoused and prepared for their descent on Wyoming, and hither they returned after the massacre. When they took their final departure, Secord went with them, and disappears from our history. In September, 1778, Colonel Hartley, with a force of four hundred men, came as far north as this place, and burned Tioga, and Queen Esther's palace and town. In the following year, during his expedition against the Indians, General Sullivan made Tioga the base of his operations. He ascended the river, arriving here with three thousand five hundred men on the 11th of August, and erected block houses and a stockade, extending across the peninsula from river to river, called Fort Sullivan. General Clinton pushed across the country from Albany to Otsego Lake, with eighteen hundred men, and floated down the Susquehanna, uniting his forces with Sullivan, August 22d. The whole army lay here until the 27th, when it went on its march of devastation, leaving Tioga a military station, under command of Colonel Shrieve, whence Sullivan derived his supplies, and to which he sent his wounded. The expedition returned here victorious, and on the 4th of October the fort was demolished and the army went down the river to Wyoming.

In 1783 white adventurers and pioneers first crept up the river as far as Tioga Point. The first settler after the war of whom there is any positive information was Benjamin Patterson, who *squatted* on the east side of the Susquehanna, as did, shortly after, one Miller and one Moore. About 1783 a man named Andreas Budd erected a cabin on the point, and in the next year Jacob Snell, from Stroudsburg, settled west of the Tioga, where, on the 5th of July, 1784, was born the first white native—the late Major Abraham Snell. In 1784, or early in 1785, Matthias Hollenback, of Wilkes-Barre, opened here a trading-house.

In May, 1786, the Susquehanna company issued a grant for a township, to be called Athens, and in May and June of that year it was surveyed, and the village plat laid out by Colonel John Jenkins, Colonel John Franklin, and



Colonel Elisha Satterlee. The site of the village was granted by Pennsylvania, May 17, 1785, to Josiah Lockhart, of Lancaster, under lottery warrant Number one, the land being embraced within the purchase from the Indians of October, 1784, but the first settlements were made under the Connecticut title by New England people. Colonel Satterlee and his brother-in-law, Major Elisha Mathewson, came up from Wyoming and made improvements in 1787, and the next year settled here permanently. Colonel Franklin built a house in 1787, and was intending to settle here the same year, but was arrested for high treason against the State of Pennsylvania, and confined in irons in Philadelphia. It was alleged that the Connecticut settlers, of whom he was the recognized leader, were about to erect a new State in Northern Pennsylvania, with Franklin as governor. He was detained in prison nearly two years, and, immediately after his release in 1789, settled permanently in Athens. Franklin, Satterlee, and Mathewson, were the most prominent of the early settlers; they had all served in the war, were in Wyoming during the Yankee and Pennamite troubles, and had been here with Sullivan. In 1796, a warrant for a Masonic lodge, still in existence, was granted; 1797 an academy, afterwards endowed by the State, and now in a very flourishing condition, was organized; in the summer of 1800 the post office was established; in 1812 the first church—Presbyterian—was organized. Athens was incorporated as a borough in 1832, and has now a population of about one thousand five hundred. The continuation of the Lehigh Valley railroad passes through it; and just above the borough limits, but within the township of Athens, at a new station called SAYRE, connection is made with the Geneva, Ithaca, and Athens, and the Southern Central railroads.

BARCLAY covers the coal fields of the Towanda and Fall Creek companies, and the large saw-mills of the Schraeder land company. BARCLAY, FALL CREEK, GRAYDON, and CARBON RUN in LeRoy township, are mining villages. The land is owned by the companies, and the business is carried on by them. It is said that but one freeholder lives upon the mountain. The Barclay railroad connects the mines with the Pennsylvania and New York railroad at Towanda. The Barclay mines and railroad are at present operated by the Erie railway company, who hold a lease of the works. The township was cut off from Franklin in 1867. Mining and lumbering is the only business carried on in the township.

BURLINGTON was one of the original townships at the organization of the county, and lies on the Sugar creek between Towanda and Troy. The great thoroughfare between the North and West branches of the Susquehanna, known as the Sheshequin Path passed through this town, and soon after the close of the Revolution settlers began to push up the creek. The Susquehanna company's township—Juddsburg—which covered a large part of Burlington, was granted in the summer of 1786, and about that time Joseph Ballard, John Clark, Moses Calkins, Stephen Ballard, and Jacob Swaine, were found settled along the creek. They were earnest defenders of the Connecticut title, and held to their rights with great pertinacity. They manifested the same enterprise in improving as in maintaining their rights, so that this has become one of the leading townships in the county. Nehemiah Allen and John McKean were among the prominent persons who came in soon after. General Samuel McKean was, for a number of years, one of the most prominent citizens of the county, and held various offices of



trust, having reached the United States Senate, where he held his seat for six years. In 1825 the township was divided, the western part taking the name of West Burlington. BURLINGTON borough, near the line dividing the two townships, is a village of some business, and the most important point on the creek between Towanda and Troy. Mountain Lake, near the borough, is a place of resort for pleasure parties. LUTHER'S MILLS and WEST BURLINGTON each are places of considerable business.

CANTON was originally a part of Burlington, but the line dividing Luzerne county in 1804, divided also the township, and that part of it remaining in Luzerne took the name of Canton. It is situated on the head waters of the Towanda, whose broad and beautiful valley contains some of the best farms in the county. The first settlements were made in 1796, '97, and '98, by the families of Ezra Spalding, Ebenezer Byxbe, Ashmun Gillett, and some others. The town has increased rapidly in wealth and population. CANTON borough, incorporated in 1864, is pleasantly situated on the Williamsport and Elmira railroad, is an important centre for business, and for shipping of agricultural products. MINNEQUA, two miles above, also on the railroad, is becoming famous as a watering place. During the season the house is filled with guests seeking health and rest. The mineral spring on the premises has already attained great celebrity for its medicinal qualities. ALBA, in the northern part of the township, made a borough in 1863, is a thriving place. EAST CANTON is a place of some business, and contains a number of pleasant private residences.

COLUMBIA was taken from Smithfield in 1813, and is a fine dairy region. About 1798, the whole township was an unbroken forest. Two brothers by the name of Ballard, Nathaniel Morgan, and some others, were among the first emigrants. The borough of SYLVANIA, in the southern part, was incorporated in 1853. AUSTINVILLE is a place of considerable business. COLUMBIA CROSS ROADS and SNEDEKERVILLE are stations on the Williamsport and Elmira railroad of some importance.

FRANKLIN was organized in 1819, from territory taken from Canton, Troy, and Burlington, and lies in the valley of the Towanda creek. FRANKLIN DALE in the east, and WEST FRANKLIN in the west of the township, are small villages. David Allen and Elisha Wilcox were among its first settlers. The flats along the creek are covered by good farms, and the hill sides, though steep, contain good grazing land.

GRANVILLE was erected into a separate township in 1831, out of parts of Franklin, Burlington, and Troy. GRANVILLE CORNERS, GRANVILLE CENTER, WEST GRANVILLE, and the SUMMIT, the latter on the Williamsport and Elmira railroad, are quiet little villages. The soil affords fine pasture, and grazing is the principal business of its people.

HERRICK is situated on high table land, and is among the latest settled townships of the county. In the southern part of the township is a large Irish population from Ballibay, Ireland, who are among the most industrious and intelligent people of the country. Raising of cattle and butter making are the principal employments of the people. The township was set off from Wyalusing in 1837.

LEROY was constituted a township out of territory taken from Canton and Franklin in 1835, and was settled by the Holcombs about 1796. Along the creek



the land is fertile, but a large part of the township is still covered with forest. The village of LeRoy is pleasantly situated on the Towanda creek.

LITCHFIELD was taken from Athens in 1821. It began to be settled in 1788 by Thomas Park, who was soon followed by Elijah Wolcott and others. Since that time the improvements have been rapid. Litchfield, near the centre, is the most considerable village in the township.

The same year, 1821, MONROE was set off from Burlington and Towanda. The valley of the Towanda here is broad, and afforded an inviting home to the pioneer adventurer. Among its first settlers were Reed Brockaway and Noadiah Cramer, at Monroeton, John Schraeder, near Greenwood, and the Fowlers, on the branch that bears their name. The southern part of the township is mountainous, and covered with timber, except along the south or Fowler branch, where there is a belt of good farming land. MONROETON was incorporated as a borough in 1855. At this point is the junction of the Sullivan and Erie with the Barclay railroad, and is a place of some importance. At GREENWOOD, two miles west, on the Towanda, is a large tannery, and a manufactory for small wooden articles. Lumbering and agriculture are the chief occupations of the people.

ORWELL, whose original name was Mt. Zion, had been established as a township prior to the organization of the county, and is a fine grazing district. It was settled in the beginning of the present century by Francis Mesusan and Dan Russell, on the Wysox creek, and Asahel Johnson, Samuel Wells, Levi Frisbie, and Capt. Josiah Grant, in other parts of the township. ORWELL HILL and POTTERVILLE are the principal places in the township.

OVERTON was made a separate township in 1853, out of territory taken from Albany, Franklin, and Monroe. The principal place is OVERTON, in the south-eastern corner. The township is sparsely settled, by far the greater part of its area being wild land.

PIKE was taken from Orwell and a part of the old township of Rush, which was included in Bradford, and erected into a township in 1813. The first settlements were made along its northern part, on the Wyalusing, in 1794-6, by Abraham Taylor, Elisha Keeler, Isaac Brownson, Dimon Bostwick, and others. The northern part is a high table land, on the top of which is LERAYSVILLE, named in honor of Vincent LeRay, whose father, a Frenchman, owned about eighty thousand acres of land in the north-eastern part of the county. It was made a borough in 1863. An attempt was made to establish here a company on the plan of community of labor. The proprietors were called the Phalanx, but the experiment proved a failure. STEVENSVILLE, on the creek, is a place of considerable business. The traveler will find as good farms and as fine herds of cattle in this and the adjoining townships as anywhere in the county.

RIDGBURY was constituted a township in 1818. It had previously formed parts of Athens and Wells. RIDGBURY and MIDDLETOWN, on Bentley creek, which runs through the western part, are the most important places.

ROME, so named because it is on the same parallel of latitude as Rome in Italy, was erected into a township from parts of Orwell and Sheshequin in 1831. About 1798 settlers began to locate farms on the Wysox, within the present bounds of the township, among whom were Nathaniel P. Moody, Godfrey Vought, Henry Leut, Frederick Eiklor, and Enoch Towner. The township





contains many good farms, and an intelligent, enterprising population. **ROME** borough, in the south-western part, incorporated in 1861, is pleasantly situated on the **Wysox**.

**SMITHFIELD**, one of the original townships, is located on high ground, and is noted as one of the best butter-making districts in the county. Settlements in it were begun in 1796 by Reuben Mitchell, who was shortly after followed by others. **EAST SMITHFIELD**, near the centre, is a thriving place. Here is located the Congregational church, which was organized in Poultney, Vermont, in 1801, and also a beautiful monument erected in memory of those from the township who fell in the war for the Union.

**SPRINGFIELD**, which adjoins Smithfield on the west, and which it resembles in the character of its soil, inhabitants, and productions, and from which it was taken in 1813, has for its principal places **LEONA**, **SPRINGFIELD**, and **MILL CITY**. In the year 1803, the solitary wilderness which covered this township was broken by the pioneer families of Captain John Harkness, and Ezekiel & Austin Leonard, who named the township from the place of their emigration in Massachusetts.

**SOUTH CREEK**, on the north of Springfield and Columbia, was set off from Wells and Ridgbury in 1835, and is intersected from north to south by the creek which gave the name to the township, and beside of which runs the Williamsport and Elmira railroad, on which are the **STATE LINE** and **GILLETT'S** stations, where are pleasantly located villages. The soil is adapted to grazing, especially on the high lands which border the creek valley.

**STANDING STONE** derives its name from a high rock standing in the opposite side of the river, which has been a land-mark from the earliest settlement of the country. It was erected into a township out of parts of Herriek and Wysox in 1841. Settlements were commenced in this township as early as 1774, by Lemuel Fitch, Simon Spalding, Henry Birney, Richard Fitzgerald, and Anthony Rummerfield, on the creek which bears his name, and where he erected the first saw-mill built in the county. These settlements were broken up by the Indians and Tories during the Revolutionary war;—Fitch being taken off and died in captivity; Spalding enlisted in the Continental army. Birney and Fitzgerald returned to their old homes soon after the close of the war, and others followed subsequently. Along the river are fine grain-producing farms; those on the hills are better adapted to pasturage. **STANDING STONE** and **RUMMERFIELD** are stations on the Pennsylvania and New York division of the Lehigh Valley railroad.

**SHESHEQUIN**, on the east side of the river, opposite the old Indian town from which it receives its name, was set off from Ulster in 1820. Here had been the meadows and cornfields of the red man from time immemorial, and to the army of General Sullivan afforded a pleasant camping ground, and so attracted the attention of some of the soldiers in that campaign, that immediately after the close of the war, in 1783, General Simon Spalding, Judge Obadiah Gore, and a number of other families, located themselves on its broad flats. The settlers rapidly increased, so that, for a number of years, Sheshequin was the source of supply for the pioneer settlers of all the northern part of the county. Then General Spalding, Joseph Kinney, Esq., and Colonel Joseph Kingsbury were among the leading spirits in defending the Connecticut title, and were active in locating settlers on the company's rights. The early prominence of this township has been



sustained by the succeeding generations, so that Sheshequin has ever been considered among the foremost of the townships of the county. Here was the home of Mrs. Julia A. Scott, *nee* Kinney, whose sweet poems have made the lovely vale of Sheshequin immortal. The village of SHESHEQUIN is a collection of farm houses, a quiet, beautiful place, bordered with productive farms, and containing an intelligent and enterprising population.

TERRY was organized in 1859. Settlements were begun here prior to the Revolutionary war, but were not resumed till 1788, when Jonathan Terry, in whose honor the township was named, moved his family into the place. For a number of years the settlements were confined to the river flats, but within a few years past the back farms have been greatly improved, and now are the most productive in the township. TERRYTOWN and NEW ERA are the most important places.

TOWANDA was one of the original townships. A little above the mouth of the creek is the site of one of the national cemeteries of the Nanticoke Indians.

TOWANDA, the county seat of Bradford county, Pennsylvania, is located upon the right bank of the Susquehanna river, and in the centre of a thickly populated region, whose mineral and agricultural resources are abundant . . . The borough proper is located on the William Means patent of 1807, together with the Irwin patent of 1830, and others adjoining on the north. It was laid out in 1812 by Mr. Means. Thomas Overton, father of Edward Overton, donated to the county the square where the court house stands. The town grew but slowly, and in 1820 there were only four houses on Main street, above the court house, and two of them were built of logs. Main street was then called Tioga Point road. It was incorporated in 1828. The first survey for the Barclay road was made as early as 1839.

The Towanda of 1876 is a thriving borough of about six thousand inhabitants, with mining, manufacturing, and commercial interests aggregating millions annually, presenting many advantages to the capitalist, laborer, manufacturer, business man, or persons seeking a home amid an intellectual community, in a healthy locality. It has superior advantages for economical manufactures; coal—both anthracite and bituminous—of the finest quality, being abundant and cheap. The dam in the river, formerly used for the canal, with the canal bed, furnish an inexhaustible water power, sufficient of itself to build up a flourishing manufacturing town. The dam has a fall of fourteen feet, and there is little doubt that this source of wealth will be speedily utilized. Iron ore abounds in the hills; and the excellent railroad facilities, together with these advantages, are certain to make Towanda at no distant day a great iron manufacturing point.

There are three completed lines of railroads centering in Towanda, giving an easy and direct connection with all parts of the country, and affording every facility for the shipment of manufactured products, as well as a large and cheap supply of that great necessity, coal. Other important roads have been projected, whose completion will be of great advantage to all the interests of the borough.

In the rural cemetery, near the town, on the high bank overlooking the Susquehanna, lie the remains of Judge Wilmot, the celebrated author of the "Wilmot Proviso." His grave is marked by a plain headstone bearing the following inscription: "DAVID WILMOT, born January 20, 1814; died March 16, 1868, aged



54 years. "Neither slavery nor involuntary servitude shall ever exist in any part of said territory, except for crime, whereof the party shall first be duly convicted."

**NORTH TOWANDA**, set off from the old township in 1851, is a fine farming region.

**TROY**, at the head of Sugar creek, was separated from Burlington in 1815, and the borough incorporated in 1844. It is situated on the Williamsport and Elmira railroad, and is the centre of the great butter producing section of the county, from which thousands of tons are annually shipped to the market. In population, business, and wealth it ranks next to Towanda. East Troy, three miles down the creek, is a place of some importance, with many excellent farms and pleasant homes surrounding it.

**TUSCARORA** is on the highland separating the Wyalusing and Tuscarora creeks, and formed a part of Wyalusing until 1830, when it was erected into a township. It is still frequently called by the name of Springhill, which was given it by the Susquehanna company. It is a superior grazing region, and contains many valuable farms. It began to be settled early in the present century, but since has been rapidly improved.

**WARREN**, in the extreme north-eastern part of the county, and **WINDHAM**, adjoining it on the west, were erected out of parts of Orwell and Rush in 1813. The face of the county is broken by the valleys of the Wappasaning, the Wysox, and the Apolacon. The flats bordering the streams are adapted to tillage, while the ridges are fine grazing lands. In 1796 Jephtha Brainerd and some other families settled on the Wappasaning, and two years after James Bowen, Wm. Arnold, Mr. Harding, and Mr. Gibson, settled on the south branch of the same creek, and in 1800 Ebenezer Coburn and his brother Jonathan settled farther east. This part of the county now contains a thrifty and enterprising population.

**WELLS**, in the north-west, was an unbroken wilderness until 1800, when Lemuel Gaylord purchased a farm on Seeley creek and made a settlement there. In 1803 he was followed by Solomon and Hamar Judson. The population had increased sufficiently within the next ten years to create a demand for a new township, which was granted in 1813. It is a good farming region, steadily increasing in wealth and population.

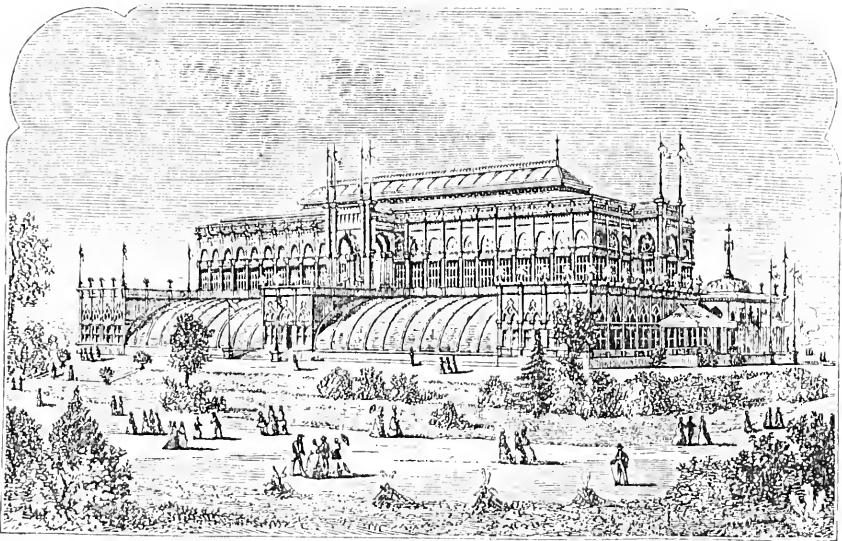
**WILMOT**, named in honor of the late David Wilmot, lies west of the river on the southern border of the county. Bordering the river are old farms which were settled prior to the Revolutionary war, but the hills back of them have until recently been covered with timber. The township has been rapidly settling up for the past few years, and with the disappearance of the timber, farms are being improved and rendered productive. The township, as the lines now are, was organized in 1859.

**ULSTER** was one of the original townships; it lies on the west side of the river, and like Sheshequin, was settled soon after the close of the Revolution. Captain Benjamin Clark, Adrial Simons, and Solomon Tracy, were among its pioneer settlers. It contains the villages of **ULSTER**, which covers the site of the Indian town of Sheshiequanink, and Milan, both stations on the Pennsylvania and New York railroad, and places of some business.



WYALUSING is a small part of the old township, organized in 1790. It covers the site of Freidenshütten, the Indian Mission, and was the earliest settled of any township in the county. Agriculture is the chief occupation of the people. The principal villages are Wyalusing, on the river, and Camptown, on the Wyalusing creek, five miles above its mouth. SUGAR RUN, on the Pennsylvania and New York railroad, is noted for its shipments of bark and lumber. A few rods below the station stands the monument erected to mark the location of the Indian Mission. HOMET'S FERRY, FRENCHTOWN station, near the upper line of the township, is on the old Miciscum, the Indian meadows.

WYSOX, also on the east side of the river, is one of the leading agricultural townships of the county. It was one of the original townships, and began to be settled in 1776. The large farm of V. E. and Joseph Piolet covers the location of these early settlements. MYERSBURG, two miles up the Wysox, is a place of some business. WYSOX, on the Pennsylvania and New York railroad, is a mart for a large hay, grain, and butter trade. EAST TOWANDA, just opposite the borough, with which it is connected by a bridge, is a village which has sprung up within a few years, and is rapidly growing.



HORTICULTURAL HALL, CENTENNIAL EXHIBITION.



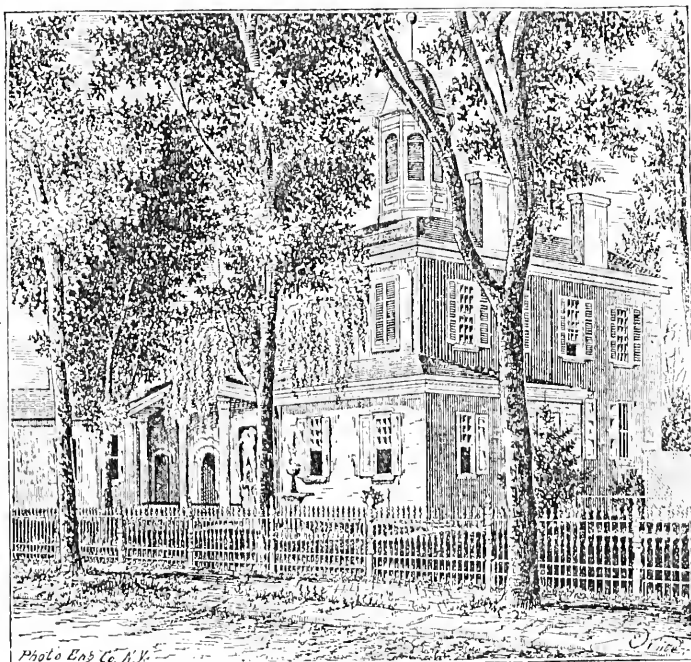


## BUCKS COUNTY.

[With acknowledgments to Joseph Thomas, M.D., and W. W. H. Davis.]



BUCKS was one of the three original counties established by the Founder of Pennsylvania in 1682. It took its name from a district in England, from whence came a number of the passengers by the Welcome. In a letter to the Free Society of Traders, early in 1683, William Penn speaks of it as Buckingham county. The Proprietary called together the first Assembly at Chester, on the 4th of December, 1682, and then



BUCKS COUNTY COURT HOUSE, DOYLESTOWN.

[From a Photograph by C. Garwood, Baltimore.]

we have the first record of the county. At that time its northern boundary extended to the Kittatinny mountain, "or as far as the land might be purchased from the Indians." The formation of Northampton county in 1752 reduced the county to its present size.

At the session of the Assembly alluded to, the members from Bucks were William Yardley, Samuel Darke, Robert Lucas, Nicholas Wahn, John Wood,



John Clows, Thomas Fitzwater, Robert Hall, and James Boyden. Most of them were personal friends of Penn, and had either accompanied or preceded him to the Province. At a council held at Philadelphia on the 23d of first month, 1683, in the presence of the Proprietary and Governor, it was ordered that the seal of the county of Bucks be *a tree and a vine*. At the time of its organization William Penn selected an extensive tract of fine land on the banks of the Delaware, four or five miles above where Bristol now stands, which he named Pennsylvania Manor. This tract originally contained over eight thousand acres. It was not until the 8th of second month, 1685, that the bounds of the county were determined. From the proceedings of the Council at that date, we learn that "the bounds of the county of Bucks and Philadelphia should be as follows: To begin at the mouth of Poetquessink creek, on Delaware, and so by the said creek, and to take in the townships of Southampton and Warminster. In obedience thereto and confirmation thereof, the president and council have seriously weighed and considered the same, have and do hereby agree and order that the bounds between the said counties shall be thus: to begin at the mouth of the Poetquessink creek, on Delaware river, and go up thence along the said creek by the several courses thereof to a south-west and north-west line, which said line divides the land belonging to Joseph Growdon and company, from Southampton township; from thence by a line of marked trees along the said line one hundred and twenty perches more or less; from thence north-west by a line of marked trees, which said line in part divides the land belonging to Nicholas Moore from Southampton and Warminster townships, continuing the said line as far as the said county shall extend."

Bucks county has the Delaware river for its north-eastern and south-eastern boundary, being located on the great bend of that stream. Lehigh and Northampton on the north, and Montgomery on the west and south, are the bordering counties. It is about forty miles in length, with an average breadth of fifteen miles. The principal streams are the Neshaminy, Tolucon, and Durham creeks within the county, and the head-waters of the Perkiomen flowing into Montgomery county. The surface of the country is gently undulating, except in the northern part of the county, where ridges of the South mountain or Lehigh hills enroach upon the river plateau.

Three distinct geological belts cross the county, each imparting its peculiar character to the soil and surface. Strata comprising those of the primitive formation, such as gneiss, hornblende, mica, slate, &c., occupy the south-eastern portion of the county, forming a gently undulating surface, with a moderately fertile soil. Along the river, however, the land is very productive. Next to this, occupying a broad belt and including a large portion of the county, is a red shale, accompanied in some portions with sandstone and conglomerates. This affords a very good soil, well adapted to grass and cereals. This being a formation of the secondary order, there is an out-cropping in a few places of limestone—in Solebury and Buckingham townships. There is also a deposit of hematite iron ore found in this neighborhood, which has only recently been explored. In the upper portion of the county is the third geological belt, composed of primary rocks of the gneiss family, the variety called trap, and the lower sandstone. The trap rock comprises a series of parallel elevations, attain-



ing, in Haycock and Rockhill townships, mountainous proportions. The spur in the former township is called Haycock mountain, from a supposed resemblance to a cock of hay, and the township took its name from this fact. This belt of igneous rock, beginning at the Delaware river, in the neighborhood of Bridgton, extends through parts of Noekamixon and Tinicum, Haycock, Rockhill, Richland, and Milford townships, and thence through Montgomery and Chester counties. Enclosed, however, among these hills are several rich limestone valleys. One of these is the valley of Durham Creek, at the mouth of which once stood the Durham Cave, or Devil's Hole, as it was called; but during the past thirty years the limestone of which the cave was composed has been gradually removed for use at the iron furnaces there, until now no trace of the cave remains.

Iron ore of a rich quality also abounds in several places in the northern part of the county. Lead is found at Galena, in New Britain township, and the mines were successfully worked here for several years. In the southern end of the county a number of minerals in veins of rocks of igneous origin, which here crop out, are found, and among these plumbago. In Southampton township, near the Buck tavern, a mine of this mineral was formerly worked with success.

At Blackman's or Long's Mill, in Durham township, as early as 1727, iron works were in successful operation. Here was fabricated from the ore, about 1756, by means of charcoal for fuel, a primitive style of stove, or furnace, pieces of which may still be seen in some parts of the county. Cannon ball, etc., were also cast here, used in the Revolution. These works were finally abandoned at this place, and extensive ones erected at the river, near Reiglesville, where the Lilly fire and burglar-proof safes were once manufactured. Messrs. Cooper & Hewitt now manufacture pig-iron only.

The resources of the county are mainly agriculture. The soil along the margins of the streams is very fertile, producing large crops of cereals, but the farmers, in late years, have turned their attention considerably to stock raising and the dairy. Immense quantities of butter and milk are sent to the Philadelphia market; and Bucks county butter has obtained a celebrity equal to that of Chester county. Hay is also a staple production, and the soil is well adapted to timothy and clover, extensive shipments of the former finding a ready sale in Philadelphia.

The first settlements within the present limits of Bucks county were made by the Swedes, about the year 1670. The Swedes were familiar with the country on the Delaware as high up as the "Falls." From the records of the court at Upland, we learn that a petition was presented on the 23d of November, 1677, for a settlement and town in that locality. The number of Swedish petitioners was twenty-four. The first English settlement in Pennsylvania proper was near the Lower Falls in Bucks county, by virtue of patents from Sir Edward Andros. These were principally Quakers, who, when the colony passed into the possession of William Penn, as proprietor, had already established themselves. In fact, so prosperous was this section, that strong expectations, says Mr. Buck, were entertained by many of them at first that the city of Philadelphia would be located either at Pennsbury or Bristol, and this perhaps might have been the case had not the river channel been deemed too shallow for ship navigation up so far as those places.



Among the earliest inhabitants were William Yardley, James Harrison, Phineas Pemberton, William Biles, an eminent preacher, William Darke, Lyonel Brittain, William Beaks, etc. And soon afterwards, there, and near Neshaminy creek, Richard Hough, Henry Baker, Nicholas Waln, John Otter, Robert Hall; and in Wrightstown, John Chapman and James Rateliff, a noted preacher in the society. In the year 1683, Thomas Janney, a celebrated preacher among the Quakers, settled near the Falls, with his family and others who at that time arrived from Cheshire, in England. After twelve years residence here, he returned to England and died there; a man of good reputation, character, and example. In 1682, John Scarborough, a coachsmith, arrived in the country with his son John, then a youth, and settled in Middletown township, but he afterwards returned to England and left his possessions to his son. John Chapman came over in 1684, and was entertained some time at Phineas Pemberton's at the Falls, who had then made some progress in improvements. Afterwards Chapman went to his purchase in Wrightstown, where, within about twelve months afterwards, his wife had two sons at one time, whence he called the place Twinborough. At this time Chapman's place was the farthest back in the woods of any English settlement; and the Indians being then numerous, much frequented his house, and were very kind to him and his family, as well as to those who came after him, often supplying them with corn and other provisions, at that time very scarce. Thomas Langhorne came the same year, but died soon after.

The first settlers generally came from England, and were of the middle rank, and chiefly Friends; many of them had first settled at the Falls, but soon after removed back, as it was then called, into the woods. As they came away in the reigns of Charles, James, William, and Anne, they brought with them not only the industry, frugality, and strict domestic discipline of their education, but also a portion of those high-toned political impressions that then prevailed in England.

The first surveys in what was then called Buckingham, were as early as 1683, and the greater part were located before 1703. It is not easy to ascertain who made the first improvements, but most probably, from circumstances, it was Thomas and John Bye, and George Pownall, Edward Henry, and Roger Hartley; Dr. Streper and Wm. Cooper came early; Richard Burgess, John Scarborough, grandfather of the preacher of that name, and Henry Paxson, were also early settlers. John and Richard Lundy, John Large, and James Lenox, and Wm. Lacey, John Worstall, Jacob Holcomb, Joseph Linton, Joseph Fell, Matthew Hughes, Hugh Ely, and perhaps Richard Norton, came from Long Island about 1705.

The first adventurers were chiefly members of the Falls meeting, and are said to have frequently attended it, and often on foot. In the year 1700 leave was granted by the quarterly meeting to hold a meeting for worship at Buckingham, which was first at the house of William Cooper.

On the Manor of Pennsbury William Penn caused to be erected a spacious country residence. Upon this spot he had concentrated many a bright vision of quiet enjoyment, in the midst of his own family, and surrounded by the anticipated honors of his station as Proprietary. He erected, or caused to be erected





during his absence, a magnificent mansion-house, sixty feet long by forty deep, with offices and out-houses at the sides, fronting upon a beautiful garden which extended down to the river. It was in his day, and for many years afterward, the marvel of the neighborhood. He had the happiness to reside here for a short period with his family in 1700-1, and entertained much company in his public capacity. The increasing cares and responsibilities of the Province, and the peculiar state of the times, required his presence in England, and he never afterward enjoyed that quiet retirement for which he had so luxuriously provided. The mansion and out-houses were neglected during his absence. A large leaden water reservoir, which had been erected on the top of the mansion to guard against fire, became leaky, and injured the walls and furniture of the house, so that it fell into premature decay, and it was taken down just before the Revolution. After the peace, the whole estate was sold out of the Penn family.

In addition to this manor, Penn laid out in the township of Wrightstown, and also in Newtown, a park, or as it is frequently called, a town square. The lands selected were considered the most beautiful in the township; of an oval, smooth surface, having no chasms or large streams of water within their limits; the soil rich and covered with heavy timber. The parks were perfect squares, near the centre of the township, and contained each about six hundred and forty acres of land. They were to be exempt from cultivation or settlement, and to be kept for purposes similar to the parks of England; but were only continued in this manner for thirty-five or forty years, when the inhabitants of the township became dissatisfied with their continuance, as they produced much inconvenience to them from many causes. Upon these representations being made to the Proprietary government, the parks were divided between the land-holders, in proportion to the land each one held in the townships.

We have already stated that Phineas Pemberton held the first commission as clerk of the courts of Bucks. The first justices of the peace for the county were Arthur Cook, Joseph Growdon, William Yardley, Thomas Janney, William Biles, Nicholas Wain, John Brock, and Henry Baker.

The first purchase of land from the Indians above the Neshaminy, in Bucks, made by William Markham, the agent of William Penn, was in 1682. This purchase was to be bounded by the river Delaware on the north-east, and the Neshaminy on the north-west, and was to extend as far back as a man could walk in three days. It is stated that Penn and the Indians began to walk out this land, commencing at the mouth of the Neshaminy, and walking up the Delaware; and in one day and a half they got to a spruce tree, near Baker's creek, when Penn concluded this would include as much land as he would want at present. A line was drawn, and marked from the spruce tree to the Neshaminy.

From the period of this purchase, numerous white settlers established themselves northward as far as Durham, in the upper part of the county, where a furnace was erected; and some of the scattering frontier establishments of the white people reached as far as the Lehigh hills. The Indians, becoming uneasy at the approach of these settlements of the white people, desired to have a limit placed upon these encroachments, and a treaty was held at Durham in 1734, which was continued at Pennsbury in May, 1735, and concluded at Philadelphia in August, 1737; in which the limits of the tract, as described in the deed of



1682, were confirmed, and it was agreed that the "walk" which was to determine the extent of the territory should be performed. It seems to have been expected by the Indians, that this "walk" would not extend beyond the Lehigh hills, about forty miles from the place where it was to begin; but it was the desire of the Proprietary in 1737 to extend the walk as far as possible, so as to include the land in the Forks of the Delaware, and even further up that river, to obtain, if possible, the possession of the Minisink land—a very desirable tract along the river above the Blue mountains.

The time appointed for the walk was the 19th of September, 1737. The place agreed upon as the point to commence was at a chestnut tree standing a little above the present site of Wrightstown. The walk was under the superintendence of Timothy Smith, then sheriff of Bucks county, and Benjamin Eastburn, surveyor-general. The persons employed by government to perform the walk were famous for their abilities as fast walkers, and they were to have as a compensation five pounds in money and five hundred acres of land in the purchase. They were Edward Marshall, a native of Bucks county, a noted hunter, chain carrier, etc.; James Yeates, also a native of Bucks county, a tall slim man of much agility and speed of foot; and Solomon Jennings, a remarkable stout and strong man. At sunrise they started from the chestnut tree alluded to above Wrightstown, accompanied by a number of persons, some of whom carried refreshments for them. They walked moderately at first, but soon quickened their pace, so that the Indians frequently called to them to *walk* and not to *run*; but these remonstrances produced no effect, and most of the Indians left them in anger, saying they were cheated. A number of people were collected about twenty miles from the starting point to see them pass. First came Yeates, stepping as light as a feather, accompanied by several persons on horseback; after him, but out of sight, came Jennings, with a strong, steady step; and yet, far behind, came Marshall, apparently careless, swinging a hatchet alternately in one hand to balance the motion of his body, and eating a biscuit. Bets ran in favor of Yeates. Jennings and two of the Indian walkers gave out before the end of the first day, being unable to keep up with the others. But Marshall, Yeates, and one Indian kept on, and arrived at sunset on the north side of the Blue mountain. At sunrise next morning they started again, but when crossing a stream at the foot of the mountain Yeates became faint and fell, Marshall turned back and supported him until some of the attendants came up, and then continued the walk by himself. At noon, the hour when the walk was to terminate, he had reached a spur of the Second or Broad mountain, estimated to be eighty-six miles from the starting point.

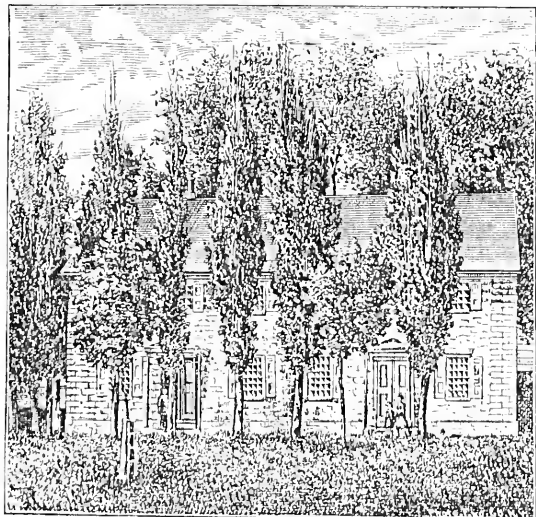
Having thus reached the furthest possible point to the north-westward, it now remained to draw a line from the end of the walk to the river Delaware. The course of this line not being described in the deed of purchase, the agent of the Proprietaries, instead of running by the nearest course to the river, ran north-eastward across the country, so as to strike the Delaware near the mouth of the Lackawaxen, thus extending far up the river, taking in all the Minisink territory, and many thousand acres more than if they had run by the nearest course to the Delaware. It is well known that the Delaware Indians immediately saw and complained of the manner in which these things were done as a



fraud upon them, nor would they relinquish the land until compelled to do so by the deputies of the Six Nations, at the treaty of 1742. The proceedings of this walk are mentioned as one of the causes of the hostile feelings of the Indians, which eventually led to war and bloodshed; and the first murder committed by them in the Province was on the very land they believed themselves cheated out of. The Indians always contended that the walk should be up the river by the nearest path, as was done in the first day and a half's walk by William Penn, and not by the compass across the country, as was done in this case. It is stated that afterwards, when the Surveyor-General and other persons to assist him passed over this ground, it employed them about four days to walk to the extent

of the purchase. Jennings, who did not hold out to cross the Lehigh, never recovered his health, and lived but a few years after. Yeates, when taken out of the stream at the foot of the mountain, was quite blind, and died in three days afterwards. Marshall lived and died on Marshall's Island, opposite Tinicum township, on the Delaware, aged about ninety years.

By an act of the General Assembly, passed March 20, 1721, the county buildings for Bucks were directed to be built at Newtown, as being more central and



FRIENDS' MEETING-HOUSE, SOLESBURY.

[From a Photograph by C. Garrod.]

convenient for the people. Previous to this the courts and county business had been transacted at Bristol for nearly a quarter of a century, but as the population kept steadily extending itself upwards more into the country, the change was a necessity.

To Bucks county belongs the honor of having one of the earliest seminaries of learning in the State. The Rev. Mr. Tennent came from Ireland in 1718, and three years after settled in Bensalem; from thence, about 1726, he removed to the Neshaminy, in Warwick township, and established an academy which was more particularly intended for the education of ministers for the Presbyterian church. In consequence of having been constructed of logs, this school has been popularly denominated the "Log College."

During many years after the first settlement of the county the kind-hearted and industrious Friends cleared and cultivated their lands in peace, contented with their own lot, and having no cause of quarrel with others. Between them and the Indians who dwelt among them hospitality and other kind offices had always been reciprocated, and although the black cloud of Indian warfare was



rumbling and thundering beyond the Blue mountains in 1755-1760, yet the Quakers had little to fear from it. During several generations, the simple history of the colonists of Bucks county was, that they lived in quiet and improved their farms. But at length people of other races and different religious and political opinions began to settle among and around them; and in process of time the desolating tide of the Revolutionary war swept to and fro across their once quiet county. The American army, late in the year 1776, retreated across New Jersey into this county. General Washington defended all the passes of the river from Coryell's ferry to Bristol. His headquarters were at Newtown, while he was urging upon Congress the necessity of reinforcing the army. The enemy posted themselves along the Jersey side of the Delaware, waiting for the ice to form a bridge by which they might reach Philadelphia.

The affairs of America at this time wore a very serious aspect. A considerable part of New Jersey was in possession of the enemy. The American army had lost during the campaign near five thousand men by captivity and the sword; and the few remaining regular troops, amounting to only two thousand men, were upon the eve of being disbanded, as their enlistments had been only for one year. In this dilemma, Congress invested Washington with great power; and the Council of Safety at Philadelphia, on the 17th of December, recommended General Washington to issue his orders for the militia of Pennsylvania forthwith to join his army. In pursuance of this call, the militia of Bucks and adjoining counties flocked with alacrity in considerable numbers to Washington's standard, and so reinforced his depleted army that in a short time afterwards he was enabled to move against and defeat the enemy at Trenton.

Soon after the battle, the Hessian prisoners, nearly a thousand in number, with their arms, six brass field pieces, eight standards, and a considerable quantity of munitions of war, were brought through the county on their way to Philadelphia to be sent to Lancaster. The Hessians were well clad, with large knapsacks and spatter-dashes to their legs, while on either side of them as a guard, in single file, were our countrymen, at the end of December in their worn-out summer uniforms, and some even without shoes. General Washington, on the 28th, again made Newtown his headquarters, and after remaining there a few days, he once more crossed the Delaware, and on the 3d of January engaged the enemy at Princeton.

About the close of the year 1776, when the cause of America seemed to be expiring, and the attack on Trenton had not yet been made, Joseph Galloway, a prominent citizen of Bucks county, like many others in the greatest hour of need, deserted his country, doubtless thinking that Britain's powerful arm would soon crush these colonies, and his best policy would therefore be to secure her friendship in time. The people of Bucks were not surprised at this; and their previous suspicions of his loyalty proved not unfounded.

The Legislature of the State, under the new Constitution, at Philadelphia, on the 17th of March, 1777, passed a militia law by which they established a sort of military tribunal in each county, composed of five officers, four sub-lieutenants, with the rank of colonel and lieutenant-colonel respectively. These officers were to hold courts, to class and district the militia, to organize them into companies and regiments, etc. Captain John Lacey, a native of Bucks, was made a





lieutenant-colonel by the militia of his district, and as the duties did not interfere with his position as one of the sub-lieutenants of the county, he acted in both capacities. Colonel Lacey was commissioned a brigadier-general on the 9th of January, 1778, and to him was given the command of the militia between the rivers Schuylkill and Delaware. His instructions from General Washington were to protect the inhabitants and prevent supplies and intercourse with the enemy in Philadelphia. The duties were exceedingly arduous, and owing to the paucity of the force under him, and the number of Tories and well-paid spies in the county, General Lacey found it impossible to carry out his instructions with that rigidity which the exigencies of the case required. On the morning of the 13th of January, a party of British light horsemen entered Bensalem, and took John Vandergrift, the county commissioner, his son, Edward Duffield, and others, prisoners, besides capturing a large quantity of forage, and on several occasions detachments of Lacey's men were surprised and made prisoners by a superior force of the enemy.

After the departure of the British from Philadelphia in June, 1778, the country around that city became tolerably quiet, though at times apprehensions were entertained of an invasion of the enemy from their stronghold at New York. For this purpose the militia were kept in readiness to check any sudden irruption that should be made along the Delaware. On the 12th of October, 1781, at that time stationed at Newtown, they were discharged, with the thanks of General Lacey, in general orders, for the readiness they had exhibited in taking the field in defence of the State.

Through all the Revolutionary contest Bucks county nobly did her duty. In the beginning, for the protection of the Northern colonies, she sent soldiers and money for their relief. When Washington was compelled to retreat through Jersey with his handful of half-clad and starving men before the victorious foe, it was in Bucks county that he raised his standard anew, and her citizens rallying to his assistance, contributed much to give the enemy his first check at Trenton. On all occasions she raised her quotas of men and money, and her patriotism fully equalled that of any of the other counties of the State.

During the war a number of young men, either to escape from serving in the army or paying fines, and yet did not choose to enlist openly with the enemy, found a more profitable employment in secret acts of treachery and piracy among their neighbors, and for which they were amply compensated by the British during their stay in Philadelphia or New York. Among these outlaws were several brothers by the name of Doane. The Doanes were a Quaker family, living in Plumstead township during the Revolution. The father was a worthy man; but his six sons, as they grew to manhood, abandoned all the noble principles of the sect with which they had been reared, and retaining only so much of its outward forms as suited their nefarious schemes, they became a gang of most desperate outlaws. They were professedly Tories, and they drove for a time a very profitable trade in stealing the horses and cattle of their Whig neighbors, and disposing of them to the British army, then in Philadelphia. One of the brothers, Joseph, was teaching school in Plumstead. Two of the brothers had joined the British in Philadelphia, and through them the stolen horses were disposed of, and the proceeds shared. The Doanes at school were often display-



ing their pockets full of guineas, which were at first supposed to be counterfeit; but subsequent events proved their genuineness, and disclosed the source from which they had procured so considerable an amount of gold. Suspicion had long fastened upon the family; they were closely watched; and eventually, about the year 1782, the stealing of a horse belonging to Mr. Shaw, of Plumstead, was distinctly traced to them. This brought upon Mr. Shaw, and a few others who were active in their detection, the combined malignity of the whole banditti; and it was not long before they obtained their revenge. Uniting with themselves another villain of kindred spirit, the whole band, seven in all, including Moses Doane, who was their captain, and Joseph the schoolmaster before mentioned, fell upon Mr. Shaw at the dead of night, in his own house, bruised and lacerated him most cruelly, and decamped with all his horses and many valuables plundered from the house. A son of Mr. Shaw was dispatched to the nearest neighbors for assistance and to raise the hue and cry after the robbers. But these neighbors being Memnonists, conscientiously opposed to bearing arms, and having besides an instinctive dread of danger, declined interfering in the matter; such was the timidity and cautiousness manifested in those times between the nearest neighbors, when of different political sentiments. The young man, however, soon raised a number of neighbors, part of whom came to his father's assistance, and part armed themselves and went in pursuit of the robbers. The latter, after leaving poor Mr. Shaw, had proceeded to the house of Joseph Grier, and robbed him; and then went to a tavern kept by Colonel Robert Robinson, a very corpulent man. Him they dragged from his bed, tied him in a most excruciating position, and placing him naked in the midst of them, whipped him until their ferocity was satiated. They subsequently robbed and abused several other individuals on the same night, and then escaped into Montgomery county. Here they were overtaken, somewhere on Skippach, and so hotly pursued that they were glad to abandon the fine horses on which they rode, and betake themselves to the thicket. Joseph, the schoolmaster, was shot through the cheeks, dropped from his horse, and was taken prisoner. The others effected their escape, and concealed themselves.

The prisoner was taken to Newtown and indicted, but while awaiting trial escaped from jail, fled into New Jersey, and there, under an assumed name, taught school for nearly a year. The Federal government had offered a reward of eight hundred dollars for him or his brothers, dead or alive; and while in a bar-room one evening he heard a man say that he would shoot any one of the Doanes, wherever he might see him, for the sake of the reward. Doane's school-bills were settled very suddenly, and he made his way into Canada.

Moses, the captain of the gang, with two of the brothers, had concealed themselves in a secluded cabin, occupied by a drunken man, near the mouth of Tohickon creek. Mr. Shaw, the father, learning their place of concealment, rallied a party of men, of whom Colonel Hart was made the leader, and surrounded the house. Instead of shooting them down at once, Hart opened the door, and cried out, "Ah! you're here, are you?" The Doanes seized their arms, and shot down Mr. Kennedy, one of the party. Two of the outlaws went through the back window, which seems not to have been sufficiently guarded, and made their escape into the woods. Moses, the captain, who, by the way,



was more of a gentleman than either of the other brothers, surrendered; but immediately on his surrender he was shot down by one of the attacking party. The person who shot him was not, however, *voluntarily* of the party, but was suspected of being implicated with the Doanes in their ill-gotten gains; and it was supposed he shot him to close his mouth against the utterance of testimony against himself. The other two were afterwards taken in Chester county, hung in Philadelphia, and brought home to be interred in Plumstead township. The Doanes were distinguished from their youth for great muscular activity. They could run and jump beyond all competitors, and it is said one of them could jump over a wagon.

Many years afterwards, the young lad Shaw, who had himself received many a severe flogging from Doane the schoolmaster, became a magistrate in Doylestown, and rejoiced in the dignified title of "Squire" Shaw. Sitting one day at his window, whom should he see entering his gate but old Joseph Doane, the traitor to his country, the robber of Shaw's father, the old schoolmaster who had so often flogged him, the refugee from prison, and now a poor, degraded, broken-down old man. Mr. Shaw assumed his magisterial dignity, and met him bluntly at the door with the question, "What business have you with me, sir?" Some inquiries passed, a recognition was effected, and a cold formal shaking of hands was exchanged. The old scoundrel had returned from Canada to bring a suit against an old Quaker gentleman in the county, for a small legacy of some forty dollars, coming to Doane; and he had the cool impudence to require the services of a magistrate whose father he had formerly robbed and nearly murdered. It is creditable to Squire Shaw's high sense of honor, and respect for the law he was sworn to administer, that the man received his money, and returned quietly to Canada. The meeting between the plaintiff and the defendant is said to have been quite amusing. Their conversation was still conducted, on both sides, in the "plain language" of Quakers; but nevertheless they abused each other most roundly—the one alleging his authority from government to blow the other's brains out, or to take him "dead or alive," and the other claiming his money, so long, as he thought, unjustly detained. Subsequently, a sister of the Doanes, with her husband, also returned from Canada, and made a similar claim for a legacy before Squire Shaw.

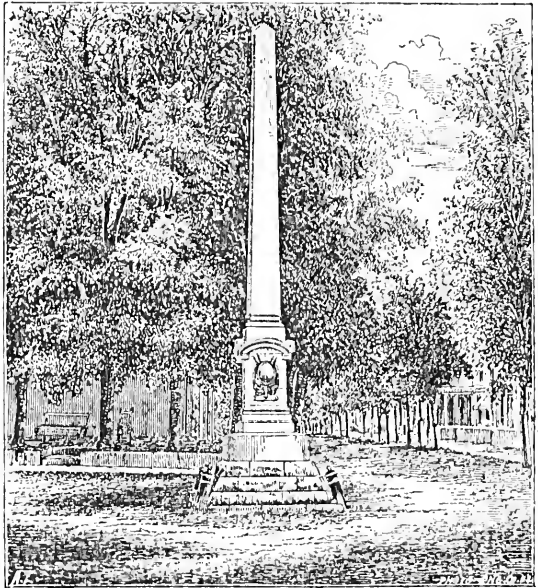
Bucks county sent her full quota of men to aid in the suppression of the rebellion. In April, 1861, a company of volunteers, in command of W. W. H. Davis, was raised for the defence of Washington. Under the act of May, 1861, for the organization of the Pennsylvania Reserve Corps, Bucks county furnished three companies, one in the lower end, commanded by Wm. Thompson; one in the middle, by David V. Feaster; and one in the upper end, by Joseph Thomas. In the autumn of 1861 a full regiment of volunteers was recruited and organized in the county by Colonel W. W. H. Davis, called the one hundred and fourth regiment. In the latter part of the summer of 1862, Col. Samuel Croasdale, of Bucks county, organized a regiment, recruiting two companies in this county. He was killed, soon after entering the service, at Antietam, Maryland, September 17, 1862. Several other companies and parts of companies were subsequently recruited in the county for the war.

On the 30th of May, 1868, on a small plot in Doylestown, was erected a



monument to the memory of the officers and men of the one hundred and fourth regiment who fell in the war. General W. H. Emory delivered a commemorative address.

DOYLESTOWN, the county seat, was first called by this name in 1778. It derived the name from William Doyle, who settled there about 1735, and kept a hostelry at the cross-roads as early as 1742. The town is situated on a hill commanding an extensive view of the fertile country around it. It became the county seat in 1812, when the public documents were removed from Newtown, and the county buildings erected. The earliest inhabitants of the neighborhood were Scotch-Irish. In 1732 a log church was founded at Deep Run, eight miles north-west of Doylestown, of which Rev. Francis McHenry was installed pastor in 1738. He died in 1757, and was succeeded, in 1761, by the Rev. James Latta, to whom and to his successors in the ministry, Hon. William Allen, of Philadelphia, gave the lot of ground occupied by the church and parsonage. Rev. Hugh McGill in 1776, Rev. James Grier in 1791, and Rev. Uriah DuBois in 1798, succeeded to the charge, and under the latter, public worship began to be held interchangeably at Deep Run and Doylestown in 1804, he being also principal of the academy at the latter place. The Presbyterian church here was dedicated on the 13th of August, 1815. In the charter for the academy referred to, the State granted a certain sum, on condition that there should be a number of poor children educated gratis, not exceeding three in number at any one time. Doylestown was incorporated as a borough in 1838. About twenty years ago the Doylestown railroad was built to this place from Lansdale, a point on the North Pennsylvania railroad (it being a branch of the main trunk), and from this period Doylestown began to manifest life and materially grow. It now has extensive water works, furnishing a bounteous supply of excellent spring water, which is obtained a short distance from the town. Its buildings and streets are lighted with gas; new streets have been laid out, and many handsome and commodious residences have been built. A large and beautiful hall, called "Lenape Hall," with stores and market house in the basement, has been erected, constituting an ornament as well as a convenience to the town. A flourishing boarding school for boys and girls has



SOLDIERS' MONUMENT AT DOYLESTOWN.

[From a Photograph by C. Garwood.]

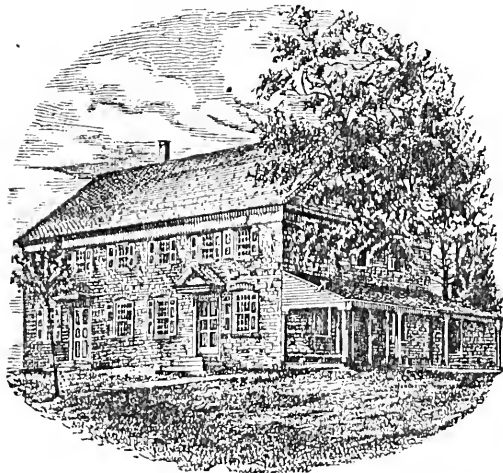
been erected, constituting an ornament as well as a convenience to the town. A flourishing boarding school for boys and girls has





been established here by a joint stock company, and also a prosperous female seminary, conducted by Rev. Shep. The same public buildings which were originally erected still stand, with little change in their appearance. The population of the borough exceeds two thousand.

BRISTOL is the second chartered borough in Pennsylvania. The site upon which it is erected is a part of a tract of land patented to Samuel Cliff by Sir Edmund Andros, Colonial Governor of New York. The first court house and prison (of logs) were erected here at the formation of the county, and subsequently rebuilt of brick in 1705. By an act of the Assembly, of the 20th March, 1724, the county seat was removed to Newtown. Sir William Keith, Governor of the Province, granted the first borough charter, on the 14th November, 1720. The petitioners for the same, "owners of a certain tract of land formerly called Buckingham, in the county of Bucks," were, Anthony Burton, John Hall, William Wharton, Joseph Bond, "and many other inhabitants of the town of Bristol;" and the petition recites that they had already laid out streets, erected a church and meeting-house, a court house, and a prison, and that the courts had for a long time been held there, etc. Joseph Bond and John Hall were appointed burgesses, and Thomas Clifford, high constable. This original charter continued in force until the Revolution. A new one was granted by the State in 1785. Graydon, whose father was president of the court in this county, says in his memoirs: "My recollections of the village of Bristol, in which I was born on the 10th of April, N. S., in the year 1755, cannot be supposed to go further back than to the year 1756 or 1757. There are few towns, perhaps, in Pennsylvania,



FRIENDS' MEETING-HOUSE, BUCKINGHAM.

[From a Photograph by C. Garwood.]

which, in the same space of time, have been so little improved, or undergone less alteration. Then, as now, the great road leading from Philadelphia to New York, first skirting the inlet, at the head of which stand the mills, and then turning short to the left along the banks of the Delaware, formed the principal and indeed only street, marked by any thing like a continuity of building. A few places for streets were opened from this main one, on which, here and there, stood an humble, solitary dwelling. At a corner of two of these lanes

was a Quaker meeting-house, and on a still more retired spot stood a small Episcopal church, whose lonely grave-yard, with its surrounding woody scenery, might have furnished an appropriate theme for such a muse as Gray's. These, together with an old brick jail (Bristol having once been the county town of Bucks), constituted all the public edifices in this, my native town. With the exception of



the family of Dr. DeNormandie, our own, and perhaps one or two more, the principal inhabitants of Bristol were Quakers. Among these, the names of Buckley, Williams, Large, Meritt, Hutchinson, and Church, are familiar to me."

In 1712 Saint James' Church was erected by the Episcopalians, and in 1714 the Friends erected a meeting-house. These comprised, for a full century, the only houses of worship in the borough.

On the 16th of September, 1785, the Legislature passed a law to re-establish the ancient corporation of the borough of Bristol. This charter continued in force up to the year 1851, when the present charter, more satisfactory to the citizens, was adopted by the legislative authorities. Bristol is prettily located on an elevated plateau, on the right bank of the Delaware, at the mouth of Mill creek. It is opposite Burlington, and twenty miles from Philadelphia. The New Jersey division of the Pennsylvania railroad passes through the borough, and the Delaware canal has here its terminus. It has steamboat communication with the river towns, and the trade of the borough is rapidly increasing in importance.

NEWTOWN is a thriving borough, situated on a small branch of the Neshaminy, ten miles north-west of Bristol. By an act of Assembly, passed the 20th of March, 1724, it became the county seat in place of Bristol, an honor which it held until 1812, when the courts and public offices were removed to Doylestown, as a more central situation. Newtown was one of the earliest settlements, the township from which it derives its name having been formed as early as 1686. In the original plan of surveys, the present borough was laid out exactly one mile square, containing six hundred and forty acres, with the stream running through its centre. The Presbyterian church was founded about 1734, and a new house rebuilt in 1769. The academy was incorporated in 1798, and was the ninth institution of that kind in the State. While the American army were guarding the Delaware from Coryell's Ferry to Bristol, in 1776, General Washington had his headquarters at Newtown.

MORRISVILLE took its name from Robert Morris, the distinguished patriot and financier. He resided here for some time in a splendid mansion-house. The estate was afterwards purchased by the French royalist, General Victor Moreau, who spent about three years of exile here. The neighbors remember him as a kind-hearted, sociable man, who delighted in roaming about the banks of the river, fishing and hunting. The mansion took fire, and was consumed. The General returned to Europe, joined the allied armies, and was killed at Dresden.

QUAKERTOWN, in point of size and importance, ranks the third in the county. It is situated on the head-waters of Tobiackon creek, in Richland township, and on the line of the North Pennsylvania railroad. It is surrounded by a productive farming district, with a soil composed of a clay loam, admixed with red shale, being especially well adapted to grain crops and grass for hay, which is shipped in considerable quantity to Philadelphia and other places. Its name is derived from settlements of Friends, or Quakers, who emigrated from Gwynedd to its vicinity, some time about the year 1700; and when a post office was established here, it was then called Quakertown, about 1803.

The site of the town is a part of an extensive district, embracing several thousand acres, which was designated by the early settlers the Great Swamp, or



Great Meadow, on which they pastured their cattle, while they dwelt on the more elevated or hilly territory adjacent. It afterward took the name of Flatland, and subsequently Richland, from the fertile quality of the soil. A log structure was erected by the Friends for holding their meetings (originally about a half mile south of the present town, near where William Shaw now resides), in 1710. Here they had also a burying ground, where they consigned their dead, in common with the Indian, and thus the dust of these early pioneers mingles with that of the red man, with whom they always lived in friendly intercourse. There is, however, now no trace of the old log meeting-house, nor even a stone to mark the place of burial, yet some records in the possession of the Friends here, and tradition, preserve them from oblivion.

Subsequently, about the year 1750, on the site of the present meeting house, a new building was put up for public worship, to which the scattered Friends living in Springfield, Haycock, Milford, Rockhill, and even in the more distant townships, repaired to worship God, and bury their friends and kinsmen. They had no other place for worship nearer than the Gwynedd meeting (in Montgomery) some twenty miles distant.

Late as 1820 the village did not contain a dozen dwellings, notwithstanding it was on the main thoroughfare from Allentown to Philadelphia, along which was the principal travel of the settlers on the Lehigh to Philadelphia. In 1855 the town began to improve very rapidly in consequence of the North Pennsylvania railroad running near it, and it was the same year organized into a borough. In 1874 a little town called Richland Centre, which had sprung up near the station of the railroad, was annexed to the borough, making now an aggregate population of nearly two thousand. The extensive stove works of Thomas, Roberts, Stevenson, & Company, are located here.

The first monthly meeting of the Friends recorded here is 1741. The first white child born in the vicinity of Quakertown was John Grillith. Morris Morris gave ten acres of land for the Friends' meeting-house, etc., in 1745.

Quakertown was a prominent station on the so-called "under-ground railroad," in the days of anti-slavery excitements, to assist the fugitive slaves in making their escape to Canada. These negroes, having reached here by night usually, from West Chester (also a station), were concealed for a time by the Friends when danger of pursuit was apprehended, and then they were secretly transported in wagons to Stroudsburg, Monroe county. They came often, a dozen or more in one party, and were distributed among a number of the families of Friends, who would conceal them for a time in garrets, hay-lofts, etc. Richard Moore, recently deceased, an excellent and exemplary citizen, figured prominently in this philanthropic though perilous work. A library was established in Quakertown called the "Richland Library," by an act of incorporation, dated 1795, it being, according to Commissioner Eaton, the seventh in rank of seniority in the United States. Its membership and readers embraced the most intelligent part of the citizens of the upper portions of the county. It contains near two thousand volumes.

SELLERSVILLE was incorporated a borough in 1874. It is situated in Rockhill, on the North Pennsylvania railroad, near the east branch of the Perkiomen. It contains two hotels, three stores, and an elegant public school-building,



perhaps the finest in the county. The population is about four hundred. Cigar manufacturing is extensively carried on here and in the vicinity. The place was named after Samuel Sellers, who kept a hotel and store at this place about seventy years ago, and was elected sheriff of the county. It was then an important stopping place for teams, etc., located as it was upon the old Allentown road.

APPLEBACHVILLE is in Haycock township, and was named after General Paul Applebach and his brother Henry, who erected the first house in the village, a hotel, and afterwards put up nearly all the other buildings. It was, for a long time, a principal stopping place for stages running on the old Bethlehem road, between Bethlehem and Philadelphia. The post office was moved here from Strawntown, a little village half a mile south of it, in 1848. Sixty years ago such was the extent of travel on this great thoroughfare for stages and heavy teams, that at very short intervals hostelries were kept, and all were frequently crowded at nights with lodgers. There were two of these in Strawntown, one kept by Nicholas Roudenbush, and the other by Joseph Brown.

HAGERSVILLE, also a small village on the Bethlehem road, in Rockhill township, was named after Colonel George Hager, who built here first in 1848.

HULMEVILLE is situated on the Neshaminy creek, about six miles from Bristol. It contains a population of three hundred and fifty, and has a number of fine edifices—churches and private dwellings. The Neshaminy affords an excellent motive power here, which is utilized for manufacturing purposes. It was organized out of the township of Middletown into a borough in 1872.

ATTLEBOROUGH was also organized out of Middletown township into a borough corporation in 1874. It is pleasantly located on an elevated site, surrounded by a fine farming district. It was an inconsiderable village over a century ago. Its present population is between five and six hundred.

ORGANIZATION OF TOWNSHIPS.—The following are the dates of the organization of the different townships:

Bedminster, . . . . .	1742	Nockamixon, . . . . .	1724
Bensalem, . . . . .	1692	Northampton, . . . . .	1722
Bristol, . . . . .	1695	Plumstead, . . . . .	1725
Buckingham, . . . . .	1702-3	Richland, . . . . .	1734
Doylestown, . . . . .	1818	Rockhill, . . . . .	1740
Durham, . . . . .	1775	Solesbury, . . . . .	1702-3
Falls, . . . . .	1692	Southampton, . . . . .	1702-3
Haycock, . . . . .	1743	Springfield, . . . . .	1743
Hilltown, . . . . .	1722	Tinicum, . . . . .	1742
Lower Makefield, . . . . .	1692	Upper Makefield, . . . . .	1737
Middletown, . . . . .	1692	Warminster, . . . . .	1702-3
Milford, . . . . .	1734	Warrington, . . . . .	1734
New Britain, . . . . .	1722	Warwick, . . . . .	1722
Newtown, . . . . .	1702-3	Wrightstown, . . . . .	1702-3





## BUTLER COUNTY.

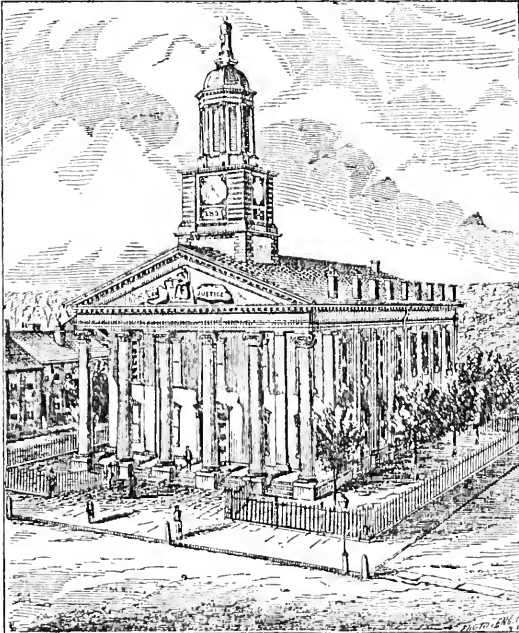
BY JACOB ZIEGLER, BUTLER.

[With acknowledgments to Samuel P. Irvin.]



BUTLER county was formed from the county of Allegheny, by the act of the 12th of March, 1800, and named in honor of General Richard Butler, who was killed at St. Clair's defeat. It was then bounded: "Beginning at the mouth of Buffalo creek, on the Allegheny river; thence by a straight line running due west until it strikes the line on Beaver county; thence north by the line of said county to the north-east corner of said

county; thence by a line north thirty-five degrees, east fourteen miles; thence by a line running due east, continuing said course to where a line running due north from the mouth of Buffalo creek, the place of beginning." The place of the county seat was not to be at a greater distance than four miles from the centre of the county. The year following commissioners were appointed to run the county lines. The persons appointed for this purpose were Samuel Rippy, Henry Evans, and John M'Bride, with Beatty Quinn as their axeman. After these commissioners had performed their duty and made the proper report, the Legislature appointed John David, William Elliott, and Samuel Ewalt,



BUTLER COUNTY COURT HOUSE.

[From a Photograph by John P. Orr, Butler.]

commissioners to fix upon a proper place for the seat of justice for the county. The place selected by them is where the town of Butler now stands.

While this county was still a part of Allegheny county it contained but four townships. These were Buffalo, Middlesex, Conoquenessing, and Slippery Rock. The limits of the county now are as follows: Beginning at the mouth of the Buffalo creek at Freeport; thence westward twenty-three miles to a



corner on the west side of Alexander's district, adjoining Beaver county; thence along said line and Beaver county, northward twenty-three miles to a corner, where the streams of Muddy creek and Slippery Rock unite; thence along the Mercer county line north fifteen degrees, east fifteen miles to a corner near Harrisville; thence eastward fifteen miles to a corner near the Allegheny river near Emlenton; thence southward about thirty miles along the Armstrong county line to the place of beginning, containing about seven hundred and eighty-five square miles.

In point of mineral wealth, Butler county is among the foremost of the counties of the State, and it contains now about forty thousand inhabitants. Under the whole surface there is abundance of white, blue, black, and yellow clays, suitable for bricks and other purposes. In certain parts there are fine bodies of limestone, a portion of which is fossil. Sandstone of the best quality abounds in all localities, and bituminous and cannel coal in great quantities. Iron ore is also abundant, and as for petroleum, the county is now looked upon as the greatest oil region in the world. Some idea may be formed of the production of the latter article when it is stated that the average for the last two years has been about ten thousand barrels per day.

No enterprise is equal to the development of oil to give rise and growth to towns, and when it fails nothing puts an end to their growth and prosperity quicker. Consequently we have PETROLIA, KARNS CITY, GREECE CITY, ANGELICA, ARGYLE, MODOC, TROUTMAN FARM, ST. JOE, GREAT BELT CITY, and other towns all on the line of development. Of all these, however, PETROLIA and KARNS CITY seem to be the most successful. At these places the oil production is still very remunerative, and, of course, they have more stability than others. They are peopled with a thriving and industrious class, who take pride in keeping up the prosperity and business of their respective places. GREECE CITY at one time bid fair to rival them all, but the failure of oil in large quantities has materially interfered with its growth. There are still large pumping engines at work there pumping oil to the receiving tanks at Butler, of which there are three, and from which oil cars are loaded and taken over the Butler Branch railroad to the West Pennsylvania railroad, and thence to Philadelphia over the Pennsylvania Central.

There are a great many iron tanks, capable of holding thousands of barrels of oil, and pipes, through which it is transported, and owned by pipe companies, to be seen in all directions. A just appreciation of the amount of business done by these companies can only be had by being an eye-witness and having some knowledge of the oil business.

While oil is a wonderful production, and has fairly revolutionized the industry of the county, yet the gas will in all probability far exceed it in its application as fuel in propelling machinery, and also for lighting purposes. There are several wells, the Delamater and Duffy being the largest, which throw out a volume of gas per hour sufficient to supply the city of Philadelphia two days and nights, at least, with all the gas needed. This gas is to be found in all parts of the county, and it is not exaggerating when we say that Butler will in time be the basin from which will be taken the means of both light and fuel. It is inexhaustible.



In regard to railroads, there are—the Butler Branch road running from Butler to Freeport, and there connecting with the West Pennsylvania road, which gives a connection by rail with Pittsburgh and Philadelphia. The Parker and Karns City railroad runs from the town of Parker on the Allegheny river, in Armstrong county, to Karns City, in Butler county. It is a narrow gauge road, but does a large amount of business in freight and travel. This road gives an outlet for oil producers to the Allegheny railroad, and consequently to Pittsburgh and the upper oil region. The Shenango and Allegheny river railroad runs from Sharon, in Mercer county, to Hilliard's Mill, in Butler county; and while there is considerable travel, it is used mainly for shipping coal and the transportation of oil to the lake cities. There are other railroads in contemplation, and it is confidently expected the great mineral resources of the county will demand the investment of capital in their construction.

The surface is beautifully distributed with hills and valleys, and streams of clear water flow in all directions. The whole is subject to cultivation, and the soil is good for farming and grazing purposes. The minerals, which abound everywhere in the county, must in time make it a great manufacturing centre; especially when it is now an established fact that gas abounds in large quantities, and can be used for fuel in smelting iron or for manufacturing purposes with much more facility and at much cheaper rates than with coal. Timber, of the best quality, white oak, black oak, chestnut, sugar maple, etc., abound in nearly all sections of the county. Fruit is grown with considerable success, but owing to the cold lake winds which prevail in the spring of the year, not in the same abundance that is grown in more southerly places. The first map of the county, in connection with one of Allegheny county, was made by David Dougal, Esq. the person referred to subsequently. He was an experienced surveyor, and had spent some time among the Indians in this the then western frontier.

Butler county was first settled mostly by inhabitants from the counties west of the mountains. Westmoreland and Allegheny contributed the greater portion; Washington and Fayette a part; and some came from east of the mountains. A few emigrated from other States. Pennsylvanians, of Irish and German extraction, native Irish, some Scotch, and some few Germans, were amongst the early pioneers. The first settlement commenced in 1792, immediately subsequent to the act of the 3d of April of that year, which provided for the survey of all that part of western Pennsylvania lying north and west of the Ohio and Allegheny rivers and Conewango creek. No considerable settlement was made until 1796, and up to 1800-3, at which time the county town was laid out. This era gave a new stimulus to the opening up and improvement of the county. The first locations were made on the head-waters of what is called Bull creek, in the south-east corner of the county, adjoining Allegheny county. The names of these settlers were James Fulton, Henry Kennedy, Martin Kennedy, William Holtz, John Harbeson, and Abraham Frier.

Previous to the formation of the county, the Indian disturbances on the frontiers bordering on the Allegheny were frequent, and the fear of the scalping knife and tomahawk prevented the rapid settlement of this locality. In the spring of 1792 a band of Indian marauders entered the limits of Butler, committing numerous depredations.



General Brodhead's expedition to the head-waters of the Allegheny, referred to in the General History, effectually checked these inroads, and secured peace to the frontiers. One of Captain Samuel Brady's characteristic adventures with the Indians occurred on Slippery Rock creek, in this county. Although General Brodhead's summary punishment of the natives quieted the country, yet for some time he kept spies out for the purpose of watching their motions and guarding against sudden attacks on the settlements. One of these parties, under the command of Captain Brady, had the French creek country assigned as their field of duty. The Captain had reached the waters of Slippery Rock, a branch of Beaver, without seeing signs of Indians. Here, however, he came on an Indian trail in the evening, which he followed till dark without overtaking the enemy. The next morning he renewed the pursuit, and overtook them while they were engaged at their morning meal. Unfortunately for him, another party of Indians were in his rear. They had fallen upon his trail, and pursued him, doubtless, with as much ardor as his pursuit had been characterized by; and at the moment he fired upon the Indians in his front, he was, in turn, fired upon by those in his rear. He was now between two fires, and vastly outnumbered. Two of his men fell; his tomahawk was shot from his side, and the battle-yell was given by the party in his rear, and loudly returned and repeated by those in his front. There was no time for hesitation; no safety in delay; no chance of successful defence in their present position. The brave Captain and his rangers had to flee before their enemies, who pressed on their flying footsteps with no lagging speed. Brady ran towards the creek. He was known by many, if not all of them, and many and deep were the scores to be settled between him and them. They knew the country well, he did not; and from his running towards the creek they were certain of taking him prisoner. The creek was, for a long distance above and below the point he was approaching, washed in its channel to a great depth. In the certain expectation of catching him there, the private soldiers of his party were disregarded; and throwing down their guns and drawing their tomahawks, all pressed forward to seize their victim.

Quick of eye, fearless of heart, and determined never to be a captive to the Indians, Brady comprehended their object and his only chance of escape the moment he saw the creek, and by one mighty effort of courage and activity, defeated the one and effected the other. He sprang across the abyss of waters, and stood, rifle in hand, on the opposite bank in safety. As quick as lightning his rifle was primed, for it was his invariable practice in loading to prime first. The next minute the powder-horn was at the gun's muzzle; when, as he was in this act, a large Indian, who had been foremost in pursuit, came to the opposite bank, and with the manliness of a generous foe, who scorns to undervalue the qualities of an enemy, said in a loud voice, and tolerable English, "Blady make good jump!" It may indeed be doubted whether the compliment was uttered in derision, for the moment he had said so he took to his heels, and, as if fearful of the return it might merit, ran as crooked as a worm-fence—sometimes leaping high, at others suddenly squatting down, he appeared no way certain that Brady would not answer from the lips of his rifle. But the rifle was not yet loaded. The Captain was at the place afterwards, and ascertained that his leap was about twenty-three feet, and that the water was twenty feet deep.





Brady's next effort was to gather up his men. They had a place designated at which to meet, in case they should happen to be separated, and thither he went, and found the other three there. They immediately commenced their homeward march, and returned to Pittsburgh about half defeated. Three Indians had been seen to fall from the fire they gave them at breakfast.

BUTLER borough is one of the most beautiful towns in Pennsylvania, and its location is upon a small hill, surrounded by an extensive valley, through which flows the Conoquenessing creek. At the time the location was effected it was covered with a heavy growth of timber, and although not exactly in the centre



VIEW OF THE BOROUGH OF BUTLER.

[From a Photograph by John P. Orr, Butler.]

of the county, yet the Commissioners deemed it the most eligible site that could be selected. Time proved the wisdom of their choice. Butler is at or near the  $41^{\circ}$  of north latitude and  $3^{\circ}$  of western longitude from the city of Washington.

In 1803 the town was laid out in lots, and a sale was held in the month of August of that year. The highest bid made was for lot No. 24, in the general plan of the town, and this lot reaches to the Diamond, in the centre of which is the large and commodious court house. The bid was one hundred and twenty dollars. The balance of the lots sold for prices ranging from that amount down to as low as ten dollars. The land on which the town is located was claimed by John and Samuel Cunningham, and contained one hundred and fifty acres. They made a free donation of it to the county of Butler. These gentlemen were sons of Colonel Cunningham, of revolutionary fame, and emigrated from Lancaster (now Dauphin) to this county.



The State of Pennsylvania purchased from the Indians in 1784 the land lying north and west of the Allegheny river and Conewango creek. In 1786-7 and in 1788 this land was run off into donation districts, and Colonel Cunningham had a contract for part of this work. The part surveyed by John Cunningham under the contract with his father is known as the Cunningham district. The object was to give the soldiers land as a donation for their services. Robert Morris came into possession of about one hundred thousand acres, and John Cunningham, the son of Colonel Cunningham, was his agent. The act of Assembly required settlement to be made within a certain time, but by a special act Mr. Morris' right of settlement was extended for five years. The Indians still held possession, for there was a division among them as to the sale, and they refused to vacate. The consequence of this hostility was that Mr. Morris could not make settlements as required, and a suit was tried at Sumbury, in this State, before Judge McKean, in which the question of prevention was settled. The suit terminated in favor of the Morris warrants. By Wayne's treaty in 1795 the Indians were removed.

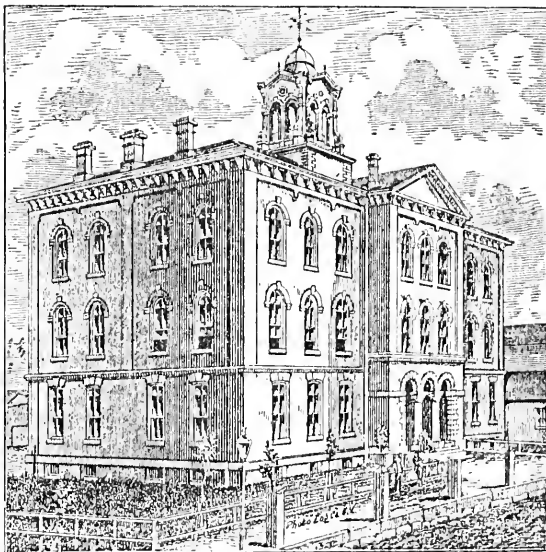
John Cunningham, with his brother Samuel, came into possession

under Robert Morris, of fifteen hundred acres of land, one hundred and fifty acres of which they donated, as stated, to the county of Butler.

During the fall of 1803, houses were built in Butler, and accommodations made for citizens and for the reception of the court. The court was opened by Judge Moore as president, and Samuel Findlay and John Parker associates. John McCandless was sheriff. Matthew White, Jacob Meehling, and James Bovard, commissioners, with David Dougal, as their clerk. The latter gentleman is still living, and is now in the ninety-eighth year of his age. Butler has, within the past five years, made rapid progress in wealth and population, the latter almost doubled since the census of 1870. It contains, besides the public buildings, an academy, Soldier's Orphans' Home, under the care of Rev. Thompson, and the Witherspoon Institute.

The following are among the most prominent towns in the county, and which were organized prior to the discovery of oil:

**PROSPECT** is a small place, situated on the old Franklin road, eight miles west



PUBLIC SCHOOL BUILDING, BUTLER.

[From a Photograph by John P. Orr, Butler.]



of Butler, and was laid out by Andrew M'Gowan about the year 1805. The country surrounding it is well adapted to agriculture.

ZELIENOPLE was laid out by Dr. Bassa Miller about the year 1802 or '3, and Harmony, which nearly adjoins it, by the Harmonites at about the same time. This latter place is located on the bank of the Conoquenessing creek, fifteen miles southwest from Butler. Both of these places are beautifully located in the midst of an extensive valley, and are surrounded by the best farms to be found in the county. The people are mostly of German descent, and carry agriculture to the highest state of perfection.

HARRISVILLE is located on the old Franklin road, in the north-west corner of the county, twenty miles from Butler, and was laid out by Ephraim Harris about 1802 or 1803. Near this place the Shenango and Allegheny river railroad is located, over which is transported an immense quantity of coal. About one mile and a half this side of the town on the railroad are the receiving tanks of an oil company, and the oil is pumped from the place of production, put on the cars, and taken to Cleveland.

CENTREVILLE is situated on the road leading from Butler to Mercer, and about fifteen miles from Butler, north-west. This place was laid out by Stephen Cooper, and is now a thriving town.

MURRINSVILLE, situated on the road from Butler to Scrubgrass creek, in Venango county, about twenty miles north of Butler, was laid out by John Murrin about the year 1820. In the neighborhood of this place are great bodies of cannel coal, and efforts are being made to ship it to the lake cities.

SUNBURY is situated on the road leading from Butler to Emlenton, and was laid out about the year 1820 by John Gilchrist.

NORTH WASHINGTON is situated sixteen miles north-east from Butler on the same road, and was laid out about the year 1810 or '12.

FAIRVIEW, on the road from Butler to the mouth of Bear creek, is fourteen miles north-east from Butler, and was laid out by Thomas McCleary, about the year 1830.

MILLERSTOWN is in the north-east section of the county, eleven miles from Butler, and was laid out by Philip Barnhart about the year 1830.

SAXENBURG is nine miles south-east from Butler, was laid out by John Roebing, the famous engineer and bridge builder, in the year 1835. The country around is well adapted to agriculture, and some of the best farms in the county are to be found in its vicinity.

Fairview, Martinsburg, and Millerstown, already referred to in consequence of the oil development in their immediate vicinity, have grown to be places of note, not only in point of population but of business. The latter place especially has become the centre of oil operations, and here can be seen oil tanks containing thousands of barrels of oil, immense engines to pump the oil to railroad stations, hundreds of laboring men employed in various capacities, together with many others engaged in those various pursuits which follow the development.

There are small towns in the county, viz.: Martinsburg, Coyleville, Hannahstown, Brownsdale, Evansburg, Petersville, Mount Chestnut, Unionville, Eau Claire, Buena Vista, and some others not necessary to mention. All these existed before the oil excitement



## CAMBRIA COUNTY.

BY ROBERT L. JOHNSTON, EBENSBURG.



THE county of Cambria owes its existence to an act of Assembly, passed the 26th day of March, 1804. The territory composing it was taken from the counties of Huntingdon and Somerset. The act provided "That so much of the counties of Huntingdon and Somerset, included in the following boundaries, to wit: Beginning at the Cone-maugh river, at the south-east corner of Indiana county; thence by a straight line to the Canoe Place, on the West Branch of Susquehanna; thence easterly along the line of Clearfield county to the south-westerly corner of Centre county, on the heads of Moshannon creek; thence southerly along the Allegheny mountain to Somerset and Bedford county lines; thence along the lines of Somerset and Bedford counties about seventeen miles, until a due west course from thence will strike the main branch of Paint creek; thence down said creek, the different courses thereof, till it empties into Stony creek; thence down Stony creek, the different courses, to the mouth of Mill creek; thence a due west line till it intersects the lines of Somerset and Westmoreland counties; thence northerly along said line to the place of beginning, be and the same is hereby erected into a separate county, to be henceforth called Cambria county."

The same act provided that the county seat should be fixed by the Legislature within seven miles of the centre of the county, and authorized the Governor to appoint three commissioners to run and mark the boundary lines. The act also provided for future representation in the Legislature as soon as the new county should be entitled thereto by an enumeration of its taxable inhabitants; and for the appointment of three trustees to receive proposals for real estate upon which to erect the public buildings.

The act organizing the county for judicial and political purposes was not passed until the 26th of January, 1807; until which time it was deemed only a "provisional" county, and was attached to Somerset county. An act of Assembly, passed the 29th of March, 1805, fixed the county seat at Ebensburg, and appointed John Horner, John J. Evans (both of Cambria county), and Alexander Ogle, of Somerset, trustees, to receive a grant of land for the public buildings from Rees Lloyd, John Lloyd, and Stephen Lloyd, who donated the square of ground upon which the public buildings now stand. The first general election in Cambria county was held in October, 1807, and from thence is dated its full organization.

The county retains its original boundaries, with the exception of the north-western corner, known in the original boundary as Canoe Place, more recently as Cherrytree, and now as Grant, the latter being the name of the post office. This village, lying about equally in Cambria, Clearfield, and Indiana counties, was





erected into a borough and annexed to the latter county. Frequent efforts have been made to divide the county, both on the extreme south and the extreme north, but they have hitherto proved unsuccessful. While the northern and southern lines of the county have never been the subject of dispute, the eastern and western lines have caused much difficulty. The western line has since been re-located, and is now settled. But the greatest trouble was in reference to the eastern line. While the act placed it "along the Allegheny mountain," it became a matter of great difficulty to trace it, there being no record of the original running, and a great portion of the summit of the mountain being without timber for axe marks; and the mountain being cloven, so to speak, by immense chasms and ravines, it became more a matter of opinion than any certainty where the line should actually be run. The inconvenience resulting from this uncertainty was remedied by an act of Assembly passed in 1849, appointing Hon. James Gwin, of Blair county, and E. A. Vickroy, of Cambria county, to run and adjust the line; a duty which was satisfactorily performed during the same year, and a record thereof filed in the proper office.

Thus located, Cambria county occupies the table land lying between the summit of the Allegheny mountain and the Laurel Hill, the western line running near the western base of the latter elevation, including it, and running in the same general direction. And while it is called the "mountain county," it embraces, perhaps, more tillable surface than any of the adjoining counties, in proportion to its area. It is bounded by Clearfield, on the north; Blair and Bedford, on the east; Somerset, on the south; and Westmoreland and Indiana, on the west. Its length is thirty-five miles, its breadth twenty-one miles; and embraces an area of six hundred and seventy square miles. The position of the county is elevated; for, while the eastern approach to the Allegheny mountain is abrupt and rugged, the western descent is comparatively gentle.

Besides the Allegheny and the Laurel Hill, there is no elevation in Cambria county that can be dignified with the name of mountain. The Allegheny divides Blair and Bedford from Cambria, its direction being north-easterly and south-westerly, the whole length of the county. Its greatest altitude is at the southern extremity of the county, and there is a gradual falling-off in its height till it reaches the northern line. From the centre, north, it abounds in chasms or "gaps," known as Blair's gap, Burgoon's gap, Sugar Run gap, and Bell's gap. These gaps furnished the sources of the main, or Frankstown branch of the Juniata. The Laurel Hill, in western Cambria, pursues the same general direction, and loses its character as a mountain before reaching the northern boundary.

Though containing no large stream, Cambria county is well watered. The West Branch of the Susquehanna has its rise some eight miles north of Ebensburg, leaving the county at Cherrytree, formerly known as Canoe Place. Chest creek rises some three miles from Ebensburg, and pursuing a northerly course empties into the Susquehanna in Clearfield county. Clearfield creek rises near the summit of the mountain, at Gallitzin, flows north, and receiving the Beaver Dam branch from the west, passes into Clearfield county, and reaches the Susquehanna below the town of Clearfield. These streams are all declared public highways.



The Juniata has its rise from small streams passing through the various gaps in the Allegheny.

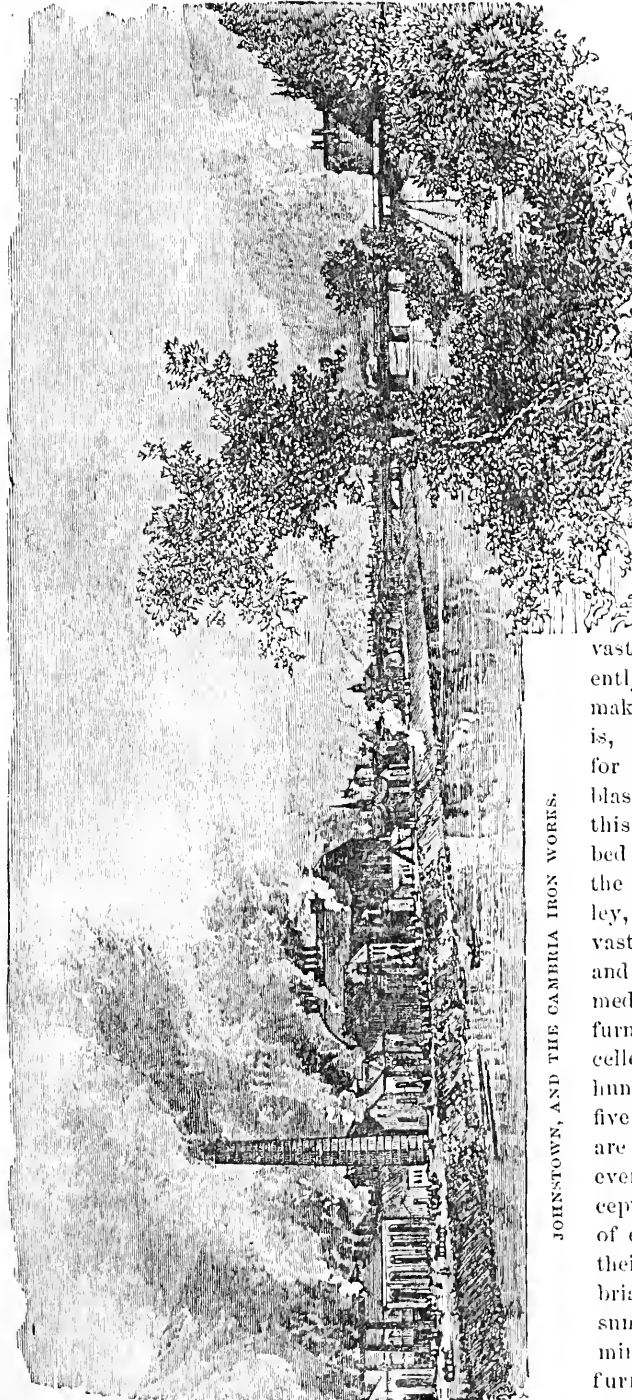
The Conemaugh drains southern Cambria. This stream is formed of various branches: the Ebensburg branch, arising near the town of that name, and flowing south to the village of Wilmore, receives the Cresson branch, which has its source near the summit of the Allegheny, and flows in a south-westerly direction. Their united waters, pursuing the same direction, are increased by the South Fork, which flows nearly due west. At Johnstown it falls into the Stony creek, which rises in Somerset county, and flows in a northerly direction through Cambria to its junction with the smaller stream at Johnstown. Their united waters, taking the name of the Conemaugh, flow westwardly, and, leaving the county, forms the boundary between Indiana and Westmoreland. The southern branch of Blacklick has its source north of Ebensburg, and flows west to the line of Indiana county, where, receiving an accession in the northern branch, falls into the main Blacklick, a few miles west of the county line. The waters that flow into the Atlantic, and those that seek the Gulf of Mexico, interlock in alternate dells in this county; and the traveler, at one point on the Ebensburg and Cresson railroad, some four miles from the former place, may see from the cars, on the one side, a fountain whose waters reach the Gulf of Mexico; and on the other, exactly opposite, another whose waters pass through the Chesapeake bay to the Atlantic.

Cambria county is not distinguished as an agricultural county, her soil being better adapted to grazing than grain growing. Still a large portion of the north produces excellent crops of wheat; and the same may be said of the hilly portion of southern Cambria. The level portion of the county is too cold and "spouty" for fall grain, but produces excellent crops of grass. Corn is not a favorite of her soil, but oats is produced in abundance. The length and severity of the winter is all that hinders her from being one of the finest stock growing counties in the State.

Coal underlies the entire surface of the county, and is mined extensively. The line of the Pennsylvania railroad, from Gallitzin to Johnstown, more than twenty-five miles, is a succession of coal drifts, from which immense quantities of the best bituminous coal is shipped, and from which large quantities of coke are manufactured. In the north and west the coal is equally abundant, but not so extensively worked for want of a convenient market. Near the north-eastern line, at Lloydsville, an extensive coal vein has recently been opened, which is shipped to the Pennsylvania railroad by a narrow gauge railroad, connecting with the former at Bell's Mills. A single deposit of cannel coal, in the western portion of the county, was operated a few years since, but is now abandoned. Iron ore abounds in many portions of the county, but is only utilized in the vicinity of Johnstown, where immense quantities are mined to supply the furnaces of the Cambria iron company.

The greatest iron and steel manufacturing company in Pennsylvania, if not in the world, is located at Johnstown; and as this company conducts other enterprises, they shall be considered together. An establishment that directly or indirectly employs nearly seven thousand persons—men, women, and boys, and transacts a business of over ten million dollars a year, deserves separate consi-





JOHNSTOWN, AND THE CAMBRIA IRON WORKS.

deration. While the main establishment and a great bulk of its employers are in Cambria, its mines, furnaces, and lands extend to Blair, Bedford, and Somerset counties.

The Conemaugh valley at Johnstown is but a few hundred feet across. In the mountain side, to the west, lies a deep seam of semi-bituminous coal, which is exposed all along the roadway, extending a vast distance, and apparently inexhaustible. It makes splendid coke, and is, therefore, invaluable for the company's many blast furnaces. Under this coal mine lies a fine bed of water cement. On the other side of the valley, and to the south, are vast beds of iron ore, coal, and lime-stone, and, immediately above the blast furnaces, a quarry of excellent stone. Fourteen hundred tons of coal and five hundred tons of ore are mined from these beds every day. With the exception of the quantity of coal which is sold to their employees, the Cambria Iron company consume all the coal they mine in their mills and furnaces. As to iron ore,



though they own and are interested in other mines as well (the aggregate of the ore and coal lands owned by the company exceeds 50,000 acres), they are, nevertheless, large buyers of Lake Superior and other high-classed ores. The company produces about three hundred tons of pig-iron a day. The Bessemer steel works and rolling mills turn out three hundred tons of iron and steel rails in a day; in a year about seventy thousand tons of iron rails, weighing from sixteen to eighty-three pounds to the yard, and thirty-five thousand tons of steel rails, weighing from forty-two to sixty-seven pounds to the yard.

The area of ground covered by these enormous works is over sixty acres, the rolling mill alone covering seven acres. In the rolling-mill there are no less than seven trains of rolls, these trains each having five pair of rolls. To keep these rolls supplied with heated metal requires twenty-eight heating furnaces, while forty-two double puddling furnaces furnish the heaters with the puddled bars.

The Cambria Iron company has already no less than nine blast furnaces in operation, producing as previously stated, three hundred tons of pig-iron a day; but finding these insufficient for their demands, they are now erecting another very large one near the rolling-mill. Only four of the furnaces are at Johnstown. Of the others, one is at Conemaugh, about two miles from Johnstown; two are at Hollidaysburg, to the south of Altoona; one is at Frankstown, and another is at Bennington, on the summit of the Allegheny mountains, at the point where they are crossed by the Pennsylvania railroad. The Johnstown works are marvels in their way. For the transportation of the coal and ore from the adjacent mines to the blast furnaces and mills, and carrying the pig-iron to the mills, transporting the rails, and doing all the heavy work, they have no less than eleven locomotive engines of all sizes, from the largest ordinary locomotive down to a little fellow about four feet high, called the Dwarf. The railroad track, which is a perfect network, would, if constructed in a straight line, extend over thirty-six miles of ground.

Besides these works, Ashland furnace, near the eastern boundary of the county, and Eliza furnace, on the western line, have been operated; but both were abandoned on account of inconvenience to the market.

Extensive tanneries are also operated at Johnstown and its vicinity, and also at Carrolltown.

Lumber has been an important article of commerce. In the neighborhood of Johnstown, at Ebensburg, at Wilmore, and at other points, vast quantities of hard and soft lumber, such as ash, maple, cherry, poplar, cucumber, etc., have been manufactured for the eastern and western markets; and immense quantities of hemlock is shipped for building purposes. The *shook* business is carried on extensively in various parts of the county, more particularly at Ebensburg, Conemaugh, Summer Hill, and Chest Springs. This is the manufacture of oak timber into vessels to be shipped to Cuba and other points for molasses, rum, etc. In the north-eastern, northern, and north-western portion of the county the lumbering business is a heavy element of prosperity. The pine lumber trade in this region has been principally conducted by rafting the timber, sometimes manufactured into boards; but oftener the squared logs, formed into rafts, down the Susquehanna to the eastern market. More recently, however, what is called *logging* has been more generally adopted. This consists in cutting the pine logs







VIEW OF CRESSON, ON THE ALLEGHENY MOUNTAINS.



into proper lengths, and floating them down the stream, *au naturelle*, to the market. Timber thus floated pays tribute at the *boom* at Williamsport, and thence pursues its way east. On the most trifling streams this traffic is carried on by means of *splashes*—that is, a dam is constructed over the stream, and the water is pent up until it becomes a large body; the timber is put into the stream below; at the proper time the sluices or gates are opened, and the timber floated down to the river. There is no towship in the county in which the lumber business is not pursued with more or less success; and the growing scarcity of the article only enhances the value of what remains.

Large quantities of butter have also been shipped from Ebensburg, Carrolltown, and other points; while the immense quantity manufactured in the country surrounding Johnstown feeds the vast numbers connected with the Cambria Iron works.

Besides the foregoing, the county has derived considerable amount of her resources from houses of resort for summer visitors. Of these, notably, is the Cresson House. The Cresson Springs now ranks with Saratoga, Bedford Springs, and other celebrated watering places. The house is beautifully situated on an eminence, directly east of the Pennsylvania railroad station at Cresson, and commands a fine view of the mountain scenery. It is calculated to accommodate a thousand visitors, and with its adjoining cottages, has the appearance of a beautiful village. It is surrounded with carefully prepared drives and delightful walks through the primeval forest; and St. Ignatius Spring, a highly medicinal fountain (named from Ignatius Adams, a pioneer, who formerly owned the ground on which it issues), is within a convenient plank walk from the main building. Near it are the Mansion House, at Summitville, also a delightful resort for visitors; and the Callan House, about a furlong east of the Cresson House, on the line of the railroad.

At Ebensburg, Bellemont is also a favorite resort, filled with strangers every season; while the Lloyd House, directly opposite the Ebensburg station, is a delightful resting place for the visitor. At or near Scalp Level, on the southern boundary, large numbers of strangers make their annual visit; while at different points in the county, especially the eastern part of the county, a large number of summer boarding houses are put in requisition to accommodate boarders for the season.

In truth, the Allegheny mountain has attractions for summer visitors not to be found elsewhere. The high lands of the Alleghenies are entirely exempt from fevers and all malarious diseases. The fogs and miasma of lower regions are unknown, and a pure atmosphere is the reward of the visitant. A mid-day sun here is no less powerful and enervating than in the lower territory, but a cool breeze always tempers the atmosphere, while the nights of sweltering heat experienced elsewhere is not known in the Alleghenies, where the nights and mornings are always cool and invigorating.

The early settlers of Cambria county may be divided mainly into three classes: 1. The families of American Catholics from Maryland and the adjacent portion of Pennsylvania (some of them descendants of the colony of Lord Baltimore), who settled in the eastern and north-eastern portion of the county, mainly in the vicinity where Loretto now stands. 2. Pennsylvania Germans, from Somerset



and the eastern German settlements, who occupied the south of the county, in the neighborhood of Johnstown. 3. Emigrants from Wales, who founded Ebensburg and Beula, whose descendants still predominate within a radius of five miles of the former village.

1. The earliest actual settlement was made by Michael McGuire, about one mile east of the present village of Loretto. The following in relation to this settlement was prepared by the present writer more than thirty-five years ago, for Day's "Historical Collections:—"

"Previous to the year 1789, the tract of country which is now included within the limits of Cambria county was a wilderness. 'Frankstown settlement,' as it was then called, was the frontier of the inhabited parts of Pennsylvania east of the Allegheny mountain. None of the pioneers had yet ventured to explore the eastern slope of the mountain. A remnant of the savage tribes still prowled through the forests, and seized every opportunity of destroying the dwellings of the settlers, and butchering such of the inhabitants as were so unfortunate as to fall into their hands. The howling of the wolf, and the shrill screaming of the catamount or American panther (both of which animals infested the country in great numbers at the period of its first settlement), mingled in nightly concert with the war-whoop of the savages. It is believed that Captain Michael McGuire was the first white man who settled within the present bounds of Cambria county. He settled in the neighborhood of where Loretto now stands, in the year 1790, and commenced improving that now interesting and well-cultivated portion of Allegheny township, a large portion of which is still owned by his descendants. Luke McGuire, Esq., and Captain Richard McGuire were sons of Michael McGuire, and came with him. Thomas Blair, of Blair's gap, Huntingdon county, was at this time the nearest neighbor Captain McGuire had. He resided at a distance of twelve miles.

"Mr. McGuire was followed not long afterward by Cornelius Maguire, Richard Nagle, Wm. Dotson, Richard Ashcraft, Michael Rager, James Aleorn, and John Storm; the last was of German descent. These were followed by others—John Trux, John Douglass, John Byrne, and, we believe, Wm. Meloy. Under the auspices of these men, and perhaps a few others, the country improved very rapidly. The first grist-mill in the county was built by Mr. John Storm. The hardships endured by these sturdy settlers are almost incredible. Exposed to the inclemency of an Allegheny winter, against the rigor of which their hastily-erected and scantily-furnished huts afforded a poor protection, their sufferings were sometimes almost beyond endurance. Yet with the most unyielding firmness did these men persevere until they secured for themselves and their posterity the inheritance which the latter at present enjoy. There was nothing that could be dignified with the name of *road* by which the settlers might have an intercourse with the settlements of Huntingdon county. A miserable Indian path led from the vicinity of where Loretto now stands, and intersected the road leading to Frankstown, two or three miles this side of the Summit.

"Many anecdotes are related by the citizens of Allegheny township of the adventures of their heroic progenitors among the savage beasts, and the more savage Indians, which then infested the neighborhood. The latter were not slow to seize every opportunity of aggression which presented itself to their blood-



thirsty minds, and consequently the inhabitants held not only property, but life itself, by a very uncertain tenure. The truth of the following story is vouched for by many of the most respectable citizens in Allegheny and Cambria townships, by one of whom it has kindly been furnished us for publication. A Mr. James Alcorn had settled in the vicinity of the spot where Loretto now stands, and had built a hut and cleared a potato patch at some distance from it. The wife of Mr. Alcorn went an errand to see the potatoes, and did not return. Search was immediately made, but no trace could be found to lead to her discovery. What became of her is to this day wrapped in mystery, and, in all human probability, we shall remain in ignorance of her fate. It was generally supposed that she had been taken by the savages, and it is even reported that she had returned several years after, but this story is not credited by any in the neighborhood."

The advent of the great American missionary priest, DEMETRIUS AUGUSTINE GALLITZIN, gave renewed courage to these poor colonists. He appeared among them under the humble name of Smith (his mother's maiden name was Schmectan), and commenced his labor with a zeal that knew no flagging for more than forty years, when he laid down his life in the midst of his sorrowing flock.

On his arrival at the scene of his labors in 1799, he had a rude log chapel erected, and was constant in his ministrations to the spiritual and temporal wants of his people. He wrote several controversial works in the midst of his duties. His "Defence of Catholic Principles," "Letter to a Protestant Friend," and "Appeal to the Protestant Public," have a very extensive circulation among those professing his faith. He died on the 6th of May, 1840, at Loretto, having for forty-two years exercised pastoral functions in Cambria county. He was born in 1770, at Munster, in Germany. His father, Prince de Gallitzin, ranked among the highest nobility in Russia. His mother was the daughter of Field-Marshal General de Schmectan, a celebrated officer under Frederick the Great. Her brother fell at the battle of Jena. Rev. Gallitzin held a high commission in the Russian army from his infancy. Europe in the early part of his life was desolated by war—the French revolution burst like a volcano upon that convulsed continent; it offered no facilities or attractions for travel, and it was determined that the young Prince de Gallitzin should visit America. He landed in Baltimore in August, 1792, in company with Rev. Mr. Brosius. By a train of circumstances in which the hand of Providence was strikingly visible, his mind was directed to the ecclesiastical state, and he renounced for ever his brilliant prospects. Already endowed with a splendid education, he was the more prepared to pursue his ecclesiastical studies, under the venerable Bishop Carroll, at Baltimore, with facility and success. Having completed his theological course, he spent some time on the mission in Maryland.

Shortly after (1799) he directed his course to the Allegheny mountains, and found that portion of it which now constitutes Cambria county a perfect wilderness, almost without inhabitants or habitations. After incredible labor and privations, and expending a princely fortune, he succeeded in making "the wilderness blossom as the rose." His untiring zeal collected about Loretto, at the period of his decease, a Catholic population of three or four thousand. He not only extended the church by his missionary toils, but also illustrated and





defended the truth by several highly useful publications. In this extraordinary man we have not only to admire his renunciation of the brightest hopes and prospects; his indefatigable zeal—but something greater and rarer—*his wonderful humility*. No one could ever learn from him or his mode of life, what he had been, or what he exchanged for privation and poverty.

To intimate to him that you were aware of his condition, would be sure to pain and displease him. He who might have revelled in the princely halls of his ancestors, was content to spend thirty years in a rude log-cabin, almost denying himself the common comforts of life, that he might be able to clothe the naked members of Jesus Christ, the poor and distressed. Few have left behind them such examples of charity and benevolence. On the head of no one have been invoked so many blessings from the mouths of widows and orphans. It may be literally said of him, “if his heart had been made of gold he would have disposed of it all in charity to the poor.”

A memoir of Prince Gallitzin, in the German language, was written many years ago by Rev. Peter Henry Lenké, his successor at Loretto, and by Rev. Thomas Heyden, of Bedford, in English, while a full history of his life and ministry has been published by Sarah M. Brownson, New York, 1873.

After Gallitzin's arrival among the colony, he purchased large quantities of land which he conveyed to actual settlers at nominal prices. He also laid out the village of Loretto, and named it from the religious town of that name on the Adriatic. Here he sold the lots, as he sold the farm land, to merchants and mechanics, upon the condition that they should be built upon within a certain time.

The settlement thus inaugurated now embraces in whole or in part the townships of Allegheny, Clearfield, Gallitzin, Munster, Carroll, Chest, and Washington, and the villages of Loretto, Chest Springs, St. Augustine, Munster, Gallitzin, and Summitville. Within the territory where stood in 1800 the solitary log cabin chapel, there are now six fine churches with flourishing congregations.

2. The grand source of population was the Pennsylvania German stock. The pioneer of these settlers was Joseph Jahns, and those who followed in his wake were mostly Tunkers (German *Tunken*, to dip), and Mennonites, or Amish. Mr. Jahns (or Yahns, as he spelled his name), arrived on the scene in 1791. He found the site of the present town, an old Indian village, called Kickenapawling's old town. The other settlers located in the adjacent county, notably on Amish Hill, so named from its colony, and their descendants preponderate to the present day in the districts surrounding Johnstown. They are a thrifty, honest people; have their clergy among themselves, rarely patronize the doctor—the lawyer, never.

3. The third settlement was made by a colony of emigrants from Wales. Ebsenburg and vicinity were not settled for several years after the first settlement was made at Loretto and Munster. As it lay still further from the more eastern settlements than the two latter places, it of course would not so soon be occupied by the hardy emigrants. In the fall and winter of 1796, the families of Thomas Phillips, William Jenkins, Theophilus Rees, Evan Roberts, Rev. Rees Lloyd, William Griffith, James Nicholas, Daniel Griffith, John Jones, David Thomas, Evan James, and George Roberts; and Thomas W. Jones, Esq., John



Jenkins, Isaac Griffith, and John Tobias, bachelors, commenced settling in Cambria township, Cambria county; and in the following spring and summer the families of the Rev. Morgan J. Rees, John J. Evans, William Rees, Simon James, William Williams (South), Thomas Griffith, John Thomas, John Roberts (Penbryn), John Roberts (shoemaker), David Rees, Robert Williams, and George Turner, and Thomas Griffith (farmer), James Evans, Griffith Rowland, David Edwards, Thomas Lewis, and David Davis, bachelors, followed. There were at this time several families living in the vicinity of the places where Loretto, Munster, Jefferson, and Johnstown now stand. The settlers above named, we believe, were all from Wales. They commenced making improvements in the different parts of what is now called Cambria township. The name which the Welsh emigrants gave to their settlement, Cambria, was derived from their former home—the mountainous part of Wales. Cambria township afterwards gave name to the county, which was, at the time of which we speak, a part of Somerset county. The tract of country on which the Welsh emigrants settled had been purchased a year or two previous by the Rev. Morgan J. Rees (mentioned above), from Dr. Benjamin Rush, of Philadelphia, and by him sold to his Welsh brethren, in smaller tracts.

The descendants of the Welsh are the principal population at this day of Ebensburg borough and Cambria township, while the settlement extends to a portion of all the adjoining townships. The colony, under lead of Rev. Rees Lloyd and Rev. George Roberts, were highly successful in their enterprise. They were, in religion, Dissenters, or Welsh Independents, and were men of strong religious convictions. Their services were at first exclusively in the Welsh language, and still preaching is rendered in that tongue in their churches. The colony, under lead of Rev. Morgan J. Rees, Baptist, settled some two miles further west, and founded Beula. They flourished for a few years, but subsequently the town was abandoned. A large Irish emigration subsequently settled in what is now Munster and Washington townships, and what is known as Hickory Ridge, in Allegheny township.

In the northern portion of the county settlements were afterwards made, both in the present bounds of Carroll township, one known as "Weakland" settlement, the other as "Luther" settlement. These settlers were from the eastern counties, as were also those who founded "Glasgow" settlement, in the north-eastern portion of the county. In the west, on Laurel hill, Michael Rager, a revolutionary soldier, located at an early day, and his descendants occupy a large portion of the territory at present. Rev. Peter Henry Lemké, a German priest, introduced a colony of German Catholics into the neighborhood surrounding Carrolltown, which is now a rich and thriving population. In more recent years there has been a considerable influx from the New England States, noted for their enterprise and industry.

Trouble with the aborigines did not prevail to any great extent within the limits of the county. No Indian settlement, except the town of Kickenapawling (Johnstown) existed in the county. The rugged and mountainous character of the country was not adapted to the habits of the red men. Frankstown, in Blair county, and Kittanning, on the Allegheny, were noted Indian villages, and Canoe Place, since known as Cherrytree, on the Susquehanna. The north-western



corner of Cambria county was known as the head of canoe navigation on the Susquehanna. To this point the Indians ascended in their canoes; when, drawing them from the stream, they would strike their trail, through northern Indiana to Kittanning. From Frankstown a trail historically known as "Kittanning Path" passed the eastern line of Cambria county, and pursued a north-western direction through the county to Canoe Place, or Cherrytree, whence the trail just mentioned was followed to Kittanning.

It will be seen that Cherrytree was noted as the head of canoe navigation on the Susquehanna, and the point of junction of the Indian trails or paths. But it obtained greater celebrity, as the northern boundary of the purchase from the Indians, at the treaty or purchase made at Fort Stanwix, November 5, 1768. That portion of the deed is in these words: "To the heads of a creek which runs into the west branch of Susquehanna, which creek is by the Indians called *Tyadaghton*, and down the said creek on the south side thereof to the said west branch of Susquehanna, then crossing the said river, and running up the same on the south side thereof, the several courses thereof to the fork of the same river, which lies nearest to a place on the river Ohio, called the *Kittanning*, and from thence," etc. This purchase included all of Cambria county.

The Kittanning Path was a well-known landmark. It is often referred to in land warrants, was well known to the old surveyors who located lands in Cambria, as well as our older citizens. In many places it can be traced to this day. It gives the name to that triumph of science, the Kittanning point on the Pennsylvania railroad, on the declivity of the Allegheny, the path pursuing the gap which the road almost encompasses.

John Hart, a German, who carried on a trade in furs, etc., with the Indians, is supposed to be the first white man who traveled this path. Some twelve miles north of Ebensburg, on the Dry Gap road, is a spot famous as the place where he, with his horse, was wont to spend the night; and the name is frequently called Hart's Sleeping to the present time by many of the earlier settlers. Tradition gives the name of Hartslog valley, in Huntingdon county, to him, from the fact that he there fed his horse in a *kerf* cut in a log.

An ancient fortification exists near the Beaver Dam branch of Clearfield creek, in the north-eastern portion of the county. Some years since part of the timbers remained, showing its extent and purpose, but the plowshare has nearly obliterated the last vestige of it. It was evidently a stockade or fort for refuge against Indian aggression; but there is no tradition concerning its construction or use.

A short distance further north is a most remarkable *windfall*. When a primeval forest, a hurricane had passed from west to east, and in its force levelled every tree with the ground for nearly a mile in width. Nearly forty years ago, when first seen by the writer, the appearance was most striking. Approaching it from the south, in a summer's day, with a clear sky, the narrow road led through a dense forest of stately pines, through which the sun never reached the head of the traveler, the eyes are at once greeted by a vast opening, and, he believes himself, of extensive cultivation. Emerging from the woods, he finds himself on an extended plain without a single tree, but a general growth of aspen (*Trembler*), its leaves reflected in the bright sunshine, and a



relief, appearing ethereal, after the dense forest from which he had just emerged. The monarchs of the forest had all been uprooted, and small mounds (the earth which had adhered to the roots) filled the plain, while the last remains of the huge forest trees lay crumbling to the eastward, the direction in which the hurricane had passed.

More recent improvements have put all this territory in cultivation, and the effect of the celebrated windfall is now, in a measure, lost; but the post office, itself "Fallen Timber," keeps alive its memories.

Cambria county furnished two companies in the war of 1812, commanded respectively by Captains Moses Canan and Richard McGuire, who were in the celebrated Black Rock expedition. Two companies volunteered for the Mexican war—the Cambria Guards, of Ebensburg, commanded by Captain James Murray, afterwards Captain C. H. Heyer, and the Highlanders, from Summitville, commanded by Captain John W. Geary, afterwards Governor of Pennsylvania.

The history of roads and highways possesses some local interest. Originally transportation over the mountain was carried on by *packing* on horses, and traveling by pathways. The nearest mill to the early Ebensburg settlers was at Blair's gap, nearly twenty miles distant. It took a day to reach the mill with the grist on horseback, and after its conversion to flour another day sufficed to get it home. The earliest road, if it may be dignified by that name, was known as Galbraith's road, which passed south of Ebensburg. From the location of the county, however, it necessarily became traversed by the various routes crossing from the east to Pittsburgh, or Fort Pitt, as it was then called. On the 29th March, 1787, an act of Assembly was passed appointing commissioners "to lay out a State highway, between the waters of the Frankstown branch of Juniata, and the river Conemaugh. This road, still known as the Frankstown road, crossing the Allegheny, reaches the Conemaugh at Johnstown. The stream by the same act was made a public highway. Portions of this road were changed by proceedings in the quarter sessions of the counties through which it passed, by act of April 11, 1799. By act of April 13, 1791, amended by act of April 10, 1792, the Conemaugh and its branches were declared public highways. The act of February 13, 1804, declared the Clearfield creek to the great Elk Lick (forks of Beaver Dam), a public highway. The act of April 11, 1807, appropriates money to the commissioners of Cambria county, "for improving the State road from Beula to Pittsburgh." It is a sad commentary on the history of the county, that while Pittsburgh and its environs may number two hundred thousand, there is not now a solitary house or inhabitant in Beula. The once thriving village, two miles west from Ebensburg, and its formidable rival, is now entirely deserted, and in many places it is difficult to trace the *State road*, whose improvement was in the eye of the Legislature.

The public road referred to passed centrally through Cambria county by Munster, Ebensburg, and Beula, and in legislative parlance was known as the "road leading from Blair's gap to the western line of the State." All this was before the days of turnpikes. On the 4th March, 1807, an act was passed incorporating a company to construct a turnpike "from Harrisburg through Lewis-town and Huntingdon to Pittsburgh." A supplement to this act incorporated a company for the construction of the "Huntingdon, Cambria, and Indiana Turnpike





Road," March 20, 1810. A further supplement of February 21, 1814, directed that the turnpike should be laid out "from the house of John Blair (Blair's gap), on the east side of the Allegheny mountain, on the post road in Huntingdon county, by the best and nearest route through Munster and Ebensburg, to the house of Martin Rager, on the west side of Laurel Hill." This turnpike was not finished for travel for several years after, and passes directly through the centre of the county. The Dry Gap road follows the same general direction as the Kittanning



VIEW ON THE OLD PORTAGE ROAD.

path, entering the county at the gap from which it takes its name, and extending north-west-erly to Cherrytree. A road was constructed from Ebensburg to Philipsburg, in Centre county, but only a portion of it is now in use.

General McConnell, of revolutionary memory, a resident of Philadelphia, held a large body of land in what is now Chest township, in northern Cambria, and Mrs. Ruth McConnell, the widow of his son, built a fine mansion on the property, and named her home Glenconnell. The doors, windows, etc., were brought from Philadelphia. A road led from "the Glen"

to Ebensburg, but has long been disused. A road also led from Beula to the town of Somerset, which is now obliterated.

But the age of improvement sped on. In 1831-32 the Portage railroad, ascending the eastern slope of the Allegheny by five *inclined planes*, up which the cars were drawn by stationary engines, and descending on the west by a like number, connected at Johnstown and Hollidaysburg with the "Main Line" of Pennsylvania improvements. This great achievement (as it was then called) is



superseded by the location of the Pennsylvania railroad, near the same line, which enters Cambria through the great tunnel at Gallitzin, and leaves the county on the line of Westmoreland and Indiana counties.

Two natural curiosities worthy of note, existing in this county, deserve brief mention. The Conemaugh, in its descent of the mountain, after the accession of the South Fork, finds its course arrested by a mighty ledge of rocks, and, turning to the right, passes for miles round an elevated plateau, and, returning to within a stone's-throw of the place of divergence, pursues its downward career. Immediately west of this is the Horse-shoe viaduct, constructed for the Portage railroad, and now used by the Pennsylvania railroad. In the same manner the Blacklick, near the western line of the county, forms a peninsula. Along the public road traversing this neck of land is an immense rock, which has been cleft by some convulsion of nature, and affords barely room in the crevice, or *crevasse*, for the passage of a wagon. The walls of this rock are perpendicular on each side, and if brought into contact would fit like joiner's work. Passing through this in the hottest summer day, the traveler experiences the coolness of an ice-house. Snow has been known to remain here till June.

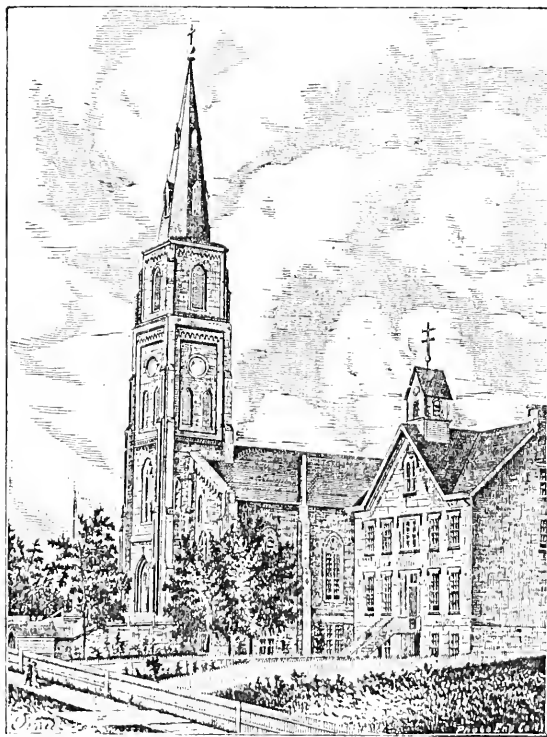
EBENSBURG is the county seat. It is situated in the precise geographical centre of the county. The Northern turnpike passes through its principal street; is connected with Indiana by a turnpike road, and a branch railroad connects it with the Pennsylvania railroad at Cresson. It has also public roads leading to Carrolltown, Loretto, and Wilmore. Ebensburg was laid out about the beginning of the present century by Rev. Rees Lloyd, who gave it the name of his eldest son, Eben. He also conveyed, in trust, the square upon which the public buildings now stand. The court house is a venerable building, wherein justice is still "judicially administered," but is by no means creditable to the town or the county. The jail is one of the finest and most massive, and *safe*, of any in the State. An academy also stands upon the public grounds; but is now used as a public school. Water works are in course of erection. The Sisters of St. Joseph have a Catholic school for boys, in a flourishing condition. The first court was held in the building known as the "Old Red Jail." The court room was above stairs—the prison below. It was here that Jemmy Farral, being sentenced for contempt of the court above, was seized with a devotional fit, and sang so lustily that the court was compelled to adjourn until his term of probation expired. Ebensburg was created a borough in 1825.

JOHNSTOWN, with its aggregation of surrounding municipalities, eight in number, embraces a population of 13,842. These are, Johnstown proper, Conemaugh, Millville, Cambria, Prospect, East Conemaugh, Franklin, Coopersdale, and Woodvale. Johnstown proper is situated at the confluence of Conemaugh creek with Stony creek, two of its wards, lying on the west side of the latter, and formerly known as Kernville. It is connected with its Kernville wards by a fine bridge across Stony creek, while a like structure crosses the Conemaugh, connecting the town with the Pennsylvania railroad and the Cambria iron works. Its location, as before stated, is on the site of Kickenapawling's Indian town, and was laid out by Joseph Jahns, before referred to, whence it derives its name. While the town itself lies mostly on a level plateau, it is surrounded on three sides by high and precipitous hills. The town is well paved, but the drainage



of a portion is very difficult. It is supplied with excellent water from Wild Cat run, on Laurel Hill; and recently additional supplies have been secured from the Conemaugh.

It is distinguished for the number and excellence of its churches. The Baptists, Catholics, Disciples, Episcopalians, Methodists, Lutherans (English and German), Presbyterians, and United Brethren have each fine church edifices. Sandy Vale Cemetery is beautifully situated and tastefully ornamented. It is



CATHOLIC CHURCH AND CONVENT AT CARROLLTOWN.

[From a Photograph by P. L. Eck.]

the chief burial place, immediately above town, on Stony creek. There are two elegant places of amusement, the town hall and opera house; a splendid market house; one daily newspaper and three weekly newspapers, two English and one German. Formerly the borough was the connecting point of railroad and canal transportation, and had a large number of warehouses for the deposit and transhipment of merchandise. These are all abandoned now, or converted to other purposes.

CARROLLTOWN, ten miles north of Ebensburg, is a prosperous borough, containing mainly German Catholic inhabitants. It boasts a very large and elegant Catholic church; and close by, a Benedictine convent. Immediately west of

the town stands a fine brick structure—the Benedictine monastery. Father Lemké, a German priest, was the founder of the town, and an association known as the De Lemké Society perpetuates his name and his virtues. An extensive tannery, a brewery, and other manufactures, add to the prosperity of the village. The borough is in Carroll township.

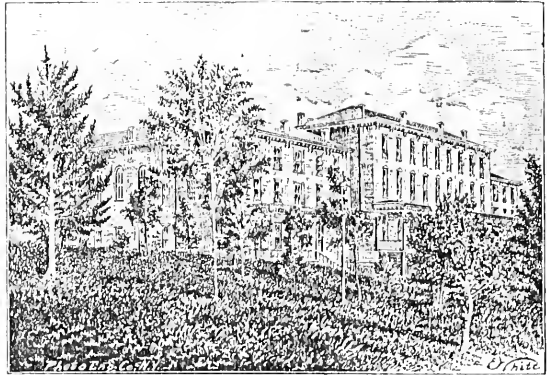
CONEMAUGH borough adjoins Johnstown, from which it is only divided by an imaginary line, in appearance it being the same town. In 1870 it contained 2,336 inhabitants. It lies above Johnstown on the Conemaugh side. It has an industrious and thriving population, the majority being laborers.

MILLVILLE is directly opposite Johnstown, fronting on the Conemaugh above and below its junction with the Stony creek. The immense iron and steel works of the Cambria iron company, alluded to in the early portion of this sketch, are



here located. The bulk of the inhabitants are operatives in these works. It has a population of 2,500.

CAMBRIA borough lies opposite Millville, on the Conemaugh. Like it, it is mostly inhabited by operatives in the mills. EAST CONEMAUGH and FRANKLIN lie two miles higher up the Conemaugh, the stream dividing the two boroughs. The works of the Pennsylvania railroad company are located here, and these villages are mainly inhabited by those in the employ of the company. Between these points and Conemaugh borough, the village of WOODVALE is situated. Here are located the extensive woolen mills of the Cambria iron company. A short distance below Cambria borough, on the Conemaugh, is COOPERSDALE. PROSPECT borough occupies the northern ascent from the Conemaugh, and is mainly inhabited by employees at the iron works. LORETTO, founded by Prince Gallitzin, is one of the oldest villages in the county. It contains a large Catholic church edifice, in front of which repose the remains of the pious founder, surmounted by a monument. The convent of St. Aloysius, under the auspices of the Sisters of



ST. ALOYSIUS' COLLEGE, LORETTO.

Mercy, is a very imposing building, and has had the highest success as an educational establishment. The Franciscan Monastery, on an eminence west of the town, is also a large and handsome structure, known as St. Francis, school for young men. It is situate in Allegheny township.

CHEST SPRINGS, on the Dry Gap road, partly in Allegheny, partly in Clearfield township, owes much of its prosperity to a New England colony, engaged in the manufacture of *shook* and other lumber. It has a large steam planing mill. WILMORE, on the Pennsylvania railroad and Conemaugh creek, in Summer Hill township, is largely engaged in the lumber trade.

SUMMITVILLE, on the mountain, in Washington township, was incorporated as a borough during the palmy days of the "Old Portage railroad," and continued to thrive during its existence. On its abandonment the town declined. It is now a favorite summer resort, on account of the grateful mountain breezes.

Among other villages may be noted—ADAMSBURG, in Adams township; BELSENO, on the Indiana turnpike, in Blacklick township; ST. LAWRENCE and ST. BONIFACIUS, in Chest township, each of which boasts a handsome Catholic church; ST. AUGUSTINE, in Clearfield township, with a large Catholic church; SUMMER HILL, in Croyle township, with a large lumbering establishment; GALLITZIN borough, at west end of Pennsylvania railroad tunnel, so named from Prince Gallitzin; FAIRVIEW, in Jackson township, on the Johnstown road; MUNSTER, on the Northern turnpike, in township of same name; PLATTVILLE, in

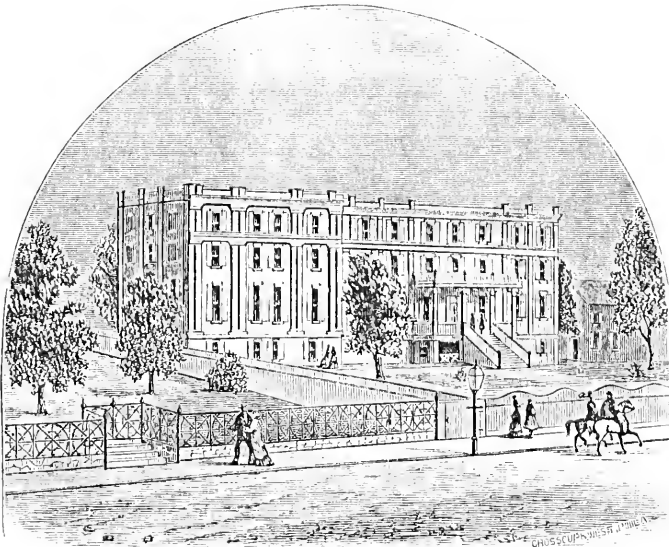




Susquehanna township; HEMLOCK and PORTAGE, in Washington township, on Pennsylvania railroad; and LLOYDSVILLE, in White township. The last is a village of recent growth, at the terminus of the Bell's Mill narrow gauge railroad, where the mining of coal is carried on very extensively.

The deserted village of BEULA has already been mentioned. Originally laid out with the dimensions of a city—afterwards the formidable rival of Ebensburg; the loss of the county seat, and the changed location of the Northern turnpike, left it without resources and without hope, and it went into rapid decay. At this time the site of the “deserted village,” as shown the visitor by the “oldest inhabitant,” is all that remains of the once prosperous Beula.

Cambria county, with Blair and Huntingdon, constitutes the twenty-fourth judicial district, Hon. John Dean, presiding; and is attached to the Western district of Supreme Court, sitting at Pittsburgh. With Blair, Bedford, and Somerset, she forms a Congressional district. With Blair county she elects a Senator, and is entitled to two members of the House of Representatives.



FEMALE SEMINARY AT WASHINGTON.

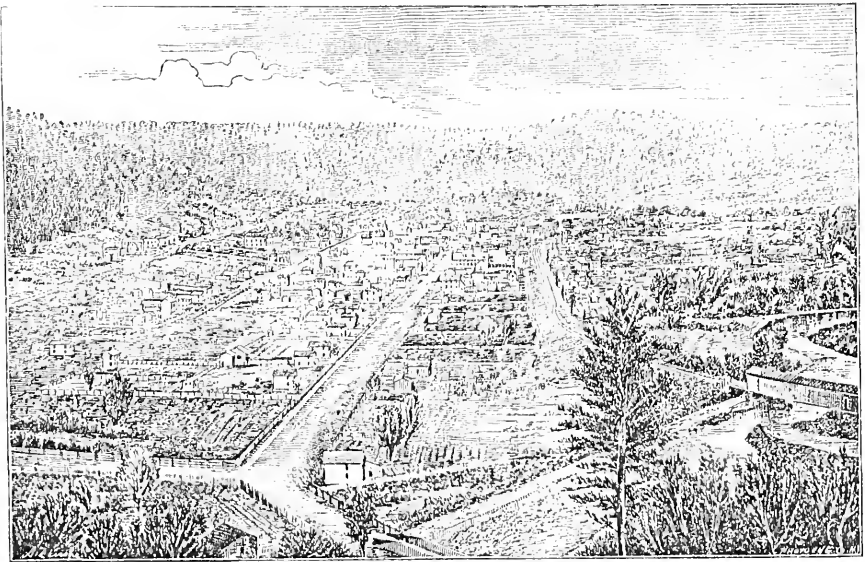


## CAMERON COUNTY.

BY JOHN BROOKS, SINNEMAHOING.



CAMERON County, named for the Hon. SIMON CAMERON, was organized by act of Assembly, March 29, 1860, from parts of Clinton, Elk, M'Kean, and Potter counties. It contains four hundred square miles, and is within the purchase of October 23, 1784, known as the *New Purchase*. It lies in latitude north  $41^{\circ} 30'$ , and longitude from Greenwich west  $78^{\circ} 30'$ , and among the spurs of the Alleghenies, and on the eastern slopes



VIEW OF THE BOROUGH OF EMPORIUM.

thereof. The mountain ridges rise here to an altitude of 2,100 feet above tide water.

The Sinnemahoning river and its branches and small creeks drain nearly all the area of the county, and are debouched into the West Branch of the Susquehanna.

The surface of the land within this county is much broken and rugged, occasionally interspersed with plateaus of table land upon the summits. These are mostly found in the middle and western parts of the county. The third bituminous coal basin passes into this county, a little north of the middle part, lying in a north-easterly and south-westerly direction, in which is found five workable veins of bituminous coal, and a vein of iron ore. The eastern part of the county



lies chiefly upon the crest or anticlinal axis between the second and third bituminous coal basins. The surface in this section is broken, lying in ridges and abrupt slopes and cliffs, and on which are found boulders and fragments of the conglomerate rock No. 12, which attains the thickness of one hundred feet in many places. Underlying this strata of conglomerate is found the out-croppings of a vein of iron ore (by some called *brown hematite*), and believed to be from four to five feet in thickness, but as yet not definitely ascertained.

The river flats or bottoms are alluvial and fertile. The uplands are mostly of the red shale and fire-clay soils, and are fertile and adapted to produce all the cereals and grasses of the latitude exuberantly.

The forests of this county contain a dense growth of white pine, white oak, and hemlock timber, with other varieties of oaks and pines, elms, butternut, sugar maple, cherry, etc., excepting those parts which have been devastated by the axe-man and the forest fires of the last half century.

Previously this county limit afforded the Indian inhabitants superior fishing and hunting grounds. The pure soft silvery waters teemed with the salmon, shad, pike, eel, trout, and other varieties of the finny tribe, and the forests abounded with elk, deer, black bear, raccoon, squirrels, wild turkey, pheasants, &c., all of which were evidently provocatives to the gastronomy of the Indian youths and maidens of the seventeenth and previous centuries. The pioneer families who migrated to this section of country early in the present century subsisted largely upon the abundance thus afforded. At this period it did not require the science or skill of a *Nimrod* and an *Isaac Walton* to furnish their tables with "bounteous supplies." The verdant Esau and the piscatory adventurer or tyro alike succeeded, so easily were these necessities of life obtained. The resources of Cameron county are chiefly the productions of the forests, the manufacture of lumber and of leather being the principal vocations. Agriculture (as in most all lumbering sections of country) has been sadly neglected. This has been disastrously true of the county of Cameron.

Three railroads pass into or through this county. The Philadelphia and Erie railroad passes through, and has about forty miles of grade within the county. The Buffalo, Philadelphia, and New York railroad passes into the county a distance of about fourteen miles, and forms a junction with the Philadelphia and Erie railroad at Emporium; and the Allegheny Valley (low grade) railroad passes into the county about ten miles, and forms a junction with the Philadelphia and Erie railroad at Driftwood.

The Cameron coal company have been producing and marketing coal occasionally for the twelve years past. Two large tanneries have been established within the county, consuming some eight thousand cords of bark annually, and manufacturing over sixty thousand sides of sole leather. Principally the hemlock bark is used by these tanneries.

The first settlements made within the limits of Cameron county were made in the years 1809 to 1815 inclusive. In 1809-10 Andrew Overdorf, Levi Hicks, Jacob Burge, John Earl, and John Jordan moved their families here and made improvements. In 1811-12 Joseph Mason, John Ramage, Stephen Berfield, Isaac McKisson, John Spangler, and Adam Logue made settlements. In 1813-14 Benjamin Brooks, Wm. A. Wykoff, James Shafer, Joseph Brooks, and John



Shefler migrated to this section, and made improvements. In 1815-16 David Crow, Elihu Chadwick, Brewster Freeman, Robert Lewis, A. Housler, J. Brittain, and others came with their families. The early settlers were generally a hardy, active, energetic "go-ahead" class of people, hailing mostly from eastern and middle Pennsylvania, from the State of New Jersey, and from the New England States. They, as a class, though rude, were honest in their dealings; though boorish, were hospitable and generous. Occupying, as they did, the remote outskirts of civilization, they were subjected to many privations, the more especially in this rugged section of country, without roads, except the Indian's trail, and the only mode of ingress and egress being by canoes and small boats. These early pioneers brought their families and goods in canoes up the Susquehanna river and the Sinnemahoning, propelled by manual force against the rapid current of the streams. These canoes were generally manned by a steersman and a bowsman, who with steel-pointed setting-poles placed upon the bottom of the stream upon which they threw their whole weight and force and thereby propelled their canoes forward, and by continued and repeated processes and propulsions, they frequently made twenty-five miles a day against the current, carrying in their canoes from three-fourths to one ton at a trip. On some occasions, in case of low water in the streams, the boat crew would be compelled to remove the gravel and fragments of rock from the line of their course, and wade for miles at a time in the stream, carrying and dragging their boats forward by their almost superhuman strength. Such frequent exercise of course developed an unusual vigorous muscle, and it would seem almost fabulous to describe the extraordinary feats frequently performed by these athletes of pioneer life.

The first settlers were not a migratory people. Their descendants (with the exception of that of McKisson) continue to reside in this region, at the present time, and many of them within the limits of Cameron county. These families were generally robust and fruitful. As an instance of this, may be mentioned the family of Mr. Benjamin Brooks, whose descendants, now living, number four hundred and fifty-eight persons, three-fourths of which number reside within a radius of twenty miles from the point where their ancestor first landed in this county. The majority of these early settlers could read, but had not much education; had no schools for many years, and the education of their children, for a time, was neglected. Several of these pioneers had done efficient service in the Revolutionary war, and some in the war of 1812. Almost all the vocations of the industrial classes were represented, and all could aid in the work of extemporizing a cabin for the accommodation of the recent immigrant. Among these early settlers there were but few who professed Christianity practically. Most of them, however, held some theory of religion, mostly Baptist or Presbyterian in their views. Profanity was the common spice of conversation, and God was, if "not in all their thoughts," in all their mouths; and invoked by way of execrations and imprecations more frequently than by benedictions. The use of whiskey was general; some families of more recent emigration always kept whiskey in the house, but kept no cows, alleging that a barrel of whiskey in a family was of more value than a cow.

At this early period flax was much cultivated, and sheep raised; and home-





spun and woven manufactured fabrics, dyed with butternut and garden madder, constituted the greater part of the apparel of all the classes. The sugar maple furnished the sugar, and the pumpkin the molasses, for general use. Coffee was made from rye, wheat, acorns, chestnuts, and peas; tea from the spice-bush, the sassafras root, and from the aromatic plants of the kitchen garden.

The Indians made frequent visits to this section of country for many years during its first occupation by the whites. They were, however, peaceable, and if they indulged in a spree, they always had one sober Indian to care for the others. In this they were more discreet than many of the whites.

The celebrated battle of Peter Grove with the Indians took place at the mouth of a small creek called Grove's run, which empties into the Sinnemahoning, about three-quarters of a mile above the mouth of the first fork of Sinnemahoning. This occurred long before this region was settled by the whites, the frontier being Sunbury. The Groves, Peter and Michael, resided about two miles east of Mifflinburg, in Buffalo valley, Union county. Peter Grove's father had been massacred by the Indians, who had exhibited contortions of the face to Peter Grove, thereby indicating how his father had made such contortions while being scalped. Peter Grove swore eternal vengeance on the murderers, and followed the party of Indians, pursuing them through the wilderness, until they had encamped for the night at the mouth of this small creek. Grove and his party of four men, among whom was a brother of his, observed from the summit of the fork hill of Ellicott's run, about two miles east of the encampment, their locality. Seeing their camp fires from his elevated position, he and his party approached the Indian encampment stealthily, and found them near a small pond and large spring of water, on or near the bank of the river, and near the mouth of the small creek, or Grove's run. The Indians had stacked their guns against a large oak tree; their tomahawks were sticking in the bark of a large limb that grew from the oak, quite within their reach. While all the Indians except one, who sat as a sentinel, were asleep at the foot of the oak tree, or near thereto, Peter Grove, after reconnoitering, learned their position, and after having instructed his men as to the manner of attack, they all fired except one man, and rushed upon the Indians, who had been surprised, seized part of their arms, and threw them into the pond of water near the encampment. Several Indians had been killed in the attack, and the remainder had been routed. Soon, however, after the Grove party left, the Indians had rallied in pursuit, and were seen descending the valley of the Susquehanna, below the mouth of the Sinnemahoning. Peter and his men having back-tracked themselves at this point, had waded up the bed of the Susquehanna, and from the mountain-top observed the Indians on the trail; but, mistaking the route of Grove's party, they went down the valley, while Peter and his party crossed through the mountains, and the second day thereafter saw the Indians where Lock Haven now is, from the Bald Eagle mountains. Grove and his men then passed their way to the settlement in Buffalo valley. About the year 1820 the pond at the mouth of the creek was drained, and a gun barrel and lock found, which had not been recovered by the Indians. The marks of the dozen tomahawks, made in the limb of the old oak tree, were visible, and were to be seen until the tree fell into the river by the constant washings of the bank where it stood. The tree fell about the year 1835.



Among the incidents that pertain to this county, the following may be noticed: In the year 1873 excavations were being made for a cellar under the post office building, at Sterling run, in this county. The building had been removed from its former site about forty feet, and hence the demand for the excavations for a cellar under the building at its new site. Mr. Earl, the proprietor of the grounds, in making these excavations found human bones, and proceeded the more carefully to continue his excavations, which, when completed, disclosed seventeen skeletons, evidently of Indian origin. All except two were of ordinary grown stature, while one measured over seven and a half feet from the cranium to the heel-bones. The bones had all remained undisturbed. They lay with their feet toward each other in a three-quarter circle, that is, some with their heads to the east, and then north-easterly to the north, and then north-westerly to the west. There had been a fire at the centre, between their feet, as ashes and coals were found there. The skeletons, except one smaller than the rest, were all as regularly arranged as they would be naturally in a sleeping camp of similar dimensions; the bones were many of them in a good state of preservation, particularly the teeth and jaw-bones, and some of the leg-bones and skulls. The stalwart skeleton had a stoneware or clay pipe between his teeth, as naturally as if in the act of smoking; by his side was found a vase or urn of earthenware, or stoneware, which would hold about a half gallon. This vessel was about one-third filled with a somewhat granular substance like chopped up tobacco stems or seeds. The vase had no base to stand upon, but was of the gourd-shape and rounded; its exterior had corrugated lines crossing each other diagonally from the rim. The rim of the vase had a serrated or notched form, and the whole gave evidence that it had been constructed with some skill and care, yet there was a lack of beauty of form or symmetry, which the race were at that period evidently ignorant of.

The skeletons were covered about thirty inches deep, twenty-four inches of which was red shale clay, or good brick clay. The top six inches was soil and clay, which, doubtless, had been formed from the decayed leaves of the forest for centuries. This ground had been heavily timbered. When the first clearing was made upon it, in 1813, there had not grown immediately over or upon this spot any very large trees, as no roots of trees had disturbed the relics, yet the timber in the immediate vicinity had been very large white pine and oak. This spot had been plowed and cultivated since 1818, and had been used as a garden for the last preceding ten years. I visited the ground, and examined the locality and position of all the skeletons. One, the smallest, had been in the erect or crouched position, in the north-west corner of the domicile. The most reasonable theory is that this was their habitation: that their hut had been constructed of this clay, as the surrounding grounds were gravelly, as was also the bottom of this spot. It would seem that the gravel had been scooped away, or had been excavated to the depth of two feet, and that there had been a hut constructed of clay over the excavation, and that while reclining in their domicile some electric storm had in an instant extinguished their lives, and at the same time precipitated their mud or clay hut upon them, thus securing them from the ravages of the beasts of the forest.

EMPORIUM borough, the county seat of Cameron, was incorporated 13th Octo-



ber, 1864. It has a court house and jail, a Methodist, a Presbyterian, and a Catholic church, a graded school building, one tannery, two saw mills, one planing mill, and one grist or flouring mill. The Philadelphia and Erie railroad passes through the town, and the Buffalo and Philadelphia and New York railroad forming a junction therewith. The town is situated on the Driftwood branch, at the junctions of the Portage creek and West creek with the Driftwood.

DRIFTWOOD borough was incorporated 17th January, 1872. It is located at the junction of the Driftwood and Bennett's branches of the Sinnemahoning. It was formerly called "Second Forks." The junction of the Allegheny Valley railroad with the Philadelphia and Erie railroad is at this place. The town has two churches, one Union and one Catholic.

The borough of CAMERON is not organized. It is at the mouth of Hunt's run, in Lumber township, and is the head-quarters of the Cameron coal company, who have offices here. The mills of the Hunt's Run lumber company are situated here. The town took its name from the post office, which was named in honor of General Cameron, who contributed the court house bell, thereby acknowledging the compliment.

STERLING RUN is in Lumber township, situate at the mouth of Sterling run. There are several mills and a tannery in the vicinity, and the lands upon this run or creek comprise the greater part of the coal lands in the county, and are owned by Ario Pardee, Hazelton, Noyes & Whiting, and the Simpsons, of New York. The town site was owned and laid out by one Brooks, called Philosopher Brooks, who was a surveyor, a real estate dealer, and lumberman, and who built many houses and mills, and had in his employ hundreds of men and scores of teams.

SINNEMAHONING is a village extending from the mouth of the first fork of Sinnemahoning, or east fork, up to the mouth of Grove's run, and takes in the station on the Philadelphia and Erie railroad called by that name. The greater part of the town is near the battle ground of Peter Grove and the Indians, and is called by some "Battle Grove," and by others "Enterprise." This town was laid out and owned by the person known as Philosopher Brooks. The town is partly in the township of Grove and partly in the township of Gibson.

ORGANIZATION OF TOWNSHIPS.—Lumber township was organized while in Clinton county. It is the third township from the east line of the county; lies on the Driftwood branch of Sinnemahoning; includes the villages of Cameron and Sterling Run. The first settlers in the township were John Spangler, Wm. Sterling, and John Sheffer, some of whose descendants still reside in the township.

SHIPPEN township is the north-western township in the county, and lies on West creek, Driftwood, North creek, and Lower Portage creek. The borough of Emporium was taken out of this township. Prominent early citizens were Elibu Chadwick, Brewster Freeman, John Earl, R. Lewis, A. Housler, and John Chandler.

PORTAGE township lies on the Upper Portage waters, and adjoining Potter county, of which it was a part. The Buffalo railroad passes through this township. There was a salt manufactory established here about 1833, now abandoned. The prominent early citizen was Hiram Sizen, who made the first improvement



and settlement, and built the first grist mill and wooden bowl manufactory, about 1828. His descendants still reside in the township.

GIBSON TOWNSHIP, named in honor of Colonel George Gibson, was organized while in Clearfield county, and lies next to Grove township on the west, and west of the line of Houston's district, which, running north and south, passes across the Sinnemahoning, about three-fourths of a mile above the mouth of the first fork, and near the mouth of Grove's run. Driftwood borough was taken from this township. Salt was made here in 1815-16. It has two post offices and six school houses, and four railroad stations. Prominent early citizens were Joseph Mason, John Jordan, Benjamin Brooks, and others, descendants of whom still reside in the township.

GROVE TOWNSHIP, named in honor of Peter Grove, was established while the territory was in Lycoming county, before Clinton county was organized. It is the most easterly township in the county of Cameron. It lies principally on the east branch of the Sinnemahoning, or what is called the first fork. The first settlement made in the limits of the county of Cameron was made in this and Gibson townships. It has three post offices and one railway station. Among its early citizens were James Shafer, John Ramage, and William A. Wykoff.



CHAMELEON FALLS, GLEN ONOKO, CARBON COUNTY.





## CARBON COUNTY.

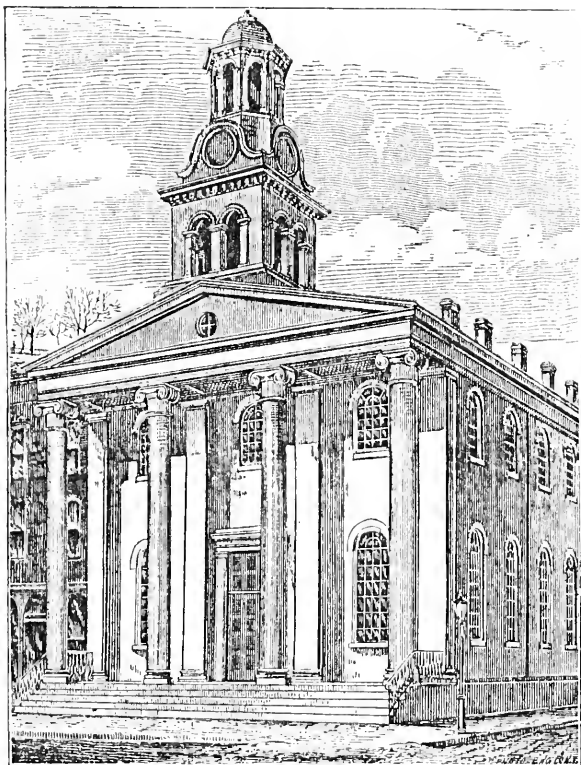
[With acknowledgments to Robert Klotz, Mauch Chunk.]



CARBON county was formed by an act of Assembly, passed March 13, 1843, out of parts of Northampton and Monroe counties. The commissioners appointed by the Governor to form the county were Charles W. Higgins, of Northumberland county, William J. B. Andrews, of Clearfield county, and John B. Brodhead, of Pike county. The original townships were East Penn, Upper Towamensing, Lower Towamensing, Mauch Chunk, and Lausanne, from Northampton county, and the township of Penn Forest, from Monroe county; since which time the following changes have been made by sub-division of townships and new townships formed, viz.:

Franklin [1852]; Mahoning, Packer [1854]; Banks, Lehigh [1872]; Kidder [1851]; making in all twelve townships, within which there are six boroughs, each having their own officers entirely independent of the townships from which they were taken, viz.:

Mauch Chunk, East Mauch Chunk, Leighton, Weatherly, Weissport, and Parryville.



CARBON COUNTY COURT HOUSE, MAUCH CHUNK.

[From a Photograph by James Zellner, Mauch Chunk.]

and is a very mountainous and wild region, with about one-third of the land adapted to agriculture. It is about equally divided by the Lehigh river, and is watered by a number of important and picturesque streams, the most promi-

The county is nearly square, or about twenty miles each way,



ment of which are the Aquaneshicola, Lizard, Poho-Poko or Big creek, Mahoning, Nesquehoning, and Quakake creeks.

The principal productions of the county are coal and lumber, and the outlets from the county to the markets are by the canal of the old Lehigh Coal and Navigation company (which had its commencement in this county), and the Lehigh Valley, and the Lehigh and Susquehanna railroads.

The first discovery of coal in the valley of the Lehigh was by a hunter named Philip Ginter, in 1791, on the top of Sharp mountain, now the site of the town of Summit Hill, nine miles north-west of Mauch Chunk. Making known his discovery to Colonel Jacob Weiss, residing at what is now known as Weissport, the latter took a specimen of it to Philadelphia, and submitted it to the inspection of Messrs. John Nicholson, Michael Hillegas, and Charles Cist, who were so well satisfied as to its merits, that in 1792 they, with some others, formed themselves into what was called the Lehigh Coal Mine company. Without charter or incorporation, they took up eight or ten thousand acres of unlocated land, including the Sharp mountain. The company proceeded to open the mines, and made an appropriation of ten pounds to construct a road to the landing, a distance of nine miles. The mines were not worked to any extent, owing to the poor encouragement they received, until after the commencement of the war of 1812. They afterwards gave leases of their mines to different individuals in succession, the last of which was owned by Messrs. Cist, Miner, and Robinson, who started several arks of coal to Philadelphia, only three of which reached the city. They abandoned the business, disheartened by the public incredulity, in 1815. People would neither purchase it (or, when they did, would afterwards complain of being imposed upon), nor take it as a gift. At the solicitation of Colonel Weiss, an attempt was made, by permission of the Philadelphia city authorities, to burn it under the boilers at the water-works; but it was declared that it only served to put the fire out, and the remainder was therefore broken up and scattered on the sidewalks in place of gravel. In the light of its present universal use, it is most amusing to recall the persistent discredit with which the public looked upon it in the beginning. Hand-bills were printed in English and German, stating the method of burning it, and including certificates from blacksmiths and others who had successfully used it. Sometimes journeymen were bribed to try the experiment fairly, so averse were they to any innovation of this kind. Luckily, charcoal became scarce and costly, and thus at length some were the more easily induced to test the new commodity; but it was many years before capitalists were led to put much faith in it as a profitable investment. The expenses of hauling from the mines and of transportation to the city were very great, so that in the early experiments coal cost the shippers about fourteen dollars a ton when ready for sale in Philadelphia.

In July, 1818, the Lehigh Navigation company, and in October of the same year, the Lehigh Coal company were formed, which together were the foundation of the present Lehigh Coal and Navigation company. The improvement of the Lehigh was commenced in August, 1818, and under the skillful and energetic management of Josiah White, Erskine Hazard, and George F. A. Hanto, the almost insuperable obstacles in the way of the river's navigation and the transportation of coal were at length overcome, and the success of the settlements



of Mauch Chunk and vicinity assured. Several incidents connected with this development of the coal trade are of such interest that we append them :

The Legislature were early aware of the importance of the navigation of the Lehigh, and in 1771 passed a law for its improvement. Subsequent laws for the same object were enacted in 1791, 1794, 1798, 1810, 1814, and 1816. A company was formed under one of them, which expended upwards of thirty thousand dollars in clearing out channels, one of which they attempted to make through the ledges of slate which extend across the river, about seven miles above Allentown ; but they found the slate too hard to pick, and too shelly to blow ; and at length considered it an insuperable obstacle to the completion of the work, and relinquished it. In 1812, Messrs. White & Hazard, who were then manufacturing wire at the Falls of Schuylkill, induced a number of individuals to associate and apply to the Legislature for a law for the improvement of the river Schuylkill. The coal, which was said to be on the head waters of that river, was held as an inducement to the Legislature to make the grant, when the senator from Schuylkill county asserted that there was no coal there—that there was a kind of “black stone” that was “called” coal, but that it would not burn.

During the war, Virginia coal became very scarce, and Messrs. White & Hazard having been told by Joshua Malin that he had succeeded in making use of Lehigh coal in his rolling mill, procured a cart load of it, which cost them one dollar per bushel. This quantity was entirely wasted without getting up the requisite heat. Another cart load of it was however obtained, and a whole night spent in endeavoring to make a fire in the furnace, when the hands shut the furnace door and left the mill in despair. Fortunately one of them left his jacket in the mill, and returning for it in about half an hour, noticed that the door was red hot, and upon opening it, was surprised at finding the whole furnace at a glowing white heat. The other hands were summoned, and four separate parcels of iron were heated and rolled by the same fire, before it required renewing. The furnace was then replenished, and as letting it alone had succeeded so well, it was concluded to try it again, and the experiment was repeated with the same result. In 1821 and 1822, the quantities of coal produced were so much increased that the public became secure of a supply ; and its own good qualities, together with its reasonable price, gave it an extensive and rapidly increasing demand. At this period, anthracite coal may be said to be permanently introduced into use. In 1824, the Lehigh company reduced the price of coal to seven dollars. In 1825, coal first came to Philadelphia by the improved navigation of the Schuylkill—the quantity was five thousand three hundred and seventy-eight tons. The year following sixteen thousand two hundred and sixty-five tons of coal were transported on the Schuylkill, and thirty-one thousand two hundred and eighty tons on the Lehigh.

Nature did not furnish enough water, by the regular flow of the river, to keep the channels at the proper depth, owing to the very great fall in the river, and the consequent rapidity of its motion. It became necessary to accumulate water by artificial means, and let it off at stated periods, and let the boats pass down with the long wave thus formed, which filled up the channels. This was effected by constructing dams in the neighborhood of Mauch Chunk, in which were placed sluice-gates of a peculiar construction, invented for the purpose by Josiah



White (one of the managers), by means of which the water could be retained in the pool above until required for use. When the dam became full, and the water had run over it long enough for the river below the dam to acquire the depth of the ordinary flow of the river, the sluice-gates were let down, and the boats, which were lying in the pools above, passed down with the artificial flood. About twelve of these dams and sluices were made in 1819. The boats used on this descending navigation consisted of square boxes or arks, from sixteen to eighteen feet wide, and twenty to twenty-five feet long. At first two of these were joined together by hinges, to allow them to bend up and down in passing the dams and sluices; and as the men became accustomed to the work, and the channels were straightened and improved as experience dictated, the number of sections in each boat was increased, till at last their whole length reached one hundred and eighty feet. They were steered with long oars, like a raft. Machinery was devised for jointing and putting together the planks of which these boats were made, and the hands became so expert that five men would put one of the sections together and launch it in forty-five minutes. Boats of this description were used on the Lehigh till the end of the year 1831, when the Delaware division of the Pennsylvania canal was partially finished. In the last year forty thousand nine hundred and sixty-six tons were sent down, which required so many boats to be built, that, if they had all been joined in one length, they would have extended more than thirteen miles. These boats made but one trip, and were then broken up in the city, and the planks sold for lumber, the spikes, hinges, and other iron work, being returned to Mauch Chunk by land, a distance of eighty miles.

The descending navigation by artificial freshets on the Lehigh is the first on record which was used as a permanent thing; though it is stated that in the expedition under General Sullivan, in 1779, General James Clinton successfully made use of the expedient to extricate his division of the army from some difficulty on the east branch of the Susquehanna, by erecting a temporary dam across the outlet of Otsego lake, which accumulated water enough to float them, when let off, and carry them down the river.

The celebrity of the Lehigh coal is very extensive, from the fact that it is the hardest known anthracite in the world. The bed upon the top of Mauch Chunk mountain is fifty-three feet in thickness, exceeding, in this respect, any layer or vein as yet discovered. In 1820 three hundred and eighty-five tons completely stocked the market. Now the shipments of the Lehigh Coal and Navigation company alone reach sometimes as much as twenty thousand tons per week.

It is claimed that the first railroad track ever laid down in the United States was in the streets of Mauch Chunk. It is believed that the first furnace in the country at which any considerable success was attained in the smelting of iron, with anthracite coal, was an old one at Mauch Chunk, temporarily fitted up for that purpose in the autumn of 1837 by Messrs. Joseph Baughman, Julius Guiteau, and Henry High, of Reading. An earlier attempt was made in the use of anthracite for fuel in iron manufacture at Mauch Chunk also in 1823-4, in a furnace built especially by persons connected with the Lehigh Coal and Navigation company. It was several years after this date that similar experiments were tried at Kingston, Mass., and at Vizelle, on the borders of France and Switzerland.





About one-third of Carbon county is adapted to agriculture. On the south and west side of the Lehigh river the soil is light gravel and red shale. On the north and east more sand and loam, underlaid with clay, which will eventually make the best farming country, especially for grass; and as the timber districts are becoming depleted, farming will increase.

Iron, slate, and mineral paint are found in the townships of East Penn, Franklin, and Lower Towamensing, not, however, developed to any great extent, except paint, of which some four thousand tons are annually manufactured and sold by the Prince Metallic Paint company.

The Carbon Iron company is located at Parryville, on the Lehigh river, six miles below Mauch Chunk. These furnaces have a capacity of six hundred tons per week. The hematite ore used in them is mined partly in the neighborhood and partly in Lehigh and Berks counties. At Weissport there is a rolling mill containing two heating furnaces and three double puddling furnaces, with a full complement of rolls and other machinery necessary to turn out thirty-five tons per day of merchant bar-iron, scrolls, band-iron, etc. Punching and spike machines have recently been added.

Considerable lumber is shipped from the north-west part of the county, especially from the Hickory Run and Mud Run districts, Kidder township, and some from Penn Forest township.

The first settlement in Carbon county was by the Moravian missionaries in the year 1746. The converted Mohican Indians having been driven out of Shokomeko, in New York, near the borders of Connecticut, and from Pachgatgoch in the latter state, found an asylum for a short time at Friedenshütten, near Bethlehem. Deeming it inconvenient to maintain a large Indian congregation so near Bethlehem, the missionaries purchased two hundred acres on the north side of Mahoning creek, about half a mile above its junction with the Lehigh. Each Indian family possessed its own lot of ground, and began its separate housekeeping. Gnadenshütten became a very regular and pleasant town. The church stood in the valley; on one side the Indian houses, forming a crescent, upon a rising ground; and on the other stood the house of the missionary, and the burying-ground. The road to Wyoming and other Indian towns lay through the settlement. This was the famous path over Neseopec mountain, still known as the Warrior's path. The missionaries tilled their own grounds, and every Indian family their plantation; and on the 18th of August, 1746, they had the satisfaction to partake of the first fruits of the land at a love-feast. Christian Rauch and Martin Mack were the first missionaries who resided here. They were succeeded by other missionaries, who were occasionally removed, the brethren being of opinion that frequent changes of the ministers of the congregation might be useful in preventing too strong an attachment to, and dependence upon men, and fixing the hope of the Indians more upon God alone. Several parts of Scripture had been translated into the Mohican language. The congregation met morning and evening to sing and pray, and sometimes to hear a discourse upon the text of Scripture appointed for the day. The holy communion was administered to the communicants every month. The Indians called the communion day the great day, and such indeed it was, for the missionaries could never find words to extol the power and grace of God



revealed on these occasions. In September, 1749, Bishop [Baron] John de Watteville went to Gnadenhütten and laid the foundation of a new church, that built in 1746 being too small, and the missionaries being obliged to preach out of doors. The Indian congregation alone consisted of five hundred persons. About this time Rev. David Brainerd and several of his Indian converts visited Gnadenhütten. The congregation continued in this pleasing and regular state until the year 1754.

When the Delawares and Shawanese on the Susquehanna, says Loskiel, began to waver in their allegiance to the English, and were preparing to take up the hatchet on the side of the French, it became an object of some importance to them to withdraw their Indian brethren in the missionary settlements beyond the reach of the whites, that the hostile savages might more freely descend upon the white settlements. The Christian Indians for some time resolutely refused to move to Wyoming. At length, however, a part were seduced by the influence of Teedyuscung. The Mohicans who remained were joined by the Christian Delawares from Meniolagomekah, and the land on the Mahoning being impoverished, and other circumstances requiring a change, the inhabitants of Gnadenhütten removed to the north side of the Lehigh. The dwellings were removed, and a new chapel was built in June, 1754. The place was called New Gnadenhütten, and stood where Weissport now is. The dwellings were so placed that the Mohicans lived on one, and the Delawares on the other, side of the street. The brethren at Bethlehem took the culture of the old land on the Mahoning upon themselves, made a plantation of it for the use of the Indian congregation, and converted the old chapel into a dwelling, both for the use of those brethren and sisters who had the care of the plantations, and for missionaries passing on their visits to the heathen.

“The Indians in the French interest were much incensed that any of the Moravian Indians chose to remain at Gnadenhütten, and determined to cut off the settlement. After Braddock’s defeat, in 1755, the whole frontier was open to the inroads of the savage foe. Every day disclosed new scenes of barbarity committed by the Indians. The whole country was in terror; the neighbors of the brethren in Gnadenhütten forsook their dwellings and fled; but the brethren made a covenant together to remain undaunted in the place allotted them by Providence. However, no caution was omitted; and because the white people considered every Indian as an enemy, the Indian brethren in Gnadenhütten were advised as much as possible to keep out of their way—to buy no powder nor shot, but to strive to maintain themselves without hunting, which they willingly complied with. But God had otherwise ordained. On a sudden the mission-house on the Mahoning was, late in the evening of 24th November, attacked by the French Indians, burnt, and eleven of the inhabitants murdered. The family, being at supper, heard an uncommon barking of dogs, upon which Brother Senseman went out at the back door to see what was the matter. On the report of a gun, several ran together to open the house door. Here the Indians stood with their pieces pointed towards the door, and firing immediately upon its being opened, Martin Nitschmann was instantly killed. His wife and some others were wounded, but fled with the rest up stairs into the garret, and barricaded the door with bedsteads. Brother Partsch escaped by jumping out of a back window.



Brother Worbass, who was ill in bed in a house adjoining, jumped likewise out of a back window and escaped, though the enemies had placed a guard before his door. Meanwhile the savages pursued those who had taken refuge in the garret, and strove hard to burst the door open; but finding it too well secured, they set fire to the house, which was soon in flames. A boy called Sturgis, standing upon the flaming roof, ventured to leap off, and escaped; though at first, upon opening the back door, a ball had grazed his cheek, and one side of his head was much burnt. Sister Partsch seeing this took courage, and leaped likewise from the burning roof. She came down unhurt, and unobserved by the enemies; and thus the fervent prayer of her husband was fulfilled, who in jumping out of the back window cried aloud to God to save his wife. Brother Fabricius then leaped also off the roof, but before he could escape was perceived by the Indians, and instantly wounded by two balls. He was the only one whom they seized upon alive, and having dispatched him with their hatchets, took his scalp, and left him dead on the ground. The rest were all burnt alive, and Brother Senseman, who first went out at the back door, had the inexpressible grief to see his wife consumed by the flames. Sister Partsch could not run far for fear and trembling, but hid herself behind a tree, upon a hill near the house. From hence she saw Sister Senseman, already surrounded by the flames, standing with folded hands, and heard her call out, 'Tis all well, dear Saviour—I expected nothing else! The house being consumed, the murderers set fire to the barns and stables, by which all the corn, hay, and cattle were destroyed. Then they divided the spoil, soaked some bread in milk, made a hearty meal, and departed—Sister Partsch looking on unperceived. This melancholy event proved the deliverer of the Indian congregation at Gnadenhütten; for upon hearing the report of the guns, seeing the flames, and soon learning the dreadful cause from those who had escaped, the Indian brethren immediately went to the missionary, and offered to attack the enemy without delay. But being advised to the contrary, they all fled into the woods, and Gnadenhütten was cleared in a few minutes, some who already were in bed having scarce time to dress themselves. Brother Zeisberger, who had just arrived in Gnadenhütten from Bethlehem, hastened back to give notice of this event to a body of English militia, which had marched within five miles of the spot; but they did not venture to pursue the enemy in the dark."

The fugitive congregation arrived safely at Bethlehem. After the French and Indians had retired, the remains of those killed on the Mahoning were carefully collected from the ashes and ruins, and solemnly interred. A broad marble slab, placed there in 1788, now marks the grave, which is situated on the hill a short distance from Lehigh, and a little north of a small hamlet which occupies the site of the ancient missionary village. The following is the inscription on the marble:

"To the memory of Gottlieb and Joanna Anders, with their child Christiana; Martin and Susanna Nitschmann, Anna Catharine Senseman, John Gattermeyer, George Fabricius, clerk; George Schweigert, John Frederick Lesly, and Martin Presser, who lived here at Gnadenhütten unto the Lord, and lost their lives in a surprise from Indian warriors, November the 24th, 1755. Precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of his saints.—Psal. cxvi. 15."

In 1756 Benjamin Franklin was sent out by the Provincial authorities to erect



stockade forts on the Lehigh, which was then the northern frontier. The fort erected opposite Guadenhiitten was named Fort Allen, in honor of William Allen, chief justice of the Province. It served as a place of refuge in times of Indian depredations, and for a number of years was occupied by at least a handful of rangers and scouts.

As late as 1780 the Gilbert family, living on Mahoning creek, five or six miles from Fort Allen, were carried into a bitterly painful captivity by a party of Indians, who took them to Canada, and there separated them. At the time of its occurrence this event caused intense excitement throughout the State, and from an interesting narrative published shortly after their release from captivity, we append the following synopsis :

Benjamin Gilbert, a Quaker from Byberry, near Philadelphia, in 1775, removed with his family to a farm on Mahoning creek, five or six miles from Fort Allen. His second wife was a widow Peart. They were comfortably situated, with a good log dwelling-house, barn, and saw and grist mill. For five years this peaceable family went on industriously and prosperously; but on the 25th April, 1780, the very year after Sullivan's expedition, they were surprised about sunrise by a party of eleven Indians, who took them all prisoners. At the Gilbert farm they made captives of Benjamin Gilbert, Sr., aged 69 years; Elizabeth, his wife, 55; Joseph Gilbert, his son, 41; Jesse Gilbert, another son, 19; Sarah Gilbert, wife to Jesse, 19; Rebecca Gilbert, a daughter, 16; Abner Gilbert, a son, 14; Elizabeth Gilbert, a daughter, 12; Thomas Peart, son to Benjamin Gilbert's wife, 23; Benjamin Gilbert, a son of John Gilbert of Philadelphia, 11; Andrew Harrigar, of German descent, 26; a hireling of Benjamin Gilbert's; and Abigail Dodson, 14, a daughter of Samuel Dodson, who lived on a farm about one mile from Gilbert's mill. The whole number taken at Gilbert's was twelve. The Indians then proceeded about half a mile to Benjamin Peart's dwelling, and there captured himself, aged 27; Elizabeth, his wife, 20, and their child, nine months old.

The last look the poor captives had of their once comfortable home was to see the flames and falling in of the roofs, from Summer Hill. The Indians led their captives on a toilsome road over Mauch Chunk and Broad mountains into the Nescoepec path, and then across Quakake creek and the Moravian pine swamp to Mahoning mountain where they lodged the first night. On their way they had prepared moccasins for some of the children. Indians generally secure their prisoners by cutting down a sapling as large as a man's thigh, and therein cut notches in which they fix their legs, and over this they place a pole, crossing it with stakes drove in the ground, and on the crotches of the stakes they place other poles or riders, effectually confining the prisoners on their backs; and besides all this they put a strap round their necks, which they fasten to a tree. In this manner the night passed with the Gilbert family. Their beds were hemlock branches strewed on the ground, and blankets for a covering. Andrew Montour was the leader of the Indian party.

The forlorn band were dragged on over the wild and rugged region between the Lehigh and the Chemung branch of the Susquehanna. They were often ready to faint by the way, but the cruel threat of immediate death urged them again to the march. The old man, Benjamin Gilbert, indeed, had begun to fail, and had





been painted black—a fatal omen among the Indians; but when his cruel captors had put a rope around his neck, and appeared about to kill him, the intercessions of his wife softened their hearts, and he was saved. Subsequently, in Canada, the old man conversing with the chief observed, that he might say what none of the other Indians could, “that he had brought in the oldest man and the youngest child.” The chief’s reply was impressive; “It was not I, but the great God, who brought you through; for we were determined to kill you, but were prevented.”

On the fifty-fourth day of their captivity, the Gilbert family had to encounter the fearful ordeal of the gauntlet. “The prisoners,” says the author of the narrative, “were released from the heavy loads they had heretofore bear, compelled to carry, and were it not for the treatment they expected on their approaching the Indian towns, and the hardship of separation, their situation would have been tolerable; but the horror of their minds, arising from the dreadful yells of the Indians as they approached the hamlets, is easier conceived than described—for they were no strangers to the customary cruelty exercised upon the captives on entering their towns. The Indians—men, women, and children—collect together, bringing clubs and stones in order to beat them, which they usually do with great severity, by way of revenge for their relations who have been slain. This is performed immediately upon their entering the village where the warriors reside, and cannot be avoided; the blows, however cruel, must be borne without complaint. The prisoners are sorely beaten until their enemies are weary with the cruel sport. Their sufferings were in this case very great; they received several wounds, and two of the women who were on horseback were much bruised by falling from their horses, which were frightened by the Indians. Elizabeth, the mother, took shelter by the side of one of them (a warrior), but upon his observing that she met with some favor upon his account, he sent her away; she then received several violent blows, so that she was almost disabled. The blood trickled from their heads in a stream, their hair being cropped close, and the clothes they had on in rags, made their situation truly piteous. Whilst the Indians were inflicting this revenge upon the captives, the chief came and put a stop to any further cruelty by telling them ‘it was sufficient,’ which they immediately attended to.”

Soon after this a severer trial awaited them. They were separated from each other. Some were given over to Indians to be adopted, others were hired out by their Indian owners to service in white families, and others were sent down the lake to Montreal. Among the latter was the old patriarch Benjamin Gilbert. But the old man, accustomed to the comforts of civilized life, broken in body and mind from such unexpected calamities, sunk under the complication of woe and hardship. His remains were interred at the foot of an oak near the old fort of *Cœur du Lac*, on the *St. Lawrence*, below *Ogdensburg*. Some of the family met with kind treatment from the hands of British officers at Montreal, who were interested in their story, and exerted themselves to release them from captivity.

Sarah Gilbert, the wife of Jesse, becoming a mother, Elizabeth left the service she was engaged in—Jesse having taken a house—that she might give her daughter every necessary attendance. In order to make their situation as comfortable as possible, they took a child to nurse, which added a little to their



income. After this, Elizabeth Gilbert hired herself to iron a day for Adam Scott. While she was at her work, a little girl belonging to the house acquainted her that there were some who wanted to see her, and upon entering the room, she found six of her children. The joy and surprise she felt on this occasion were beyond what we shall attempt to describe. A messenger was sent to inform Jesse and his wife that Joseph Gilbert, Benjamin Peart, Elizabeth his wife, and their young child, and Abner and Elizabeth Gilbert the younger, were with their mother.

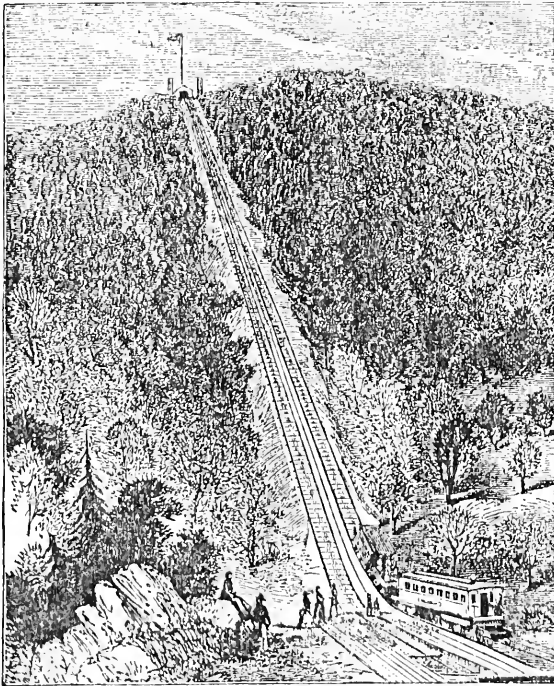
Among the customs, or indeed common laws, of the Indian tribes, one of the most remarkable and interesting was adoption of prisoners. This right belonged more particularly to the females than to the warriors, and well was it for the prisoners that the election depended rather upon the voice of the mother than on that of the father, as innumerable lives were thus spared whom the warriors would have immolated. When once adopted, if the captives assumed a cheerful aspect, entered into their modes of life, learned their language, and, in brief, acted as if they actually felt themselves adopted, all hardship was removed not incident to Indian modes of life. But, if this change of relation operated as amelioration of condition in the life of the prisoner, it rendered ransom extremely difficult in all cases, and in some instances precluded it altogether. These difficulties were exemplified in a striking manner in the person of Elizabeth Gilbert the younger. This girl, only twelve years of age when captured, was adopted by an Indian family, but afterwards permitted to reside in a white family of the name of Secord, by whom she was treated as a child indeed, and to whom she became so much attached as to call Mrs. Secord by the endearing title of mamma. Her residence, however, in a white family, was a favor granted to the Secords by the Indian parents of Elizabeth, who regarded and claimed her as their child. Mr. Secord having business at Niagara, took Betsy, as she was called, with him; and there, after long separation, she had the happiness to meet with six of her relations, most of whom had been already released and were preparing to set out for Montreal, lingering and yearning for those they seemed destined to leave behind, perhaps for ever. The sight of their beloved little sister roused every energy to effect her release, which desire was generously seconded by John Secord and Colonel Butler, who, soon after her visit to Niagara, sent for the Indian who claimed Elizabeth, and made overtures for her ransom. At first he declared that he "would not sell his own flesh and blood;" but, attacked through his interest, or in other words, his necessities, the negotiation succeeded, and, as we have already seen, her youngest child was among the treasures first restored to the mother at Montreal.

Eventually they were all redeemed and collected at Montreal on the 22nd of August, 1782, when they took leave of their kind friends there and returned to Byberry, after a captivity of two years and five months.

The premises where stood the dwelling and improvements of the Gilbert family were on the north side of Mahoning creek, on an elevated bank about forty perches from the main road leading from Lehighton and Weissport to Tannaqua, and about four miles from the former. Benjamin Peart lived about half a mile further up the creek, and about one-fourth of a mile from the same, on the south side.



The subsequent events transpiring within the limits of Carbon county are so intimately connected with its progress and development, that we have alluded to them in the former portion of this sketch. In the war of the Revolution, this portion of the then Northampton county, notwithstanding its frontier exposure, contributed largely to that gallant band of heroes who, under the lead of Washington, gained for us our independence. In the war of 1812 the enthusiasm of the inhabitants was unbounded; and wherever and whenever required, the struggles of their fathers were not forgotten; although they shared no blood-stained battle-field, their services helped to swell the patriot host which mustered



MOUNT PISGAH INCLINED PLANE.

for the defence of the Delaware and the metropolis of Pennsylvania. In the recent civil conflict Carbon county contributed her full share in men and means to put down the rebellion. Many of her sons fell on the field of strife, cementing by their blood the union of the States. The history of these troops we leave to the faithful local historian.

MAUCH CHUNK, the county seat, is situated on the west bank of the Lehigh river, forty-six miles from its mouth, in what has been called the "Switzerland of America." It was first settled about the year 1815. It was then a perfect wilderness, covered with

forest-trees and undergrowth, and so completely hemmed in by high and steep mountains, that it was as unlikely a spot as could be selected for a town, while any outlet by means of a wagon road seemed well nigh impossible. The borough is located on a creek of the same name, in a narrow gulch, between three high, steep, and rocky mountains, whose peaks average eight hundred and fifty feet above the town. Mauch Chunk is an Indian name, and means "Bear mountain." One of the peaks, in proximity to the town, is the celebrated Mount Pisgah, over which crosses the far-famed switch-back railroad, annually visited by sight-seers from all parts of the country. Until 1827 the coal was brought from the mines to the river in wagons. To Josiah White is due the honor of this enterprise, which has contributed so largely to the development and prosperity of this locality. By means of stationary engines at the different



planes, the empty cars are hauled up and returned to the mines, and the loaded ones brought as far as Summit Hill, whence they proceed, by gravity, to the shutes at Mauch Chunk. The grade varies from fifty to ninety feet per mile, except in the descent from Summit Hill to Panther Creek valley, when it is two hundred and twenty feet. The same unusual style of locomotion is also adopted for passenger cars, and affords a remarkable degree of amusement and enjoyment to the numerous visitors carried daily over this route. By a tunnel one mile in length, through the Nesquehoning mountain, from the Panther Creek valley, the coal company ships most of its coal to Mauch Chunk, retaining the switch-back road for passenger travel almost exclusively.

From the foot of Mount Pisgah a double track has been constructed to its summit, a distance of two thousand three hundred and twenty-two feet, with an elevation of about nine hundred feet above the river, at an angle of twenty degrees. The scene from the top of the plane is really sublime. The view of Mauch Chunk, Upper Mauch Chunk, East Mauch Chunk, nestling beneath the shadows of the mountains, with the Lehigh river winding its way at its base, and alive on either side with the steam-cars and canal boats; the succession



THE CASCADE, GLEN ONOKO.

of mountain ridges, rising range after range; the distant view of the Lehigh water gap, with occasional glimpses of intervening fields and hamlets, and the far distant view of Schooley's mountain, in New Jersey; this with much more that cannot be described, combine to make this panorama one of almost matchless beauty and grandeur. As a consequence, Mauch Chunk has become a favorite resort. The borough contains handsome church edifices of stone and brick, belonging to the Presbyterian, Episcopal, Catholic, and Methodist congregations. The county prison is a fine specimen of architecture, costing over \$130,000. The court house is a plain, substantial, and commodious building. The borough is well lighted with gas, while few places enjoy so great and constant supply of pure spring water. Its industries consist principally of two extensive iron foundries and machine shops for the manufacture of stationary engines, pumps, boilers, etc., steam flour and grist mill, car repair shops, shoe

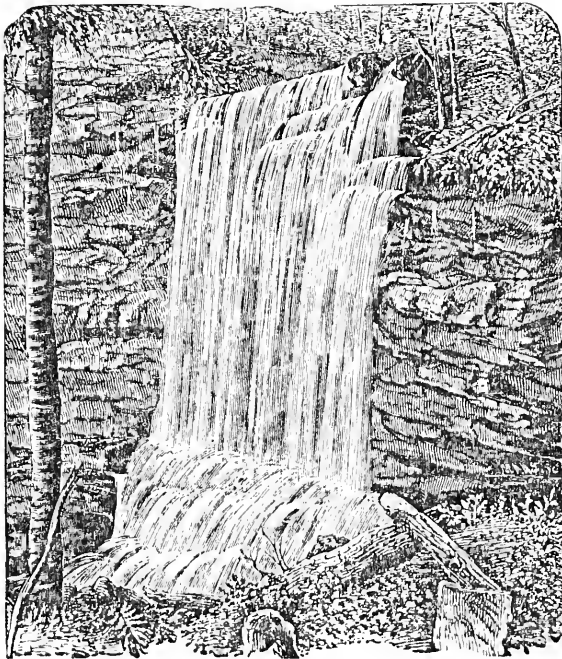




factories, boat yards, and two wire-rope factories. The machinery for this latter branch of manufacture was first invented in Mauch Chunk. The second ward of the borough, called Upper Mauch Chunk, is situated on the mountain, about two hundred and fifty feet above the main part of the town. It is a quiet and industrious place, of about one thousand inhabitants, principally Germans, who work in the different car shops and on the railroads. A grave-yard is located on the neighboring height.

The grandeur and magnificence of the scenery of Carbon county is not

confined to picturesque Mauch Chunk. Two miles above is situated Glen Onoko, greatly admired for its wild beauty. Its course is westerly, and the total ascent over nine hundred feet. It forms the channel for a pure and limpid stream, which follows its eccentric course over innumerable cascades and rapids until it empties into the Lehigh. The finest view in the Glen includes not only the Chameleon Falls but also Onoko Falls and the Cascade, and this double vista is rich with a diversity of loveliness not easy to describe. The former are so called from the variety of colors frequently noticeable in the spray



ONOKO FALLS, GLEN ONOKO.

and foam. They are fifty feet high. Onoko Falls are the highest in the Glen, and are esteemed the handsomest. Their height is ninety feet. The shelving overhanging rocks on either side are covered with moss and fern, and these, with a tree now and then jutting out from their apparently sterile embrace, form a fitting embellishment to the dashing and sparkling waters which have been for centuries seeking through their fissures an outlet from their mountain source.

A view of the Nescopee valley from Prospect rock is grand and imposing. For miles and miles the eye ranges over a succession of fertile valleys interspersed with the primeval forest. The panorama extends as far as the eye can reach. Not far distant is Cloud Point, so named from the fact that it is very frequently shrouded in filmy vapor. Here, too, the view is of equal beauty, and in the language of a celebrated tourist, "there is something indescribably grand in the solitude of this scene—forests of giant trees lifting high their heads,



through which peer rough visaged rocks, which the hand of time has failed to smooth."

All along the Lehigh valley, north of Mauch Chunk, are numberless attractions. Fifty years ago it was almost an unexplored wilderness, but the ingenuity of man has triumphed, and instead of the dangerous defile and the impassable mountain torrent, two railroads thread the way; and the scenic beauties—a succession of valley, precipice, mountain, rock, ravine, snowy cascade, and romantic nook, are open to the artist and the traveller, enrapturing the one and charming the other.

Not far from Cloud Point is Glen Thomas, named in honor of David Thomas, the pioneer of the iron trade of the Lehigh. In this shaded dell is the Amber Cascade, so greatly admired by all visitors to this picturesque region.

The borough of EAST MAUCH CHUNK was incorporated in 1853. It is situated on the east side of the Lehigh river, on a level platform of land surrounded by mountains. The streets are wide, and it contains many handsome residences. It has a Catholic, Methodist, and Episcopal church edifices. Most of the trading is carried on with Mauch Chunk, three-quarters of a mile distant.

WEISSPORT borough was early settled by Colonel Jacob Weiss, Quartermaster-General of the Revolutionary army. It contains among other industries, an emery wheel manufactory, a foundry, boat yards, sash factory, saw mill, etc. The town is situated on a level sandy plain, along the shore of the Lehigh river, and on the site of old Fort Allen. The famous Franklin well, constructed by the celebrated printer, is in a good state of preservation. Weissport was incorporated as a borough in 1867.

LEHIGHTON, directly across the Lehigh river, and from which it takes its name, is an old town, also laid out over a hundred years ago. It is a stirring borough, containing about two thousand inhabitants, having a foundry, pork packing establishment, lumber and coal yards, grist mill, coach factories. The Lutherans, Presbyterians, Catholic, Episcopalians, and Methodists have each a church. The famous Guadenhütten burying ground is located here. The "Packerton" Lehigh Valley railroad company's shops are located one and a half miles north of it, and also those of the Lehigh Valley and Lehigh and Susquehanna railroads. Mahoning and East Penn townships are tributary to its trade. This borough has doubled its popu-



AMBER CASCADE, GLEN THOMAS.



lation in ten years, and is destined to be the largest town in Carbon county. It was incorporated in 1855.

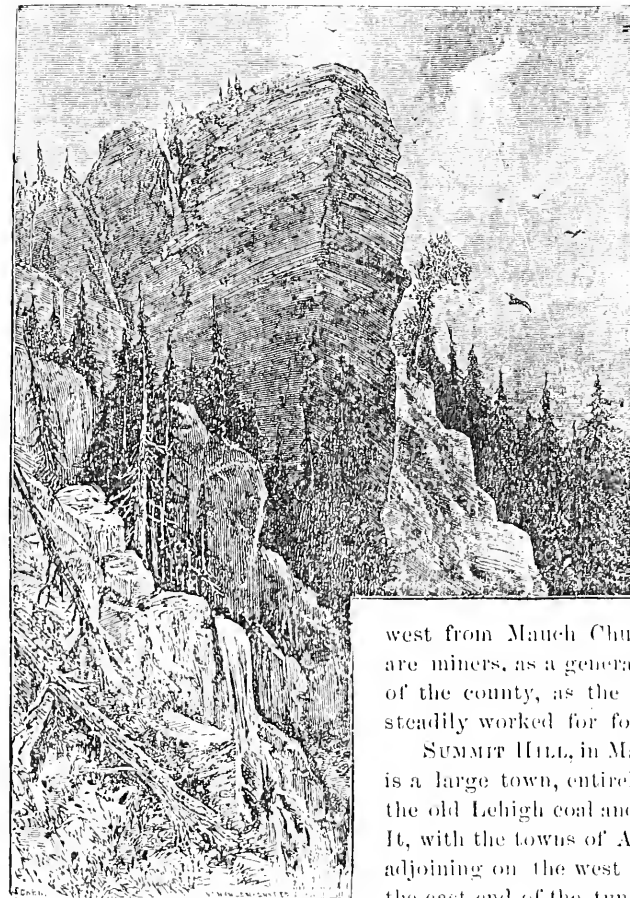
PACKERTON, named in honor of Hon. Asa Packer, the president of the Lehigh Valley railroad, contains the large shops of the Lehigh Valley railroad company, completed in 1863, where nearly five thousand coal and box cars were built during 1875, employing about six hundred men. Here is located the deer park of Judge Packer, seventy-five acres of which are enclosed, containing elk, antelope, deer, etc. Packerton contains a post office, Methodist church, and a large

school-house, erected by Mr. Packer, and presented by him to the school board of the Packerton independent school district. Adjoining this is a small hamlet known as Dolonburg, containing a population deriving their support from Packerton.

NESSQUEHONING is a small mining village in Mauch Chunk township, on the Nesquehoning Valley railroad, four and one-half miles north-

west from Mauch Chunk. The inhabitants are miners, as a general thing, old residents of the county, as the place has been very steadily worked for forty years.

SUMMIT HILL, in Mauch Chunk township, is a large town, entirely a mining district of the old Lehigh coal and navigation company. It, with the towns of ASIFTON and SANSFORD, adjoining on the west (the latter place being the east end of the tunnel made a few years ago by the Lehigh coal and navigation com-



CLOUD POINT.

pany, nearly a mile long), containing repair shops, and the large amount of coal produced from the different mines, make Summit Hill, as the centre, a busy place, with a population of about three thousand hardy, sturdy miners and artisans. This is the end of the famous switch back railroad, and by it in times past all the product was transported. Since the completion of the tunnel at Sansford, the towns are supplied by that road running from Mauch Chunk to Tamaqua station,



at Sansford. The north end of the tunnel is called Houts, after one of the partners of the original firm of the original coal producing company of 1817, White, Hazard & Houts. Here are located very large works where small coal receives its second cleaning prior to its being shipped to market.

WEATHERLY borough, a very busy, thriving town of full one thousand five hundred inhabitants, near the junction of the Mahanoy branch of the Lehigh Valley railroad, is situated on Black creek. It contains large repair shops and locomotive works for the Lehigh Valley railroad. It was incorporated in 1864.

BUCK MOUNTAIN, a village at the mines of that name. The Buck Mountain coal company lies in Lausanne township, adjoining the Luzerne county line.

ROCK-PORT is a small town on the Lehigh river. In former days it was the outlet of the coal from the Buck Mountain company's mines to the canal. The canal was washed away in 1862, and since its abandoning is the station of the Lehigh and Susquehanna railroad. There is an extensive flagstone quarry near by. The poor house farm is located in the neighborhood, and is a model in its way.

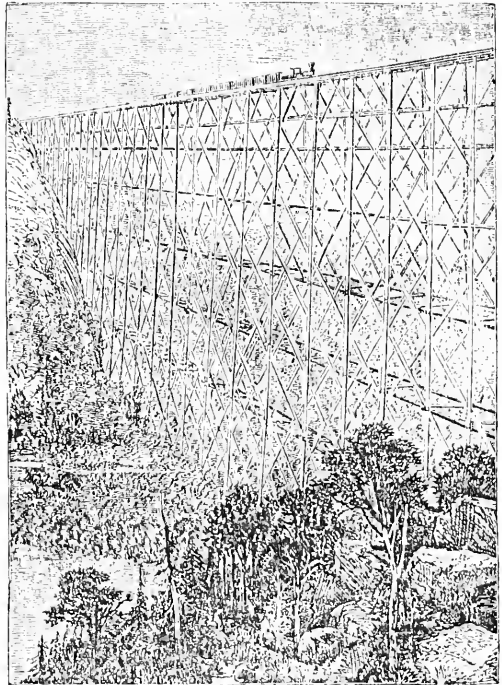
LEHIGH WATER GAP is located where the Lehigh river cuts through the Blue mountains. It is known as the residence of General Craig of revolutionary fame. A small hamlet in a very picturesque place at the junction of the Aquanishicola creek and the Lehigh river.

MILL-PORT is situated two miles up Aquanishicola creek. It is a small village, containing a tannery, mill, etc., and gives the people of the village and the township of Lower Towamensing a centre of labor.

BEAVER MEADOW, a village located in the east end of Banks township, close to the Beaver Meadow mines, also other large coal works near by and newly building, is the station of the Beaver Meadow branch of the Lehigh Valley railroad. It contains a large shoe manufactory, etc.

YORKTOWN is a mining town, in the western end of Carbon county, from which a large amount of coal is shipped by the Lehigh and Susquehanna and Lehigh Valley railroads.

JEANSVILLE, a flourishing mining town, lies partly in Luzerne and partly in Carbon counties. It ships large quantities of coal.



NES, PAUNING BRIDGE.

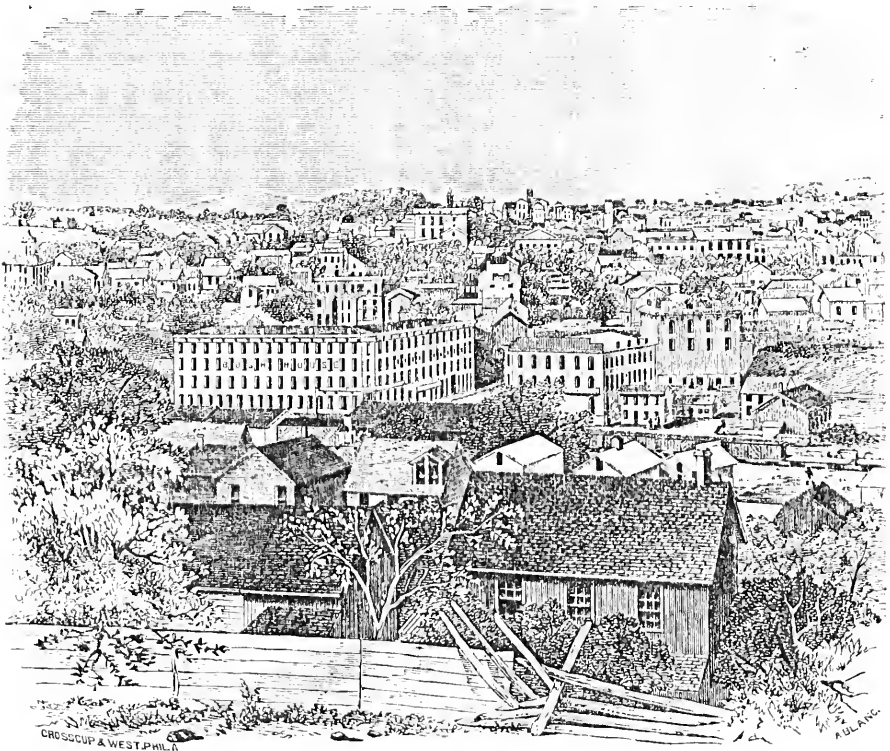




## CENTRE COUNTY.

BY JOHN BLAIR LINN, BELLEFONTE.

**T**HE act "for creating parts of the counties of Mifflin, Northumberland, Lycoming, and Huntingdon into a separate county, to be called Centre," was approved February 19, 1800. [Dallas' Laws, vol. iv. 541.] The bounds of its territory then commenced on the river, opposite the mouth of Quinn's run (improperly called in present maps "Queen run"); thence running nearly due south to the mouth of Fishing creek (where



VIEW OF THE BOROUGH OF BELLEFONTE.

[From a Photograph by Moore, Bellefonte.]

Mill Hall has been built since); thence a course a little south of east, to the old north-east corner of Haines, including Nittany valley; from which point they followed the present boundaries of the county to the Moshannon creek; thence to the mouth of the Moshannon; thence down the river to the place of beginning.

The act creating Clin'on county (21st June, 1839, P. L., 362) carved from



Centre the territory now embraced in that part of Chapman and Crugan townships south of the river; all of Beech Creek, Porter, and Logan, and nearly all of Greene, Lamar, and Bald Eagle townships, in the former county.

The northern line of the purchase of 1758 ran from a point on Buffalo creek, a few miles west of Mifflinburg, Union county, due west, passing through where Bellefonte now stands, to the east side of the Allegheny hills, where the boundary deflected southerly to the State line at what is now the intersection of the bounds of Bedford and Somerset with the latter. About the half, then, of the present territory of Centre was within the purchase of 1758, and that the more tillable portion. "So cautious, however, were the proprietors at this period, of offending the Indians, by making surveys beyond the line, that the most positive instructions were given the deputy surveyors on this head; and as the line was not run, nor its exact position known, the end of Nittany mountain appears to have been assumed as a station, and a west line from thence presumed to be the purchase line." [Charles Smith, 2 Smith Laws, 122.]

Cumberland county had been formed January 27, 1750, including all the western portion of the Province. All the southern half of Centre county therefore was within the bounds of Cumberland until the following changes took place: first, Bedford county was erected March 9, 1771, and that part of Frankstown township, which included the territory forming now the southern portions of Harris, Ferguson, Half-Moon, Taylor, and Rush townships, came within the bounds of Bedford, and remained there until Huntingdon was erected, September 20, 1787; second, Northumberland county was erected March 21, 1772, embracing the present territory of the county north of the Bedford county line; speaking with reference to the lines between Bedford and Northumberland, ascertained in pursuance of the act of 30th of September, 1779. [Dallas' laws, vol. i. page 803.] On the 19th of September, 1789, Mifflin county was formed [Dallas' Laws, vol. ii., 718], including all the southern half of the territory of Centre except the part in Huntingdon county above referred to, and Gregg, Penn, Haines, and Miles townships, as now constituted, which remained in Northumberland.

On the 22d of September, 1766, William Maclay made the first survey in Penn's valley, then in Cumberland county, a reservation of the Proprietaries in the name of Henry Montour, eight hundred and twenty acres, called the Manor of Snecoth, described as on the head of Penn's creek, above the great Spring and north-west of it. It adjoins the Matlack survey (where Spring Mills now stands) on the north, in Gregg township, and is called for by all the surrounding surveys. On the 23d and 24th of September, 1766, Mr. Maclay surveyed what is now known as the "Manor," for the Proprietaries, embracing one thousand and thirty-five acres in what is now Potter township, described as "near the Indian path leading from the head of Penn's creek to Old Frankstown, where the waters seem to turn to Little Juniata." Its bounds ran south-westerly from the tract on which Potter's Fort tavern stands, eight hundred and fifty-seven perches, or nearly three miles, its width varying from one hundred and fifty-eight perches on the east, to two hundred and fifty-four and a half on the west. The Haines' surveys, running from the mouth of Elk creek, along Penn's, and for nearly a mile up Sinking creek, were made by the same surveyor in September and October, 1766; a few



others were made for General Potter (now in Gregg township), in 1766. A number of surveys, commencing with the John Chandler, immediately west of Woodward, were made in October, 1766; but the larger portion of the valley surveys do not date beyond 1774.

On November 5, 1768, the upper half of the present territory of Centre was secured by purchase at Fort Stanwix from the Indians. It was all within Cumberland until the erection of Northumberland, in 1772. It being within Charles Lukens' district, the oldest surveys were made by Lukens and his deputies, in the summer of 1769. The "officer's surveys," extending from Lock Haven to Howard, were made by Charles Lukens, in March and April, 1769. The Griffith Gibbon, on which Bellefonte now stands, was surveyed July 20, 1769, and the Peter Graybill (on which Milesburg is now built), on the 18th of July, 1769, then known as the "Bald Eagle Nest."

The valley surveys, commencing near Stover's, in Brush valley, and running up to Gregg township, were all made by William Maclay, for Colonel Samuel Miles, in 1773. A manuscript journal of Richard Miles probably indicates the surveying party: "April 20, 1773, started for Shamoken, from Radnor, Chester county, in company with James and Enos Miles, Abel Thomas, and John Lewis." They passed up the river by way of Muncy Hill and Great Island; then went up the Bald Eagle, returning by way of the Narrows, down through Buffalo valley.

Elk, Penn's, Pine, Sinking, and Bald Eagle creeks had their names as early as 1766. Marsh, Beech, Spring, Fishing, Moshannon creeks, Wallis, Davis, and Buffalo runs have their names in 1769. Scull's map of April 4, 1770, indicates the position of the Eagle's Nest, Great Plains, Big Spring, now Spring Mills, the Indian path from "the Nest," up Buffalo run to Huntingdon.

In 1772 the territory was nearly all included in Buffalo and Bald Eagle townships, Northumberland county—Buffalo, extending up to the forks of Penn's creek, thence by a north line to the river, and Bald Eagle beginning at the forks, thence by a north line to the river, thence up the same to the county line, etc. At May sessions, 1774, Potter township was erected out of Penn's, Buffalo, and Bald Eagle, bounded eastward by a line from the top of Jack's mountain, by the four-mile tree in Reuben Haines' road in the Narrows, to the top of Nittany mountain, thence along the top thereof to the end thereof, at Spring creek, on the old path, thence south or south-east to the top of Tussey's mountain, thence along the county line to the top of Jack's mountain, etc. At February sessions, 1790, the name of Potter township was changed to Haines.

The southern portion of Centre county was settled by emigrants from Cumberland valley as early as 1766, and before that. The settlers of the northern portion came in by way of the Bald Eagle creek in 1768 and 1769. Among the earliest settlers of this northern portion of the county were Andrew Boggs, who built his cabin on the Joseph Poultney, opposite Milesburg, Daniel and Jonas Davis, who settled a little farther down the creek, William Lamb, Richard Malone, etc.

Among the Revolutionary soldiers of Centre county were Philip Barnhart, who died April 3, 1843; Lawrence Bathurst; Nicholas Bressler, died in April, 1843; Isaac Broom, wounded at Germantown; John C. Colby, a deserter from the Hessians; Jacob Duck, died in 1836; Peter Fleck, Peter Florey, of Haines



township; Jacob Fliischer, Ludwig Friedley, John Glantz, John Garrison, of Spring; Henry Herring, William Hinton, of Boggs, who died in 1839, aged ninety-one years; Christopher Keatley, of Potter township; William Kelly, John Kitchen, Daniel Koons, David Lamb, died April 19, 1837, and who was with Arnold at Quebec; Mungo Lindsay, of Col. Miles' regiment; William Mason, of Spring township; John McClean, of Potter; Jacob Miller, of Walker; Henry McEwen, of Potter, who was also at Quebec; Alexander McWilliams; Isaac McCamant, of Ferguson; John F. Ream, Evan Russel, Adam Sunday, Valentine Stober; Nicholas Schnell, of Potter, Nicholas Shanefelt, of Harris; William Taylor; Joseph Vaughn, of Half-Moon; David Wilson, of Bald Eagle; Joseph



PENN'S VALLEY, FROM NITTANY MOUNTAIN.

[From a Photograph by Moore, Bellefonte.]

White, of Boggs; Neal Welsh, of Half-Moon. Robert Young, of Walker, of Lowdon's company at Boston, in August, 1775; also James Dougherty, who was made a prisoner at Quebec, and afterwards served in Washington's Life-Guards until the end of the war.

In 1776 Penn's valley was pretty numerously settled, and Potter township, which then embraced that valley, was represented in the county committee of safety by John Livingston, Maurice Davis, and John Hall. A company of associators from it and the Bald Eagle settlement, in March, 1776, was officered as follows: Captain William McElhatton, First Lieutenant Andrew Boggs, Second Lieutenant Thomas Wilson, Ensign John McCormick. A Presbyterian church was organized in East Penn's valley, and a church built at Spring Mills at a very





early date. The first regular pastor, of whom we have any account, was Rev. James Martin, who commenced his labors there April 15, 1789; he died June 20, 1795, and is buried at Spring Mills. He was the ancestor of the Bell family of Blair county.

On the 8th of May, 1778, the Indians killed one man on the Bald Eagle settlement, Simon Vaugh, a private of Captain Bell's company; he was killed at the house of Jonas Davis, who lived a short distance below Andrew Boggs, opposite Milesburg. Robert Moore, the express rider, who took the news, stopped at the house of Jacob Standiford to feed his horse, where he found Standiford dead, who, with his wife and daughter, were killed and scalped, and his son, a lad of ten or eleven years of age, missing. Standiford was killed on what was lately Ephraim Keller's farm, three miles west of Potter's Fort. Henry Dale, father of Captain Christian Dale, who helped bury them, said that Standiford and four of his family were killed. They were buried in a corner of one of the fields on the place, where their graves may still be seen.

On the 25th of July, 1778, General Potter writes from Penn's valley, "that the inhabitants of the valley are returned, and were cutting their grain. Yesterday two men of Captain Finley's company, Colonel Brodhead's regiment, went out from this place in the plains a little below my fields, and met a party of Indians, five in number, whom they engaged; one of the soldiers, Thomas Van Dorañ, was shot dead, the other, Jacob Shedaere, ran about four hundred yards, and was pursued by one of the Indians; they attacked each other with their knives, and one excellent soldier killed his antagonist. His fate was hard, for another Indian came up and shot him. He and the Indian lay within a perch of each other; these two soldiers served with Colonel Morgan in the last campaign." (At Burgoyne's capture.) James Alexander, who in after years farmed the old Fort place, found a rusted hunting knife near the spot of the encounter. Two stones were put up to mark the spot, still standing on William Henning's place, near the fort.

In 1792, when Reading Howell published his map, his stations on the main road were Hubler's, Aaronsburg, McCormick's, now Spring Mills, and Potter's. Connelly's is marked in Nittany valley, Malone's opposite the Nest, Antes' below. Miles' in Brush valley, Willy brook (Willy-bank), name of a stream issuing principally from Matlack's spring, and running into Spring creek; the Buffalo Lick, on Buffalo run, on the place now owned by Mrs. Samuel H. Wilson's heirs. Aaronsburg was then the only town in the territory.

In the years 1770 or 1771 Reuben Haines, a rich brewer of Philadelphia, who owned the large body of land above referred to, cut a road from the hollow just below the Northumberland bridge, up along the south side of Buffalo valley, through the narrows into Penn's valley. In 1775 a road from the Bald Eagle to Sunbury, along the west side of the Susquehanna, was laid out, and the main road through Buffalo valley was pushed up as far as the Great Plain. The turnpike era commenced March 29, 1819, with the incorporation of the Aaronsburg and Bellefonte turnpike road company and the Youngmanstown and Aaronsburg turnpike road company. Inland navigation, with the incorporation of the Bald Eagle and Spring Creek navigation company, April 14, 1834. Railroads, with the incorporation of the Tyrone and Clearfield railroad company, March 23, 1854, and the Tyrone and Lock Haven, February 21, 1857.



The development of the iron interest of Centre county commenced with the purchase by Colonel John Patton, of the tract upon which he erected Centre furnace, now in Harris township, and twenty-eight other contiguous tracts from Mr. Wallis, May 8, 1790. He built Centre furnace in the summer of 1792.

The next adventurer in that business was General Philip Benner, who bought the Rock Forge place of Mr. Matlack, May 2, 1792, and in 1793 erected his house there, together with forge, slitting, and rolling mill.

In 1795 Daniel Turner erected Spring Creek forge, of which nothing remains now but the site, and in 1796 Miles Dunlap & Co. had Harmony forge, on Spring creek, in operation.

In 1837 the following iron works were in operation: On Bald Eagle creek: Hannah furnace, owned by George McCulloch and Lyon, Shorb & Co.; Martha furnace, owned by Roland Curtin; a new furnace, owned by Adams, Irwin & Huston. On Moshannon and Clearfield creeks: Cold Stream forge, owned by Mr. — Adams; a forge and extensive screw factory, owned by Hardman Phillips. On Spring and Bald Eagle creeks: Centre furnace and Milesburg forge and rolling mill, owned by Irwin & Huston; Eagle furnace, forge, and rolling mill, owned by Roland Curtin; Logan furnace, forge, rolling mill, and nail factory, owned by Valentine & Thomas; Rock furnace and forge, owned by the heirs of General P. Benner; forge owned by Irwin & Bergstresser. On Fishing creek and Bald Eagle creek: Hecla furnace and Mill Hall furnace and forge, owned by John Mitchell & Co.; Howard furnace, owned by Harris & Co.; Washington furnace and forge, owned by A. Henderson. Also, in the county: Tussey furnace, owned by Lyon, Shorb & Co., not now in operation; and a furnace owned by Mr. — Friedley. In all, thirteen furnaces, making annually eleven thousand six hundred tons pig metal; ten forges, making four thousand five hundred tons blooms; three rolling mills, manufacturing two thousand three hundred tons into bar iron and nails.

AARONSBURG was laid out by Aaron Levy, of the town of Northumberland, on the 4th of October, 1786. The town plan is recorded at Sunbury of that date. Aaron's square, ninety feet in breadth, extending from East street to West street, was reserved for public uses.

BELLEfonte was laid out by Messrs. James Dunlop and James Harris, upon the Griffith Gibbon tract, which they purchased of William Lamb, in 1795. The first members of town council were William Petriken, Roland Curtin, J. G. Lowrie, Thomas Burnside, Andrew Boggs, and Robert McLanahan. It was incorporated March 8, 1806. The first water works were erected in 1808. On the 18th of March, 1814, another act of incorporation was passed, including Smithfield in the borough, and repealing the former one.

MILESburg was laid out by Colonel Samuel Miles, on the Peter Graybill tract, known as the Bald Eagle's Nest, in 1793. The old Indian town stood on the right bank of the creek about a mile below where Spring creek empties into the Bald Eagle. Many applications of 1769 have reference by distance or otherwise to the Bald Eagle's Nest. The Joseph Poultney, on the opposite bank of the creek, is described "as near the fording, including his improvement, and opposite the Nest." Milesburg was incorporated March 3, 1843.

The "Bald Eagle's Nest" was the residence of an Indian chief of that name,



who had built his wigwam there between two white oaks. Bald Eagle was the chief of a Muncy tribe, and commanded the party which made the attack upon a party of soldiers who were protecting some reapers on the Loyal Soek, on the 8th of August, 1778, when James Brady was mortally wounded. He was killed at Brady's Bend on the Allegheny, fifteen miles above Kittanning, by Captain Samuel Brady, in the early part of June, 1779. [Appendix to Pennsylvania Archives, page 131.] It was a place of resort by the Indians even after the Revolutionary war. Shawance John and Job Chillaway, friendly Indians, made it their rendezvous. The former, who belonged to Captain Lowdon's company,



BALD EAGLE'S NEST, FROM BELOW, ON SPRING CREEK.

(Photograph by Moore & Co., etc.)

which fought in front of Boston, died at the "Nest" many years after the war. All traces of the village have long since disappeared.

PHILLIPSBURG was laid out before Centre county was erected. Henry and James Phillips were the proprietors, and the first house was built by John Henry Simler, a Revolutionary soldier, in the year 1797. Simler enlisted in Paris, in 1780, in Captain Claudius de Berts' troop, Colonel Armand's (Marquis de La Ronarie) dragoons, and was at the taking of Cornwallis; he was wounded in the forehead and eye by a sabre. He died in Philadelphia in 1829.

William Swansey, Robert Boggs, and Andrew Gregg, the trustees specified in the act of Assembly erecting the county, met at Bellefonte on the 31st of



July, 1800. A conveyance for one-half of the tract of land on which the town of Bellefonte was laid out, including a moiety of the lots in said town as well as those sold or those not sold, was presented by James Dunlop and James Harris, Esqs., according to their bond given to the Governor. It was agreed that the sale of the lots should be indiscriminate, and the money arising therefrom should be divided equally between the proprietors and trustees; and that on the first Monday of September, the residue of the part undivided in the town should be laid out in lots of two and a half acres each, and sold at public auction. It was also agreed that it would be injurious to the interests of the inhabitants to erect the prison in the public square, and that application should be made to the Legislature to vest the trustees with discretionary power to erect the prison in any other part of the town. On the 1st of September they met again, articled with Colonel Dunlop and Mr. Harris for payment of one half of the proceeds of lots to be sold, and contracted with Hudson Williams to build the prison on such lot as should be designated. It was to be thirty feet long and twenty-five feet wide in the clear. Among other specifications "there shall be an apartment in the cellar for a dungeon; said dungeon shall be twelve feet by nine in the clear, covered above with hewed logs laid close together, under the plank of the floor, and a proper trap door to let into the dungeon." The contract price for the jail was one thousand one hundred and sixty-two dollars.

The first court held in Bellefonte was the quarter sessions of November, 1800, before Associate Judges James Potter and John Barber, when, upon motion of Jonathan Walker, Esq., the following attorneys were qualified: Jonathan Walker, Charles Huston, Elias W. Hale, Jonathan Henderson, Robert Allison, Robert F. Stewart, William A. Patterson, John Miles, David Irvine, W. W. Laird, and John W. Hunter.

The January sessions, 1801, were also held by Judge Potter and his associates; constables appearing: for Upper Bald Eagle, William Connelly; Lower Bald Eagle, Samuel Carpenter; Centre, John McCalmon; Haines, Philip Frank; Miles, Stephen Bolender; Potter, Thomas Sankey; Patton, Christian Dale. The following persons were recommended for license as inn-keepers: John Matthias Beuck, Aaronsburg; Robert Porter, Franklin; Thomas Wilson, Centre; James Whitehill, Potter; and Philip Callahan, Aaronsburg. The name of Upper Bald Eagle was changed to Spring township, and Ferguson erected, beginning at the line of Bald Eagle and Patton, near Robert Moore's, including his farm, thence through the Barrens, to include Centre furnace and James Jackson, near Half Moon, the line to be continued until it strikes the Huntingdon county line, thence along same and Centre till it strikes Tussey mountain, thence along the mountain to Patton and Potter and part of Bald Eagle, to the place of beginning.

The first grand jury was assembled to April sessions, 1801, when the president judge, James Riddle, appeared on the bench for the first time in the county. The names of these jurors were William Swansey, Esq., James Harris, Esq., Philip Benner, Richard Malone, John Ball, David Barr, William Kerr, Esq., Michael Boliuger, Esq., James Whitehill, William Irvine, John Irvin, William Eyerly, Esq., James Newall, Samuel Dunlop, Alexander Read, General John Patton, John M. Beuch, James Reynolds, Michael Weaver, and Felix Chrisman.

Additional persons recommended for license: Hugh Gallagher and Benjamin





Patton, Bellefonte; Jacob Kepler and John Benner, Potter; John Motz and William Lowerwine, of Haines.

The first case of notoriety, particularly from the array of counsel concerned, was *George McKee vs. Hugh Gallagher*, 18th August, term, 1801. McKee kept a tavern in a stone house, on the lot where Thomas Reynolds now resides; Gallagher, in a long frame house, which stood in the lot now occupied by D. G. Bush, Esq. A wagon loaded with whiskey in barrels did not stand over night in front of McKee's, as some one took out the pinnings, and it rushed, like the swine of old, down the declivity into the creek, and the whiskey floated off with its waters. *Hinc illæ lacrimæ.*

The case, however, was slander. Gallagher said George McKee stole Samuel Lamb's saddle bags. The counsel who appeared for McKee were Poulke, Reed, J. Dunlap, S. Duncan, Wallace, T. Duncan, Culloh, Thompson, Miles, McClure, Kidd, Irwin, Allison, and Patterson. For Gallagher appeared Stewart, Walker, Henderson, Rose, Huston, Hastings, Clark, Hall, Laird, Bonham, Gemmill, Burnside, Boggs, Orbison, Cadwalader, Canan, Smith, Carpenter, H. Dunlop, Dean, Hepburn, and Bellas. After exhausting all the tactics known to lawyers in attack and defence, the case was finally marked settled.

The first capital case was that of negro Dan, *alias* Daniel Beyers, who murdered James Barrows, on the night of the 15th of October, 1802, in Spring township. The jury returned with their verdict a valuation of him; "valued him at two hundred and fourteen dollars." He was executed on the 13th of December, 1802, by James Duncan, Esq., then high sheriff. A large crowd, consisting of forge-men and other original characters, had assembled to witness the execution, and a company of horse, under the command of Captain James Potter (General Potter, 2d), was drawn up near the scaffold. With the first swing the rope broke, and negro Dan fell to the ground unhurt; with that the crowd shouted "Dan is free," and headed by Archy McSwords and McCamant, they made a move to rescue him. Sheriff Duncan, who always carried a lead-loaded riving whip, drew it promptly, and struck McSwords a blow that might have felled an ox. McSwords scratched his head, and said, "Mr. Duncan, as you are a small man, you may pass on," with that Captain Potter's company made a charge, and William Irvin, of the troop, levelled McCamant with a blow of his sword, cutting his cap-rim through. Meanwhile William Petriken stepped up to Dan, and patted him on the shoulder, saying, "Dan, you have always been a good boy, go up now and be hung like a man," which he did.

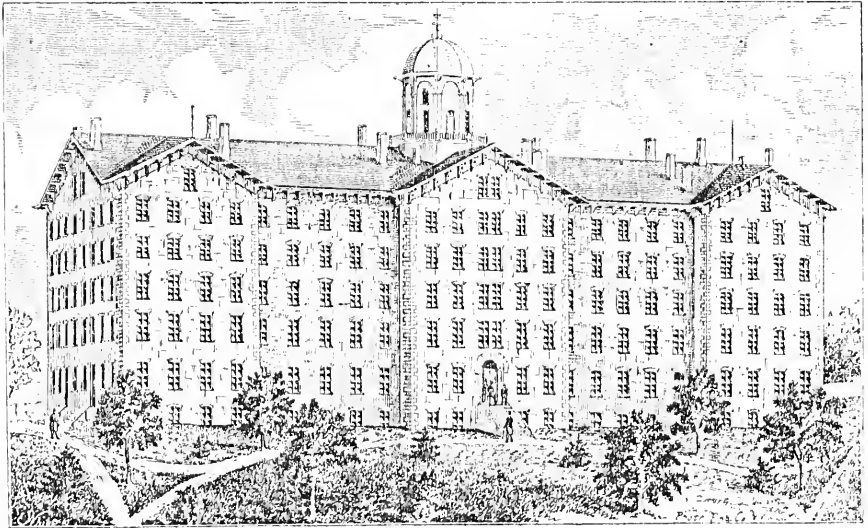
The next capital case was that of James Monks, convicted of the murder of Renben Guild, before Judge Huston, December 1. 1818. He was executed on Saturday, January 23, 1819, by John Mitchell, Esq., high sheriff.

For several years prior to 1820, the people of Centre county were kept in constant terror by the operations of a bold band of highwaymen and counterfeuters, among whom were McGuire, Connelly, and David Lewis. Lewis was a son of Lewis Lewis, a former deputy surveyor under Charles Lukens, who removed to Centre county, then Mifflin, in 1793. They operated along the road through the Seven mountains, their last adventure being the robbery of a wagon loaded with store goods belonging to Hammond and Page of Bellefonte. An armed party from Bellefonte tracked them to the house of Samuel Smith, at the



junction of Bennett's and Driftwood Branch, where a battle occurred, resulting in the mortal wounding of Connelly, who died July 3, at KARSKADDEN, near the mouth of Bald Eagle, and of David Lewis, who died in the Bellefonte jail, in July, 1820.

Twelve miles south-west of Bellefonte, in College township, is located the State College. As originally proposed by the Pennsylvania State Agricultural Society, and organized under its auspices, it was named the Farmer's High School of Pennsylvania. The act of incorporation is dated April 13, 1854. In 1862 its name was changed to "The Agricultural College of Pennsylvania." In 1867, the institution having then come under the law of Congress of July 2, 1862, was compelled to extend its course of instruction, in order more fully to comply with the educational requirements of that act, which directs that "the leading



PENNSYLVANIA STATE COLLEGE.

object shall be, without excluding other scientific and classical studies, and including military tactics, to teach such branches of learning as are related to agriculture and the mechanical arts, in such manner as the Legislature of the State might prescribe, in order to promote the liberal and practical education of the industrial classes in the several pursuits and professions of life." The scope of the institution being thus greatly extended, the name was again changed (January, 1874) to "the Pennsylvania State College." In 1863 the Congressional land grant was accepted by the State, and subsequently the scrip for the 780,000 acres of land granted, sold and properly invested as an endowment fund for the State College. Since the year 1872 the annual income from this fund has been \$30,000. The college property consists of a tract of four hundred acres, of which one hundred are set apart as a model and experimental farm, and worked separate from the main college farm of three hundred acres, though under the supervision of the professor of agriculture. The main building is a



plain substantial structure of limestone, seated on a pleasant rise of ground, and is two hundred and forty feet in length, eighty feet in average breadth, and full five stories in height, exclusive of the basement, with ample lodging rooms, chapel, library, society halls, laboratories, cabinets, and refectory for three hundred and thirty students, the whole well heated and supplied with water. A large campus for exercise and drill and extensive pleasure grounds adjoin the buildings. A full college course is pursued, consisting of instruction in agriculture, chemistry, geology, botany, surveying and engineering, telegraphy, physics, language, and literature, combined with military instruction. No charge is made for tuition. The faculty consists of twelve professors, of whom Rev. James Cadder, D.D., is president. The State College is at present in a flourishing condition.

ORGANIZATION OF TOWNSHIPS.—The original townships of Centre county were Upper Bald Eagle, Lower Bald Eagle, Centre, Haines, Miles, Patton, Potter, and Warrior Mark. In January, 1801, the name of Upper Bald Eagle was changed to that of Spring township, and at the same session Ferguson was erected, including Centre furnace. January session, 1802, the name of Warrior Mark was changed to that of Half Moon. On the 26th of March, 1804, Clearfield and M'Kean counties were erected and placed under the jurisdiction of the several courts of Centre county. Accordingly at August session, 1804, M'Kean was erected into a township called Ceres, and Clearfield into a separate township called CHINKLACAMOOSE, by the Quarter Sessions of Centre county; and roads laid out in those counties by the Court in 1806. At August sessions, 1807, Bradford and Becaria townships were erected in Clearfield county.

At January sessions, 1810, Howard and Walker townships were erected out of Centre township, and the latter name abolished. Howard was called after the great philanthropist Howard, and Walker after Judge Walker, at the request of the inhabitants.

At November sessions, 1810, Sergeant township was erected in M'Kean county, and called after Jonathan Dickinson Sergeant. At January sessions, 1813, Sergeant township was divided into Ogden, Walker, Cooper, Burlington, and Shippen. At November sessions, Chinklacamoose, in Clearfield, was divided, and Lawrence and Pike erected.

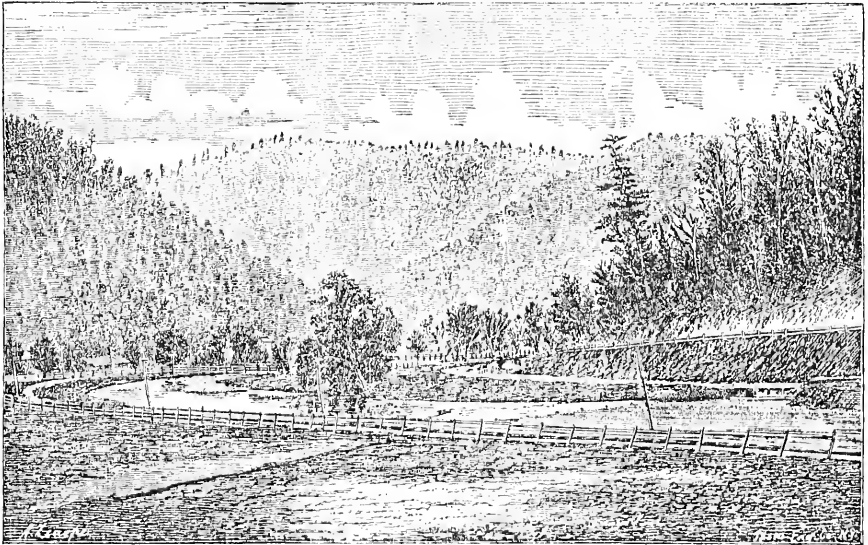
At April sessions, 1814, Rush and Jenner townships were erected out of Half Moon, the former called after Dr. Benjamin Rush, the latter after Dr. Jenner. (On 26th January, 1815, the name Jenner was changed back to Half Moon.) In August of same year Spring township was divided, and one part called Allen, after Captain W. W. Allen, of the sloop Argus; the other Covington, after Leonard Covington, who fell at Williamsburg. At April session, 1815, Allen was changed to Boggs, after the late Robert Boggs, and Covington back to Spring.

In April, 1817, Gibson was erected out of Lawrence, in Clearfield, and called after Colonel George Gibson. In August Bald Eagle was divided, and the part adjoining Walker called "Lamar, after Major Lamar, who fell at the surprise at Paoli, in the midst of the British on the retreat. His last words were, 'Halt, boys, give these assassins one fire.' He was instantly cut down by the enemy. Shall he not be remembered by a grateful country? He shall. In honor of this



martyr in the cause of his country, we name the within township, Lamar. N. B. The above order of Major Lamar was distinctly heard by Colonel Benjamin Burd." Signed by Jonathan Walker and James Potter. Major Marien Lamar commanded a company in Colonel Philip de Haas' battalion in the campaign of 1776, in Canada; was promoted Major of the Fourth Pennsylvania Line, and killed at Paoli, September 20, 1777.

On the 27th of March, 1819, that part of the township of Bald Eagle beginning at the river opposite the mouth of Quinn's run, thence along the division line of the counties of Centre and Lycoming, one mile, thence by a direct line to the mouth of Sinnemahoning creek, was annexed to Lycoming, and attached to Dunstable and Chapman townships.



GAP NORTH OF BELLEFONTE.

[From a Photograph by Moore, Bellefonte.]

April, 1819, Logan appears among the list of townships. No record of its formation can be found.

January 25, 1821, Sinnemahoning township erected in Clearfield county.

Gregg township was erected November 29, 1826, and called for Hon. Andrew Gregg; Harris out of Potter, Ferguson, and Spring, April 27, 1835, and called after the late James Harris. Huston appears among the list of townships in April, 1839; no record of its erection can be found. Snow Shoe was erected out of Boggs, January 31, 1840. Marion, August 26, 1840, out of Walker. Penn appears among the list of townships in April, 1845; Liberty was erected August 28, 1845; Taylor, January 27, 1847, out of Half-Moon; Worth, January 27, 1848, out of Taylor; Union November 25, 1850, out of Boggs; Burnside in April, 1857, and Curtin, November 25, 1857.

OFFICIALS UNDER THE CONSTITUTION OF 1790, UNTIL JANUARY 1, 1839.

*President Judges.*—James Riddle (Centre being annexed to the Fourth





District of which he was then, 1800, President Judge); Jonathan Walker, commissioned March 1, 1806; Charles Huston, commissioned July 1, 1818; Thomas Burnside, commissioned April 20, 1826.

*Associate Judges.*—James Potter, commissioned October 20, 1800, died 1818; John Barber, commissioned October 22, 1800; Adam Harper, commissioned December 1, 1800, died November, 1827; Robert Boggs, commissioned December 2, 1800; Isaac McKinney, commissioned January 8, 1819; Jacob Kryder, commissioned December 10, 1827.

*Deputy Attorney-Generals.*—Thomas Burnside, January 12, 1809; William W. Potter; Gratz Etting, July 17, 1819; James M. Petriken; Ephraim Banks; James MacManus, February 28, 1833.

*Prothonotaries.*—Richard Miles, October 22, 1800; John G. Lowrey, May 10, 1809; John Rankin, February 2, 1818; John G. Lowrey, February 8, 1821; John Rankin, January 22, 1824; William L. Smith, March 3, 1830; James Gilleland, March 23, 1831; George Buchanan, January 12, 1836.

*Registers and Recorders.*—Richard Miles, October 22, 1800; William Petriken, May 10, 1809, re-commissioned February 2, 1818; Franklin B. Smith, February 8, 1821; William Pettit, January 22, 1824; William C. Welch, January 12, 1836.

*Sheriffs.*—James Duncan, October 28, 1800; William Rankin, October 25, 1803; Roland Curtin, November 14, 1806; Michael Bolinger, November 11, 1809; John Rankin, November 6, 1812; William Alexander, December 1, 1815; John Mitchell, October 23, 1818; Joseph Butler, October 22, 1821; Thomas Harkness, Jr., November 17, 1824; Robert Tate, December 19, 1827; William Ward, October 22, 1830; George Leidy, October 31, 1833; William Ward, October 29, 1836.

*Commissioned Deputy Surveyors of Districts of which its Territory formed part.*—John Canan, September 20, 1791; James Harris, October 19, 1791; Frederick Evans, November 9, 1791; Joseph J. Wallis, January 18, 1792; Daniel Smith, August 10, 1795. William Kerr, May 11, 1815; Joseph B. Shugert, June 4, 1826.

*First Justices of the Peace.*—Bald Eagle (Lower)—Matthew Allison, October 22, 1800. Bald Eagle (Upper)—William Petriken, October 22, 1800.

CENTRE.—William McEwen, October 22, 1800; William Swansey, October 22, 1800; Thomas McCalmont, October 22, 1800.

HAINES.—Michael Bolinger, October 22, 1800; James Cook, October 22, 1800; Adam Harper, October 22, 1800; John Matthias Benck, December 6, 1800.

PATTON.—Thomas Ferguson, October 22, 1800; David Killgore, June 5, 1801; Charles P. Trezizulny, June 5, 1801.

POTTER.—William Kerr, October 22, 1800; William Early, December 1, 1800.

The first County Commissioners were John Hall, David Barr, and Matthew Allison; Commissioners' Clerk, William Kerr.

BIOGRAPHICAL NOTICES.—The space accorded Centre county will only admit of some notice of the early prominent characters of the county, leaving to the county annalist the names of Charles Huston, Thomas Burnside, W. W. Potter, Bond Valentine, John Blanchard, H. N. M'Allister, and others, ornaments of the bench and bar.

General PHILIP BENNER was born in Chester county. His father was an active



Whig of the Revolution, was taken prisoner by the British, and imprisoned. Philip, then a youth, took up arms under General Wayne, his relative and neighbor. When he went forth to the field, his patriotic mother quilted in the back of his vest several guineas, as a provision in case he should be taken prisoner by the enemy. After the war he became a successful manufacturer of iron, at Coventry forge, in Chester county. He removed to Centre county in 1792. At that early day the supply of provisions for the works had to be transported from a distance, over roads that would now be deemed almost impassable, and a market for his iron was to be found alone on the Atlantic seaboard. He succeeded, and enjoyed for several years, without competition, the trade in what was termed by him the "Junata iron," for the Western country—a trade now of immense importance. He held the rank of major-general in the militia of the State, and was twice an elector of President of the United States. He was a Democrat throughout his life. The borough of Bellefonte bears testimony to his enterprise and liberality. He adorned it by the erection of a number of dwelling-houses, and aided in the construction of works to give it advantages which nature denied. He established the Centre *Democrat*, in 1827. General Benner died at his residence, in Spring township, July 27, 1832, aged seventy. He was remarkable for his industry, enterprise, generosity, and open-hearted hospitality.

ANDREW GREGG was among the early settlers in Penn's valley. He was born on 10th June, 1755, at Carlisle. He acquired a classical education at several of the best schools of that day, and was engaged for some years as a tutor in the University of Pennsylvania. In the year 1783, Mr. Gregg, having saved a few hundred dollars from his salary as a teacher, changed his employment, and commenced business as a storekeeper in Middletown, Dauphin county. In 1787 he married a daughter of Gen. Potter, then living near the West Branch, in Northumberland county; and at the earnest request of his father-in-law, in 1789, moved with his family to Penn's valley, where he settled down in the woods, and commenced the business of farming, about two miles from Potter's Old Fort. On the place he first settled, he continued improving his farm from year to year, pursuing with great industry the business of a country farmer. There all his children were born, and some married, and there he resided until the year 1814, when he removed to Bellefonte, having some years before purchased property in that neighborhood. In 1790 Mr. Gregg was elected a member of Congress, and by seven successive elections, for several districts, as they were arranged from time to time, including one by a general vote or ticket over the whole State—was continued a member of that body for sixteen successive years—and during the session of 1806–7, was chosen a member of the Senate of the United States. At the expiration of this term, on the 4th of March, 1813, he returned to private life, attending to the education of his children and the improvement of his farms, until December, 1820, when he was called by Governor Hiester to the position of Secretary of the Commonwealth. In 1823 he was the nominee of the Federal party for Governor, in opposition to John Andrew Shulze. He died at Bellefonte, May 20, 1833.

MARTHA WALKER COOK, the authoress and poetess, was born in Bellefonte, in the year 1807, daughter of Judge Jonathan Walker, and sister of Hon. Robert J. Walker. She was married to General William Cook, of New Jersey, January 1,



1825, and died at Washington, D. C., September 15, 1874. Mrs. Cook edited and conducted the *Continental Monthly* magazine, translated the life of Chapin from the original of Liszt, etc. She was the mother of E. B. Cook, author of works on Chess.

Colonel JOHN PATTON, who built the first iron works in the territory of Centre county, was a major in Colonel Samuel Miles' rifle regiment, appointed March 13, 1776. He participated in the battle of Long Island, was appointed October 25, 1776, major of Ninth Pennsylvania regiment, and after the organization of the Pennsylvania Line in 1777, commanded one of the additional regiments. He and his old friend Colonel Miles became associated in the iron business in Centre county, and together owned vast tracts of land extending from near Rock Forge up to Centre Furnace. He died in 1802, and is buried in a grave yard on Slab-Cabin branch of Spring creek.

Major-General JAMES POTTER died in the fall of 1789. He was assisting in building the chimney of one of his tenant houses, and in turning suddenly, injured himself internally. He went to Franklin county to have the advantage of Dr. McClelland's advice, and died at his daughter's, Mrs. Poe's, a few miles west of the present station of Marion on the Cumberland Valley railroad. He is buried, it is said, in an old grave yard at Brown's Mills, not far from Marion. He was a son of John Potter, the first sheriff of Cumberland county, and was a lieutenant, in 1758, in Colonel Armstrong's battalion; and next appears, July 26, 1764, in command of a company in pursuit of the Indians who had murdered a school master near Greencastle. His brother Thomas was killed by the Indians in one their inroads into Cumberland county. He was a large land-holder in Penn's Valley, owning, in 1782, nine thousand acres, and spent the principal part of his time, when he was at home from the army, there; but his residence was on the Ard farm, still in the ownership of his descendants in White Deer township, Union county, a mile or so above the town of New Columbia. He is assessed there with negroes, servants, etc., as late as 1788. Timothy Pickering, in his Journal, speaks of visiting him there. Andrew Gregg was there married to his daughter, January 29, 1787. His services during the Revolution are beyond the limits of any notice here. He erected a stockade fort on the Odenkirk place, a little south of where the Old Fort Tavern now stands, at the junction of the Millinburg, Bellefonte, and Lewistown roads. In personal appearance he was short and stout, and the native force of his intellect overcame in war and civil business the obstacles of a limited education. He always had a hopeful disposition which no troubles could unjoin. In a letter, dated May 28, 1781, he says: "Look where you will, our unfortunate country is disturbed, but the time will come when we shall get rid of all these troubles." He was appointed Brigadier-General April 5, 1777; Major-General May 23, 1782. He was Vice-President of the State in 1781, member of the Council of Censors in 1784, and on one occasion came within one vote of being made President of the State.

SAMUEL PORTER, of Lamar township, died in January, 1825, aged 79. He served three years in the Revolutionary war, was with the Pennsylvania detachment of riflemen under Colonel Morgan, at the capture of Burgoyne, and also served through Sullivan's campaign. He participated in twenty-two engagements or skirmishes. He was a highly respected citizen. Four children survived him.

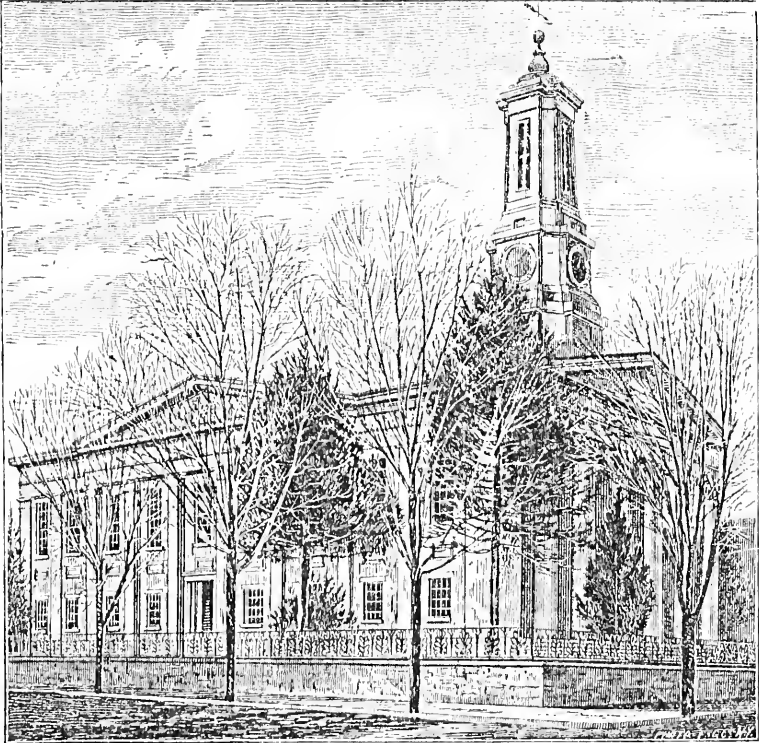


## CHESTER COUNTY.

BY J. SMITH FUTHEY AND GILBERT COPE, WEST CHESTER.



CHESTER COUNTY is one of the three original counties established by William Penn in 1682, and originally included Delaware county and all the territory (except a small portion of Philadelphia and Montgomery counties) southwest of the Schuylkill, to the extreme limits of the Province. It was the first of the three counties organized, at what precise date is not known, but it was within two months after the arrival of Penn.



CHESTER COUNTY COURT HOUSE.

(From a Photograph by T. W. Taylor.)

The landing place of the Proprietary was at Upland (now Chester), and he resolved—it would seem without much reflection—that its name should be changed. Clarkson, in his life of Penn, says that “turning round to his friend,





Pearson, one of his own society, who had accompanied him in the ship *Welcome*, he said, *Providence* has brought us safe here. Thou hast been the companion of my perils. What wilt thou that I should call this place? Pearson said, 'Chester,' in remembrance of the city from whence he came. Penn replied that it should be called *Chester*, and that when he divided the land into counties, one of them should be called by the same name."

The western boundary of Chester county was established by the erection of Lancaster county in 1729, and the northern and northwestern, by the erection of Berks county in 1752. Philadelphia county formed the northeastern and eastern boundary, until the establishment of Montgomery in 1784.

The town of Chester, although located at the extreme southeastern border, continued to be the seat of justice for more than a century, but as the settlements extended into the northern and western parts of the county, a sense of its inconvenience to the great majority of those having business to transact at the county seat, at length induced a vigorous effort for its removal to a more central location. That effort was strenuously resisted by the inhabitants of the town of Chester, especially by that class who derived their chief sustenance from the gleanings incident to a county seat, and a controversy was maintained with varying success, and much acrimony, for several years. At length the removalists were successful, and an act of Assembly was passed in 1784, authorizing the sale of the old county buildings at Chester, and the erection of new ones at a point to be selected by commissioners named in the act. These commissioners fixed upon a central point, near the "Turk's Head Tavern," at the intersection of the great road leading from Wilmington to Reading, and the road leading from Philadelphia to Strasburg, in Lancaster county, and erected the necessary buildings, and the court records and prisoners were removed thither in 1786.

In 1788 the new seat of justice was incorporated into a borough, and styled "West Chester," obviously because of its location some sixteen miles northwest from the former county seat at Chester.

The people of the old town of Chester, finding themselves deprived of the advantages of having the county seat, soon took measures to procure a division of the county, with a view to the re-establishment of a seat of justice in their midst. In this they were successful, and by an act of Assembly, passed on the 26th of September, 1789, the county was divided, and a new one formed from the southeastern portion, under the name of *Delaware*. This new county embraced all the old and originally settled parts of the county, with Chester as the county seat. It may be questioned whether any advantage has resulted from the sundering of the noble old bailiwick.

The act of Assembly erecting the new county provided that the line of division should be so run as not to divide plantations. The commissioners, John Sellers, Thomas Tucker, and Charles Dilworth, acceded to the wishes of the land-owners, as to which of the counties they desired their farms to be in, and ran the line accordingly. The result was an exceedingly crooked line, there being in one part of it no less than forty courses, and a line twenty-eight miles long, in a direct distance of seven miles. Chester county, as reduced by the erection of the new county, is about thirty-six miles from north





VIEW OF THE GREAT OR CHESTER VALLEY.



to south, and twenty-one miles from east to west, and contains about seven hundred and sixty square miles.

The county embraces every variety of soil and surface. The northern part is rugged; the Welsh mountain, a sandstone chain of considerable elevation, belonging to the lower secondary formation, forms the north-western boundary. A wide belt of red shale and sandstone, and a considerable area of gneiss rock, lies to the south of the mountain, and to this succeeds the North Valley hill. The "Great Valley," or Chester Valley, as it is now generally called, of primitive limestone, forms a most distinguishing feature of the county, and constitutes one of its greatest sources of wealth. This valley, which is generally from two to three miles wide, crosses the county a little north of the centre, in a south-east and north-west direction. It is shut in on both sides by parallel hills of moderate elevation, generally densely wooded, and from either of these the whole width of the valley may be comprehended at one glance, presenting, with its white cottages and smiling villages, one of the most lovely scenes in the United States. Its numerous quarries furnish great abundance of lime, to fertilize the less favored townships of the county. It received its name of "Great" in the earlier days of the Province, when the greater limestone valleys of the Cumberland and Kittatinny, and those among the mountains, were yet unknown. Compared with these, it is rather diminutive. This valley yields marble of all shades, from black and dark blue to nearly pure white, one of the most extensive deposits of which is at Oakland, between the Pennsylvania and Chester valley railroads, now owned by Dr. George Thomas. It was from this quarry that the marble for building Girard College was, in a great measure, procured. The Corinthian capitals and other sculptured work are constructed from it. The stone stands the exposure of years without the least appearance of disintegration, and retains its color without stain or blemish. In these respects it differs from the greater part of the marble found in this country. An analysis of it shows no tale, and but little earthy matter; that it is composed of nearly pure carbonate of lime, and with considerable silex, and although hard to work, it finishes smoothly. These characteristics render it valuable for monumental purposes.

To the south of the Chester Valley lies an extensive primitive formation of gneiss and mica slate, covering the greater portion of the southern section of the county, and forming a gently undulating country, with occasionally a few abrupt elevations. In this formation there occur frequent beds of serpentine, hornblende, trap-dykes, and deposits of pure feldspar.

Limestone is found in various parts of the county besides the Chester valley, particularly along the line of the Philadelphia and Baltimore Central railroad, and an extensive trade in the article is carried on. In former times, when wood was abundant, the farmers, generally, had large kilns on their farms, and hauled the stone from the quarries and burned it themselves, but this practice has for many years been almost wholly abandoned, and the business of lime-burning is now carried on by the proprietors of the quarries. The State of Delaware is largely supplied with lime from the quarries of Chester county.

In the south-western part of the county, the mineral known as "chrome" is extensively found, both in the rock and sand, and is dug and shipped to Europe, where it commands a high price. For many years this trade was under



the almost exclusive control of Isaac Tyson, of Baltimore, who procured from the farmers the right to dig and remove the minerals found on their plantations. He amassed a fortune from this trade. The soil is generally very sterile where this mineral appears, and almost valueless for agricultural purposes. Plumbago or graphite, of a superior quality, and in apparently inexhaustible quantities, is found in Upper Uwchlan and adjoining townships, near the line of the Pickering Valley railroad. Works have been recently erected with the view of turning it to account, and the prospect of a large annual production is flattering.

In Charlestown and Schuylkill townships are deposits of lead and copper. The existence of these minerals in this locality has long been known. As early as 1683, mining was done by Charles Pickering and Samuel Buckley, and the productions used in the manufacture of coin. In that year these men were tried before William Penn, for debasing the coin, and convicted. It was not, however, until about 1850, that mines were regularly opened. Before that time the operations were confined chiefly to the surface. Since 1850 considerable quantities of lead have been taken out, chiefly by Charles M. Wheatley. The mines opened by him are now owned by the New York and Boston silver-lead mining company. Copper is found, but not in sufficient quantities to render its production profitable. The greater portion of the serpentine or green stone, now so popular in Philadelphia as a building material for the outer walls of houses, and which has been used in the construction of the University of Pennsylvania and many churches and other buildings, comes from this county. An extensive quarry is situated in Birmingham township, about four miles south of West Chester, from which large quantities are shipped to Philadelphia and other points. It is owned by Joseph H. Brinton. Fine building stone is to be found in every part of the county, and it is extensively used in the erection of buildings. Frame houses are very rare. In New Garden township is a hill several miles in length, bearing the Indian name of Toughkenamon, signifying Fire-brand Hill—which contains inexhaustible quantities of stone. Considerable deposits of clay formed from the decomposition of feldspar, and known in the market as "kaolin," are found in New Garden, Pennsbury, and other townships, and used in the manufacture of china-ware, porcelain, and fire-brick. In Newlin township is an extensive deposit of the rare and valuable mineral known as "corundum," where large operations are carried on. In the vicinity of Coatesville is an excellent quality of sand, which is shipped to Pittsburgh, and used in the manufacture of glass. Valuable deposits of iron ore are found in almost every section of the county, but especially in the northern hills and in the Chester valley, and its preparation for the market is a source of large profit to the owners.

There are extensive iron works in different parts of the county, but especially at Phoenixville and Coatesville. The Phoenix Iron company is one of the largest establishments in the United States. It is engaged, among other things, in the manufacture of railroad iron and in the construction of bridges, and gives employment, when in full operation, to about fifteen hundred men. During the war the celebrated Griffen wrought iron cannon were manufactured by this company, and about twelve hundred of them were supplied. The new Girard Avenue bridge in Philadelphia was erected by it, as well as bridges in various







FRATRICIDE OF WYOMING.



parts of this country and of Canada. At Coatesville, Parkesburg, and Thorn-dale, on the line of the Pennsylvania railroad, are a number of large rolling mills, owned by Charles E. Pennock & Co., Huston & Penrose, Hugh E. Steele, Horace A. Beale, William L. Bailey, and others, which do an extensive business in the manufacture of boiler plate. At Spring City, on the Schuylkill river, is a large manufactory of stoves and hollow ware. At West Chester, spokes and wheels are extensively manufactured. Woolen and cotton factories, paper mills, and flour and saw mills, are numerous on the various streams which flow through the county. These streams furnish excellent water power, which is extensively utilized.

Agriculture is the great business of the county, and a more intelligent, industrious, thrifty, and orderly set of farmers are not to be found in the State. They are largely the lineal descendants of the early Welsh, English, and Scotch-Irish pioneers, who came over in the time of the Proprietaries, and of the Germans, who came in at a somewhat later date. In former years stock grazing and feeding was extensively engaged in, but latterly this branch of business has fallen off very much, owing to the high price of stock-cattle compared with their value when fatted for the market, and the farmers are now turning their attention largely to the business of dairying and furnishing supplies for the Philadelphia market. Large quantities of milk and butter are transmitted on the various railroads leading to that city. The farm buildings are generally of a very superior character, and indicate the thrift and intelligence of the people. The old system of what are called worm fences is gradually giving way to fences made of posts and rails; stone is used for fencing to a very limited extent.

What is known as the Eastern Experimental Farm is situated in Londongrove township, in the southern part of the county, near the line of the Philadelphia and Baltimore Central railroad, and contains about one hundred acres. It is now under the care and superintendence of John I. Carter, a gentleman in every way suited to the position. The experiments carried on at this farm have already been of great benefit to the farming community, and its means of usefulness will increase as its operations become more extensive. A club is maintained at the farm, at which a large number of intelligent farmers meet monthly, to read essays and discuss matters pertaining to the business of agriculture. The farmers of Chester county are a reading people, and scarcely a house will be found, however humble, to which the daily newspaper and the monthly magazine do not find their way. Their tables will vie with those of the inhabitants of the towns in the elegance of their appointments, and the grace and dignity with which they are presided over.

There are a number of extensive nurseries and greenhouses in the county, the productions of which are forwarded to various parts of the country; notably among these are the establishments of Hoopes, Brother & Thomas, Otto & Acheles, and Joseph Kift, of West Chester, and of Dingee & Conard, of West Grove. The growing of evergreens with Hoopes, Brother & Thomas, and of roses with Dingee & Conard, are specialties.

The surface of the county is almost wholly susceptible of cultivation. There is scarcely any broken land. Each farm has usually a proportion of woodland sufficient for the uses of the farm—generally about eight acres in the hundred.



The principal streams are the Octorara, Brandywine, Elk, White Clay, Red Clay, Chester, Pocopson, Ridley, and Crum creeks, flowing southwardly, and the Pickering, Valley, French and Pidgeon creeks, tributaries of the Schuylkill. There are a large number of other smaller streams, and the county is remarkably well watered. Nearly all the farms have running water on them, many of them in every field. The Octorara creek forms the western boundary of the county, and the Schuylkill river skirts it on the east. The Brandywine, at its upper end, is composed of two branches, called the east and west branches. The Pennsylvania railroad crosses the east branch at Downingtown, and the west branch at Coatesville. They unite at a point nearly west of West Chester. The Brandywine has been generally supposed to have derived its name in consequence of the reported loss of a vessel in its waters, laden with brandy—in the Dutch language, brand-wijn. This, however, is shown by recent investigation to be a mistake. It most probably derived its name from one Andrew Braindwine, who, at an early day, owned lands near its mouth. It was very common in the olden time, in the lower counties—now the State of Delaware—to name streams after the dwellers upon their banks. This creek is shown by the old records to have been known as the Fish-kill, until the grant of land to Andrew Braindwine; immediately after which it is referred to, on the records, as Braindwine's kill or creek, and the name was eventually corrupted into its present form of Brandywine. The Indian name of the Brandywine is not certainly known. It is spoken of by tradition, both as Suspecough and Wawassan. Octorara and Pocopson are of Indian origin, the latter signifying rapid or brawling stream.

Excellent public roads cross the county in every direction. These are usually sold out by the supervisors to the lowest bidder, to be kept in repair for a term of years, the farmers in the vicinity being generally the purchasers. There are also a number of turnpike roads, the principal of which are the Philadelphia and Lancaster, West Chester and Wilmington, and Downingtown, Ephrata, and Harrisburg. The Schuylkill canal traverses the eastern part of the county, near the Schuylkill river.

The county is well supplied with railroad facilities, almost every part being within convenient reach of this mode of travel. The Pennsylvania railroad passes across the centre of the county from east to west, and the Reading and Wilmington railroad from north to south, while the Philadelphia and Baltimore Central railroad traverses the entire southern part of it. The West Chester and Philadelphia railroad connects West Chester with Philadelphia, and the West Chester, with the Pennsylvania railroad, at Malvern station, near Paoli. The Pennsylvania and Delaware railway runs from the Pennsylvania railroad at Pomeroy station to Delaware City; the East Brandywine and Waynesburg railroad, from Downingtown to Waynesburg; the Chester Valley, from Downingtown to Norristown, and the Pickering Valley, from Uwchlan to Phoenixville. The Wilmington and Western connects Wilmington with the Pennsylvania and Delaware railway at Landenberg; the Reading railroad passes along the eastern boundary of the county, and the Perkiomen railroad connects with the Reading railroad, between Phoenixville and Valley Forge. The Peach Bottom railroad—a narrow gauge—is in process of construction from Oxford to York, several miles of which, from Oxford, westward, have been constructed,



and are in operation. These thirteen railroads have about two hundred miles of track within the limits of the county.

The territory now included in Chester county was honorably purchased of the Indians by William Penn, and was conveyed in several distinct deeds. The first, bearing date June 25, 1683, and signed by an Indian called Wingebone, conveys to William Penn all his lands on the west side of Schuylkill, beginning at the first falls, and extending along and back from that river, in the language of the instrument, "so far as my right goeth." By another deed of July 14th, 1683, two chiefs granted to the Proprietary the land lying between the Chester and Schuylkill rivers. From Kikitapan he purchased half the land between the Susquehanna and Delaware, in September, and from Malchaloo, all lands from the Delaware to Chesapeake bay, up to the falls of the Susquehanna, in October. And by a deed of July 30th was conveyed the land between Chester and Penny-pack creeks. Another conveyance was made on the 2d of October, 1685, for the greater portion of the lands constituting the present county of Chester. This last instrument is a quaint piece of conveyancing, and will show the value attached by the natives to their lands :

"This indenture witnesseth that we, Packenah, Jackham, Sikals, Portquesott, Jervis, Essepenaick, Felktrug, Porvey, Indian kings, sachemakers, right owners of all lands from Quing Quingus, called Duck cr., unto Upland, called Chester cr., all along the west side of Delaware river, and so between the said creeks *backwards as far as a man can ride in two days with a horse*, for and in consideration of these following goods to us in hand paid, and secured to be paid by William Penn, Proprietary of Pennsylvania and the territories thereof, viz.: 20 guns, 20 fathoms match coat, 20 fathoms stroud water, 20 blankets, 20 kettles, 20 pounds powder, 100 bars of lead, 40 tomahawks, 100 knives, 40 pair of stockings, 1 barrel of beer, 20 pounds of red lead, 100 fathoms of wampum, 30 glass bottles, 30 pewter spoons, 100 awl blades, 300 tobacco pipes, 100 hands tobacco, 20 tobacco tongs, 20 steels, 300 flints, 30 pair of scissors, 30 combs, 60 looking glasses, 200 needles, 1 skipple of salt, 30 pounds of sugar, 5 gallons of molasses, 20 tobacco boxes, 100 jews-harps, 20 hoes, 30 gimlets, 30 wooden screw boxes, 103 strings of beads—do hereby acknowledge, &c. &c. Given under our hands and seals, at New Castle, 2d of the 8th month, 1685."

The title of the particular Indian chiefs to the lands claimed by them was not always very clear, but it was the policy of the Proprietary government to quiet all claims which might be made, by purchasing them. Accordingly, purchases were made from time to time, of claims made by chiefs, which they alleged had not been extinguished.

The Indians, after the sale of their lands, continued to occupy them until needed by the settlers, and gradually abandoned them as the whites advanced and took possession. They were an amiable race, and when they left the burial places of their fathers, in search of new homes, it was without a stain upon their honor. Considerable numbers, however, remained in the county, inhabiting the woods and unoccupied places, until the breaking out of the French and English war in 1755; about which time they generally removed beyond the limits of the county, and took up their abode in the valleys of the Wyoming and Wyalusing, on the Susquehanna. At the making of the treaty of St. Mary's, in 1720, there





were present some chiefs of the Nanticokes, one of whom, who had withstood the storms of ninety winters, told the commissioners that he and his people had once roamed through their own domains along the Brandywine. At the close of the Revolutionary war, the number of Indians resident in the county was reduced to four, who dwelt in some wigwams in Marlborough township. After the death of three of them, the remaining one, known as Indian Hannah, took up her abode in a wigwam near the Brandywine, on lands of Humphrey Marshall, or as she considered it, on her own lands. During the summer she traveled through different parts of the county, visiting those who would receive her with kindness, and selling her baskets. As she grew old she quitted her wigwam and dwelt in friendly families. Though a long time domesticated with the whites, she retained her Indian character to the last. She had a proud and haughty spirit, hated the blacks, and did not even deign to associate with the lower order of the whites. Without a companion of her race—without kindred—she felt her situation desolate, and often spoke of the wrongs and misfortunes of her people. She died in the year 1803, at the age of nearly one hundred years—the last of the Lemni Lenape resident in Chester county.

The early settlers of the county were of various nationalities. The Swedes, who came first, established themselves along the banks of the Delaware and Schuylkill. The Welsh—who settled in considerable numbers—occupied the eastern townships, and extended up the Great Valley and into the northern and north-western parts of the county. The English—principally of the Society of Friends—settled all the central portion of the county, and extended into the south and south-west, some of them taking up lands bordering upon the Maryland line. The Scotch-Irish gradually spread over the whole of the western part of the county, from the Maryland line to the Welsh mountain, while the Dutch and Germans filled up the north-eastern townships.

It is a singular fact that the white races in Pennsylvania are remarkably unmixed, and retain their original character beyond that of any State in the Union. These distinctly marked races are the English, Scotch-Irish, and German. Emigrants from other countries contributed to swell the population, but their numbers were small compared with the races just mentioned, and their peculiar characteristics, through admixture with the people of other nationalities, and the mellowing influence of time, are scarcely recognizable.

These different peoples have impressed their peculiar characteristics upon the portion of Chester county in which they settled. While to the eye of the stranger this may not be apparent, yet to one long resident in the county, and familiar with its inhabitants, the difference is quite perceptible. Throughout all the eastern, central, and a portion of the southern part of the county, the plain language of the Society of Friends is still largely used, their meeting houses are numerous, and the descendants of the early settlers have inherited their simple manners and style of living. The western part of the county is largely peopled by the descendants of the Scotch-Irish settlers, and the peculiarly energetic, positive, enterprising, and intellectual character of this people has descended from generation to generation. They are chiefly Presbyterian, and a large number of churches of that denomination are scattered over this region. In the north-eastern part of the county, any one familiar with the peculiar expressions of the



English speaking Pennsylvania German, would know that he was among the descendants of that race, although scarcely any of them speak the German language. They possess the thrift and industry of their forefathers, and are an orderly and law-abiding people.

The first court after the granting of the Province to William Penn was held at Upland, on the 13th of September, 1681. This was the day to which the court, at its last session under the government of the Duke of York, had adjourned. The records of the county from that time to the present have been preserved, and are all in the public offices at West Chester. When the county seat was removed to West Chester, in 1786, these records were removed there from Chester. Delaware county, although having the old county seat, was a new county, and its records date from its erection in 1789. A portion of these old records having become much worn and difficult to decipher, were, by an order of the court made in 1827, copied into a large book, labelled "Old Court Records," which is now in the office of the clerk of the court of quarter sessions. They contain much curious and interesting matter. The first entries are of two cases of assault and battery, and appear to have been what are in these days called cross-prosecutions. As a specimen of court proceedings in those early days, these first entries are given :

"Province of Pennsylvania, at the court at Upland, September 13th, 1681. Justices present: Mr. William Clayton, Mr. William Warner, Mr. Robert Wade, Mr. Otto Ernest Cock, Mr. William Byles, Mr. Robert Lucas, Mr. Lasse Cock, Mr. Swan Swanson, Mr. Andreas Bankson.

"Sheriff, Mr. John Test; clerk, Mr. Thomas Revell.

"An action of assault and battery. Peter Erickson plaintiff; Herman Johnson and Margaret, his wife, defendants.

"Jurors: Morgan Drewitt, William Woodmansen, William Hewes, James Browne, Henry Reynolds, Robert Schooley, Richard Pittman, Lassey Dalboe, John Ackraman, Peter Rambo, Jr., Henry Hastings, and William Oxley.

"Witness: William Parke. The jury find for the plaintiff, give him 6d. damages and his costs of suit.

"An action of assault and battery. Herman Johnson and Margaret, his wife, plaintiffs; Peter Erickson, defendant.

"Jurors, the same as above. Witnesses: Anna Coleman, Richard Bullington, Ebenezer Taylor. The jury find for the plaintiffs, and give them 40s. damages and their costs of suit."

In a case tried at the next court, it is recorded that "Katharine Winchcombe's evidence was rejected as a lie."

The title Mr., which had theretofore been appended to the name of the justices and officers of the court, was at this court omitted, and does not appear to have been thereafter used. Soon afterwards, the manner of calling the names of the days of the week and month, was changed to the style used by the Friends, the Assembly having directed "that ye days of ye week, and ye months of ye year shall be called as in Scripture, and not by heathen names (as are vulgarly used), as ye first, second, and third days of ye week, and first, second, and third months of ye year, beginning with ye day called Sunday, and ye month called March." This style was continued for a considerable period of time. Corporeal



punishment for crime was quite common, and the whipping post, stocks, and pillory are frequently mentioned in these old records. The first sentence of this character recorded is that "J— M—, being convicted of stealing money out of the house of William Browne, was ordered twelve stripes on his bare back, well laid on, at the common whipping post, the fourth instant, between the tenth and eleventh hours in the morning." This system of punishment appears to have continued until after the middle of the eighteenth century, when it fell gradually into disuse, and punishment by fine and imprisonment became general. The grand jury frequently presented persons for being intoxicated, for selling liquor without license, and for keeping disorderly houses, and the disposal of such presentments occupied much of the attention of the court. The following are extracts of early cases :

"James Sanderlaine was fined 5s. for suffering Robert Stephens to be drunk in his house.

"Neil Juist paid 5s. for being drunk at Chester."

Margaret Matson, of Chester county, was tried before William Penn, at Philadelphia, in February, 1684, for witchcraft. It is recorded that "the jury went forth, and upon their return brought her in guilty of having the common fame of a witch, but not guilty in manner and form as she stands indicted." The proceedings are given at length in the first volume of the Colonial Records, pages 93-96.

The first court after the removal of the county seat to West Chester, was held on the 28th of November, 1786, the following justices being present: William Clingan, William Haslett, John Bartholomew, Philip Scott, Isaac Taylor, John Ralston, Joseph Luckey, Thomas Cheyney, Thomas Lewis, and Richard Hill Morris. It will be remembered that in those days the ordinary county courts were held by the justices of the peace. At August term, 1791, they sat for the last time, and at November term following, the judges appointed under the constitution of 1790 took their seats. The following is a chronological list of the president judges who have occupied the bench in West Chester, viz: William Augustus Atlee, from November, 1791, to August, 1793; John Joseph Henry, from February, 1794, to February, 1800; John D. Coxe, from May, 1800, to May, 1805; William Tilghman, from August, 1805, to February, 1806; Bird Wilson, from April, 1806, to November, 1817, when he left the bench for the pulpit; John Ross, from February, 1818, to May, 1821, when the judicial district was divided, and he accepted the new district composed of Bucks and Montgomery; Isaac Darlington, from July, 1821, to his death, in May, 1839; Thomas Sloan Bell, from May, 1839, to October, 1846, when he was appointed to the bench of the Supreme Court, and Henry Chapman, the last of the appointed judges, from April, 1848, to November, 1851. Townsend Haines, elected by the people, occupied the bench from December, 1851, to December, 1861, when he was succeeded by William Butler, who has presided from that time to the present. Between the resignation of Judge Bell, and the appointment of Judge Chapman, John M. Forster, of Harrisburg, and James Nill, of Chambersburg, occupied the bench for a time, by appointment of Governor Shunk, but were not confirmed by the Senate.

The influence exerted in this county by the example of the Society of Friends



is very marked. The simple affirmation taken by their members as witnesses and in judicial proceedings is now generally used by those of all creeds, and of no creed. Even the Scotch-Irish Presbyterians, who formerly always took the oath with uplifted hand, now generally follow the example.

The long period of ninety years that elapsed between the settlement of the county and the war of the Revolution was a peaceful era, unfruitful of incident. During all that time the settlers were left to pursue their peaceful occupations, uninjured and unmoved by the commotions that shook the rest of the world. They plied the arts of commerce, brought new lands into culture, established schools and churches, and advanced with uniform progress towards a state of opulence and refinement. The contests which occurred within this period had little effect on the settlers here. They were largely Friends, took no active part in military concerns, and were not molested by them.

The cloud, however, which had so long been gathering and rumbling on the horizon, had at length spread itself over the land, and the moment arrived when it was to burst. The citizens of Chester county were now to see their fields crossed by hostile armies, and made the theatre of military operations, while they themselves, throwing aside the implements of husbandry and forgetting the employments of peace, were to mingle in the general strife.

When the difficulties between the Colonies and the mother country became serious, a large meeting of the inhabitants of the county was held at the court house at Chester, in December, 1774, to devise measures for the protection of their rights as freemen, in pursuance of the resolution of the Continental Congress. A committee of seventy was chosen, at the head of which stood Anthony Wayne, and among his colleagues were such resolute men as Francis Johnston, Richard Riley, Hugh Lloyd, Sketchley Morton, Lewis Gronow, Richard Thomas, William Montgomery, Persifor Frazer, John Hamum Patterson Bell, Richard Flower, and Walter Finney. The object of this committee was to aid in superseding the Colonial government, and to take charge of the local interests of the county.

The first military force raised in the county was a regiment of volunteers, commanded by Colonel Richard Thomas, of the Great Valley. In the beginning of the year 1776, a regiment was organized, commanded by Anthony Wayne as colonel, and Francis Johnston as lieutenant-colonel, and consisting of eight companies, with the following named captains: Persifor Frazer, Thomas Robison, John Lacey, Caleb North, Thomas Church, Frederick Vernon, James Moore, and James Taylor. All these officers were citizens of Chester county, except John Lacey, who then resided in Bucks county, and Thomas Church, who resided in Lancaster county. Another regiment was subsequently raised and officered, principally by the inhabitants of Chester county. Samuel J. Atlee, of Lancaster, was appointed colonel, and Caleb Parry, of Chester county, lieutenant-colonel, and among the captains were Joseph McClellan and Walter Finney.

Among the citizens of Chester county who rose to eminence as military men during the revolution, were Anthony Wayne, Richard Thomas, Francis Johnston, Jacob Humphrey, Caleb Parry, Joseph McClellan, Walter Finney, Richard Humpston, Persifor Frazer, Benjamin Bartholomew, William Montgomery, Allen Cunningham, James McCullough, John Harper, Stephen Cochran,





Robert Smith, and Andrew Boyd. The last two were lieutenants of the county, and had charge of the raising and equipping of the militia levies. Among the civilians who rendered efficient service, were John Morton, Thomas M'Kean, William Clingan, Thomas Cheyney, John Hannum, Samuel Futhcy, John Jacobs, Dr. Joseph Gardner, John Beaton, Caleb Davis, William Gibbons, Richard Riley, John Ralston, Stephen Cochran, and Reverends John Carmichael, William Foster, and David Jones.

It will thus be seen that Chester county not only contributed a full proportion of men for the service, but evinced a spirit scarcely to be expected among a people, so many of whom were opposed in principle to the practice of war. It is to be remembered, however, that when the Revolution dawned upon us, the Scotch-Irish element had become very strong—almost the whole of the western part of the county was peopled by them and their descendants—and they became a powerful element in the contribution of the county to the cause of liberty. As an instance of their devotion, it is stated that in the region known as Brandywine Manor, in the campaign of 1777, not a man capable of bearing arms remained at home, and the farm labor devolved upon the old men, women, and children. Among the most active in promoting the cause, were the Rev. John Carmichael, of Brandywine Manor, and Rev. William Foster, of Upper Octorara, Presbyterian clergymen, and the Rev. David Jones, of the Great Valley, a Baptist clergyman, the effect of whose preaching was to send many a valuable recruit into the army. The Welsh element was generally favorable to independence, and contributed to swell the ranks of the patriots.

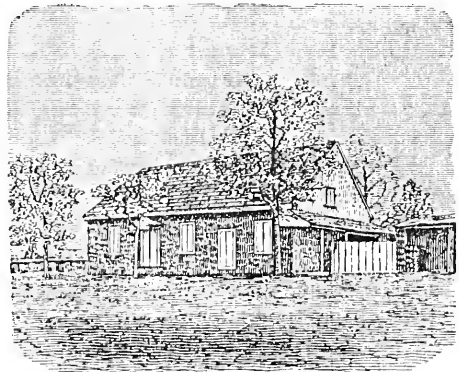
The British, on their route from the head of Chesapeake bay to Philadelphia, in September, 1777, entered Chester county in the lower part of New Garden township. They rested the night of the tenth at Kennett Square, and on the next morning formed in two divisions, one under General Knyphausen, pursuing the direct road eastward to Chad's ford, and the main body, under General Cornwallis, and accompanied by the commander-in-chief, taking a circuitous route, crossing the west branch of the Brandywine at Trimble's ford, and the east branch at Jefferis' ford, and approaching Birmingham meeting house from the north. The object of this movement was to hem in the American forces between the two divisions of the British army. In this they were successful, and the Americans, after a brief but severe struggle, were routed and compelled to seek safety in flight.

The particulars of the battle of Brandywine are given in the general sketch, and need not be repeated here.

The question has been frequently mooted, whether the fact that the British had divided their forces, should not have been discovered sooner than it was, and the disastrous defeat which took place have been prevented? The writer, from a knowledge of the entire section of country near where the battle was fought, entertains the opinion that there was somewhere the most culpable and inexcusable negligence, in not having sooner definitely ascertained the movements of the British army. The fords of the Brandywine, where the British were at all likely to cross, were all comparatively near to the Americans, and were easily accessible; the country was open, and the roads were substantially the same as now, and with proper vigilance, the movements of the British could



have been easily discovered in time to have enabled General Washington to have disposed of his troops to the best advantage. It is now known that small bodies of the British light troops crossed at Wistar's and at Bullington's fords, which are between Jefferis' ford and Chad's ford, some time before the main body of the army crossed at Jefferis' ford, and yet no information of these movements appears to have been communicated to the commander-in-chief. The first reliable information which he received was from Thomas Cheyney, an intelligent and patriotic citizen, whose residence was a few miles distant. He had passed the night at the residence of John Hamm, where the present village of Marshalton stands, and the two set out on the morning of the eleventh to visit the American army. As they descended towards the west branch of the Brandywine near Trimble's ford, they discovered, coming down from the hills opposite, a numerous body of British soldiers. This very much surprised them, and they moved round the adjacent hills, in order to observe the direction taken by them. Finding they were going towards Jefferis' ford, and believing them to constitute the main body of the British army, they resolved at once, and at some personal risk, to proceed with the intelligence to General Washington. Cheyney being mounted on a fleet hackney, pushed down the stream until he found the commander-in-chief, and communicated the tidings to him, but the information came so late that there was not time to properly meet the emergency. It has been usual to attribute the loss of the battle to this want of timely intelligence of the movements of the enemy, but it is problematical whether the Americans could have been successful under any circumstances. The British army was well appointed and highly disciplined; a large part of the American army, at that time, was a mere militia levy, and this superiority of the British troops over the Americans would probably have enabled them to gain the day under any circumstances.



OLD BIRMINGHAM MEETING HOUSE.

The meeting-house at Birmingham had been taken possession of by Washington some days previously, with a view to its occupancy by the sick of the American army, but before it was in readiness for that purpose the battle was fought, and it was used by the British as an hospital for their wounded officers.

There is a tradition which has long been current, that a member of the House of Northumberland, named Percy, was killed in the engagement, and buried in the graveyard at Birmingham meeting-house, and the supposed place of interment has been pointed out to the writer. This tradition, which we see occasionally given as history, is unquestionably a myth. We have no reliable evidence of its truth. Very few officers of conspicuous rank, in either army, were slain in the



battle of Brandywine, and if it were true that a "Percy of Northumberland" had fallen there, General Howe assuredly was not the person to ignore the death of a companion in arms who could trace his family name back to the days of Chevy Chase. Hugh, Earl Percy, afterwards second Duke of Northumberland, was in this country in the early period of the Revolution, and commanded some forces at the battle of Lexington, but he left America previous to the battle of Brandywine.

The British army remained some days in the neighborhood of the field of battle, and during this time had a cattle pen, where they collected large numbers of cattle and other animals, and slaughtered and preserved them for the use of the army. Nearly all the live stock in the country for a considerable distance around was taken from the inhabitants. In some instances payment was made in British gold, but generally no compensation was given. On the 16th of September they proceeded northward towards the Great Valley, by what is known as the Chester road. Washington, after resting his army, marched from Philadelphia up the Lancaster road, with the view of again offering battle. On the 17th the armies met in Goshen township, about four miles north-east of West Chester; skirmishing began between the advanced parties, and a sanguinary battle would probably have been fought, but a rain storm of great violence stopped its further progress, and rendered it impossible for either army to keep the field. A few soldiers were killed in the conflict. The Americans retired to the Yellow Springs, where, discovering that their ammunition had been greatly damaged by the rain, and that they were not in a condition to engage in a conflict, the march was continued to Warwick Furnace, in the present township of Warwick, in the northern part of the county, where a fresh supply of arms and ammunition was obtained.

After a detention of two days on account of the weather, the British moved down the Great Valley into Trelyffrin township. A detachment under General Wayne was dispatched by Washington to the rear of the British army, to harass and annoy it, and endeavor to cut off the baggage train, and by this means to arrest its march towards the Schuylkill, until the Americans could cross the river higher up and pass down on the east side, and intercept the passage of the river by the British.

On the night of the 20th of September, the command of Wayne, who were encamped in what is now known as the Paoli Massacre ground, in Willistown township, was surprised by General Grey, and many of his men slain. Information of the whereabouts of the forces of Wayne had been given to the British commander by Tories residing in the neighborhood, by one of whom General Grey was guided in his cowardly midnight assault. The dead were decently interred by the neighboring farmers in one grave immediately adjoining the scene of action. After the affair at Paoli, the British army moved down the valley, intending to cross the Schuylkill at Swedes' ford, but finding it guarded, they turned up the river on the west side, for the purpose of effecting a passage of some of the fords higher up. The American army, in order if possible to prevent the British from passing the river, had in the meantime moved from Warwick Furnace and crossed the Schuylkill at Parker's ford, at or near the present village of Lawrenceville, in this county, and moved southward



on the east side. They were unable, however, to prevent the passage of the British, who crossed in two divisions—at Gordon's ford, now Phoenixville, and at Fatland ford, a short distance below Valley Forge.

On the 20th of September, 1817, being the fortieth anniversary of the massacre, a monument was erected over the remains of those gallant men by the Republican Artillerists of Chester county, aided by the contributions of their fellow-citizens. It is composed of white marble, and is a pedestal surmounted by a pyramid. Upon the four sides of the body of the pedestal are appropriate inscriptions. It stands on the centre of the grave in which the slaughtered heroes were buried, in the south-east corner of a large field, owned and used by the military organizations of Chester county for parades and encampments. The grave itself is about sixty feet long by twenty wide, and is surrounded by a stone wall. The scene of this conflict is probably the best preserved of any that marked the progress of the Revolutionary war. The monument has become so much battered and broken by relic hunters that it is proposed to erect a new one during this Centennial year, and funds are now being contributed for that purpose. The point is a short distance south of Malvern station, at the intersection of the West Chester and Pennsylvania railroads.

In the year 1794, what is popularly known as the Whiskey Insurrection, in western Pennsylvania, became so threatening, that when President Washington made a requisition for a military force, Governor Millin came to Chester county, and in a speech at West Chester called upon the patriotic citizens of the county to volunteer their aid in its suppression. The Governor, who was good at stump speech, addressed the meeting with such effect that the people responded in the most patriotic manner. A troop of cavalry was promptly raised by Colonel Joseph McClellan, Major Samuel Futhey, and others, and a company of artillery by Aaron Musgrave. These companies joined the expedition to the west, and faithfully performed their tour of duty as good citizen soldiers.

In the war of 1812-14, with Great Britain, Chester county did her share in raising men to resist the encroachments of the enemy. A number of companies were recruited and prepared for duty. Those from the western part of the county marched to Baltimore, and those from the eastern part to Philadelphia, and from thence to Marcus Hook, where they were received into the service of the United States, and served until they were regularly discharged. Colonel Isaac Wayne, Major Isaac D. Barnard, Captain Christopher Wigton, Captain Titus Taylor, and Captain George Hartman, were among those who recruited men for the service. Major Barnard was actively engaged in the field during the entire war, and won for himself honorable distinction.

On the 26th of July, 1825, General Lafayette visited the Brandywine battlefield, where he had been wounded in 1777, and was thence escorted by the volunteer soldiery and assembled citizens to West Chester, where he was entertained by a committee with a public dinner in the court house. The following day he proceeded to Lancaster. He was accompanied by his son, George Washington Lafayette.

In the war for the preservation of the Union, Chester county, in common with the entire North, responded most nobly to the calls made upon her. Where





all did so well, it would be invidious to claim for one greater distinction or regard than another. It is estimated that this county furnished not less than six thousand five hundred soldiers, of whom about five hundred were colored men. When the three months men were called for, four companies were furnished, one of which was connected with the 4th and the other with the 9th regiment of Pennsylvania volunteers. The others, so far as we have any record of them, were distributed as follows: In the 1st Pennsylvania reserves, two companies; 4th reserves, one company; 1st Pennsylvania rifles (Bucktails), one company; 49th Pennsylvania volunteers, one company; 53d, two companies; 71st, one company; 97th, seven companies; 116th, one company; 124th, eight companies; 175th, eight companies; 7th cavalry, one company; 16th cavalry, one company; 20th cavalry, one company. In addition to these, hundreds of men left the county, singly and in squads, and became connected with regiments in other places—largely in Philadelphia. Drafts were also made from time to time, which furnished a large number. Camp Wayne was established at West Chester early in the war, and many of the regiments were fitted there for active duty. General Galusha Pennypacker, formerly colonel of the 97th Pennsylvania, now in the regular army, is a native of Chester county. Among her citizens who fell in the service were Colonels Frederick Taylor, Thomas S. Bell, Henry M. McIntire, and George W. Roberts.

The earliest educational institution of note in the county was the New London Academy, established by Rev. Dr. Francis Allison in 1743. It became justly celebrated, and served to aid in furnishing the State with able civilians, and the church with well-qualified ministers. Among those who were wholly or partially educated here were Charles Thomson, Secretary of the Continental Congress, Dr. John Ewing, Provost of the University of Pennsylvania, Dr. David Ramsay, the historian, the celebrated Dr. Hugh Williamson, one of the framers of the Constitution of the United States and historian of North Carolina, and three signers of the Declaration of Independence, Gov. Thomas McKean, George Read, and James Smith. Hugh Williamson and Thomas McKean were both natives of Chester county, and born within a few miles of the location of this school. Dr. Allison subsequently became Vice Provost of the University of Pennsylvania, was an unusually accurate and profound scholar, and to his zeal for the diffusion of knowledge, Pennsylvania owes much of that taste for solid learning and classical literature for which many of her principal characters have been distinguished. About the same time Rev. Samuel Blair established a classical school at Fagg's Manor, from which came forth many distinguished pupils, who did honor to their instructor. Among them was Rev. Dr. Samuel Davies, who was one of the Presidents of Princeton College, Rev. Dr. John Rodgers, and Rev. Robert Smith, the father of Samuel Stanhope Smith and John Blair Smith, all eminent as scholars and divines.

The West Chester Academy was erected in 1812, and was a flourishing institution for many years. It was finally merged in the State Normal School. Anthony Bolmar, a native of France, established a school in West Chester in 1840, which he conducted until his death, in 1859. It was one of the best regulated and most complete institutions for the education of young men in the United States. His pupils are scattered over the country, and many of them



occupy prominent positions. He was the author of several educational works on the French language. After his decease Colonel Theodore Hyatt conducted the Pennsylvania Military Academy in the same building for some years, and was succeeded by William F. Wyers. After the death of Mr. Wyers, the property passed under the control of the Catholic church, and is now occupied by the Convent of the Sacred Heart. In 1826, Rev. Francis A. Latta established, in Sadsbury township, the Moscow Academy, which he successfully conducted for several years. Among the most distinguished of the seminaries of learning in the county is the Westtown Friends boarding school. It was established in 1794, and has ever since been in successful operation. It is exclusively for the education of youth of both sexes belonging to the Society of Friends. The buildings are located on a farm of six hundred acres. The Kimberton boarding school was established in 1817, by Emmor Kimber, and was conducted by him and his accomplished daughters for many years.

The State normal school, for the district composed of the counties of Chester, Delaware, Montgomery, and Bucks, was opened in 1871, and under the superintendence of George L. Maris, and a corps of efficient teachers, is doing a noble work. The building is a massive structure, constructed of the beautiful serpentine stone, so abundant in this region. The grounds contain ten acres, laid out in drives, walks, croquet and ball grounds, and ornamented with trees, shrubbery, and flowers. During the last year, there were two hundred and eighty-seven scholars, about equally divided between the sexes.

Lincoln University—an institution for the education of young men of color—was incorporated by the Legislature in 1854, under the title of Ashmun Institute. In 1866 the name was changed to Lincoln University, and its sphere of usefulness enlarged. The buildings are situated on a tract of eighty acres, in Lower Oxford township, on the line of the Philadelphia and Baltimore Central railroad, and near the borough of Oxford, and occupy a commanding position upon one of the highest hills in that undulating district. There are four University buildings and four professors' houses. The institution is completely equipped with a corps of fifteen professors and teachers, who are zealous and earnest in the work. Students are fitted in the preparatory department, and in college pursue the regular course of four years, and on graduating receive the degree of Bachelor of Arts. Full instruction is also given in the law, medical, and theological departments, and the regular degrees conferred. The University is doing a noble work in sending out educated colored men, fitted to instruct and elevate their race. The number of students in all the departments at the present time is about two hundred. Rev. I. N. Rendall, D.D., is president. A soldiers' orphans' school was established at Chester Springs, in West Pikeland township, at the close of the war, and has always had a full attendance. Chester Springs was once a noted watering place, but is not now kept as such, and the buildings are in the occupancy of this school. Among them is a large structure which was erected by General Washington during the Revolution, for the sick and wounded of the army. It has long been known as Washington Hall.

Numerous institutions of learning are scattered over the county, among



which may be mentioned the Unionville academy, R. M. McClellan's school for young men and boys at West Chester, the Eaton academy at Kennett Square, and the Kennett Square academy of Dr. Frank Taylor, the Ereildoun seminary, Mary B. Thomas and sister's seminary at Downingtown, and Mrs. Cope's boarding school at Toughkenamon. In speaking of the literary institutions of Chester county, honorable mention must be made of John Forsythe, Philip Price, Enoch Lewis, author of several mathematical works, Jonathan Gause, Joshua Hoopes, Thomas Conard, Joseph C. Strode, and Hannah P. Davis, as successful educators and proprietors of boarding schools. Jonathan Gause and Joshua Hoopes each taught over fifty years, and always had a large number of pupils.

There are ten boroughs in Chester county.

ATGLEN, formerly the village of Penningtonville, is a new borough, and was incorporated by decree of court, December 20, 1875. It is situated on the Pennsylvania railroad, in the Great Valley, about one mile from the Octorara creek, which forms the western boundary of the county. It contains a large manufactory of sad-irons.

COATESVILLE, named in honor of the Coates family, was incorporated in 1867. It is situated in the Great Valley, where it is crossed by the west branch of the Brandywine. This has of late years become a thriving town, its prosperity being due in great part to the extensive iron works of C. E. Pennock & Co., Steele & Worth, Huston & Penrose, and others. There are also a number of paper mills, woollen and cotton mills, flouring mills, and other industries, within a short distance. The Pennsylvania railroad crosses the Brandywine on a magnificent bridge, 836 feet in length, and seventy-three feet high. The Wilmington and Reading railroad also passes through the town. Moses Coates, the ancestor of the family from whom the place derives its name, came from Ireland about 1717, and settled in Charlestown township, whence some of their children removed to East Caln. William Fleming was a settler near this place. His wife was a sister to John and Thomas Moore, who settled at Downingtown.

DOWNINGTOWN is in the midst of the Great Valley, on the east branch of the Brandywine. In 1702, surveys were made here in right of purchases made in England. Among the early settlers were Thomas and John Moore, George Aston, Roger Hunt, Thomas Parke, and Thomas Downing. Thomas Moore erected a mill before the year 1718, which afterwards became the property of Thomas Downing, from whom the place received its present name, having been previously known as Milltown. During the early years of its history Downingtown was a peculiarly staid and respectable place, and resisted the project of making it the county seat, when its removal from Chester was under consideration, and not a lot could be obtained on which to erect the county buildings. No parallel can probably be found in the history of any town in the country. They were opposed both to parting with their lands, and to the noise and brawling of a county town. Not even the passage of the railroad along its southern border could seduce the old-fashioned citizens from their quiet, staid, and thrifty ways, into the delusive dream of making haste to be rich. Of late years, however, new men have taken hold, and it now possesses its full share of enterprise, and bids fair to become a large and prosperous town. Among its industries is a manufactory of sewing



machines. It is a prominent station on the Pennsylvania railroad, and the point of junction of the branch road to Waynesburg and New Holland, and of the Chester Valley railroad to Norristown. It was incorporated as a borough in 1859.

HOPEWELL is situated in the south-western part of the county, and contains a large number of cotton and woolen manufactories and flouring mills. The Dickey and Ross families were enterprising and leading operators here for many years.

KENNETT SQUARE is situated on the line of the Philadelphia and Baltimore Central railroad, in the midst of an exceedingly fertile district of country, at the head of the Toughkenamon valley. The inhabitants—who are largely the descendants of the original settlers—are noted for their intelligence and culture. The anti-slavery sentiment has always predominated strongly, and in the days of slavery it was esteemed a hot-bed of abolitionism. The inhabitants, however, gloried in their sentiments, and many a way-faring bondman received aid and comfort from them on his passage towards the North Star. It would have been a dangerous experiment, in those days, for any of its inhabitants to have proclaimed their nativity, south of Mason and Dixon's line. Its academies and seminaries have for years ranked high, and many youth from a distance are educated here. The prosperity of the place is largely due to the extensive manufacture of agricultural machinery. The old Unicorn tavern, said to have been the scene of one of the outlaw Fitzpatrick's exploits, was burned during the past year. Gayen Miller was the first settler in this neighborhood.

OXFORD is also on the line of the Philadelphia and Baltimore Central railroad, and at the junction of the Peach Bottom railroad to York. It has grown rapidly since the completion of the first named railroad, and bids fair to become a large and prosperous town. It was incorporated in 1833.

PARKESBURG, incorporated in 1872, is a prominent station on the line of the Pennsylvania railroad, and contains a population of about six hundred. The State shops were formerly located here, but a few years since were removed to Harrisburg, and the buildings have since been occupied as a rolling mill. It received its name from the Parkes, an old and influential family in this section of the county.

PHOENIXVILLE, incorporated in 1849, is situated on the Schuylkill river, and on the line of the Reading railroad. It owes its prosperity largely to the very extensive iron works located here, which give employment to several hundred families. The families of Coates, Starr, and Buckwalter, were among the early settlers. Population, about six thousand.

SPRING CITY, originally Springville, is situated on the Schuylkill river, opposite to Royer's Ford, on the Reading railroad. The American Wood-Paper company have their works here, and there is also a large manufactory of stoves and hollow ware. Incorporated in 1867.

WEST CHESTER was incorporated in 1788, and contains a population of about six thousand five hundred. The original court house, erected in 1784, was replaced by a new one in 1846, and the old prison by a new one—conducted on the penitentiary system—erected in 1838, and enlarged in 1872. The public buildings reflect great credit on the enterprise and taste of the citizens. This town is one of the most attractive in the State. It is well built, the streets well





paved and lighted, and lined with shade trees. One looking on it from an elevated position would suppose it situated in a forest. It is remarkable for salubrity, and is surrounded by a beautiful, undulating country.

West Chester is pre-eminent among the towns of the State for its highly cultivated state of society, and the general diffusion of intelligence among its citizens. The natural history of the county has been very fully explored and written upon by citizens engaged in the ordinary pursuits of life. It contains private collections of minerals, shells, and botanical specimens, scarcely equalled in public institutions. A taste for such studies was much fostered by the "Chester County Cabinet of Natural Science," a society organized in 1826—the library and collections of which are now in charge of the State Normal school, located here. As an educational centre, West Chester has always enjoyed a high rank, and the graduates of its schools are to be found in every department of public life. It is also noted for the number of people who resort to it from other places, to pass the remainder of their lives in ease and retirement. Its inhabitants were, for a long time, chiefly of the Society of Friends, and this has given tone to society, although its character is fast changing, from the influx of those of other creeds.

Chester county, in addition to the incorporated boroughs, is studded with villages, which have grown up in the progress of years, at the crossings of the great roads, and at or near the sites of the ancient inns, with which the county abounds. Many of these old taverns were famous among the travelers of the olden time, and not a few have been distinguished in the annals of the Revolution. Among these were the Paoli, Warren, Chatham, White Horse, Black Horse, Ship, Buck, Red Lion, Wagon, Anvil, Hammer & Trowel, Compass, Turk's Head, Unicorn, and Spread Eagle. The most noted of these villages are Waynesburg, Lionville, Marshalton, Wagontown, Doe Run, Unionville, New London, Cochranville, Chatham, Avondale, West Grove, Landenberg, and Toughkenamon.

There are fifty-six townships in the county.

BIRMINGHAM was probably named by William Brinton, one of the earliest settlers, who came from the neighborhood of the town of that name in England. It was surveyed about 1684 to various persons in right of purchases made in England. Upon the division of the county, the greater part of the original township fell into Delaware county, but to the remainder an addition was made from the southern end of East Bradford in 1856. The battle of Brandywine was fought in this township. The descendants of William Brinton, the first settler, are numerous, and very many of them occupy highly respectable positions in society. It is believed that all bearing the name of Brinton, in Pennsylvania, are descended from him. For more than a century the name was pronounced *Branton*. A public library was established in this township as early as 1795, which is still kept up.

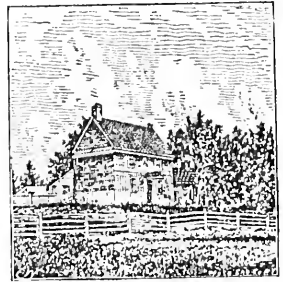
BRADFORD was probably named from Bradford, in Yorkshire, or the town of the same name on Avon, in Wiltshire. It was divided into East Bradford and West Bradford, in 1731. Some of the early surveys were made in 1686, others in 1702, and later. Among the early settlers were the names of Bullington, Jefferis, Taylor, Woodward, Martin, Townsend, Strode, and Marshall. Abiah



Taylor settled on the Brandywine in 1702, and built a mill on a branch of that stream. In 1724 he erected a brick house, with bricks imported from England, which is still standing. Humphrey Marshall, one of the earliest American botanists, and author of a work on the Forest Trees of the United States, published in 1785, planted a botanical garden at Marshallton, in West Bradford, and his name was given to the village.

BRANDYWINE was erected in 1790, and named from the stream, by the two branches of which it was bounded on either side. It was formerly the northern part of East Caln, and was divided into East Brandywine and West Brandywine in 1844.

CALN (now divided into Caln, East Caln, and West Caln), was named from Caln, in Wiltshire, England, whence some of the early settlers came. In 1702, surveys were made, extending from the Welsh tract on the east, to the west branch of Brandywine on the west, mostly confined to the valley. These were afterwards extended northward and westward. In 1728 the township was divided into East Caln and West Caln, the Brandywine being the dividing line. East Caln was reduced in 1790, by the erection of Brandywine on the north, and in 1853 by the formation of Valley township on the west. In 1868, it was again divided, the part east of Downingtown retaining the name of East Caln, and the remainder, with a part of Valley, taking the name of Caln. The greater part of Caln and East Caln lie in the Great Valley, and contain beautiful farming lands, while West Caln is more hilly.



HOUSE OF ABIAH TAYLOR,  
Built in 1724.

CHARLESTOWN was so called in honor of Charles Pickering, of Asmore, in the county of Chester, England, who purchased a large amount of land from Penn. His surname was given to the stream which flows through the township. This township was divided in 1826, and the eastern part lying on the Schuylkill river, called Schuylkill township. The early settlers were mostly Welsh, followed by some from Germany.

COVENTRY township doubtless received its name from Samuel Nutt, an early settler who came from Coventry, in Warwickshire, England. He arrived in this country in 1714, bringing a certificate of recommendation from Friends in England, and after his arrival married Anna, widow of Samuel Savage, and daughter of Thomas Rutter, one of the early iron masters of Pennsylvania. Samuel Nutt, after his arrival here, turned his attention to the manufacture of iron, and established the first iron works in Chester county. He took up land on French creek in 1717, and about that time built a forge there. A letter written by him, in 1720, mentions an intention of erecting another forge that fall. His step-son, Samuel Savage, married a sister of John Taylor, who erected Sarum forge, on Chester creek, and a step-daughter, Ruth Savage, became the wife of John Potts, the founder of Pottstown. Robert Grace, an extensive iron master, resided in this township, and the Merediths, from Radnorshire, were among the prominent settlers. The date of the erection of the township is not certainly known, but supposed to have been about 1723. In 1841 the town-



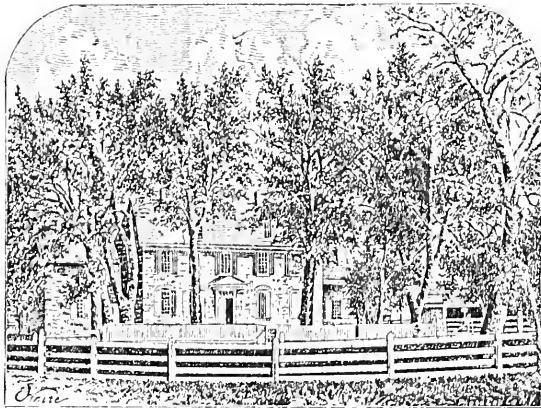
ship was divided into North Coventry and South Coventry, and in 1844, East Coventry was formed by a division of North Coventry.

EASTTOWN was erected in 1704, and so named on account of its position. It was included in the original survey made for the Welsh, and was settled by them. In 1722, Anthony Wayne, a native of Yorkshire, emigrated from the county of Wicklow, Ireland, and settled in this township, where he died in 1739. His son Francis appears to have done something at surveying. Another son, Isaac, was the father of General Anthony Wayne, who was born in this township.

ELK was formed in 1857, from the township of East Nottingham, and named from the stream which skirts its eastern side. Its southern boundary is Mason and Dixon's line.

FALLOWFIELD is supposed to have been named in honor of Lancelot Fallow-

field, of Westmoreland, England, who was one of the first purchasers of land from William Penn. John Salkeld, a noted Quaker preacher, who came from that part of England, bought the right of Lancelot Fallowfield, and took up land in this township in 1714, and may have suggested the name. The township was erected about 1724. In 1743 it was divided into East Fallowfield and West Fallowfield, the stream called Buck run



BIRTH PLACE AND RESIDENCE OF GENERAL WAYNE.  
[From a Photograph by A. W. Taylor, West Chester.]

being the dividing line. At this time we find among the inhabitants of the eastern part, the names of Bentley, Dennis, Filson, Fleming, Mode, Hamun, and Hayes; and in the western part, the names of Adams, Cochran, Moore, Parke, and Wilson. In 1853 Highland township was formed from the eastern part of West Fallowfield.

FRANKLIN was formed from the eastern part of New London in 1852.

GOSHEN was included in the original survey for the Welsh, but many surveys were made there for other purchasers, owing to delay on the part of the Welsh to settle the land. It was organized as a township in 1704. Among the early settlers were Robert Williams, Ellis David (or Davies), George Ashbridge, and Mordecai Bane. Griffith Owen had a house here, at which Friend meetings were held as early as 1702. This meeting was probably the first within the present limits of the county. It was also held at the house of Robert Williams for a time, previous to the erection of a meeting house. Tradition says that he was called the king of Goshen, and that on one occasion when his fire went out, he was obliged to go several miles to get it renewed. George Ashbridge, a son of the settler of the same name, was a member of Assembly from this county from 1743 till his death, in 1773, a period of thirty years, probably the longest



term the office was ever held by one man. Men of experience were sought after in those days to fill public positions. The Haines, Matlack, and Hoopes families became numerous here. In 1817 the township was divided into East Goshen and West Goshen. The borough of West Chester was taken from this township in 1788. Goshen Friends meeting house, still standing, was erected in 1736.

HIGHLAND was formed from the eastern part of West Fallowfield in 1853. It lies between West Fallowfield and East Fallowfield. Among early settlers were the names of Adams, Boggs, Boyd, Cowpland, Fufthey, Glendenning, Gibson, Haslett, Hamill, and Wilson.

HONEYBROOK was formed from West Nantmeal in 1789. The name Nantmeal (or Nantmel, as originally spelled), which is Welsh, signifies Honeybrook, and the translated name was given to the new township. Among the early residents were the families of Ralston, Buchanan, Macelduff, Talbot, Trego, Suplee, and Long.

KENNETT (originally spelled Kennet), is first mentioned on the court records as a township in 1704. It is thought the name was suggested by Francis Smith, who came from Wiltshire (where there is a village of that name), and took up land in 1636, at the mouth of Pocopson creek. Pennsbury and Pocopson were originally included in Kennett, while the greater part of what now bears the name was included in a survey made about 1700, for William Penn's daughter Letitia, and called Letitia's Manor. The land was sold to settlers by her agents.

LONDON BRITAIN.—A considerable part of this township was included in the survey made for the London company. Settlements were made at an early date by Welsh Baptists, in the southern part of the township, and a church was established amongst them. The oldest tombstone in the grave-yard bears date 1729. John Evans, from Radnorshire, about 1700, was prominent among these settlers, and his son of the same name, who died in 1738, held large tracts of land, together with fulling mills and grist mills, on White Clay creek. An Indian village was formerly on the creek, near Yeatman's mill.

LONDONDERRY derived its name from Londonderry, Ireland. Nearly all the early settlers were Scotch-Irish. The greater part of the present township was in Sir John Fagg's Manor, and the large Presbyterian church of Fagg's Manor is in this township. It was separated from Nottingham in 1734. Oxford was taken off in 1754, and further divided in 1819, and the southern part called Penn.

LONDON GROVE was organized in 1723. In 1699, William Penn sold to Tobias Collet and three others, among other lands, sixty thousand acres, not then located. These persons admitted others into partnership with them, and formed a company, generally known as the London company, for the improvement of their property, the number of shares eventually reaching eight thousand eight hundred, and the shareholders several hundred. As a part of the sixty thousand acres, a survey was made of seventeen thousand two hundred and eighteen acres in Chester county, including all the present township of London Grove, and a large part of Franklin (formerly New London) and London Britain. A large number of the settlers in London Grove were Friends, and among them were the names of Chandler, Jackson, Lamborn, Lindley, Allen, Morton, Pusey, Scarlet,





Starr, and Underwood. The villages of Avondale and West Grove are in this township.

MARLBOROUGH was named from Marlborough, in Wiltshire. The eastern part was laid out about 1701, in right of purchases made in England. As first designed by Penn, the eastern part was to be rectangular—the "Street" road passing through the middle, and the land on the north, was described as in Bensalem township, but afterwards added to Marlborough. The township was divided, in 1729, into East Marlborough and West Marlborough. Among the early settlers were Joel Baily, Thomas Jackson, Caleb Pusey, Francis Swayne, John Smith, and Henry Hayes. In West Marlborough, Joseph Pennock was among the first settlers, and there he built "Primitive Hall," which is still standing. His descendants are very numerous. Cedarcroft, the home of Bayard Taylor, is in East Marlborough, less than a mile north of Kennett Square. The name Hilltown was originally applied to West Marlborough and lands to the westward, probably from its topography.

NANTMEAL is a Welsh name, and the early settlers were chiefly from that country. The township was divided in 1740 into East Nantmeal and West Nantmeal. The signatures to the petition for division indicates the character of the population at that time. On this petition are the Welsh surnames of Pugh, David, Roger, Williams, Stephens, Griffiths, Rees, Edward, Jones, Meredith, Roberts, and Phillips. There are also the names of Frayley, Marsh, Kirk, Savage, and Speary.

NEW GARDEN was named from New Garden, in the county Carlow, Ireland. This township was included in a survey made about 1700, for William Penn, Jr., being part of 30,000 acres surveyed for him and his sister Letitia, part of which lay in New Castle county. It was largely settled from 1712 to 1720, by Friends from Ireland, one of whom, John Lowden, is supposed to have suggested the name, in remembrance of his former home. Thomas and Mary Rowland settled in the valley, near Toughkenamon, in 1706, being, perhaps, the first settlers who purchased land in the township. Among the early settlers were John Miller, Michael Lightfoot, Joseph, John, and Nehemiah Hutton, Joseph Sharp, Benjamin Fred, Robert Johnston, and the Starr family. The township is now intersected by three railroads. Landenberg, in this township, is the seat of extensive woolen mills, and at Toughkenamon is a large manufactory of spokes and wheels, and one of hard rubber goods—also a large boarding school.

NEWLIN, formerly called Newlinton, was named in honor of Nathaniel Newlin. This township was surveyed in 1688, for the Free Society of Traders. It was purchased in 1724, by Nathaniel Newlin, who sold parts of it, and the remainder was divided among his heirs in 1730. An Anabaptist congregation held meetings at the house of John Bentley, prior to 1747, with Owen Thomas as their minister, and a meeting house was erected some years after, on land of the Bentleys.

NEW LONDON was probably so named because it contained land of the London company's purchase. A survey was made for Michael Harlan, in 1714, at a place called Thunder Hill, while near it, on Elk creek, a large tract called Pleasant Garden, was taken up under a Maryland right. About 1720, a survey was made for Susanna M'Cain, who was doubtless the grandmother of Governor Thomas



M'Kean. The names of Hodgson, Mackey, Scott, Moore, Cook, Finney, Johnson, and Allison, were among the early settlers. The most of these were Scotch-Irish Presbyterians.

NOTTINGHAM.—In 1702 a survey of eighteen thousand acres was made by direction of Penn's commissioners, and divided amongst several persons who took an interest in the settlement, except three thousand acres, which was reserved for the Proprietary. This settlement received the name of Nottingham. When the line between the Provinces of Pennsylvania and Maryland was finally settled, all of the original survey fell into Maryland, except one thousand three hundred and forty-five acres. Prominent among those who settled upon these lands, were the names of Brown, Beeson, Beal, Churchman, Gatchell, Job, Reynolds, Ross, and Sidwell. The township was divided into West Nottingham and East Nottingham, about the year 1720. The celebrated Hugh Williamson was born in West Nottingham, in 1735.

OXFORD was formed by a division of Londonderry, in 1754. A survey of five thousand acres was made in the eastern part of this township for William Penn, Jr., and afterwards known as Penn's Manor. Between this and the Octorara creek, surveys were made from 1730 to 1750 and later, as desired by settlers. Those who had seated themselves on the Manor did not get title until 1747, and afterwards. The township also included a portion of Fagg's Manor, which lay to the east of Penn's Manor, and on this the settlers were also seated a considerable time before getting titles to the land. A majority of the early settlers were Scotch-Irish. It was divided into Upper Oxford and Lower Oxford in 1797.

PENN was formed by a division of Londonderry in 1817. The greater part of it was originally included in Fagg's Manor, and the settlers were largely from Ireland.

PENNSBURY was formed from the eastern part of Kennett, in 1770, and comprised the earliest settled part of that township. There were few settlements made until after 1700. The names of Smith, Peirce, Way, Hope, Harlan, Few, and Bentley, were among the first to take up land, and after these came the Harveys, Mendenhalls, Webbs, and Temples. John Parker, an eminent minister among Friends, was settled there in the time of the Revolution. At the battle of Brandywine, Kuyphausen's forces were posted in this township, at and near Chad's ford, until the fighting commenced with the forces under Cornwallis, at Birmingham meeting-house, when he crossed the Brandywine and attacked the forces under General Wayne, who were guarding the ford.

PIKELAND was granted by William Penn to Joseph Pike, by patent made in 1705. It contained over ten thousand acres. By various devises and conveyances, it became the property of Samuel Hoare, of London. He, in 1773, conveyed it to Andrew Allen, and took a mortgage on it for sixteen thousand pounds sterling. Allen sold parcels of it to over one hundred persons, and received the purchase moneys. The mortgage not being paid, it was sued out, and the entire township sold by the sheriff in 1789, and re-purchased by Samuel Hoare. The persons to whom Allen had made sales, and whose titles were divested by this sheriff's sale, generally compromised with Hoare and received new deeds from him. It was divided into East Pikeland and West Pikeland in 1838.



Pocopson, named from the stream which flows through it, was formed in 1849, from parts of four adjoining townships. It is bounded on one side by the Brandywine. Benjamin Chambers took up a large quantity of land on the Brandywine, which he sold to settlers. Joseph Taylor purchased from him in 1711, and afterwards built a mill on Pocopson creek. The Marshalls settled the northern part, and were succeeded by the Bakers. The name Pocopson is Indian, and signifies rapid or brawling stream.

SADSEBURY was a township as early as 1708. That part of it lying in the Great Valley was taken up at an early date in right of purchases made in England. The erection of Lancaster county, in 1729, took off the part of it west of the Octorara. The early settlers were a mixture of Friends from England, and of Scotch-Irish Presbyterians. The families of Boyd, Cowan, McClellan, Marsh, Moore, Parke, Truman, Williams, Hope, Gardner, and Richmond, were here early. Upper Octorara Presbyterian church, which dates from 1720, is in this township.

SCHUYLKILL was formed from Charlestown in 1826. In the southern part was Lowther's Manor of Bilton, which was surveyed very early for (it is supposed) the children of Margaret Lowther, who was a sister of William Penn. The land in the northern part was taken up by David Lloyd, and settled by the Buckwalter, Coates, Starr, Longstreth, and other families.

THORNBURY was named from Thornbury in Gloucestershire, England. It comprises but about one-fourth of the original township, the greater part being in Delaware county. This was all surveyed in right of the "first purchasers." Thornbury, Birmingham, and Westtown are the only townships within the present limits of the county which were organized before the year 1704.

TREDFYFFRIN is situated in the Great Valley, in the most easterly part of the county, and was part of a large tract surveyed for the Welsh, and principally taken up by them. The name is Welsh, and signifies valley-town, or township. *Tre* or *tref* is the Welsh for town or township, and *Dyffryn* is a wide cultivated valley, hence the compound, *Tredyffryn*, the town or township in the valley. This township was sometimes called Valley-town or Valleyton, in old writings, an evident effort to anglicize the name. It has been said by some writers to signify stony valley, but this is not correct.

UWCHLAN was principally settled by Welsh Friends about 1715 and later, under the auspices of David Lloyd. A Friends meeting was established, and a house erected, in which the preaching was in Welsh. Among the early settlers were John Evans, Cadwalader Jones, James Pugh, Robert Benson, Noble Butler, John Davis, Griffith John, and Samuel John. The latter two were preachers, and sons of John Philips, taking their father's christian name for their surname, as was the custom among the Welsh. The present inhabitants are largely the descendants of the early settlers. The name is Welsh, and signifies upland, or higher than or above the valley. The township was divided in 1858, and a new township formed, to which the name of Upper Uwchlan was given.

VALLEY was formed in 1852, from parts of four adjoining townships, and was reduced in size by the formation of Caln in 1868. The greater part of the present township was formerly in Sadsbury.

VINCENT.—On the earliest map of Pennsylvania this township is given in



the names of Sir Matthias Vincent, Adrian Vreosen, Benjohan Furloy, and Dr. Daniel Cox. French creek, which passes through the township, was sometimes called Vincent river, and the tract of land was most frequently described as Cox & Company's 20,000 acres. The earliest inhabitants were supplanted by the Germans, whose descendants still, to a considerable extent, enjoy the lands of their fathers. Garret Brombac—now corrupted into Brownback—established in this township the first tavern north of the Lancaster road, in a house of rude construction, where he performed the duties of host many years. He was a merry German, and accumulated considerable means. The township was divided into East Vincent and West Vincent in 1832.

WALLACE was formed in 1852, by the division of West Nantmeal. The name given to it by the court was Springton, but the Legislature changed it the next year to Wallace. The Manor of Springton, laid out about 1729, and containing ten thousand acres, included nearly, if not quite all, the lands in this township, and it is to be regretted that the name given by the court was not retained. Wallace post office is a prominent point in the township. Among the names of early settlers are Murray, Henderson, Starret, Parker, and McClure.

WARWICK, named from Warwick iron works within its limits. The name came originally from the county of Warwick, in England, and was conferred on the works by Samuel Nutt, who was from that county. This township was formed by the division of East Nantmeal, in 1842. The Warwick iron works were originally erected in 1736, by Samuel Nutt. During the Revolution, they were in constant operation for the government, and cannon were cast there. In 1857 they produced 759 tons of boiler plate iron, from the ore of the neighboring mines. These works have been owned by the Potts family for over a century, by one of whom, David Potts Jr., they were carried on successfully for more than fifty years.

WESTTOWN was organized about 1700. The early settlers were Daniel Hoopes, Aaron James, Benjamin Hickman, James Gibbons, and John Bowater. The Gibbons tract, of six hundred acres, was purchased by the Society of Friends in 1791, and there was established the well known Westtown boarding school, in which, at the present time, are about 220 pupils of both sexes.

WHITELAND was organized about 1704. This is the north-western part of the original Welsh tract of forty thousand acres, which was laid out to them in 1684, with the expectation that they should be a separate Barony, with liberty to manage their municipal affairs in their own way. It appears they also desired to retain their own language, but the tide of subsequent events rendered this impracticable. The north and west lines of this survey are still chiefly retained, but the others are obliterated. Richard Thomas was one of the early settlers, and took up five thousand acres of land, in right of a purchase made by his father, Richard ap Thomas, of Whitford Garden, in Wiltshire, North Wales, in 1681, the greater part of which was located in this township. One of his descendants, Colonel Richard Thomas, was an officer during the Revolutionary war, and occupied a prominent position, both in civil and military affairs. The township is situated almost wholly in the choicest part of the Great Valley, and was divided into East Whiteland and West Whiteland in 1765.

WILLISTOWN was organized in 1704. A large part of this tract was within the





lines of the Welsh tract, but many surveys were made for other persons, especially in the southern parts. The families of Hibberd, Massey, Smedley, Thomas, and Yarnall, were among the earliest and most numerous. A tribe of Indians, called the Okehockings, held lands in this township, by special grant from the Commissioners of Property.

## ANNUAL VALUE OF PRODUCTS OF AGRICULTURE IN PENNSYLVANIA—1870.

COUNTIES.	Products of Farms.	Home Manufactures.	Animals slaughtered for slaughter.	Livestock.	Dairy products.	Wool.	All other products.	Entire products of each county.
Adams.....	\$3,820,438	\$2,020	\$498,545	1,722,610	319,240	\$13,148	\$1,567	\$6,381,469
Allegheny.....	4,043,871	60,875	472,794	3,015,224	499,734	154,237	39,482	8,286,117
Armstrong.....	2,597,100	9,692	391,227	1,915,150	323,682	63,931	6,461	5,219,666
Beaver.....	1,760,626	2,187	348,199	1,576,277	318,178	210,953	17,639	4,231,756
Berford.....	1,996,253	12,667	239,393	1,298,295	152,451	30,352	8,686	3,661,407
Berks.....	16,179,483	10,165	1,263,649	4,514,499	691,761	5,429	12,817	22,917,821
Blair.....	1,447,840	337	187,971	798,164	101,877	2,832	3,416	3,441,657
Bradford.....	4,729,650	20,245	732,712	4,322,665	1,262,561	64,126	60,521	11,119,310
Butler.....	5,490,959	19,997	1,151,645	4,337,108	1,051,315	8,759	10,649	12,692,823
Bucks.....	2,964,622	14,703	518,968	2,467,091	483,179	112,110	11,046	6,571,626
Cambridge.....	1,074,925	16,155	173,311	853,301	145,733	23,772	7,222	2,274,812
Cameron.....	24,179	290	12,529	73,229	16,421	1,681	1,515	54,145
Carlisle.....	292,914	59	42,390	262,573	28,332	615	294	597,588
Centre.....	2,626,409	1,550	351,297	1,332,555	174,522	26,724	363	4,516,420
Chester.....	5,739,638	80,675	2,181,799	5,192,517	1,078,463	15,888	12,147	11,320,527
Charlton.....	1,568,836	6,932	311,902	1,317,708	188,546	41,398	3,558	3,441,690
Clearfield.....	1,571,684	17,272	318,426	941,661	150,971	28,536	3,012	3,740,962
Clinton.....	1,988,566	1,637	129,217	639,152	74,159	14,374	1,889	3,816,385
Columbia.....	1,790,979	4,739	282,616	1,661,968	156,886	11,163	4,531	3,315,873
Crawford.....	3,784,832	123,692	765,210	3,702,266	804,277	115,332	29,291	5,315,821
Cumberland.....	8,541,519	5,962	555,707	1,999,461	2,641,317	14,649	5,526	11,325,491
Dauphin.....	2,843,888	14,997	475,479	1,669,572	268,963	4,981	8,381	5,277,294
DeLaware.....	1,368,441	58,563	946,329	1,665,057	512,642	590	927	3,022,653
Elk.....	211,044	48	31,859	266,706	36,301	3,554	591	403,922
Eric.....	8,810,113	14,093	636,299	2,939,156	688,529	85,432	18,559	8,293,361
Fayette.....	2,348,090	14,567	665,767	2,065,411	231,519	143,376	48,416	5,487,516
Franklin.....	155,599	1,466	23,799	127,114	21,055	3,497	1,179	333,499
Fulton.....	3,975,245	21,875	579,749	2,279,193	801,249	15,581	3,949	7,170,779
Forest.....	629,816	1,000	199,465	424,654	57,898	10,229	1,394	1,227,518
Greene.....	1,839,622	21,586	398,572	1,875,257	353,554	222,241	47,863	4,678,729
Huntingdon.....	2,133,816	32,390	242,017	1,431,418	155,717	27,655	4,211	4,030,264
Indiana.....	2,607,167	17,879	355,914	2,171,442	368,445	62,965	6,959	5,693,511
Jefferson.....	1,236,455	6,739	191,075	941,012	166,018	28,340	4,739	2,594,399
Juniata.....	1,439,288	2,478	176,322	635,859	199,125	8,469	1,997	2,228,444
Lancaster.....	9,725,074	39,734	2,471,899	6,041,215	811,082	19,046	21,867	19,041,772
Lawrence.....	1,206,139	1,472	299,796	1,373,231	211,289	131,063	7,929	3,764,189
Lebanon.....	2,718,790	4,894	447,381	1,629,335	292,957	2,663	6,175	5,123,255
Lehigh.....	2,398,336	19,528	467,683	1,919,157	329,656	4,381	15,293	5,159,917
Leuzette.....	1,738,392	18,585	410,612	2,056,063	372,904	19,227	19,216	5,626,009
Lycoming.....	1,963,217	49,625	135,940	1,241,860	159,173	12,092	4,623	3,928,284
McKean.....	462,617	5,222	84,579	372,612	69,912	14,068	5,193	1,043,729
Mercer.....	3,118,097	21,273	754,826	2,821,692	545,840	123,419	21,022	7,314,699
Mifflin.....	1,414,232	1,089	167,526	868,609	190,811	10,228	1,465	2,563,380
Monroe.....	841,915	12,063	149,864	677,047	99,583	6,049	2,936	1,782,427
Montgomery.....	4,421,100	1,898,321	3,895,957	3,895,957	1,340,112	7,049	7,049	19,953,668
Morehead.....	739,399	2,416	116,453	419,646	65,627	3,378	601	1,319,211
Northampton.....	2,614,357	1,271	485,291	1,969,042	297,104	7,135	6,993	5,294,116
Northumberland.....	1,995,774	1,787	300,667	1,113,988	164,815	7,579	2,152	3,587,057
Perry.....	1,726,438	10,413	299,014	948,988	12,583	10,221	1,965	3,971,455
Philadelphia.....	1,871,809	5,075	63,967	369,695	125,786	159	995	3,728,847
Pike.....	374,142	34	59,416	294,600	55,191	1,698	1,394	792,558
Potter.....	824,923	10,289	95,061	672,294	169,548	26,239	12,481	1,011,779
Schuylkill.....	1,656,723	182,789	259,295	951,979	131,289	3,342	7,772	3,196,199
Somerset.....	1,204,366	3,667	170,065	861,113	89,421	4,663	1,119	2,115,619
Snyder.....	1,879,158	36,643	292,346	1,696,233	408,189	40,088	89,559	4,122,148
Sullivan.....	433,155	6,738	89,591	351,901	76,683	19,468	251,793	1,214,399
Susquehanna.....	3,104,021	18,214	572,688	3,276,763	869,540	54,292	15,275	7,911,786
Tioga.....	2,712,723	13,813	323,737	2,074,117	562,619	41,894	30,693	5,792,539
Union.....	1,311,315	.....	280,209	688,911	88,684	4,269	3,391	2,595,839
Venango.....	1,319,590	13,915	247,181	1,150,153	172,022	46,283	4,496	2,917,913
Warren.....	1,270,903	4,708	185,391	1,033,503	353,916	25,819	8,440	3,814,024
Washington.....	1,119,895	4,432	89,461	3,398,339	369,573	89,373	19,837	8,938,493
Wayne.....	1,495,176	3,257	272,558	1,328,085	336,231	21,763	5,713	4,079,753
Westmoreland.....	4,243,247	10,292	675,621	7,024,051	407,951	89,235	19,146	8,473,665
Wyoming.....	1,127,323	12,103	174,000	822,311	180,992	9,867	9,792	2,366,538
York.....	6,408,657	14,072	982,874	4,013,132	599,781	19,347	22,192	12,067,573
<b>Total.....</b>	<b>171,793,301</b>	<b>1,568,737</b>	<b>28,413,110</b>	<b>115,647,975</b>	<b>21,542,289</b>	<b>3,285,957</b>	<b>983,422</b>	<b>313,677,961</b>

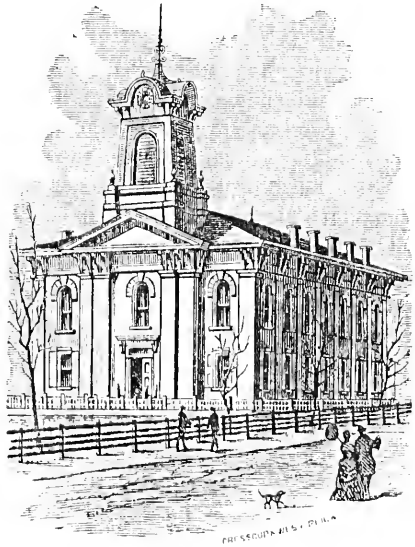


## CLARION COUNTY.

BY REV. JAMES S. ELDER, CLARION.



CLARION COUNTY was erected by act of Assembly, passed March 11 1839, from parts of Armstrong and Venango counties. The boundaries of the new county were defined in the act as follows: "That all those parts of Armstrong and Venango counties lying and being within the following boundaries, viz.: Beginning at the junction of Red Bank creek with the Allegheny river; thence up said creek to the line of Jefferson and Armstrong counties; thence along said line to the line dividing Farmington and Tionesta townships, in Venango county; thence along said line to the northwest corner of Farmington township, in Venango county; thence by a straight line to the mouth of Shull's Run," afterwards called Ritchie's Run, "on the Allegheny River; thence down said river to the place of beginning, be and the same is hereby declared to be erected into a county, henceforth to be called Clarion." The straight line from "the northwest corner of Farmington township to Shull's Run," on account of running diagonally through large tracts of unseated lands, was afterwards changed so as to avoid such divisions, rendering it angular and irregular. Thus Clarion county is bounded on the north by Forest county, on the east by Jefferson county, on the south by Red Bank creek and the Allegheny river, and on the west by Venango county. Average length of the county 25 miles; breadth, 24 miles; area, 600 square miles.



CLARION COUNTY COURT HOUSE.  
(From a Photograph by A. Bonnet.)

In 1840, the townships comprising Clarion county and the population of each, although reported in the census returns of the county to which they had formerly belonged, were as follows: Townships from Armstrong county—Clarion, 2,239; Madison, 1,305; Monroe, 1,151; Perry, 1,122; Red Bank, 3,070; Toby, 1,829. Townships from Venango county—Beaver, 1,611; Elk, 585; Farmington, 799; Paint, 491; and Richland, 1,385. Total population, 15,587. The population of the county in 1850 was 23,565; in 1860, 24,988; and in 1870 26,537. Within the past five years large numbers have been attracted to the



county by the oil business, and from the last election returns, it is safe to estimate the present population at a little over 31,000. The marked increase from 1840 to 1850 was owing to the rapid development of the iron and lumber interests, especially the former. At the organization of the county, many of the above townships embraced a wide territory. As the population increased, the following townships have been erected: Ashland, Brady, Highland, Knox, Licking, Limestone, Mill Creek, Piney, Salem, and Washington. Also, the following boroughs have been incorporated: Callensburg, Clarion, Cullsville, East Brady, New Bethlehem, Rimersburg, Strattanville, and St. Petersburg.

By the same act, March 14th, 1839, James Thompson, John Gilmore, and Samuel L. Carpenter, were appointed commissioners to view the relative advantages of the situations offered, select "a proper and convenient site for a seat of justice," and transmit their report to the Governor on or before the 1st day of the following September. Shortly afterwards, Mr. Thompson resigned, and by the act of June 25, John P. Davis, of Crawford county, was appointed to fill the vacancy. A number of places were offered as sites, and the claims and advantages of each were warmly pressed by the citizens of the respective locality. The contest was finally ended by the selection of a site, the most central, and afterwards called Clarion, situated on the Bellefonte and Meadville turnpike, about one mile from where that road crosses the Clarion river. At that time only a very small part of the grounds were cleared, and only one house was standing where the future town should arise.

It was also provided by the act of March 11, 1839, that the organization of the county for judicial purposes should go into effect on the 1st day of September, 1840. It was attached to the Sixth Judicial District, consisting of the counties of Erie, Crawford, and Venango. The first court was held on the first Monday of the following November. Hon. Alexander McCalmont, of Franklin, was appointed president judge; Messrs. Christian Myers and Charles Evans were commissioned associate judges. All these gentlemen were honored with a second appointment. The court convened for the first time in the front room of an unfinished house belonging to Captain Robert Barber, now owned by Captain A. H. Alexander. In this room, the floor yet covered with shavings, a rude platform was extemporized for the Court and Bar. There were twenty-three lawyers present, many of them residents, who took the prescribed oath. The amount of business to be transacted was small, and was soon dispatched.

When the site for the seat of justice was selected, the lands belonged to General Levi G. Clover, James P. Hoover, Peter Clover, Jr., (heirs of Philip Clover,) and Hon. C. Myers, who donated the town site to the county, on the condition of receiving half the proceeds from the sale of lots. Grounds for the county buildings, and a public square, were reserved from sale. At this time a dispute arose about a strip of land lying between these tracts, and which would be the central part of the future town. This ground being needed for lots before the question of ownership could be settled by law, the parties agreed in writing to release their claim to the title of the land, reserving the privilege of contesting the right to the purchase money. Application was made to the Legislature, and the Governor, by act of June 25, 1839, was authorized to appoint three citizens of the county, who were empowered to take deeds in trust

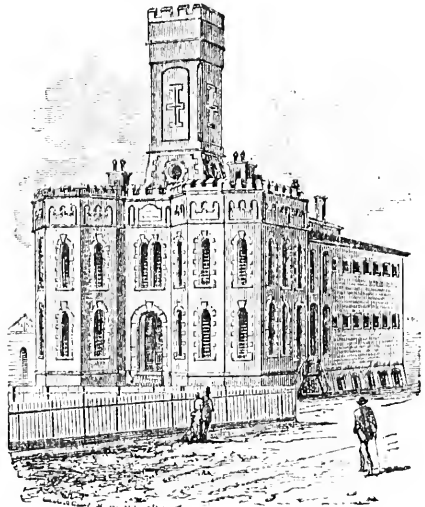


from persons donating lands, to lay out the town in lots, to sell the same, and to make contracts for the public buildings. Accordingly, the Governor appointed George B. Hamilton, Lindsay C. Pritner, and Robert Potter, commissioners, who proceeded to the discharge of the duties of their appointment. It was but a short time before 1839 that any part of the chosen site had been cleared out, and even then only a small portion. There was only one house in all that is now included in the borough limits. The greater part of the site was still covered with large pine and dense underbrush. It was previously esteemed good hunting grounds, where wild game had been frequently caught. As the commissioners entered upon their work, they laid out the town in lots, employing Mr. John Sloan as surveyor, who, for a long series of years before and afterward, was identified with the interests of the county. The first sale of lots was in October, 1839, and a second sale was made in the following spring. The court house and jail were put under contract in the fall of 1839. Much of the work of building was done during the summer of 1840, though neither was completed that season. The jail being further advanced, was used for other purposes than that of detaining alleged law-breakers. Indeed, its loft for several years served for court room, church for all denominations, and for town hall. Both buildings were fine structures, remembering the time in which they were built. The court house was ready for occupancy in 1843. This building was destroyed by fire in March, 1859. The work of rebuilding was at once commenced, and pushed forward with commendable energy. The new court house stands on the old site, and presents a fine appearance, though its cost was only \$23,000, a marvel of economy and cheapness. The old jail, in 1874, was supplanted by a most complete and substantial structure of stone, with brick front, at a cost of about \$122,000.

These buildings reflect honor on the county that erected them, and are indicative of the public spirit and enterprise of the citizens.

The first election in the county was held on the 13th of October, 1840, when only two thousand and five votes were polled. The following officers were chosen: sheriff, James Hasson; prothonotary, James Goe; coroner, John Reed; commissioners, George L. Benn, Jacob Miller, and Gideon Richardson; auditors, John Elliott, Joseph C. King, and George Means.

The surface of the county is greatly diversified. Along the streams it is broken, and in many places precipitous. On the uplands between it is rolling and often hilly. The soil, in some parts, is of a good quality and quite produc-



CLARION COUNTY PRISON.  
(From a Photograph by A. Baquet.)





tive. Other parts are better adapted to grazing purposes. On the whole it is susceptible of a very high state of cultivation.

The iron interest, once so prosperous, has now fallen into decay. While formerly, for a number of years in succession, the furnaces of this county produced not less than fifty-five thousand tons of iron per annum, now there is but one furnace in blast. And yet the hills contain almost inexhaustible mines of ore, and there are immense supplies of charcoal and coke. There are indications, however, of a revival of this industry in the county, and many anticipate a future in this interest, bright with prosperity.

For many years considerable amounts of fire clay were taken to places beyond the county for manufacturing the various articles made from this material. Within the county that business was conducted in various places on a small scale. Recently, additional establishments have been erected, where fire brick and all kindred wares are made.

Clarion county lies in the northern end of the Allegheny coal field. Though near the out-cropping of that field, yet much of the coal of this region is of excellent quality. Beds of this mineral underlie large portions of the county. Frequently there are two veins, and sometimes three. While it has long been mined for domestic use, yet it is only lately that it has been sent to more distant markets. Within a short period a number of collieries have been established along the southern border.

For many years the lumber business has been the leading interest. At present it has received a partial check. A heavy amount of capital is invested in tracts of land in the northern section of the county, covered with pine forests. The energies of a large number of the people have been directed to this industry.

At present petroleum is the source of greatest wealth. The oil field extends over a large part of the county in the south-west, and is steadily advancing further to the interior. While "prospecting" for oil was carried on in Clarion county early in the history of the development of that article, yet the success was partial until the year 1870. In the early summer of that year it is believed there were only five producing wells. During the year other wells were put down across from Parker City, which yielded rich returns of oil. The business then began to assume a distinct form in this county. Each year it has been rapidly increasing, until the development is marvellous. The success gave a multiplied value to every spot of land where there was a prospect of finding oil. Population flowed in, wells in large numbers were put down, villages sprung up, business activity has been displayed to an astonishing extent, and that, too, sometimes in places that had been most quiet. A. W. Smiley, superintendent of the Union pipe line, estimates that five thousand wells have been drilled in this county. Reports show that forty-seven wells were finished being drilled in the month of January, 1876, with an aggregate daily yield of six hundred and sixty-two barrels. S. H. Stowell, compiler of the *Petroleum Reporter*, Pittsburgh, has also kindly furnished us with statistics. He says: "The reports in my possession do not separate Clarion county production from that of Butler and Armstrong counties. I should judge about one-third of the production in the district composed of these counties comes from Clarion. Whole production from Pennsylvania oil fields for the year 1875 was 8,942,938 barrels, of which



Clarion, Butler, and Armstrong produced 7,621,479 barrels—one-third of which estimated to have come from Clarion, 2,540,495 barrels. This would make a daily average yield of six thousand nine hundred and sixty barrels in Clarion county, and the development is still widening. Every day new "rigs" go up as new sources are penetrated, and new wells tested.

The county is well drained by numerous streams which intersect it in almost every direction. The Clarion river, formerly called Stump creek, and sometimes Toby's, from the names of two Indian trappers, is a beautiful stream, its waters so clear and pure, and its banks lined with scenery so fair. Having its source in Elk county, it flows directly through the interior of the county within half a mile of the county seat, and empties into the Allegheny river. Red-bank creek, the south branch of which rises in Clearfield county, and the North fork, which rises in Jefferson county, forms the southern boundary for some distance before it empties into the Allegheny river. Neither of these streams are navigable for steamboats, but rafts in vast numbers and coal boats are run down on high water. In addition to these, there are many smaller streams, yet sufficiently large to afford much valuable water-power, as Mill creek, Beaver, Deer, Paint, Canoe, Hemlock, Little Toby, Leatherwood, Piney, Licking, etc.

The facilities for public travel and transportation of goods have greatly increased within a few years. Formerly steamboats on the Allegheny river for part of the year, and at very irregular times, together with the old stage coach, furnished the only means of travel; the former alone the only public facility for exchanging commodities with outside markets. Now the Allegheny Valley railroad traverses twenty-five miles of the southern border of the county, and the Eastern Extension, or Bennett's Branch, twenty-eight miles more. At Lawsonham, the Sligo Branch leaves the Eastern Extension, and running for ten miles towards the centre of the county, reaches the town of Sligo. This furnishes a greatly improved outlet.

Educational interests receive much attention. The common school system being early adopted, there is a commendable enterprise manifested in keeping abreast of the improvements of the age. There are one hundred and eighty-eight school buildings, providing two hundred and three school rooms, with an attendance of about seven thousand two hundred scholars. Besides these schools there are a number of seminaries, academies, and select schools in the county.

The Clarion Academy was incorporated by the act of June 12, 1840, and an appropriation of two thousand dollars was made by the State to secure grounds and erect buildings, with the stipulation that four children, of limited means, from each township might enjoy the benefits arising from such an academy, without paying tuition. No further appropriations being made, the building had to be kept in repair by the borough, until finally, in 1865, it was transferred to the school board of the borough of Clarion, and is now used for public school purposes.

Reid Institute is located in Reidsburg. In 1863, a young lady taught a select class in the vestibule of Zion church. Following this, increased efforts were made, and a school was established of no little celebrity. Hard by the church, now stand Prescott and Reid Halls, on the bluff overlooking the village below. Efforts are being made to secure sufficient funds to enlarge and endow.

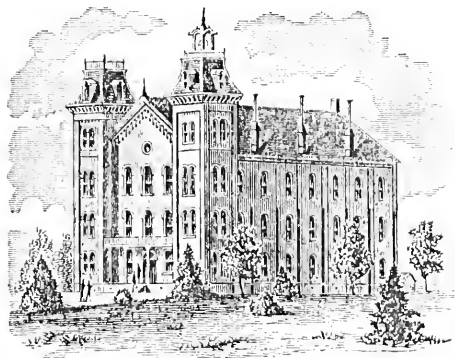


Clarion Collegiate Institute was established in 1858, in the borough of Rinersburg. Its three story building, located in a beautiful grove of native growth, was erected in 1859. It is in successful operation, and its influence on all the surrounding community been marked and healthful.

Callensburg Institute was chartered in 1858. Previous to that time there had been two or three sessions of select school. Rev. David M'Cay—now of precious memory—was deeply interested in its success. Many of the citizens in the town and surrounding community joined him in earnest efforts for its advancement. After some time a handsome building was completed, which is still an ornament to the place. Its students are now widely scattered, many of them filling with honor their professions or callings. For some time its prosperity has declined, but

located as it is, there is no reason why it should not greatly surpass its former usefulness.

Carrier Seminary, on the hill at the east end of the borough of Clarion, was erected in 1868, at a total cost, including furniture and apparatus, of seventy-five thousand dollars. It is built of brick, and the main edifice is one hundred feet in length and seventy-five in width, and is three stories high. The grounds comprise about ten acres, handsomely laid out, and planted in shade and ornamental



CARRIER SEMINARY.

trees. It has received a good measure of patronage, and has been attended with a good degree of prosperity.

At East Brady a select school has been successfully started within the past year, under the management of Rev. J. A. Ewing; and still others are in operation within the county. In all these institutions, for the year 1875, there were gathered nine hundred and fifteen pupils, and twenty-nine instructors.

The early history of the region now embraced in the limits of Clarion county should not be overlooked. Very much is lost. Of that which remains, much is only fragmentary. The first settlers had earnest work to do in planting homes in the wilderness and subduing the forest. They had but little time to put on record the events transpiring around them, and which would now be read with thrilling interest. One after another of the pioneers has passed away, until now scarcely any remain. Hence, many of those early incidents of real historic value can only be gathered from conflicting tradition.

But few conflicts with the Indians are known to have taken place in what is now Clarion county. There is one incident, however, that should not be suffered to pass into oblivion. It occurred at Brady's Bend, in the south-western line of the county, in June, 1779. The incursions of the Indians had become so frequent, and their outrages so alarming, that it was thought advisable to retaliate upon them the injuries of war, and to carry into the country occupied by them the same system with which they had visited the settlements. For this



purpose an adequate force was provided, under the immediate direction of Colonel Brodhead, the command of the advance guard of which was confided to Captain Brady.

The troops proceeded up the Allegheny river, and had arrived near the mouth of Red-bank creek, now known by the name of Brady's Bend, without encountering an enemy. Brady and his rangers were some distance in front of the main body, as their duty required, when they suddenly discovered a war party of Indians approaching them. Relying on the strength of the main body, and its ability to force the Indians to retreat, and anticipating, as Napoleon did in the battle with the Mamelukes, that, when driven back, they would return by the same route they had advanced on, Brady permitted them to proceed without hindrance, and hastened to seize a narrow pass, higher up the river, where the rocks, nearly perpendicular, approached the river, and a few determined men might successfully combat superior numbers.

In a short time the Indians encountered the main body under Brodhead, and were driven back. In full and swift retreat they pressed on to gain the pass between the rocks and the river, but it was occupied by Brady and his rangers, who failed not to pour into their flying columns a most destructive fire. Many were killed on the bank, and many more in the stream. Cornplanter, afterwards the distinguished chief of the Senecas, but then a young man, saved himself by swimming. The celebrated war chief of this tribe, Bald Eagle, was of the number slain on this occasion.

After the savages had crossed the river, Brady was standing on the bank wiping his rifle, when an Indian, exasperated at the unexpected defeat and disgraceful retreat of his party, and supposing himself now safe from the well-known and abhorred enemy of his race, commenced abusing him in broken English, calling Brady and his men cowards, squaws, and the like, and putting himself in such attitudes as he probably thought would be most expressive of his utter contempt of them. When Brady had cleaned his rifle and loaded it, he sat down by an ash sapling, and, taking sight about three feet above the Indian, fired. The Indian, as the rifle cracked, was seen to shrink a little and then limp off. When the main army arrived, a canoe was manned, and Brady and a few men crossed to where the Indian had been seen. They found blood on the ground, and had followed it but a short distance when the Indian jumped up, struck his breast and said, "I am a man." It was Brady's wish to take him prisoner, without doing him further harm. The Indian continued to repeat "I am a man." "Yes," said an Irishman, who was along: "By Saint Patrick, you're a purty boy," and, before Brady could arrest the blow, sunk his tomahawk into the Indian's brain.

About the year 1792 this region was visited by four land companies—the Peters, the Holland, the Bingham, and the Pickering—for the purpose of locating land warrants. As nearly as can be ascertained, they came in the above-named order, and all within a year of each other. Their warrants were all dated from 1792 to 1794. They were laid in sections of a thousand acres each, and covered the principal part of the lands within the present limits of Clarion county. By an act passed in 1785, actual settlers were allowed to take up tracts of four hundred acres. No settlements, however, were made in what is now Clarion county till 1801. In the fall of that year, two bands of pioneers came out, one





from Westmoreland county, under the patronage of General Alexander Craig, the other from Penn's Valley and neighboring localities. It is estimated that about one hundred and fifty persons, in all, came out that year. As the winter approached, some of these visited their old homes, and returned with their families in the spring. The streams from these two sources continued to flow for ten or twelve years. Those who settled in the southern part, near where Callensburg now stands, supposed they were taking up vacant lands. But in the course of time they discovered their mistake, and were compelled to purchase of the Bingham company. The toils and hardships of all those first settlers were almost incredible. Journeying through long stretches of forests, over dim and ill-defined paths, and across unbridged streams, they could bring but a small supply of the necessaries of life with them. Finding a home in a vast unbroken wilderness, they could not provide these necessaries at once. Thus the want of proper food and sufficient raiment caused no little suffering. Ofttimes they were compelled to encamp under trees, and use bread made of flour mingled with water and baked on the coals. There were times in the experience of many when a supply of even this fare would have been deemed a luxury. Their first dwellings were hastily built, and of the simplest architecture. One of the first articles manufactured by these hardy pioneers was "pine tar," extracted from the knots of decayed pine trees. The product thus obtained was put in kegs, taken down the river in canoes to Pittsburgh, and there exchanged for flour and other necessaries. Many paid for their lands, at least in part, by money raised in this way. At once small clearings were made, and patches planted in that which would most fully relieve pressing necessity.

By and by farms began to be opened out and a greater competency to be enjoyed. Churches were built, schools were started, and the wilderness began to blossom. Though the beginnings were small, yet the foundations were laid that would bear a noble superstructure. The character of these men, very generally, was of a manly type. As a rule they were not only men of great courage and endurance, but likewise men of sterling integrity. Many of them were men of great Christian worth. Their wives were equally patterns of excellence. "Such men and women were made to match." All honor to the memory of these fathers and mothers who toiled so unweariedly, and suffered so patiently that they might secure homes for themselves and their children, and lay the foundations of a worthy community. How well they did their work is seen in the rich fruitage we now enjoy. The county that covers the region they settled has made amazing strides in wealth, and now takes a high rank among the counties of the Commonwealth in all those interests that are deemed valuable and precious.

CLARION, the county seat, is a handsomely laid out town. It was erected into a borough by the act of April 6, 1841. In its early history it has been asserted that its growth was too rapid. Public buildings to be erected and so many new houses to be built, people flocked in, in too great numbers for the permanent growth of the town. In 1840 the census showed a population of eight hundred. But if this mistake was made it was soon remedied. The place has acquired a healthy growth. Building has been greatly stimulated within the past two years, more houses having been built during that time than for a number of years previous. The neatness and good taste which mark both the public and private



buildings, and the sound financial basis on which business is conducted, attest its growing prosperity. One of the most important improvements was the construction of water works in the fall of 1875. Water is forced from the Clarion river by Eclipse pumps, to an elevation of four hundred and eighty-four feet, at a possible rate of three hundred barrels per hour. The influent pipe is of wrought iron of three and a half inches diameter, and three thousand three hundred and thirty-six feet in length. The water is discharged into two tanks, having a united capacity of twenty-five hundred barrels. They are located on Seminary hill, eighty-five feet above the average level of the town. From these tanks the water is distributed. In this way an abundant supply of pure water, for the requirements of the whole town, has been provided at a cost not exceeding thirteen thousand dollars. The works have been pronounced very complete in their construction. Located as Clarion is, on high ground, this improvement has added greatly to the comfort and convenience of the citizens, and to protection against fire.

SNIPPENVILLE, located on the turnpike, five miles west of Clarion, was laid out in 1826 by Hon. Richard Shippen. For some years after the decline in the iron manufacture it remained nearly stationary. Recently, however, the oil field has extended almost to its doors, imparting new vigor and awakening a growing activity. It is a point of considerable importance.

ST. PETERSBURG is in the south-western part of the county, about three miles north of Foxburg, a station on the Allegheny Valley railroad. It is in the midst of an oil-producing district. For many years prior to 1870 it was only a small village. After that time it suddenly sprang into prominence, rising like an exhalation from the earth, and now presents a busy aspect. Its population is fluctuating, and is variously estimated at from fifteen hundred to two thousand.

EAST BRADY, situated on the Allegheny river, opposite Brady's Bend, is a borough of rapid yet steady growth. Its situation and surroundings are favorable to its permanent increase.

CALLENSBURG, built on an eminence, and near the confluence of the Clarion and Licking streams, is seven miles east of Parker City. It was laid out in 1826, by Hugh Callen. It has a fine location and is a beautiful town.

SLIGO is among the towns recently laid out. Its location is near the noted Sligo furnace, where, until recently, large quantities of iron have been manufactured. It is the terminus of the Sligo Branch railroad, and a point where large amounts of oil are shipped by the Atlantic Pipe company.

NEW BETHLEHEM is an important town on the Eastern Extension. Its improvement is marked since the completion of the railroad. The various coal works in the immediate vicinity have increased its importance and business activity.

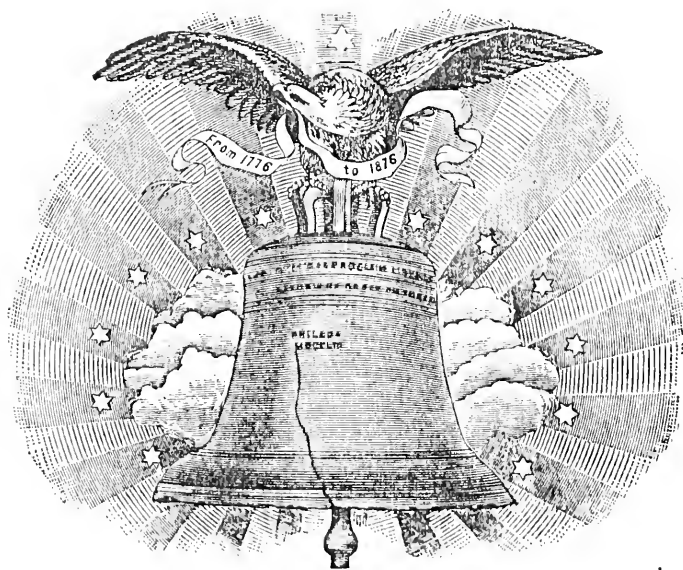
STRATTANVILLE is on the turnpike, three miles east of Clarion. John Strattan was its proprietor, who laid it out in 1830. It has been incorporated as a borough, and is the centre of an agricultural region.

GREENVILLE is a pleasant village, eight miles south-east of Clarion. Crowded into a small area, it nestles in one of the narrow and romantic valleys of Piney. Bordered with evergreens, it is protected by the surrounding hills.



Near by is an extensive woolen factory, which has been in operation for ten years, furnishing a market for wool, and manufactures excellent cloths and kindred goods.

Besides the foregoing boroughs and villages there are many others, as Tylersburg, Freyburg, Edenburgh, Turkey City, Salem City, Foxburg, Perryville, West Freedom, Monterey, Phillipsburg, Lawsonham, Millville, Shamondale, Rimersburg, Curllsville, Reidsburg, and others still smaller.



OLD LIBERTY BELL, PHILADELPHIA.

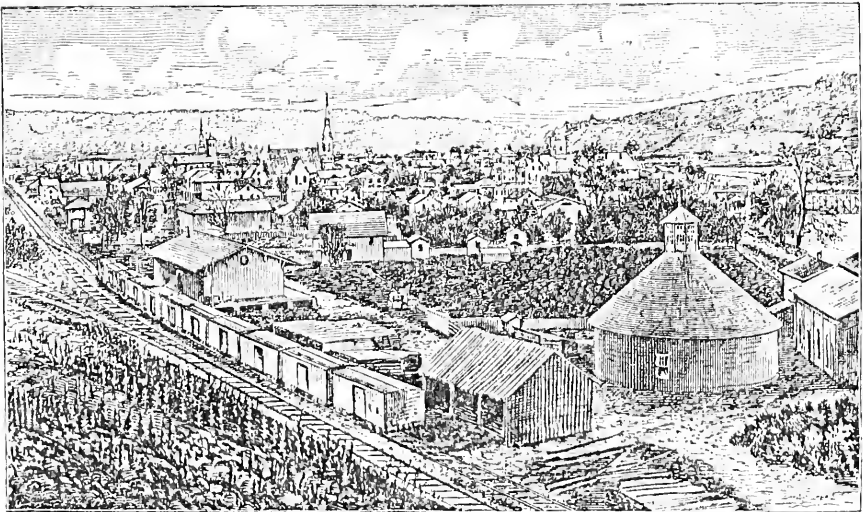


## CLEARFIELD COUNTY.

BY WILLIAM D. BIGLER, CLEARFIELD.



LEARFIELD COUNTY was brought into existence by an act of the General Assembly of Pennsylvania passed the 20th of March, 1804. The same act provided also for the erection of Jefferson, M'Kean, Potter, Tioga, and Cambria counties. Clearfield was formed out of the counties of Huntingdon and Lycoming, and its boundaries were set forth in the law which created it as follows: "Beginning where the line dividing Canan and Brodhead's district strikes the West Branch of the Sus-



VIEW OF THE BOROUGH OF CLEARFIELD.  
(From a Photograph by J. K. Butterf.)

quehanna river, thence north along said district line until a due west course from thence will strike the southeast corner of M'Kean county, thence west along the southern boundary of M'Kean county to the line of Jefferson county, thence southerly along the line of Jefferson county to where Hunter's district line crosses Sandy Lick creek, thence south along the district line to the Canoe Place on the Susquehanna river, thence an easterly course to the southwest corner of Centre county on the heads of Moshannon creek, thence down the Moshannon creek the several courses thereof to the mouth, thence down the West Branch of the Susquehanna river to the beginning." A portion of the territory included in the above boundaries was taken in 1843 to form a part of Elk county, and a small portion in 1868 was annexed to Jefferson and Elk counties.





By authority of this law, Governor M'Kean appointed Roland Curtin, James Fleming, and James Smith, commissioners, who, after receiving several proposals for the location of the county seat, finally selected, in the year 1805, for that purpose, a tract of land belonging to Abraham Witmer, being the site of the old Indian town of *Chincklacamoose*, and the site of the present town of Clearfield.

It was not for some time after its creation that Clearfield county was regularly organized and assumed absolute management of its own internal affairs. The commissioners of Centre county, by virtue of a legislative enactment of March 14, 1805, took charge of the infant county, and exercised a provisional authority over it from that time until 1812, when Clearfield county selected its first board of commissioners, to wit: Robert Maxwell, Hugh Jordan, and Samuel Fulton, who at their first session appointed Arthur Bell, Sr., county treasurer. The connection between the two counties for judicial purposes continued until the 29th of January, 1822, when the Legislature passed a law "organizing Clearfield county for judicial purposes, and empowering her to elect county officers." From the adoption of this law dates the complete organization of the county.

Clearfield county occupies a central position in the State, and is situate on the west side or rather behind the main ridge of the Allegheny mountains, on the sources of the West Branch of the Susquehanna river. The surface is generally hilly and broken—in some parts mountainous, with occasional level plateaus as you approach the heads of the streams. There are no continuous mountain ranges which can be distinctly traced, but a succession of ridges and hills, irregular in outline and deeply indented by small streams, which indicate the close proximity of a mountain range. There is considerable flat land along the larger streams. The river, more particularly in the southern and central portion of the county, is bordered with a valley of rich bottom land, which spreads out at times to considerable width. But following the course of the river through the north-eastern part of the county, the country assumes a bolder aspect—the valleys and bottom land gradually narrow, in places disappear, and high, rugged hills, from whose summits are opened long vistas of beautiful mountain scenery, hem the river on either side.

The entire county is traversed from the southwest to the northeast by the West Branch of the Susquehanna river, which takes its rise in the adjoining county of Indiana. The upper West Branch is a beautiful mountain stream, and while there is a prevailing sameness in the general outline of its scenery, yet it exhibits an interesting variety in its tortuous course, alternately sweeping toward the middle of narrow valleys and back again to hug the base of gently sloping ridges or steep, forest-crowned hills—at times a gently flowing current, and again a torrent of waters rushing in wild tumult through narrow and rocky channels. It is also a useful stream, being the great outlet for the material wealth of the county; and every year, when swollen by freshets, it is a scene of life and activity, and its bosom is freighted with the valuable crafts of the sturdy lumberman, on his way to the markets in the eastern part of the State. Cush, Chest, Anderson, Clearfield, and Moshaumon creeks, and Bennet's Branch of the Sinnemahoning, are its principal tributaries in the county, and partake of



the characteristics of the main stream, both in topographical feature and scenery.

The line of water shed, which separates the streams of the Atlantic from those which flow into the Gulf of Mexico, passes through the western end of the county, and within a few rods of each other. Within the limits of the county are springs whose water form a part of this widely diverging drainage. In the one case they traverse a distance of over two thousand miles, watering twelve States, in the other they reach the same tide water line, in a distance of three hundred miles.

Territorially, Clearfield is one of the largest counties in the State. Its length is forty-five miles, and its average breadth thirty-two miles; its area one thousand four hundred and forty square miles, and embracing in its boundaries over eight hundred thousand acres of land.

The soil is generally fertile, but varies a great deal with the surface of the county. The valleys and the bottom lands along the banks of the streams are rich and productive. The soil on the higher lands is naturally thin, but yields good crops, and by careful husbandry will compare favorably with some of the recognized agricultural districts in the State. There are occasional strata of limestone of good fertilizing qualities to be found throughout the county. Whilst its agricultural resources are naturally good, Clearfield county has suffered a great deal from poor farming. The original fertility of the soil in many cases was exhausted, and lands being plenty and cheap, it was found to be more profitable to clear new fields than to bring back old ones to a proper state of cultivation, and thus in many Clearfield farms the eye is pained with the sight of large fields of abandoned soil, with scarce a blade of grass to hide the naked earth. It is only within the last few years that the subject of agriculture has received the attention in this county which its importance demands. Lumbering has always been the principal industry, a more attractive industry than farming, because it has been more profitable, and affords more variety in its pursuit; and in the early spring, or, in local parlance, in rafting time, the season most essential to the interest of the agriculturist, the farm was neglected for a "trip down the river." This neglect, with the consequent bad results, has been the authority for the familiar remark that the "soil is poor, and farming don't pay here." But the rapidity with which the pine forests are disappearing before the axe of the lumberman, and the early prospect of their complete exhaustion, and also the recent stagnation or rather prostration of the lumber interest throughout the State, has compelled many of the citizens to turn their attention to some other occupation as a means of subsistence and profit. This has given a strong impetus to the cause of agriculture, and of late there has been an uplifting of the business of farming from a condition where neither knowledge or skill were used to the higher plane it occupies elsewhere. Recent efforts have demonstrated not only the natural capacity of the soil, but what is an essential element to the prosperity of an agricultural people, its capability to produce an amount equal to and in excess of home consumption. Hitherto Clearfield exported lumber to bring back flour and grain, and thus was dependent upon her neighbors for her daily bread; but the day is not distant when her hills and valleys will blossom as the rose, through the efforts of the skilled husbandman, who has recognized



farming as a science and an art, and not a thing of chance, and whose return for his labors are proportioned to his advancement by careful study and experiment in the knowledge of his occupation.

Its pine trees have been the county's great source of wealth. Before the advent of the settler this county was a vast wilderness of pine and hemlock—plenteously intermingled with many varieties of hard wood, such as oak, maple, beech, birch, poplar, etc. To the early settler the value of the pine was unknown, because there had not yet been any markets established for that commodity on the river below, and on account of its bulk was most troublesome to dispose of in clearing up the land. Hence he was wont to take its life by girdling it with his axe, and leave it stand; and in different parts of the county can be seen many fields covered with those dead standing pines—mute monuments of man's wastefulness.

The first trade of the county was in bituminous coal. This was engaged in as early as 1810, and carried on for many years. The coal was loaded in arks, which were built to contain from one thousand two hundred to one thousand five hundred bushels; and when the freshets came these arks were run down the river to the larger towns, and the coal disposed of at prices ranging from twelve to twenty-five cents per bushel. The building of dams on the Susquehanna put an end to this trade, as the shuttes in these dams interfered with the success for navigation of these primitive vessels—the least mishap sending them and their cargoes to the bottom of the river.

It was not until the year 1837 that lumbering in square timber was carried on as a business, nor with any degree of success until about the year 1842, and the prices even then (four to six cents per cubic foot) would not be considered very remunerative now, when the same quality of timber brings in the market from fifteen to twenty cents per cubic foot. But the wants of the lumberman of those early days were few, his expenses small, and smaller profits satisfied him than would satisfy the operator now-a-days.

But with occasional reverses the business rapidly grew, until it has become one of the most important industries in the State. There are different processes by which the business of lumbering is carried on—one of the principal modes is by felling the trees generally during the fall and winter season, hewing them, *i. e.*, squaring them up on all sides with axes made for the purpose—hauling them on sleds to the river and larger creeks; and then when the freshets come in the spring, they are rolled into the stream and fastened together, generally enough sticks to make five to eight thousand cubic feet, with a semblance of regularity and neatness, by lash poles of hickory or white oak couplings. Large oars or sweeps are put at either end. When completed this is called a raft, and being provided with a crew of hands, in charge of a pilot, is started down the river to market. The current is the propelling power, and the oars are used to keep the craft from striking the shore or staying on the numerous rocks and obstructions in the channel. Mishap sometimes overtakes the unskillful navigator, and then the "trip" is attended with a great deal of hard work, and occasionally with risk to life and limb. The occupation of a raftsman has just enough of excitement and danger in it to make it attractive, and begun in boyhood is generally adhered to through life.



Another process was to "raft and run" the manufactured lumber. This branch of the business was carried on extensively for many years, and there were at one time, within the county, no less than four hundred saw mills—principally small water mills with an average capacity each of sawing one hundred thousand feet per annum. The establishment of large booms at Lock Haven and Williamsport has revolutionized this branch of the business, and board rafts on the West Branch are almost a thing of the past. These booms are located at points on the river where there are good facilities for shipping lumber by railroad and canal to the markets all over the country, and it was found more profitable to "drive" the loose logs from the heads of the stream into these booms, and manufacture them there, than to manufacture them at home and send the lumber in rafts to the uncertain markets on the river. The advent of railroads to Clearfield county within the last few years has been gradually working a second revolution in this business. Large steam saw mills are being erected along the lines of the new railroads, and if the pine forests would hold out, not many years would elapse before the most of her lumber would again be manufactured within the limits of the county.

To show the rapidity of the growth of this lumber trade and its importance now, it is estimated that during the year 1840 the amount of lumber rafts out of the county would not exceed one hundred and fifty rafts, or seven million five hundred thousand feet board measure. For the last twelve years, from 1862 to 1874, the amount inclusive of both the logging and square timber will equal two hundred and forty million feet annually. There has been, in addition, within the same period, an average annual shipment by railroad of twenty to forty million feet of manufactured lumber. A reasonable valuation on this lumber exhibits an annual trade to the county of over two millions of dollars. It also exhibits another fact, and a warnful one to the lumberman—that the end of this large white pine lumber trade is not far distant. These noble forests are fast disappearing before the axe of the woodman, and at the present rate of operating another decade of years will witness their entire exhaustion. What will Clearfield have to depend on when her pine trees are all gone? Where will her capital find investment, and her surplus labor employment? That question has been already answered. In addition to the steady development of her agricultural resources, since the year 1862, a new industry has been growing up which will in a brief period overshadow her lumber trade. Clearfield county lies in the centre of the largest bituminous coal basin in the State. An idea of its extent may be gathered from the following brief sketch made by one who has given the subject much attention.

The full depth of the coal strata is yet unknown, but there is no difficulty in tracing its lateral bearings in any direction. The numerous tracts of land extending to the head of the Moshannon, and those embracing the vast region between Moshannon creek and Tyrone and Clearfield railroad, cover a coal region of about one hundred square miles, which is only the undisturbed part of the coal territory lying in Centre county. Trout run, Bear run, and Wilson run course through this part of Centre county, and the ravines in which they flow afford splendid openings for striking the heavy coal beds that crop out along the hill-sides.





Westward of the Moshannon, the coal extends throughout the regions coursed by Beaver run, Whiteside run, Muddy run, Clearfield creek and its numerous tributaries, Chest creek, and Susquehanna river, embracing an area of nine hundred or one thousand miles. Following southward into Cambria county, the continuation of the coal region covers an additional area of about three hundred square miles; and if we take in Jefferson and Indiana counties we have a coal territory embracing the greater part of five counties, with Clearfield as the great central basin, the whole covering an area of about five thousand square miles.

In some places there are not less than twelve seams of coal, and these will average at least four feet in thickness. The vein worked in this region is six feet from top to bottom, while many other veins measure only three feet, but over on Clearfield creek, at the mouth of Beaver Dam branch, fifty feet below water level, a seam of coal was found, which measures fourteen feet in thickness, and there is no doubt this same body of coal underlies the whole extent of our coal territory.

Bennett's Branch extension of the Allegheny Valley railroad, or what is familiarly known as the low grade railroad, which was recently completed, passes through the northern and western ends of the county, and has opened up and brought into market the bituminous coal lands of the famous Reynoldsville basin.

The Tyrone and Clearfield railroad, a branch of the Pennsylvania, enters the county at its south-east corner, and is extended more than half way through it. This is the outlet for the coal of the Moshannon basin. From this main branch numerous smaller branches and lateral roads are building and extending every year, and penetrating this vast coal field in many different directions.

The first coal shipped from this region was from the Powelton colliery in the year 1862. Now there are in the Moshannon region twenty-five large collieries, employing over three thousand men, and with an aggregate daily capacity of twelve thousand tons. The total amount of coal now annually shipped from the county is not less than two millions of tons. This coal has become a great favorite in the eastern markets, and for steam generating purposes is preferred to other varieties of bituminous coal.

The coal trade of Clearfield county is only in the infancy of its development, yet its rapid growth in the short time of its existence, the many superior qualities of the coal, the extended area of its basin, warrant the prediction that it is destined to be, in the not far off future, the largest and most active bituminous coal trade in the world.

Fire clay is also among the valuable resources of Clearfield county. It abounds in great quantities all through this bituminous region. It has been subjected to the most severe tests, and found to be in all respects equal to the celebrated Scotch clay, or the Mount Savage clay of western Maryland. There are three large establishments in the county, one at Clearfield town, and the other two within five miles, at Woodland, with a total capacity of thirty thousand brick per day, engaged in the manufacture of fire brick, and also some forms of terra cotta ware. These brick have established for themselves a good reputation, not only among the iron men of Pennsylvania, but find a ready market as far west as Chicago and St. Louis.



Iron ore is also found in considerable quantity throughout the county, but not in veins of sufficient size or richness to attract capital from other localities, in a State that is so famous for the abundance and superiority of that precious metal. In 1814, Peter Karthaus, a native of Hamburg, Germany, but afterwards a resident merchant of Baltimore, a man of large means and energies, with great eccentricities of character, established a furnace at the mouth of the Little Moshannon or Mosquito creek, in the lower end of the county. It was a stupendous undertaking, and called forth more than the ordinary attributes of human sagacity and skill to build up iron works in an almost unbroken wilderness, so far from market, and with few facilities for transportation. But Karthaus possessed all these qualities, and made his works a partial success for several years. They afterwards, about the years 1833-6, passed into the hands of different owners, who carried them on until the year 1840, when they succumbed to the fluctuations of the times, the disadvantages of distance of market, and the cost of transporting their products. Within a few years a railroad has penetrated to a short distance from Karthaus, and projected branches into these lands have already been surveyed. Capital has found its way back after a long absence, and in a brief period of time the clank of the forge-hammer, and the busy hum of industry may soon again be heard where it has been silent for over a quarter of a century.

The territory now included in the limits of Clearfield county was, until the close of the last century, an unbroken and almost unexplored wilderness, visited only by venturesome hunter and the surveyor. It was the undisturbed habitation of the bear, the wolf, the panther, the moose, and the deer.

The colonial struggles for liberty had been over many years, our nationality had been achieved, and America had a place in the family of nations, and her people had gradually settled down to the arts of peace long before the white man had penetrated these wilds to build himself a home, and therefore the early settlement of this county was not attended with those stirring scenes and tragic incidents of border warfare which marked the early history of the white settlement in the valleys of the lower West Branch. The Indian was still here, but he had already succumbed to his inevitable destiny, and was peacefully receding before the onward march of civilization. Although their slumbers were not broken by the war whoop of the savage, nor their families live in hourly dread of his tomahawk and scalping-knife, yet these hardy pioneers exhibited the same stern and unbending heroism in strifes where no world could look in upon and applaud, in unceasing daily toil, a courage and self-devotion in hand-to-hand struggle with hardship and want as would have made them heroes on fields of war. With few exceptions, they have long since passed away; but many of them lived long enough to reap some reward for their early trials and sufferings in the enjoyment of the local honors of their fellows, and the material comforts of life which their labors had gathered around them. Ogden, Leonard, Bell, Reed, Kyler, Bloom, McCracken, Ferguson, Fulton, Irwin, are historic names in the annals of Clearfield county, and although the achievements and fame of these pioneer settlers may not have crossed the mountains which surround their former homes, and the story of their lives go unrecited to the world outside, family tradition will long preserve the record of their ancestral deeds.



CLEARFIELD, the county seat, was laid out in 1805 by the commissioners appointed by the Governor to make selection of a site for a county seat for Clearfield county. It was incorporated into a borough by an act of the Legislature, approved 21st April, 1840. Its location is one of great natural beauty, on the bank of the river, and embosomed in an amphitheatre formed by surrounding hills, from whose summits a fine panoramic view can be had of the town and the narrow valley which borders the river for several miles. It is located on the site of the old Indian town of Chinklacamoose, and the openings or clearings made by the Indians, which the first settlers found upon their arrival here, gave the name of Clearfield to the town and county. The town derives its importance from its connexion with the lumber trade of the county, it being the residence of many of those who were the pioneers of the timber business, and are still prominently engaged in that pursuit. Its public buildings, the court house and jail, are both new structures, modern in their styles of architecture, and of a size and capacity to meet the growing wants of the county for many years to come. It contains six churches—Presbyterian, Methodist, Catholic, Episcopal, Baptist, and Lutheran. The two first named are fine large edifices, models of architectural skill, and a credit to the enterprise and liberality of the community that erected them. It contains one of the finest public school buildings in the central part of the State, the result of the munificence of one of its citizens, Judge James T. Leonard, who donated the ground and erected and furnished the building at an expense of not less than twenty-five thousand dollars. Judge Leonard is the oldest inhabitant of the town, and one of a few still living of the early settlers of the county, having come here with his father in 1803, when he was only three years old. He endured all the privations and hardships incident to the life of a pioneer in the wilderness, when the means of subsistence were only obtained by unceasing toil. By his never-failing industry and prudent management, he has made his life a success, and for many years has been at the head of the business of the county.

The present population of Clearfield is something over two thousand. The Tyrone and Clearfield railway passes through the town. It presents an appearance of neatness and comfort in its wide and finely shaded streets, its numerous spacious and tasty homes, and its business and manufacturing establishments, all indicative of the enterprise and thrift of its citizens.

CURWENSVILLE, named after John Curwen, of Montgomery county, upon whose land the town was laid out. It was made a borough by an act of the Legislature, approved 3d February, 1832. It is pleasantly situated on high rolling ground, near the confluence of Anderson creek with the West Branch of the Susquehanna. It is noted for its many handsome private residences, its numerous business establishments, and the enterprise and public spirit of its citizens. Curwensville is the present terminus of the Tyrone and Clearfield railway. Since the advent of the railroad the town has been making marked strides in the increase of population and growth of its trade. It has many natural advantages in its location. Surrounded by a large and prosperous agricultural district, and possessed of ample water power for manufacturing purposes in its adjoining stream, these, with the business activity and spirit of improvement which animate her people, warrant the belief that the town will never stand still.



OSCEOLA was laid out by a company of capitalists from Centre county, in the year 1859. It was located in the centre of a vast pine and hemlock forest, all of which covered immense deposits of bituminous coal. The Tyrone and Clearfield railroad was completed to this point in 1862, and since that time the growth of the town has been rapid and substantial. Thirteen large lumber manufactories were erected and in operation in and about the town within a circuit of a few miles, the largest of which was that of the Moshannon land and lumber company, with a capacity of sawing seventy-five thousand feet of lumber per day, and in its arrangements and improvements one of the finest mills in the United States. The development of the coal trade, soon after the arrival of the railroad, gave additional impetus to the town, and caused its rapid expansion. The Moshannon Branch railroad, projected in 1864, which penetrates the coal basin in different directions, connects with the parent road at this point. The town was made into a borough in 1864. In 1875 its population had increased to two thousand. Many tasteful and costly dwellings and large and substantial business houses had been erected. The valuable resources of this region had attracted capital from all parts of the country. Its future was bright and promising until the 20th May, 1875, when the town was almost entirely destroyed by fire. Fifteen hundred people were made homeless, and the result of years of toil and industry was swept out of existence in a few brief hours. Discouraging as the prospect was, the pluck and enterprise of the citizens soon came to the surface, and while still a smoking ruin, the scene of the conflagration was dotted over with the rude shanties and tents of those determined to commence the battle of life anew. Not a year has elapsed since the fire, and although it has been a year of unusual depression of the industries in which her people are largely engaged, Osceola has come up phoenix-like from its ashes. The din of the hammer and saw has been unceasing day and night. More than two hundred buildings have been erected in that short time. Scarce a vestige of the great fire remains, and the scenes and the incidents of that day already belong to the historic past.

HOUTZDALE was laid out in the year 1870 by G. N. Brisbin, on land of Dr. Houtz. It is located six miles west of Osceola, on the Moshannon Branch railroad. It was incorporated into a borough in 1871, and has a present population in the town and neighborhood of three thousand. Houtzdale is like some of those famous western towns that spring into existence already incorporated, and spread out faster than the woodman can fell the forest in advance of them. It is an outgrowth of the coal development of this region; is surrounded on all sides by collieries, which secures a large trade and business activity to the town. Although one of the youngest towns in the county, it is rapidly coming to the front in size and importance.

NEW WASHINGTON is a thriving little town, situate in the southern part of the county, and was incorporated by the Legislature on the 13th of April, 1859. It is in the midst of a rich agricultural region, and only needs the advent of a railroad to rouse its latent energies.

LUMBER CITY is situated on the river, six miles above Curwensville, and derives its name from its connection with the lumber trade of the county. It was made a borough in 1857. It is a busy place in the spring of the year, during the freshets in the river, being the head of navigation for full-length rafts.





WALLAETON was laid out in 1868, and incorporated in 1873. Its population is about two hundred. It is on the line of the Tyrone and Clearfield railway. Is the seat of a large steam saw mill, and is a point of shipment for considerable manufactured lumber, railroad ties, etc.

BURNSIDE borough was incorporated in the year 1874. It is in the extreme south-western part of the county. Is located on the bank of the river, and her citizens are largely interested in lumbering. It is an enterprising town, and is in the full tide of expectancy for a railroad outlet for her valuable material resources.

FRENCHVILLE, in Covington township, is a large and flourishing French settlement, which was commenced in 1832. It is composed of over two hundred industrious and thrifty families. Its pioneers were from Normandy and Picardy, and the location of a French colony in the then wilderness of the Upper Susquehanna was brought about by the failure of a Philadelphia banker having a large indebtedness in France. M. Zavron, a wealthy French creditor, got possession of these lands, and through the assistance of John Keating, his agent, established a colony of his countrymen.

GLEN HOPE, in Beccaria township, is an enterprising town, situate on the head-waters of Clearfield creek. It is within the limits of the Clearfield bituminous coal basin, and is on the line of proposed railroad extensions.

GRAHAMTON, in Graham township, both named in honor of Hon. James B. Graham, the largest landholder in the township, and for many years a resident therein. Mr. Graham came to the county in 1822. He commenced life without any means, but possessed of a willing heart and an energy that could master any difficulty, he has, by a life of well directed industry, secured not only competency, but the respect and esteem of his fellows, and his name is always found at the head of every enterprise, public and charitable.

GRAMPION HILLS, in Penn township, includes one of the oldest and most productive farming districts in the county. It was first settled about the year 1805, and the name was given to it by Dr. Samuel Coleman, one of the early settlers, a man of ability, but eccentric in his habits, on account of the resemblance to the celebrated hills of his native country. This region was settled principally by Quakers, and is noted for its many finely cultivated farms, and the intelligence and general prosperity of the farmers.

KYLERTOWN, in Morris township, is yet a small town, but has a promising future, because of its close proximity to large coal operations, and on the line of projected railways.

LUTHERSBURG, in Brady township, is situate in the centre of the finest agricultural district in the county. The settlers in the township are principally Germans, noted for their industry and thrift. The town has always been a good business point, but new railroad towns in the vicinity have of late diverted some of its trade.

PENNFIELD, in Huston township, is a new and thriving railroad town, on the line of Bennett's Branch of the Allegheny Valley railroad, and growing rapidly.

RUMBERGER, in Brady township, on the line of the Bennett's Branch Extension railroad, although a town of few years' existence, is fast increasing in size and importance. It is within the Reynoldsville coal basin, and several collieries



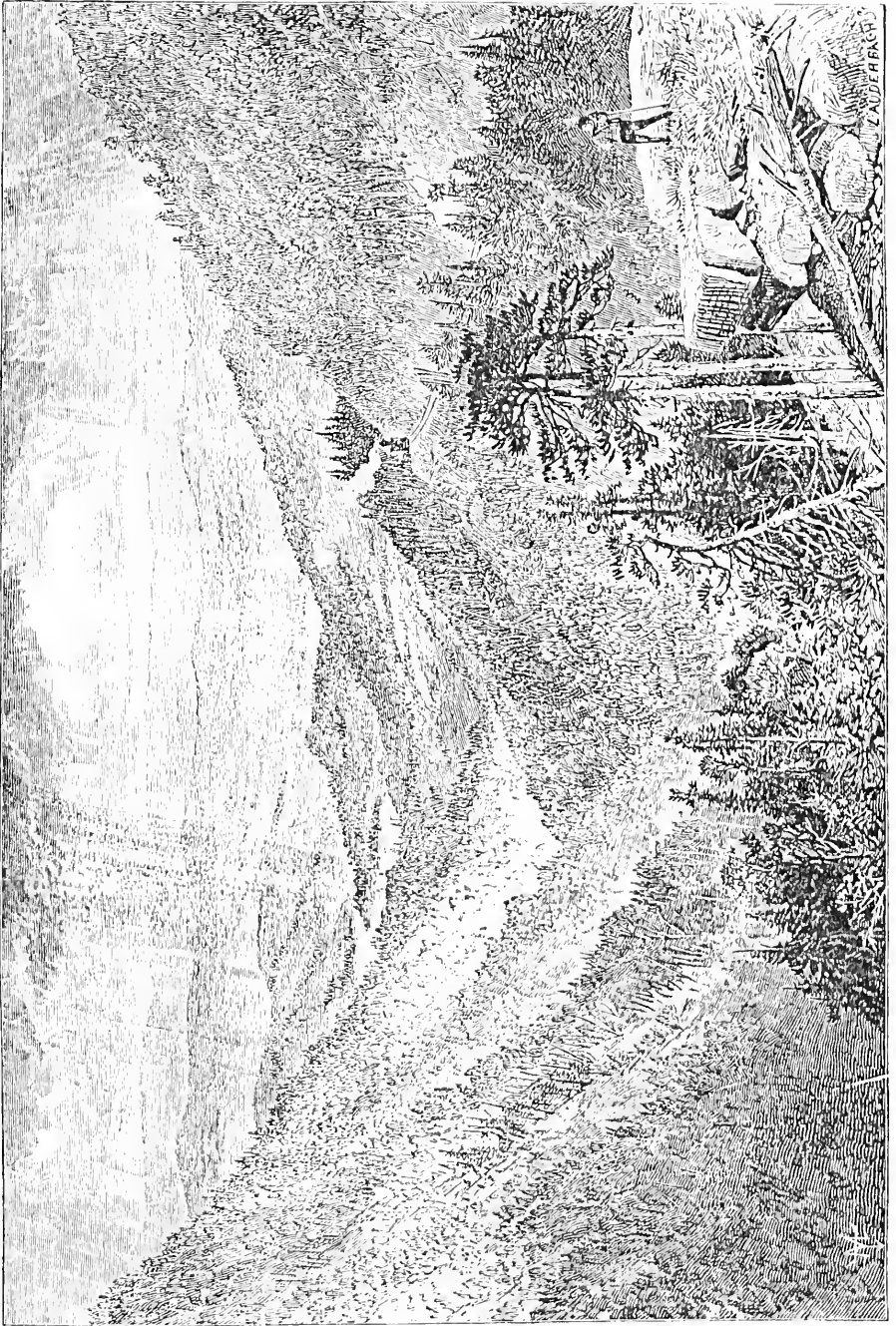
are in operation around it. It is also the location of one of the largest saw mills in the United States.

WOODLAND, in Bradford township, six miles east of Clearfield, on the line of the Tyrone and Clearfield railroad, is the seat of two large fire brick manufactories and a steam saw mill, and under the influence of these industries is improving rapidly.

PENNSYLVANIA STATISTICS—CENSUS OF 1870.

MANUFACTURING INDUSTRY.				IMPROVED AND UNIMPROVED LANDS.			
	Number of establishments.	Annual value of manufactures in each county in 1870.	Estimated value of manufactures for 1871, being 30 per cent. in excess of the commissions and in-crease in five years.		Acres of improved land.	Acres of unimproved land.	Present value of Farms.
Adams.....	562	\$1,415,126 00	\$2,122,680 00	Adams.....	211,516	58,790	\$4,611,060
Allegheny.....	1,814	88,789,414 00	133,184,121 00	Allegheny.....	292,659	56,570	56,448,818
Armstrong.....	276	4,337,357 00	6,506,635 00	Armstrong.....	230,915	126,155	13,081,426
Beaver.....	500	4,021,083 00	6,036,124 00	Beaver.....	170,561	71,974	14,198,713
Bedford.....	369	1,557,024 00	2,380,536 00	Bedford.....	197,250	231,527	9,435,119
Berks.....	440	16,243,433 00	24,365,179 00	Berks.....	374,500	97,448	43,638,414
Blair.....	441	6,428,398 00	9,642,539 00	Blair.....	38,253	52,590	8,098,146
Bucks.....	739	4,732,413 00	7,098,177 00	Bradford.....	306,551	226,464	25,158,245
Butler.....	357	1,330,032 00	1,995,648 00	Bucks.....	315,833	48,786	40,289,213
Cambria.....	373	8,611,813 00	12,902,719 00	Butler.....	273,156	157,884	18,230,848
Cameron.....	41	8,836,810 00	1,345,215 00	Cambria.....	33,458	136,457	8,854,076
Carbon.....	161	2,355,783 00	3,433,674 00	Carbon.....	25,782	62,672	1,302,188
Centre.....	362	3,047,674 00	4,571,511 00	Centre.....	152,235	34,620	11,814,210
Chester.....	996	11,414,513 00	17,241,814 00	Chester.....	374,759	68,154	46,737,688
Clarion.....	279	1,355,569 00	2,033,239 00	Clarion.....	161,737	7,784,127	7,884,127
Clearfield.....	245	1,169,406 00	1,664,167 00	Clinton.....	116,218	156,953	3,561,360
Clinton.....	238	3,416,736 00	5,095,739 00	Clinton.....	54,832	72,519	4,797,040
Columbia.....	258	2,716,249 00	4,059,435 00	Columbia.....	136,719	68,445	9,015,400
Crawford.....	743	10,157,099 00	15,235,513 00	Crawford.....	328,555	107,685	21,906,691
Cumberland.....	449	3,214,032 00	4,874,518 00	Cumberland.....	229,754	40,758	19,056,433
Dauphin.....	557	13,514,156 00	20,271,234 00	Dauphin.....	172,583	61,239	11,614,014
Delaware.....	314	11,011,651 00	16,524,181 00	Delaware.....	87,438	11,816	19,288,727
Elk.....	461	1,734,362 00	2,486,588 00	Elk.....	16,124	28,739	1,049,829
Franklin.....	928	9,607,467 00	1,046,380 00	Franklin.....	279,863	131,889	23,361,617
Fayette.....	492	3,527,404 00	5,291,166 00	Fayette.....	235,064	143,668	18,259,368
Forest.....	37	393,191 00	590,786 00	Forest.....	10,890	37,236	1,039,399
Franklin.....	529	3,621,349 00	5,432,623 00	Franklin.....	292,517	7,763	2,924,174
Fulton.....	65	513,133 00	768,619 00	Fulton.....	86,995	117,902	2,565,042
Greene.....	162	573,650 00	850,575 00	Greene.....	220,594	107,748	15,364,374
Huntingdon.....	321	2,319,152 00	3,478,728 00	Huntingdon.....	168,818	186,076	9,416,678
Indiana.....	473	1,793,480 00	2,690,112 00	Indiana.....	256,023	172,161	12,913,000
Jefferson.....	212	1,238,613 00	1,857,919 00	Jefferson.....	110,220	185,722	5,362,823
Juniata.....	201	678,343 00	1,017,722 00	Juniata.....	36,709	66,576	6,334,175
Lancaster.....	1,616	11,924,181 00	17,614,250 00	Lancaster.....	462,883	76,858	70,724,908
Lawrence.....	491	3,149,700 00	4,593,550 00	Lawrence.....	143,549	59,665	11,614,014
Lebanon.....	484	4,169,084 00	6,240,126 00	Lebanon.....	139,431	43,883	19,016,838
Lehigh.....	694	15,439,818 00	23,221,272 00	Lehigh.....	181,697	39,217	23,553,476
Luzerne.....	886	17,493,464 00	26,239,694 00	Luzerne.....	194,115	174,281	11,965,724
Mechanic.....	81	9,681,406 00	13,922,109 00	Mechanic.....	163,892	143,291	11,212,366
Lycoming.....	458	3,583,981 00	5,388,676 00	Lycoming.....	188,216	50,689	2,466,250
McKean.....	458	6,514,277 00	9,816,415 00	McKean.....	260,109	129,656	22,018,290
Mercer.....	134	1,106,985 00	2,425,477 00	Mercer.....	67,657	60,763	3,133,277
Millheim.....	254	2,212,579 00	3,348,808 00	Millheim.....	85,663	110,341	4,151,411
Montgomery.....	1,039	16,973,237 00	23,992,354 00	Montgomery.....	236,969	37,509	40,962,059
Montour.....	628	4,839,835 00	7,256,103 00	Montour.....	54,182	16,483	4,616,655
Northampton.....	458	12,576,650 00	18,736,251 00	Northampton.....	170,032	15,401	20,961,169
Northumberland.....	424	4,297,855 00	6,311,282 00	Northumberland.....	147,129	46,452	12,190,987
Perry.....	222	2,412,626 00	3,618,939 00	Perry.....	136,899	126,235	8,779,895
Philadelphia.....	8,184	322,041,517 00	483,067,775 00	Philadelphia.....	37,518	1,015	1,214,040
Pike.....	67	692,303 00	1,038,489 00	Pike.....	27,393	88,459	2,214,235
Potter.....	41	299,734 00	374,386 00	Potter.....	56,307	111,727	2,642,318
Potter.....	64	9,596,114 00	14,379,471 00	Schuykill.....	109,135	75,316	8,644,655
Snyder.....	496	1,200,671 00	1,861,006 00	Snyder.....	92,559	45,343	5,769,473
Somerset.....	98	591,419 00	887,173 00	Somerset.....	248,515	254,412	12,043,715
Sullivan.....	83	399,872 00	595,315 00	Sullivan.....	36,689	64,633	1,678,109
Susquehanna.....	376	3,257,611 00	4,865,281 00	Susquehanna.....	299,397	150,016	16,767,011
Tioga.....	282	1,190,522 00	1,766,278 00	Tioga.....	187,305	166,798	10,923,925
Tioga.....	106	1,288,692 00	1,933,038 00	Union.....	70,732	19,675	3,910,377
Venango.....	278	4,516,566 00	6,774,849 00	Venango.....	122,874	68,310	7,211,046
Warren.....	450	2,221,768 00	3,327,152 00	Warren.....	82,792	17,578	4,965,674
Washington.....	492	3,037,411 00	4,571,112 00	Washington.....	100,813	114,064	39,048,066
Wayne.....	291	3,714,673 00	5,571,112 00	Wayne.....	100,718	290,880	8,816,229
Westmoreland.....	390	1,062,487 00	1,588,739 00	Westmoreland.....	312,083	114,014	28,216,826
Wyoming.....	194	1,493,831 00	1,529,746 00	Wyoming.....	87,953	72,212	6,633,160
York.....	1,111	7,628,931 00	10,543,494 00	York.....	411,341	133,181	36,568,494
.....	.....	711,891,234 00	1,067,841,351 00	.....	11,515,965	6,478,235	1,043,451,382





EMIGH'S GAP, ON THE TYRONI AND CLIFFIELD RAILROAD.



# CLINTON COUNTY.

BY D. S. MAYNARD, LOCK HAVEN.



PREVIOUS to March 11, 1752, the territory embraced within the present limits of Clinton county was a portion of Chester, one of the three original counties into which the Province of Pennsylvania was divided by William Penn; but on that date Berks county was formed, taking that part of Chester which contained what is now Clinton. By act of March 21, 1772, Northumberland county was taken, in part, from Berks, including the present Clinton. When Lycoming county was cut off from Northumberland in 1795, it also comprised all the area now in Clinton, a portion of which was taken in the formation of Centre in 1800. Therefore, when Clinton was organized by the act of 1839, it took portions of Centre and Lycoming. The townships of Bald Eagle, Lamar, and Logan were stricken from Centre, the others from Lycoming. The first section of the act organizing the county is as follows:

“That all those parts of the counties of Lycoming and Centre, and lying within the following boundaries, viz., beginning at Pine creek, where the north line of Lycoming county crosses said creek; thence a straight line to the house of William Herrod; thence following the Condersport and Jersey Shore turnpike, the several courses and distances thereof, to the middle of Pine creek; thence down the said creek, the several courses thereof, to its junction with the West Branch of the river Susquehanna; thence a straight line to the north-east corner of Centre county; thence to include Logan, Lamar, and Bald Eagle townships, in Centre county; thence along the Lycoming county line to the south-west corner of said county; thence by the lines of Clearfield, McKean, Potter,



CLINTON COUNTY COURT HOUSE, LOCK HAVEN.

[From a Photograph by D. Malloy, Lock Haven.]





and Tioga counties to the place of beginning; and the same is hereby created into a separate county, to be called 'CLINTON,' the seat of justice to be fixed by commissioners hereinafter appointed."

Clinton county, as well as Lock Haven, the county seat, owes its origin to the indefatigable exertions of an exceedingly eccentric individual, the irrepressible and indomitable Jerry Church, a "York State Yankee," whose name (if not face) was once familiar to every citizen of the county. The efforts made by this man to organize the county were strenuously opposed by leading citizens of both Centre and Lycoming counties. In a unique and amusing book called "Travels of Jerry Church," published in 1845, that worthy gives his own account of the organization of the county as follows:

"I now undertook to divide the counties of Lycoming and Centre, and make a new county to be called Clinton. I had petitions printed to that effect, and sent them to Harrisburg, to have them presented to the Legislature, and then went down myself to have the matter represented in good order. My friend John Gamble was our member from Lycoming at that time, and he reported a bill. The people of the town of Williamsport, the county seat of Lycoming, and Bellefonte, the county seat of Centre county, then had to be up and be doing something to prevent the division; and they commenced pouring in their remonstrances, and praying aloud to the Legislature not to have any part of either county taken off for the purpose of making a new one, for it was nothing more or less than some of Jerry Church's Yankee notions. However, I did not despair. I still kept asking every year, for three successive years, and attended the Legislature myself every winter. I then had a gentleman who had become a citizen of the town of Lock Haven, by the name of John Moorhead, who harped in with me—a very large, portly looking man, and rather the best borer in town; and, by the bye, a very clever man. We entered into the division together. We had to state a great number of facts to the members of the Legislature, and perhaps something more, in order to obtain full justice. We continued on for nearly three years longer, knocking at the mercy-seat, and at last we received the law creating the county of Clinton. In the year 1839, the county was organized by the Hon. Judge Burnside."

"Eagle" was the name originally selected for the new county, but after several unsuccessful attempts to get the required legislation, that name was dropped and "Clinton" substituted as a *ruse*, intended to mislead the opponents of the new county movement. As the opposition in the Legislature had been so long and vigorously made against the forming of *Eagle* county, when that name, which had become familiar to every member, ceased to be presented, and *Clinton* appeared, the required act was passed, before many of the legislators knew that the name belonged to the same territory they had been voting against for several successive winters.

Immediately after the county was organized, three commissioners, Colonel Cresswell, Major Colt, and Joseph Brestel were appointed to locate the county seat. After viewing and considering various locations, Lock Haven was chosen as the most desirable and appropriate place. Accordingly a site was selected for the public buildings near what is now the lower end, at that time the centre of the town plot, three squares from the river; and sufficient land for the purpose



donated by Jerry Church. Soon after, the building of the court house was commenced by John Moorhead, Robert Irwin, and George Hower, and completed in 1842, at a cost of twelve thousand dollars. In the meantime the courts were held, and other business of the county transacted in the public house of W. W. Barker, a portion of which was rented for "county purposes." Barker's tavern, as it was called, was located upon Water street, a short distance below the present court house, on the lot now occupied by the residence of John Quigley, Esq.

Clinton county is located near the centre of the State, and is bounded as follows: on the south by Centre, the central county of the State; on the west by Clearfield and Cameron; on the north by Potter and Lycoming; and on the east by Lycoming and Union. The county was originally divided into twelve townships: Allison, Bald Eagle, Chapman, Colebrook, Dunstable, Grove, Lumber, Limestone, Lamar, Logan, Pine Creek, and Wayne. The subsequent formation of several new townships, among others, Grugan from Chapman and Colebrook, in 1855; and Keating from Grove, in 1860; and the taking of Lumber and the balance of Grove in the formation of Cameron county; the organization of Noyes from Chapman, in 1875; the division of Keating into East Keating and West Keating, the same year, and the absorbing of Allison by Lock Haven city and Lamar township, in 1870, makes the entire number of townships in the county at the present time nineteen, as follows: Bald Eagle, Beech Creek, Chapman, Colebrook, Crawford, Dunstable, Gallauher, Greene, Grugan, East and West Keating, Lamar, Leidy, Logan, Noyes, Pine Creek, Porter, Wayne, and Woodward.

This county is of irregular shape, being nearly sixty miles long and twenty wide, and contains nearly one thousand square miles. Its surface is varied by mountains, hills, and valleys, which were at one time entirely covered with a heavy growth of timber, consisting mainly of pine and oak, interspersed with chestnut, walnut, hemlock, maple, ash, hickory, etc.

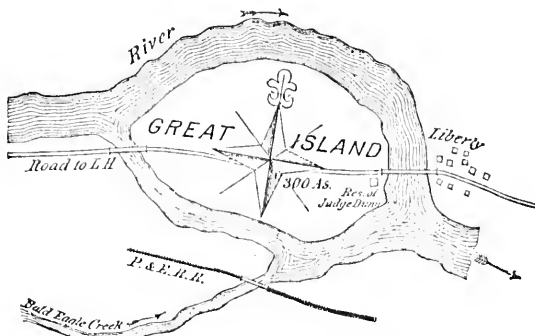
There are several beautiful and highly productive valleys within the limits of the county, the most important being the West Branch, the northern terminus of which is just above Lock Haven; the Bald Eagle, through which the Bald Eagle creek finds its way to the river; Sugar, lying parallel with and near to the line of Centre county, and Nittany, which lies between the Bald Eagle and Sugar valleys, and might truthfully be called the garden of Clinton county.

The principal stream in the county is the West Branch of the Susquehanna, which flows nearly the entire length of its territory, a distance of over fifty miles, and at the lower end "breaks through the Allegheny mountain, which at this point seems to lose much of its loftiness, as if in courtesy to the beautiful stream." The Indian name of this stream was Otzinnachon.

In flowing through the county the West Branch takes a south-easterly course; in passing Lock Haven, however, it runs almost due east. The other streams are the Sinnemahoning creek, which takes its rise in Potter county, and empties into the West Branch at Keating station; Kettle creek and Young-woman's creek, both of which also rise in Potter and join the river, the former at Westport, the latter at North Point; Pine creek, which also originates in Potter, and after flowing through Tioga and Lycoming, forms the boundary for a short



distance between the latter and Clinton, and reaches the river at the point where it enters Lycoming; then the Bald Eagle, which flows from Centre county and unites with the river just below Lock Haven; Beech creek, also originating in Centre, flows into the Bald Eagle at Beech Creek borough; Fishing creek, having its source in the extreme eastern end of Sugar valley, near a point where the corners of Clinton, Centre, Lycoming, and Union counties meet, flows the entire length of said valley, breaking through the mountain at the western end,



MAP OF THE GREAT OR BIG ISLAND.

thence into Nittany valley, losing itself in the waters of Bald Eagle creek, at Mill Hall.

The principal mountain in the county having a name and distinctive features, is the Bald Eagle or Muncy mountain, which extends diagonally across the entire width of the county. This mountain is the continuation of a range which, in almost a straight line, runs

from Blair county in a north-easterly direction along the Bald Eagle creek, to the West Branch of the Susquehanna. It takes its name from the noted Indian chief Bald Eagle, who long years ago roamed in its fastnesses.

The first important public improvement made in Clinton county was the West Branch canal, which was completed to Lock Haven in 1834, and the Bald Eagle branch extended to Bellefonte in 1846. This great enterprise did away with keel-boat navigation. After its construction the canal became the great thoroughfare, not only for freight, but passengers as well, who considered themselves highly favored when they had the privilege of riding in a packet boat drawn by horses or mules, at the rate of five or six miles per hour.

When the Sunbury and Erie railroad (now Philadelphia and Erie) was completed to Lock Haven, in 1859, a great impetus was given to all branches of industry in the county. It was the beginning of a new era in the march of enterprise. It greatly enhanced the value of real estate, the price of which has been steadily advancing ever since. On the opening of the Bald Eagle Valley railroad, in 1864, a new impetus was given to the growth and prosperity of the county, especially that portion lying along the Bald Eagle creek.

Very few realize the extent to which the manufacture of lumber has been carried on in this county during the past twenty years. It is estimated that the average per year since 1860 has been one hundred million feet, making an aggregate of over fifteen hundred millions up to the present time, the value of which was not far from twenty-six million six hundred thousand dollars. The cost of cutting and manufacturing this has been not less than eleven dollars per thousand, amounting in the aggregate to the sum of fifteen million four hundred thousand dollars. Besides the lumber estimated, there has been great quantities of lath, pickets, and shingles manufactured. In addition to the vast amount



manufactured in the county, the value of the logs and square timber cut and run down the river to various points has been as much more. This immense business has given employment to several thousand men each year.

The mineral wealth of this county consists of coal, iron ore, fire-clay, potter's clay, and an abundance of sand, suitable for the manufacture of glass; also an inexhaustible supply of limestone, all of which exist, to some extent, in nearly every township. The north-western portion of the county is especially rich in mineral deposits. It lies within the limits of the Clearfield coal basin, and contains bituminous seams, belonging to that region, aggregating a thickness of not less than thirty feet. The quality of this coal, as is well known, is superior. In various other parts of the county, coal, for many years, has been known to exist, and for more than forty years has been more or less extensively mined, principally on Lick and Queen's [Quinn's] runs, and Tangascootac creek.

Iron ore (mainly hematite) is quite plentifully distributed throughout the county. It has been found of various degrees of purity, yielding from fifteen or twenty per cent. to seventy-five or eighty of metallic iron through the furnace. The manufacture of iron from native ore has been to some extent engaged in during the past thirty years; even as long ago as 1829 a man by the name of Friedley erected a furnace near the east end of Sugar valley, where there was plenty of ore of a good quality, but owing to the want of capital he suspended operations in a few years, after having made large quantities of good iron. A furnace was constructed, and iron also manufactured at Farrandville, near the mouth of Lick run, in 1832 or 1833, but the works were allowed to go to ruin. About the same time Washington furnace, on Fishing creek, about eight miles from its mouth, was built, and has been in operation most of the time since. The ore used at this furnace is of the variety known as "pipe," and obtained in the immediate vicinity. The iron produced is of a very fine quality, being especially adapted to the manufacture of boiler plates, etc. In 1831 George Bressler, in company with Messrs. Harvey, Wilson, and Kinney, erected a furnace at Mill Hall, near the mouth of Fishing creek. The ore was procured from the Bald Eagle mountain, near at hand. The undertaking proved unsuccessful, and after passing through a number of different hands, the works were abandoned.

The manufacture of fire brick has been an important branch of industry in this county for many years, extensive works having been constructed at Queen's [Quinn's] run and Farrandville. Only the ones at the latter place are now in operation. The material, both clay and coal for fuel, is obtained near by. Extensive beds of potter's clay have recently been found on the north side of the West Branch, nearly opposite Lock Haven. This clay has been thoroughly tested, and found to be of superior quality for the manufacture of stoneware, and is now being used for that purpose at an establishment in operation at Lock Haven.

Lime of a good quality has for some time been manufactured in this county and shipped to other points at a distance. Marble of different degrees of fineness and various hues exists on Fishing creek, in Sugar valley, and also in Nittany valley, but as yet no extensive effort has been made to ascertain its extent and real value.

As compared with other sections of the State, it cannot be claimed that





Clinton is an agricultural county. In directing their attention to the lumber interests, the citizens of this region have unfortunately lost sight of the fact that *beneath* the surface of the "broad acres" of Clinton there is more wealth than ever existed upon it. As a general thing the soil of the county, both on the highlands and in its valleys, is sandy, and, to a great or less extent, intermixed with loam, this being especially the case along the streams. Probably there is not a single acre of mountain land in the upper West Branch region, that is not more or less strewn with sandstone, and the soil composed to a considerable degree of sand, as a result of disintegration; yet this land is nearly all susceptible of a high state of cultivation, as has been demonstrated by occasional clearings, some of which are at a height of more than a thousand feet above the West Branch, and produce fine crops of wheat, oats, corn, buckwheat, and hay. Of such lands, now in market at from five to ten dollars per acre, there are many thousand acres in the county.

The first actual settlement within the present limits of Clinton county was made previous to 1769, of which Meginness, in his "History of the West Branch Valley," speaks as follows: "The earliest settlement, of which I have any account, that was made up the river on the south side was by a man named Clarey Campbell, from Juniata. His cabin stood on the river, in the upper part of Lock Haven. In 1776 a trial took place between him and William Glass, who claimed his land. Charles Lukens, deputy surveyor, of Berks county, being a witness, testified as follows: 'When I went up in March, 1769, to make the officer's surveys, I found Clarey Campbell living on this land with his family.'"

The other principal early settlers of the region were John McCormick, John Fleming, William Reed, Colonel Cooksey Long, and John Myers, who all settled near the site of Lock Haven; and Alexander and Robert Hamilton, William McElhatton, and the Proctors and Bairds, who located a few miles further down the river; and William Dunn, the original owner and settler of the Great Island, which lies about two miles below Lock Haven. These persons mostly came from the lower counties of the State, and were principally, if not all, of Scotch or Irish descent, and possessed intelligence and energy. At the time they located on the West Branch, which was between the years 1768 and 1785, the country all around was a dense wilderness, and, as may be supposed, infested with wild beasts and wilder Indians. A favorite route taken by predatory bands of red-skins in their descent upon the frontier settlements lay along the Sinnemaoning creek and the Susquehanna river, and during the early days of the settlement, on many occasions, the hardy "squatters" were aroused from their midnight slumbers and forced to fly to their arms in defence of their homes, oftimes being compelled to leave them to be plundered and destroyed by the merciless savages.

One of the most important events of pioneer life in the West Branch Valley was what is known as "the big runaway," which occurred in June, 1778. At that time "Reed's Fort," located where Lock Haven now stands, was garrisoned by a "fearless few," under command of Colonel Long. It is said that William Reed and his five sons constituted one-third of the fighting strength of the fort, and that the Reeds and Flemings were a majority of the whole number. During the year 1777, the Indians became very troublesome, and killed a



number of the settlers. From various indications it was evident that a general invasion of the white settlements was imminent, and accordingly, preparations were made to repel any attack that might be made. Considering the scarcity of fire-arms and military equipments generally, and the thinly settled condition of the country, it is a wonder that the inhabitants entertained the least hope of successfully opposing a horde of blood-thirsty savages; but strange as it may appear, a number of the settlers, among them the Flemings, held out to the last against abandoning the fort. Early in 1778, a lone Indian appeared on the bank of the river opposite the fort. He made various signs for some one to come with a canoe and take him over. The occupants of the fort being suspicious that his object was to entice some of the whites across the river for the purpose of betraying them into the hands of confederates who might be concealed near at hand, hesitated to comply with his request, still he insisted, and waded some distance out into the stream, to show that his intentions were honorable. It has been said that at this juncture Mrs. Reed, wife of William Reed, "seeing that none of the men would venture, jumped into a canoe, crossed over alone and brought him with safety" to the fort. It is now stated, on the best authority, that it was not Mrs. Reed who took the Indian over, but a son of Job Chillaway, a friendly Indian, who, with his family, was at the time under the protection of the garrison. On being taken into the fort, the strange Indian proved to be friendly, and had come a great many miles to warn the settlers of the approach of a large and powerful band of warriors, who were "preparing to make a descent upon the valley, for the purpose of exterminating the settlements. Being very much fatigued after his long journey, and feeling perfectly secure in the hands of those to whom he had just rendered such important service, the Indian laid down to rest, and soon fell asleep."

In giving an account of this occurrence, Meginess says: "A number of men about the fort were shooting at a mark, amongst whom was one who was slightly intoxicated. Loading his rifle, he observed to some of them that he would make the bullet he was putting in kill an Indian. Little attention was paid to the remark at the time. He made good his word, however; instead of shooting at the mark, he fired at the sleeping Indian, and shot him dead. A baser act of ingratitude cannot well be conceived. The murder was unprovoked and cowardly, and rendered doubly worse, from the fact that the Indian had traveled many miles to inform them of their danger. The garrison were so exasperated at this inhuman and ungrateful act, that they threatened to lynch him on the spot; when, becoming alarmed, he fled, and was suffered to escape."

Immediately after being apprised of their danger, a "council of war" was held by the garrison, when it was decided to evacuate the fort, and with all the inhabitants of the neighborhood go to Fort Augusta (now Sunbury) for protection. Accordingly preparations were made to depart; live stock, and supplies generally, were placed upon rafts hastily constructed from whatever available material could be obtained. Many articles, such as household utensils, etc., that were considered too cumbersome to take along, and too valuable to lose, were hidden with the hope of getting them again when peace should be restored. Among other things that were thus secreted was a stone crock filled with sand for scouring tinware, etc.; this was buried by the thoughtful Jane Reed, daughter



of William Reed, under the floor of her father's cabin. There was not much time to spare in arranging preliminaries; whatever was done had to be performed quickly, and in a few hours the settlers bade adieu to their homes, and began their flight to a place of safety, and the setting sun of that memorable day in June, 1778, shed its rays upon their deserted dwellings. In their flight down the river the people from Reed's Fort and vicinity were joined by the other inhabitants of the valley, and all found refuge, as before stated, at Fort Augusta.

After being driven from their possessions, the Reeds, Flemings, McCormicks, and perhaps others, returned to their former homes in Chester county, remaining there till after the declaration of peace, in 1783, when again, five years after their flight, and ten years from the time they first settled on the West Branch, they returned to take possession of their homes, where they remained, most of them, to the end of their lives, never after having occasion to flee from the tomahawk and scalping knife.

During the five years' absence of the settlers, their buildings, though left to the "tender mercies" of the savages, were not destroyed, with the exception, perhaps, of one or two; and when their owners came to inspect them they were found to be in a tolerable state of preservation. After their return the people went to work with a will to fit up their homes, and it seems that the house of William Reed, being probably the most substantially built, had withstood the action of the weather better than any of the others, and was therefore the first to be put in order. While engaged in repairing the floor, some of the men discovered what they pronounced hidden treasures—a crock of silver. The result was quite an excitement among the people for a time, till Jane "put in an appearance" and claimed her "pewter sand," as it was called, which she had deposited under the floor five years previous. That identical crock, now over one hundred years old, is still in possession of the Reed family.

During times of comparative peace the settlers were often visited by the Indians, whom they always treated kindly, giving them food, etc., whenever they came around. Time after time Miss Jane Reed (who seems to have been chief cook not only for her father's family, but also of the garrison) exhausted her entire supply of bread in feeding bands of visiting red-skins. As it always gave offence to the Indians if they were not all treated alike, Jane was often at her wits' end to know how to make her bread reach around if she happened to have a scanty supply on hand when they made their appearance. On one occasion the young lady was trying on a hat which she had just purchased, when suddenly a band of savages entered the cabin, and gazed with astonishment at what they, no doubt, considered a new fangled head dress. At length one of them, who was more bold than the rest, deliberately walked up to Miss Jane, and took the hat from her head, and after giving it a thorough examination, handed it to his companions, by each of whom, in turn, it was closely scrutinized and then replaced upon the head of its owner, after which the band departed without having the least apparent inclination to appropriate the singular looking article. It seems that Miss Jane had not a very exalted opinion of the Indians, at least as far as their stomachs were concerned, for one morning she found a mouse drowned in her cream pot, and exclaimed, with a twinkle in her eye, that she would give the cream to the Indians, for it was good enough for them. Accord



ingly she made it into butter, and the next time the scamps paid her a visit, she had the grim satisfaction of seeing them feast on butter and buttermilk to their hearts' content.

Many of the early settlers of the county rendered valuable service to the country during the Revolutionary and Indian wars; in fact, during those times nearly every able-bodied man was a soldier. Living on the extreme western border of civilization, as the pioneers of Clinton then did, it may be supposed that they had their full share of duties to perform in protecting their homes and their lives from invading Indians. Consequently, as long as danger threatened their own families and firesides, very little fighting material could be spared to join the Continental troops in their various campaigns against the British. After the close of the Revolution, quite a number of persons who had taken part in that struggle settled within the present limits of the county. Among them was Major John P. De Haas, who located on Bald Eagle creek, about nine miles above its mouth, and Thomas and Francis Proctor, who acquired possession of a large tract of land on the river just below the mouth of the same stream. Thomas Proctor was captain of the first Continental company of artillery raised in Philadelphia. He was subsequently promoted to the rank of colonel, and his brother Francis, who was lieutenant of the same company, became captain. William Dunn, the owner of the "Big Island," also served some time as a soldier of the Revolution, participating in the battles of Germantown and Trenton. Mr. Dunn, with Alexander Hamilton and Thomas Hughes, were appointed a Committee of Safety at the beginning of the Revolution for Bald Eagle township (then Northumberland county).

Immediately after the restoration of peace, in 1783, a number of families, in addition to those who had been driven away by the Indians, came to the West Branch and settled. The lands lying between the river and Bald Eagle creek, being especially desirable, owing to their fertility and favorable location, particularly attracted those seeking frontier homes, and by the beginning of the year 1800 quite a settlement had there sprung up.

To give the reader something of an idea how the land where Lock Haven now stands appeared seventy years ago, it may be stated that all of the territory, comprising about two thousand acres, lying in the angle formed by the junction of Bald Eagle creek and the Susquehanna river, was then covered with a vigorous growth of pine and oak, with the exception of about a dozen cleared patches of a few acres each, scattered here and there over the tract. Fifteen hundred acres of said angle was granted to Dr. Francis Allison, in 1769, by the Proprietaries of the Province of Pennsylvania. A few years after receiving his patent, Dr. Allison sold his purchase to John Fleming, who took possession in 1773, and located on the lower end of the tract, where he died in 1777. In accordance with the provisions of his will, the estate after his death was divided among his heirs. About the year 1800, Dr. John Henderson, of Huntingdon, married Margaret Jamison, one of the Fleming heirs, and through her came into possession of a portion of the original "Allison tract," as it was called.

The completion of the West Branch division of the Pennsylvania canal from Northumberland to Pottsville, opposite Lock Haven, in 1834, was the beginning of a new and important era in the history of the West Branch valley. For





several years the work of building the canal had progressed, and finally culminated in the construction of the Lock Haven dam. During the construction of these works, a large number of adventurers from various parts of the country visited the locality; some of them remained and took an active part in the affairs of the community for years after. Several of the Irish laborers located on lands in the vicinity, and made industrious, law-abiding citizens. Of the speculating spirits who were attracted thither by the prospect of a bright future, Jerry Church was the most original, enterprising, and venturesome, and although the region round about and above the mouth of Bald Eagle creek had been looked upon for many years, by the settlers and others, as desirable for agricultural purposes, and destined to become populous, productive, and wealthy as a farming district, it remained for the energetic Jerry to conceive and consummate the idea of laying out a town on that beautiful plain. Accordingly, in October, 1833, he purchased Dr. Henderson's farm of two hundred acres, for which he paid twenty thousand dollars, and immediately proceeded to lay out the tract into lots, streets, and alleys. On the 4th of November, 1833, a public sale of lots took place, when quite a number were disposed of to the "highest and best bidders." The first lot sold was the one on which the Montour House is now located. It was bought by Frank Smith, Esq. The name Lock Haven was given to the town because of the existence in its vicinity of two *locks* in the canal, and a raft harbor or *haven* in the river.

It was not long after Lock Haven was laid out before it assumed the proportions and characteristics of a thriving town. The impulse given to its growth by the building of the public works soon caused it to rank among the enterprising and prosperous inland villages of the State. The circumstances attending its origin were such as to render its inception almost an absolute necessity, and after viewing the location and its surroundings, it did not take the shrewd Jerry Church long to realize that such was the case. The influx of strangers to the neighborhood, in consequence of the building and opening of the West Branch canal (and the extension to Bellefonte), at once created a demand for business places of various kinds. Hotels became necessary, to accommodate those connected with and having charge of the works; stores were needed to furnish boatmen and others with supplies. In fact nothing but some providential calamity could have prevented the springing up and development of a flourishing town just where Lock Haven is situated. The location itself has natural attractions sufficient to justify the assertion that, aside from its acquired advantages, a more desirable sight for a large town could not well have been found within the confines of the State. A healthful climate, fertile soil, grand and romantic scenery, pure air and water, all conspire to render the location especially desirable as a place of residence. Nature is accused of partiality in the distribution of her favors. She is charged with scattering them with a lavish hand in some places and parsimoniously withholding them in others. Whether this charge is true or false, it is indisputable that the region of which Lock Haven is the geographical centre has received a full share of her richest bounties, of which fact Jerry Church and his coadjutors were not unmindful when Clinton county was organized and Lock Haven made the seat of justice. The formation of Clinton county, and the selection of Lock Haven as a site for the public buildings, was



the consummation of a wish dear to the heart of Jerry Church. From the time he made the purchase of Dr. Henderson he had exerted himself to the utmost to bring about that result.

After the building of the court-house, the next important event in the history of Lock Haven was the construction of the West Branch boom, in 1849, concerning which H. L. Deffenbach, Esq., formerly editor of the *Clinton Democrat*, says: "From this period the rapid growth of Lock Haven commenced. Property doubled, trebled, and quadrupled in value, and soon the fields around the town were dotted with houses, and the streets filled with an industrious, energetic, and prosperous population."

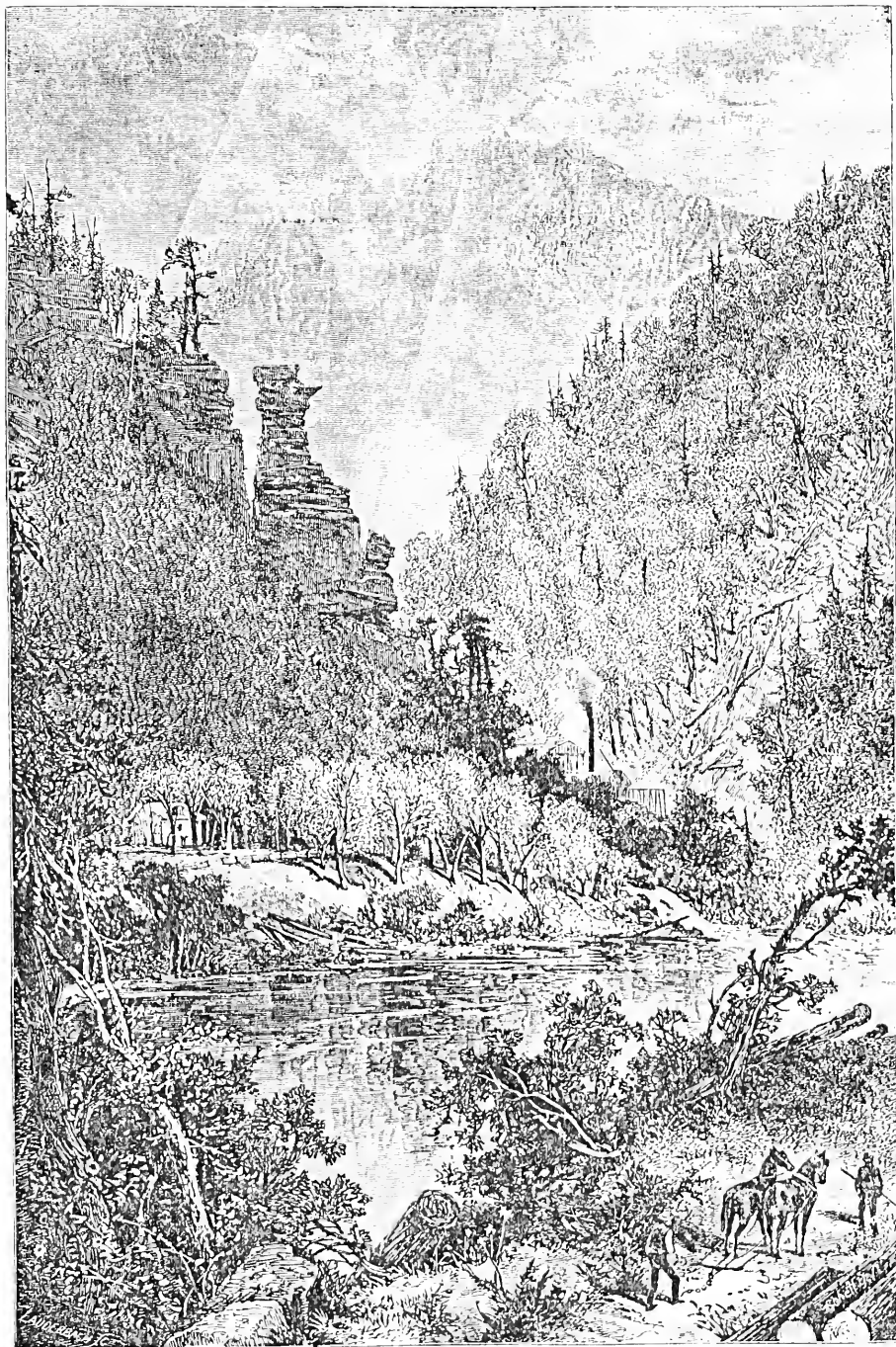
The completion of the Sunbury and Erie (now Philadelphia and Erie) railroad to Lock Haven, in 1859, was another important event in the history, not only of the town, but of Clinton county and the entire West Branch valley. The building of this road placed Lock Haven in direct and easy communication with the principal commercial cities of the country, and at once gave the community advantages and facilities which greatly increased its growth and prosperity.

LOCK HAVEN was incorporated as a borough April 25, 1840, and became a city March 28, 1870, having a population at that time of six thousand seven hundred and eighty-six.

The first jail in Clinton was built soon after the county was organized. It was constructed of logs, and stood near where the present one is located. On October 1, 1851, Colonel Anthony Kleekner was awarded the contract to build a new jail, which was completed the following year, at a cost of five thousand five hundred and seventy-five dollars. In 1871 the building was remodeled and enlarged, which cost twenty-two thousand two hundred and forty dollars. As the population and business of the county increased, it was found that the court house, built in 1842, was not large enough; therefore it was decided to erect a new one. Accordingly a location was selected on Water street, just above the river bridge, and the present structure erected, costing ninety-three thousand dollars. It was dedicated on Monday, February 8, 1869, on which occasion addresses were delivered by the Hon. C. A. Mayer, president judge of the district, and H. T. Beardsley, Esq. The following extract from Mr. Beardsley's remarks is given, because the circumstances under which it was delivered, and the facts which it contains, render it a part of the history of the county:

"This county was organized, and the first court held in December, 1839. The court then, and for the years 1840 and 1841, was held in a part of a two-story building that then stood on Water street, above the canal, known as 'Barker's Tavern.' That house was burned down in 1855. It was what is known as a double front, that is, two rooms in front, with a hall between those rooms. The part on the east side of the hall was the court room, and was about twenty-eight feet in length by sixteen in width. Think of it, a court room twenty-eight by sixteen. Over this court room, in the second story, were the county offices, being two in number, and in size about fourteen by sixteen feet each. The front one was used as the commissioners' and treasurer's office; and the back one as the office of the prothonotary, register and recorder, clerk of the courts, etc., one man easily performing all the duties in the last mentioned office. You may be curious to know where the sheriff's office was. 'Old Sheriff Miller' discharged





PULPIT ROCKS, NEAR ROUND ISLAND, CLINTON COUNTY.



the duties of that office at the period of which I am speaking. I recollect him well. A dark-visaged, good-natured, genial man; but that does not inform you where he had his office. It was not in the court house, nor was it in his own dwelling in Dunnstown, nor, I may add, was it in any other house in Lock Haven, Dunnstown, or in Clinton county. All who recollect him will witness that he wore a high-crowned hat, and allow me to inform you, that in that hat he kept his office. He placed an empty cigar box in the prothonotary's office, in which that official placed the writs that were occasionally issued, marking the day and hour of their being so deposited, and that was considered a delivery to the sheriff, who, upon coming to town, would transfer them to his hat, and the records of this court will show that very many of them never found their way back to the court house."

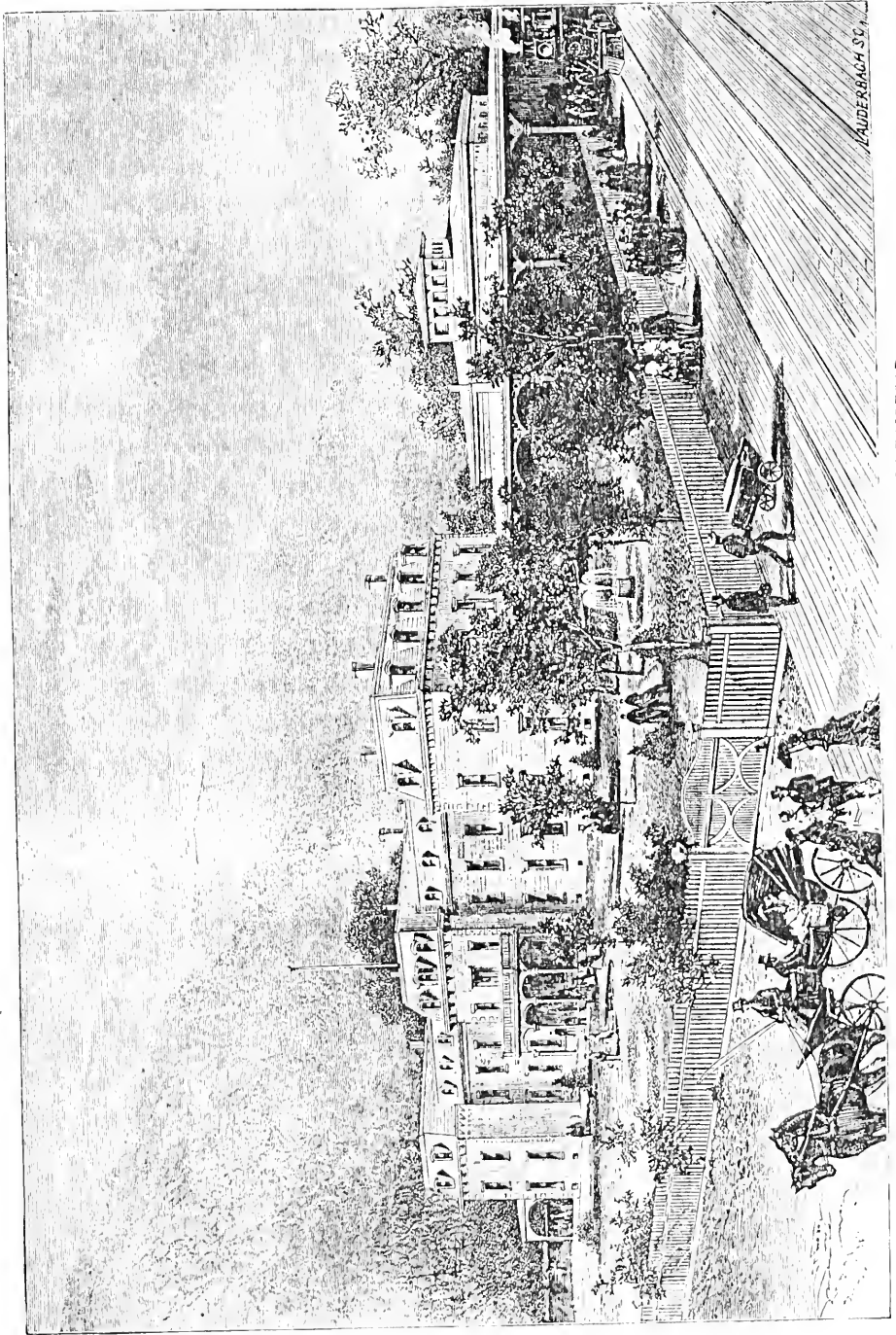
In all the wars in which the United States have been engaged, Clinton county has furnished her full share of troops. Quite a number of her citizens participated in the war of 1812, and several from the county took part in the war with Mexico. During the great Rebellion, the various calls of the government for troops met with patriotic and ready responses, and the county not only contributed her full quota of able-bodied private soldiers, but furnished a complement of brave and efficient commissioned officers, many of whom did honor to themselves and to the country by especial acts of gallantry on the field of battle. The following are their names: Colonels Phaon Jarrett, C. A. Lyman, H. C. Bolinger, H. M. Bassett. Majors Jesse Merrill, afterwards major-general N. G. of Penn'a., Charles Wingard, Sylvester Barrows. Captains W. C. Kress, R. S. Barker, W. W. White, C. W. Walker, J. W. Smith, John B. Johnson, now colonel in the regular army, George B. Donahay, W. S. Chatham, A. H. McDonald, B. K. Jackman, William Shank, Thomas B. Quay, Samuel H. Brown. First Lieutenants John S. Haynes, John A. Cogley, George Curtin, R. R. Bitner, Alexander Blackburn, J. W. Devling, William Hollingsworth, Joseph Showers, William Kaufman, William Crispin, Austin Stull, George W. Thomas, John P. Straw. Second Lieutenants James R. Conly, David Hayne, Thomas C. Lebo, now captain in the regular army, Edward Barnum, Daniel Wolf, Samuel W. Phillips, E. P. McCormick.

Lock Haven has sixty streets, the aggregate length of which is over twenty-five miles, and more than two hundred business places, thirteen church structures, and fourteen church organizations. It has fifteen secret societies, and four fire companies, three banks, and four printing offices, each issuing a weekly newspaper. The latitude of Lock Haven is  $41^{\circ} 5' 30''$  north; the longitude, west of Greenwich,  $77^{\circ} 30'$ ; west of Washington,  $2^{\circ} 12'$ . The average rain-fall per year, including water contained in snow, forty inches. The mean temperature in the summer is  $67\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ ; in the winter,  $47\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ .

Beside Lock Haven the most important town in Clinton county is *RENOVO*, located on the west branch of the Susquehanna, twenty-seven miles above the former place. It is emphatically a railroad town, that is, it owes its existence to the erection at that point of extensive car-shops by the Philadelphia and Erie railroad company, in 1863. The town is beautifully situated in a delightful valley, surrounded by high mountains on all sides. It contained a population of 1,940 in 1870, which has steadily increased. It has an elegant hotel, owned by the railroad







VIEW OF RENOVO STATION, PHILADELPHIA AND ERIE RAILROAD.



company, and named after the town. It contains three churches, eleven public schools, a public hall, a bank, and a weekly newspaper. Renovo was incorporated as a borough in 1866.

There are but three other incorporated villages in the county: Mill Hall, Beech Creek, and Logansville. MILL HALL was laid out in 1806, by Nathan Harvey, and became a borough in 1850. Its population is now about five hundred. BEECH CREEK was started about the year 1812, by Michael Quigley. The first store in the place was kept by "Buck" Clafin, father of Victoria Woodhull. It was incorporated in 1869. Its population in 1870 was 384. LOGANSVILLE was laid out in 1840, by Colonel Anthony Kleckner, and incorporated in 1864. Its population in 1870 was 414, now about 500.

The other principal villages in the county are, Salona, Clintondale, Tylersville, Hyner, North Point, and Westport.



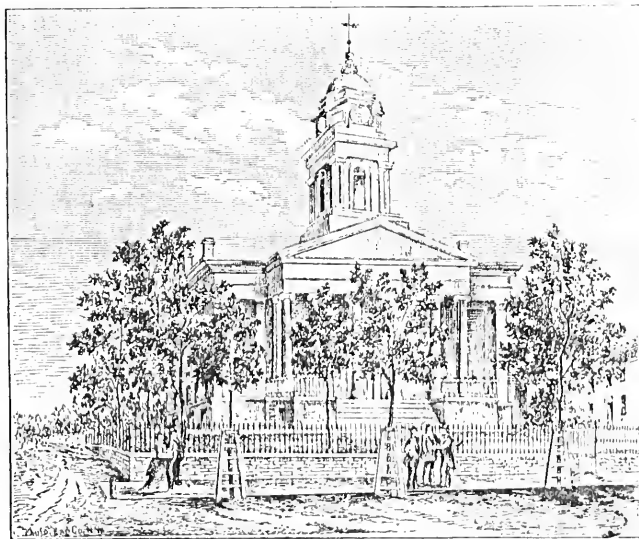


## COLUMBIA COUNTY.

BY JOHN G. FREEZE, BLOOMSBURG.



COLUMBIA COUNTY was taken from Northumberland by an act of 22d March, 1813. By the bill organizing the county, the Governor was authorized to appoint the commissioners to select and locate the county seat, and they recommended Danville as the site. Thereupon, on the 21st February, 1815, Turbut and Chillisquaque townships were stricken off, and re-annexed to Northumberland. This act placed Danville largely upon one side of the county, and the question of removing the county seat to Bloomsburg immediately commenced. To check it, on the 22d January,



COLUMBIA COUNTY COURT HOUSE.

1816, part of the above townships was re-annexed to Columbia county. On the 3d March, 1818, a portion of Columbia county was annexed to Schuylkill, and was called Union township. The removal question still continuing to agitate the public mind, on the 24th February, 1845, the Legislature passed an act authorizing a vote on the question of a re-location of

the county seat of Columbia county, and at the October election following, it was decided by a popular vote to remove it to Bloomsburg; and thus ended a long and bitter local contest. On May 3, 1850, the county of Montour was erected out of part of Columbia; and a fierce contest arose as to the repeal of that act, which finally resulted in the passage, on the 15th January, 1853, of an act to straighten the division line between the two counties, by which a portion of the territory was re-annexed to Columbia.

The county still contains about five hundred square miles, and has now nearly thirty thousand inhabitants. It occupies a part of the Apalaehian mountainous



belt, between the anthracite formations on the S.E., and the Allegheny mountains on the N.W. The county is quite broken, though the mountain ranges are not high. The arable land is mostly red shale and limestone. Little mountain, Catawissa, Long mountain, and Knob mountain are the principal elevations. The Muncy hills send some spurs into the county. A heavy belt of limestone runs the entire length of the county.

The Susquehanna river enters the county at Berwick, dividing about one-third to the east side, and two-thirds to the west side. Its principal tributaries upon the east side are Catawissa creek and Roaring creek, and on the west Fishing creek, which is a large stream, being itself fed by Huntington, Hemlock, and Little Fishing creek, besides smaller streams, and which flows into the Susquehanna near Bloomsburg. There is a passenger bridge over the river at Berwick, and another at Catawissa, and the bridge of the Catawissa branch of the Philadelphia and Reading Railroad at Rupert, at the mouth of Fishing creek. There is a rope ferry at Bloomsburg, one at Espy, and another at Millinville. There are large deposits of iron ore at Bloomsburg, as well as limestone, and a considerable anthracite coal basin at the southeast end of the county, bordering on Schuylkill.

The North Branch canal passes along the right bank of the Susquehanna through the county. The Catawissa railroad, now under lease to the Philadelphia and Reading railroad, runs through the county, crossing the Susquehanna river at Rupert, near the mouth of Fishing creek. The Danville, Hazleton, and Wilkes-Barre, running from Sunbury in Northumberland county, to Tomhickon in Luzerne county, passes along the left bank of the Susquehanna to Catawissa, and then up the Scotch run, leaving the county near Glen City. The Lackawanna and Bloomsburg, from Scranton to Northumberland, passes along on the right bank of the Susquehanna, through Bloomsburg, the whole length of the county. These are all in successful operation. The projected improvements are the North and West Branch railroad, to run from Wilkes-Barre by Bloomsburg to Williamsport. It passes down the left bank of the Susquehanna, crosses at Bloomsburg, and up the valley of the Fishing creek. Considerable grading has been done on this road. The Humlock Creek and Muncy railroad intersects the northern portion of the county. A preliminary survey has been made, but the work is not at present continuing.

The earliest historical bands of Indians on the territory of Columbia county were the Shawanese, who had a village on the flats about the mouth of Fishing creek near Bloomsburg, another at Catawissa, and another at the mouth of Briar creek. The Delawares were also within the valley, vassals to the Six Nations. The territory lay in the route of travel for hunting or for war. "The Wyoming path" left Muncy on the West Branch, ran up Glade Run, then through a gap in the hills to Fishing creek, passed on into Luzerne county, through the Nescopee gap, and up the North Branch to Wyoming. The Fishing creek path started in the flats near Bloomsburg, up Fishing creek by Orangeville, to near Long Pond, thence across to Tunkhannock creek. It was on this very path, about six miles above Bloomsburg, that Van Campen, the great Indian fighter, was captured.

In the year 1772, Mr. James McClure settled upon the west bank of the





North Branch of the Susquehanna, about one mile above the mouth of Fishing creek, in what is now Columbia county. He obtained a patent for his farm, under the name of "McClure's Choice." He was a man of position and influence, and when the war of the Revolution was raging was prominent in the councils of his country. On the 8th February, 1776, the members of the Committee of Safety for Wyoming township were Mr. James McClure, Mr. Thomas Clayton, and Mr. Peter Meliek, whose descendants are still in the county. Major Moses Van Campen married James McClure's eldest daughter.

Within the same year of 1772, Evan Owen located himself on a farm at the mouth of Fishing creek, and above Mr. James McClure, came in their order, Thomas Clayton, John Doan, John Webb, George Espy, and the Gingles family. There was also, previous to the Revolution, a settlement at the mouth of Briar creek.

The territory of what is now Columbia county was considerably overrun by the Indians during the border and Revolutionary wars. Upon several occasions the inhabitants were massacred by or fled before their savage enemies. They protected themselves as well as their numbers and strength enabled them, and erected forts at several points in the county. But little more than the location can now be ascertained, and even that is sometimes uncertain.

Fort Bosley was on the Chillisquaque, on the site of the present borough of Washingtonville.

Fort Rice was also on the Chillisquaque, near its head-waters. It was attacked unsuccessfully in September, 1780, being relieved by a force under General Potter, who followed the enemy about fifty miles up Fishing creek without reaching them.

Fort Wheeler was on the Fishing creek, about three miles above its mouth. It was begun by Van Campen, in April, 1778, and was a stockade sufficiently large to accommodate all the families of the settlement. It was attacked before it was entirely completed, in May, 1778, but withstood the assault. It was near Light Street.

Fort Jenkins was on the Susquehanna river, near Briar creek, on the farm of Jacob Hill, and on the very spot where his house now stands. It was attacked in April, 1779, and again in 1780, in the spring, and it was evacuated in the fall, and burned by the Indians about September, 1780.

Fort McClure was built by Van Campen, in 1781. It was on the spot on which the dwelling-house now stands, on the James McClure farm, about one mile above the mouth of Fishing creek. Here he made his head-quarters, and thence led his scouting parties.

Having alluded to the Indian forts located within the county, we insert a portion of the "Narrative of Van Campen," who erected the fort just named.

Major Moses Van Campen, or Van Camp, as it was usually pronounced, and his brother Jacobus, or Cobus Van Camp, were famous in the border wars of the Susquehanna. The father of the family was a Low Dutchman, probably from the Minisink settlements on the Delaware. In the winter of 1838, then living at Dansville, New York, he sent a petition to Congress for a pension, from which the following passages are extracted :

"My first service was in the year 1777, when I served three months under



Colonel John Kelly, who stationed us at Big Isle, on the West Branch of the Susquehanna. Nothing particular transpired during that time, and in March, 1778, I was appointed lieutenant of a company of six months' men. Shortly afterward I was ordered by Colonel Samuel Hunter to proceed with about twenty men to Fishing creek (which empties into the North Branch of the Susquehanna, about twenty miles from Northumberland), and to build a fort about three miles from its mouth, for the reception of the inhabitants in case of an alarm from the Indians. In May, my fort being nearly completed, our spies discovered a large body of Indians making their way towards the fort. The neighboring residents had barely time to fly to the fort for protection, leaving their goods behind. The Indians soon made their appearance, and having plundered and burnt the houses, attacked the fort, keeping a steady fire upon us during the day. At night they withdrew, burning and destroying everything in their route. What loss they sustained we could not ascertain, as they carried off all the dead and wounded, though from the marks of blood on the ground, it must have been considerable. The inhabitants that took shelter in the fort had built a yard for their cattle at the head of a small flat, at a short distance from the fort; and one evening in the month of June, just as they were milking them, my sentinel called my attention to some movement in the brush, which I soon discovered to be Indians making their way to the cattle yard. There was no time to be lost; I immediately selected ten of my sharpshooters, and under cover of a rise of land, got between them and the milkers. On ascending the ridge we found ourselves within pistol shot of them; I fired first, and killed the leader, but a volley from my men did no further execution, the Indians running off at once. In the meantime the milk pails flew in every direction, and the best runner got to the fort first. As the season advanced Indian hostilities increased, and notwithstanding the vigilance of our scouts, which were constantly out, houses were burnt and families murdered."

In 1779 Van Campen, as quarter-master, accompanied General Sullivan's expedition to ravage the Indian towns on the Genesee. He distinguished himself in several skirmishes at Newtown and Hog Back hill.

"On the return of the army, I was taken with the camp-fever, and was removed to the fort which I had built in '78, where my father was still living. In the course of the winter I recovered my health, and my father's house having been burnt in '78 by the party which attacked the before-mentioned fort, my father requested me to go with him and a younger brother to our farm, about four miles distant, to make preparations for building another, and raising some grain. But little apprehension was entertained of molestations from the Indians this season, as they had been so completely routed the year before. We left the fort about the last of March, accompanied by my uncle and his son, about twelve years old, and one Peter Pence. We had been on our farms about four or five days, when, on the morning of the 30th of March, we were surprised by a party of ten Indians. My father was lunged through with a war-spear, his throat was cut, and he was scalped; while my brother was tomahawked, scalped, and thrown into the fire before my eyes. While I was struggling with a warrior, the fellow who had killed my father drew his spear from his body and made a violent thrust at me. I shrank from the spear; the savage who had hold of me turned it with his hand



so that it only penetrated my vest and shirt. They were then satisfied with taking me prisoner, as they had the same morning taken my uncle's little son and Pence, though they killed my uncle. The same party, before they reached us, had touched on the lower settlements of Wyoming, and killed a Mr. Upson, and took a boy prisoner of the name of Rogers. We were now marched off up Fishing creek, and in the afternoon of the same day we came to Huntington, where the Indians found four white men at a sugar camp, who fortunately discovered the Indians and fled to a house; the Indians only fired on them, and wounded a Captain Ransom, when they continued their course till night. Having encamped and made their fire, we, the prisoners, were tied and well secured, five Indians lying on one side of us, and five on the other; in the morning they pursued their course, and, leaving the waters of Fishing creek, touched the headwaters of Hunlock creek, where they found one Abraham Pike, his wife and child. Pike was made prisoner, but his wife and child they painted, and told *Joggo, squaw*, go home. They continued their course that day, and encamped the same night in the same manner as the previous. It came into my mind that sometimes individuals performed wonderful actions, and surmounted the greatest danger. I then decided that these fellows must die; and thought of the plan to dispatch them. The next day I had an opportunity to communicate my plan to my fellow-prisoners; they treated it as a visionary scheme for three men to attempt to dispatch ten Indians. I spread before them the advantages that three men would have over ten when asleep; and that we would be the first prisoners that would be taken into their towns and villages after our army had destroyed their corn, that we should be tied to the stake and suffer a cruel death; we had now an inch of ground to fight on, and if we failed, it would only be death, and we might as well die one way as another. That day passed away, and having encamped for the night, we lay as before. In the morning we came to the river, and saw their canoes; they had descended the river and run their canoes upon Little Tunkhannock creek, so called. They crossed the river and set their canoes adrift. I renewed my suggestion to my companions to dispatch them that night, and urged they must decide the question. They agreed to make the trial; but how shall we do it, was the question. Disarm them, and each take a tomahawk, and come to close work at once. There are three of us; plant our blows with judgment, and three times three will make nine, and the tenth one we can kill at our leisure. They agreed to disarm them, and after that, one take possession of the guns and fire, at the one side of the four, and the other two to take tomahawks on the other side and dispatch them. I observed that it would be a very uncertain way; the first shot fired would give the alarm; they would discover it to be the prisoners, and might defeat us. I had to yield to their plan. Peter Pence was chosen to fire the guns, Pike and myself to tomahawk; we cut and carried plenty of wood to give them a good fire; the prisoners were tied and laid in their places; after I was laid down, one of them had occasion to use his knife; he dropped it at my feet; I turned my foot over it and concealed it; they all lay down and fell asleep. About midnight I got up and found them in a sound sleep. I slipped to Pence, who rose; I cut him loose and handed him the knife; he did the same for me, and I in turn took the knife and cut Pike loose; in a minute's time we disarmed them. Pence took his station at the guns. Pike and myself with our



tomahawks took our stations; I was to tomahawk three on the right wing, and Pike two on the left. That moment Pike's two awoke, and were getting up; here Pike proved a coward, and laid down. It was a critical moment. I saw there was no time to be lost; their heads turned up fair; I dispatched them in a moment, and turned to my lot as per agreement, and as I was about to dispatch the last on my side of the fire, Pence shot and did good execution; there was only one at the off wing that his ball did not reach; his name was Mohawke, a stout, bold, daring fellow. In the alarm he jumped off about three rods from the fire; he saw it was the prisoners who made the attack, and giving the war-whoop, he darted to take possession of the guns; I was as quick to prevent him; the contest was then between him and myself. As I raised my tomahawk, he turned quick to jump from me; I followed him and struck at him, but missing his head, my tomahawk struck his shoulder, or rather the back of his neck; he pitched forward and fell; and the same time my foot slipped, and I fell by his side; we clinched; his arm was naked; he caught me round my neck; at the same time I caught him with my left arm around the body, and gave him a close hug, at the same time feeling for his knife, but could not reach it.

"In our scuffle my tomahawk dropped out. My head was under the wounded shoulder, and almost suffocated me with his blood. I made a violent spring, and broke from his hold; we both rose at the same time, and he ran; it took me some time to clear the blood from my eyes; my tomahawk had got covered up, and I could not find it in time to overtake him; he was the only one of the party that escaped. Pike was powerless. I always had a reverence for Christian devotion. Pike was trying to pray, and Pence swearing at him, charging him with cowardice, and saying it was no time to pray—he ought to fight; we were masters of the ground, and in possession of all their guns, blankets, match coats, etc. I then turned my attention to scalping them, and recovering the scalps of my father, brother, and others, I strung them all on my belt for safe-keeping. We kept our ground till morning, and built a raft, it being near the bank of the river where they had encamped, about fifteen miles below Tioga Point; we got all our plunder on it, and set sail for Wyoming, the nearest settlement. Our raft gave way, when we made for land; but we lost considerable property, though we saved our guns and ammunition, and took to land; we reached Wyalusing late in the afternoon. Came to the narrows; discovered a smoke below, and a raft laying at the shore, by which we were certain that a party of Indians had passed us in the course of the day, and had halted for the night. There was no alternative for us but to rout them or go over the mountain; the snow on the north side of the hill was deep; we knew from the appearance of the raft that the party must be small; we had two rifles each; my only fear was of Pike's cowardice. To know the worst of it, we agreed that I should ascertain their number, and give the signal for the attack. I crept down the side of the hill so near as to see their fires and packs, but saw no Indians. I concluded they had gone hunting for meat, and that this was a good opportunity for us to make off with their raft to the opposite side of the river. I gave the signal; they came and threw their packs on to the raft, which was made of small, dry pine timber; with poles and paddles we drove her briskly across the river, and had got nearly out of reach of shot, when two of them came





in; they fired—their shots did no injury; we soon got under cover of an island, and went several miles; we had waded deep creeks through the day, the night was cold; we landed on an island and found a sink hole, in which we made our fire; after warming, we were alarmed by a cracking in the crust. Pike supposed the Indians had got on to the island, and was for calling for quarters; to keep him quiet we threatened him with his life; the stepping grew plainer, and seemed coming directly to the fire; I kept a watch, and soon a noble racoon came under the light. I shot the racoon, when Pike jumped up and called out, ‘Quarters, gentlemen; quarters, gentlemen!’ I took my game by the leg and threw it down to the fire. ‘Here, you cowardly rascal,’ I cried, ‘skin that and give us a roast for supper.’ The next night we reached Wyoming, and there was much joy to see us; we rested one day, and it being not safe to go to Northumberland by land, we procured a canoe, and with Pence and my little cousin, we descended the river by night. We came to Fort Jenkins before day, where I found Colonel Kelly and about one hundred men encamped out of the fort. He came across from the West Branch by the heads of Chillisquaue to Fishing creek, the end of the Nob mountain, so called at that day, where my father and brother were killed; he had buried my father and uncle; my brother was burnt, a small part of him only was to be found. Colonel Kelly informed me that my mother and her children were in the fort, and it was thought that I was killed likewise. Colonel Kelly went into the fort to prepare her mind to see me; I took off my belt of scalps and handed them to an officer to keep. Human nature was not sufficient to stand the interview. She had just lost a husband and a son, and one had returned to take her by the hand, and one, too, that she supposed was killed.

“The day after, I went to Sunbury, where I was received with joy; my scalps were exhibited, the cannons were fired, etc. Before my return a commission had been sent me as ensign of a company to be commanded by Captain Thomas Robinson; this was, as I understood, a part of the quota which Pennsylvania had to raise for the Continental Line. One Joseph Alexander was commissioned as lieutenant, but did not accept his commission. The summer of 1780 was spent in the recruiting service; our company was organized, and was retained for the defence of the frontier service. In February, 1781, I was promoted to a lieutenancy, and entered upon the active duty of an officer, by heading scouts; and as Captain Robinson was no woodsman nor marksman, he preferred that I should encounter the danger and head the scouts. We kept up a constant chain of scouts around the frontier settlements, from the North to the West Branch of the Susquehanna, by the way of the head-waters of Little Fishing creek, Chillisquaue, Muncy, etc. In the spring of 1781, we built a fort on the widow McClure’s plantation, called McClure’s Fort, where our provisions were stored.”

Mr. Van Campen, the same summer, went up the West Branch. He was taken prisoner by the Indians. On arriving at the Indian village of Canandaigua, on the Genesee, he says:

“We were prepared to run the Indian gauntlet; the warriors don’t whip, it is the young Indians and squaws. They meet you in sight of their council-house, where they select the prisoners from the ranks of the warriors, bring them in front, and when ready, the word *joggo* is given; the prisoners start, the whippers

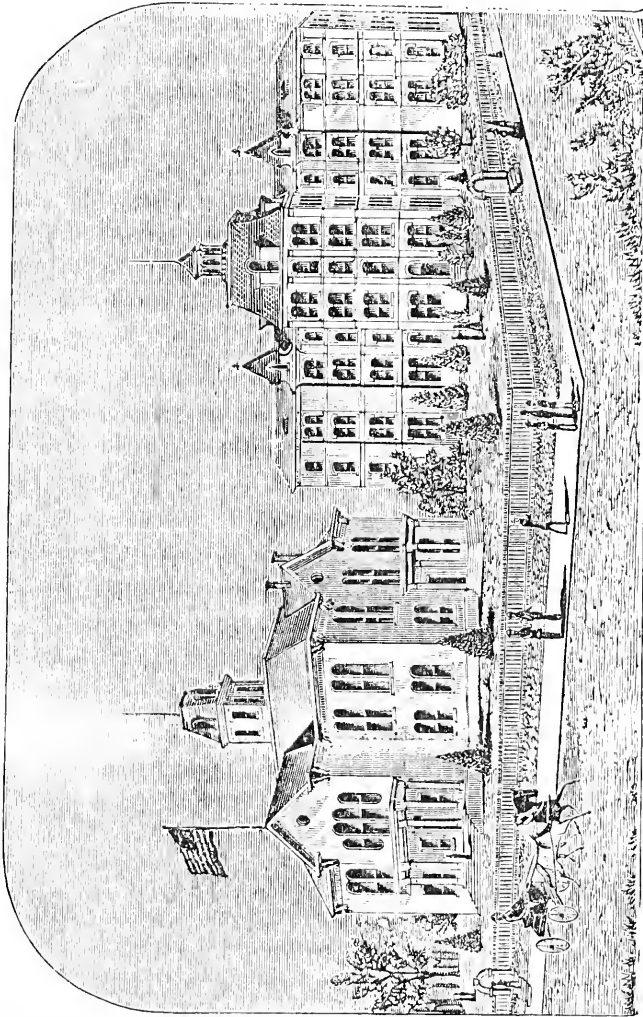


follow after; and if they outrun you, you will be severely whipped. I was placed in front of my men; the word being given, we started. Being then young and full of nerve, I led the way; two young squaws came running up to join the whipping party; and when they saw us start, they halted, and stood shoulder to shoulder with their whips; when I came near them I bounded and kicked them over; we all came down together; there was considerable kicking amongst us, so much so that they showed their under-dress, which appeared to be of a beautiful yellow color; I had not time to help them up. It was truly diverting to the warriors; they yelled and shouted till they made the air ring. They halted at that village for one day, and thence went to Fort Niagara, where I was delivered up to the British. I was adopted, according to the Indian custom, into Colonel Butler's family, then the commanding officer of the British and Indians at that place. I was to supply the loss of his son, Captain Butler, who was killed late in the fall of 1781, by the Americans. In honor to me as his adopted son, I was confined in a private room, and not put under a British guard. My troubles soon began; the Indians were informed by the Tories that knew me that I had been a prisoner before, and had killed my captors; they were outrageous, and went to Butler and demanded me, and, as I was told, offered to bring in fourteen prisoners in my place. Butler sent an officer to examine me on the subject; he came and informed me their Indians had laid heavy accusations against me; they were informed that I had been a prisoner before, and had killed the party, and that they had demanded me to be given up to them, and that his colonel wished to know the fact. I observed, 'Sir, it is a serious question to answer; I will never deny the truth; I have been a prisoner before, and killed the party, and returned to the service of my country; but, sir, I consider myself to be a prisoner of war to the British, and I presume you will have more honor than to deliver me up to the savages. I know what my fate will be, and please to inform your colonel that we have it in our power to retaliate.' He left me, and in a short time returned and stated that he was authorized to say to me that there was no alternative for me to save my life but to abandon the rebel cause and join the British standard; that I should take the same rank in the British service as I did in the rebel service. I replied, 'No sir, no; give me the stake, the tomahawk, or the knife, before a British commission; liberty or death is our motto;' he then left me. Some time after a lady came to my room, with whom I had been well acquainted before the Revolution; we had been schoolmates; she was then married to a British officer, a captain of the Queen's rangers; he came with her. She had been to Colonel Butler, and she was authorized to make me the same offer as the officer had done; I thanked her for the trouble she had taken for my safety, but could not accept of the offer; she observed how much more honorable would it be to be an officer in the British service. I observed that I could not dispose of myself in that way; I belonged to the Congress of the United States, and that I would abide the consequence; she left me, and that was the last I heard of it. A guard was set at the door of my apartment. I was soon afterwards sent down Lake Ontario to Montreal, whence a British ship brought me to New York. In the month of March, 1783, I was exchanged, and had orders to take up arms again. I joined my company in March at Northumberland; about that time Captain Robinson received orders



to march his company to Wyoming, to keep garrison at Wilkes-Barre fort. He sent myself and Ensign Chambers with the company to that station, where we lay till November, 1783. Our army was then discharged, and our company likewise; poor and penniless, we retired to the shades of private life."

In the war of 1812, Columbia county furnished a company, but I have not recovered any particulars or names.



STATE NORMAL SCHOOL AT BLOOMSBURG.

In the Mexican war, the Columbia Guards, commanded by Captain Frick, achieved a high reputation.

In the Union war Columbia county sent a large number of men into the field, and some of her citizens secured a high military position, notably General Wellington H. Ent, Colonel Samuel Knorr, Captain Charles B. Brockway.

The general educational interests of the county, under the common school system, are in a very satisfactory condition, and need not be particularized.

But the State Normal school at Bloomsburg is an enterprise that should not be passed over. A charter for the incorporation of the Bloomsburg Literary Institute having been secured, on the 2d of May, 1866, the incorporators and others met, organized, and adjourned to meet again on the 4th, when measures were resolved upon to put the Institute in permanent condition. A building, costing about twenty-five thousand dollars, was erected, and formally opened on



the 3d day of April, 1867. The situation and building so pleased Mr. Superintendent Wickersham that he urged the addition of grounds and building for a State Normal school, and on 9th March, 1868, it was resolved upon. The cornerstone of the building was laid by Governor Geary, June 25, 1868. On the 8th February, 1869, application was made by the Board of Trustees to have the Institute recognized as a State Normal school. A committee was appointed, who, on 19th February, 1869, made the official visit and examination. On the same day the committee reported favorably, and on the 22d of February, 1869, Hon. Mr. Wickersham, State Superintendent, formally recognized the said Bloomsburg Literary Institute as the State Normal school of the Sixth district.

The school continued in operation, with increasing success, until September 4, 1875, when the boarding hall took fire and burned down. It was a total loss. The trustees took immediate measures to rebuild, and on the 14th October following let the new building for forty-seven thousand and ninety-eight dollars. It is one hundred and sixty-two feet front, with elevation and projection, and one hundred and fifteen feet deep, in the form of a T. It was finished by April 1, 1876, and occupied for the spring term.

There is no finer view in the State than that from Institute Hill, overlooking the town and the surrounding country.

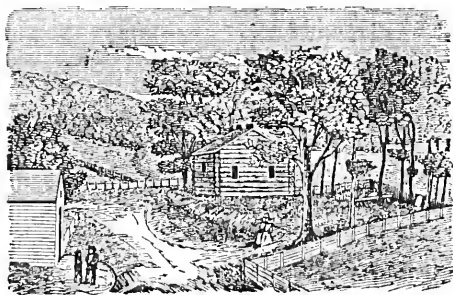
BLOOMSBURG lies upon a bluff on the south bank of the Fishing creek, and about one mile from the Susquehanna, the Fishing creek emptying into the Susquehanna, about two miles below the town. The location is beautiful in all respects. Between the mouth of the creek and the town the Shawanese Indians had a village, and in 1772 Mr. James McClure located his farm near the same point, and in 1781 a fort was erected there. In 1802 the town was laid out by Ludwig Eyer, by the name of Bloomsburg. In 1846 it became the county seat of Columbia county; in 1869 was made the educational centre of the north-eastern portion of the State by the completion of the buildings for the Sixth Normal School district of the State. In 1870 it was organized as the town of Bloomsburg, and includes as such, the whole of what at that date was Bloom township. It contains within its borders the furnaces of the Bloomsburg iron company, and the furnace of William Neal & Sons; the foundry of Sharpless & Son, of Turnbach & Hess, and of Harman & Hassert, the car and machine shops of Lockard & Brother, and the planing mill of the Bloomsburg lumber company, besides other smaller manufacturing establishments of various kinds. It has an Episcopal, a Presbyterian, a Methodist, a Catholic, a Lutheran, a German Reformed, a Baptist, and several other places of religious worship. It has five hotels, an opera house, and a dozen or more school houses, besides the Normal School buildings. It has three money institutions, the First National, the Bloomsburg and Columbia county banks. The North Branch canal and the Lackawanna and Bloomsburg railroad both run through the town, and the projected North and West Branch railroad also is located within its limits. It contains about four thousand five hundred inhabitants. There are published in it *The Columbian*, *The Republican*, *The Sentinel*, *The Home Trade Journal*, and by the students of the Normal School, *The Normal Mentor*.

CATAWISSA is a large village, on the left bank of the Susquehanna, at the mouth of Catawissa creek, about four miles south of Bloomsburg. The scenery





about the place is fine and picturesque. The town contains about one thousand of a population. The furnaces in the neighborhood have been demolished, but the paper mill, the tanneries, the car shops of the Catawissa railroad, and other industries, give the place a lively aspect. The places of worship are a Lutheran, a German Reformed, a Methodist, and an Episcopal church. There is also yet standing, a Friends' meeting house, and there has been lately erected a fine Masonic and town hall. The German race at present prevails about Catawissa. It was originally a Quaker settlement, and on a beautiful shady



ANCIENT FRIENDS' MEETING HOUSE, CATAWISSA.

knoll, a little apart from the dust and din of the village, stands the venerable Quaker meeting house, a perishable monument of a race of early settlers that have nearly all passed away. "And where are they gone?" we inquired of an aged Friend sitting with one or two sisters on the bench under the shade of the tall trees that overhang the meeting-house. "Ah," said he, "some are dead, but many are gone to Ohio, and still further west. Once there was a large meeting here, but now there are but few of us to sit together." Pennsylvania exhibits many similar instances in which the original settlers have yielded to another and more numerous race.

Catawissa was laid out in 1787, by William Hughes, a Quaker from Berks county. Isaiah Hughes kept the first store. Among the early pioneers were William Collins, James Watson, John Lloyd, Reuben Fenton, Benjamin Sharpless, and other Quakers. John Mears, a famous Quaker preacher and physician, a man of great energy of character, afterwards became proprietor of the town by buying up the quit-ents. In 1796 James Watson laid out an addition to the town. Among the Germans, Christian Brobst came about 1793, and George Knappenberger had previously taken the ferry. The place was then noted for its shad fishery. John Hauch was one of the first to build a furnace in this region, on the Catawissa, in 1816. Redmond Conyngham, Esq., who has devoted much research to the aboriginal history of the State, says the Piscatawese or Ganga-wese or Conoys (Kenhawas), had a wigwam on the Catawese at Catawese, now Catawissa. It is a good plan to identify the Indian name of a place with its present name. The Catawissa railroad passes through the village, and the Danville, Hazleton, and Wilkes-Barre, within a few hundred yards. The Catawissa deposit bank is located in the town, and a fine new passenger bridge spans the Susquehanna.

BERWICK was originally settled by Evan Owen in 1783. It was organized as a borough in 1818. It is built on a bluff on the right bank of the Susquehanna, on the eastern boundary of the county, on the very line of Luzerne county. It is twelve miles east from Bloomsburg. The Methodists, Baptists, and Presbyterians, have large congregations and commodious houses for public worship. There is a fine Odd Fellows hall, and a large public school house. There are



several hotels, a large foundry, car shops, and rolling mill in operation, mainly under charge of Jackson & Woodin.

The North Branch canal and the Lackawanna and Bloomsburg railroad pass along the foot of the bluff upon which the town is built. It is the terminus of the Berwick and Towanda turnpike, leading to Newtown, in New York; as it is also of the Neseopee and Manch Chunk. There is a bridge over the Susquehanna at this place, and there is also located here a national bank. It was at Berwick, May 3, 1826, that the steamboat Susquehanna, Captain Collins, of Baltimore, blew up, ascending Neseopee Falls. And it was at Berwick on July 4, 1828, that ground was broken for the construction of the North Branch canal. The population is about one thousand five hundred. *The Berwick Independent* is published here.

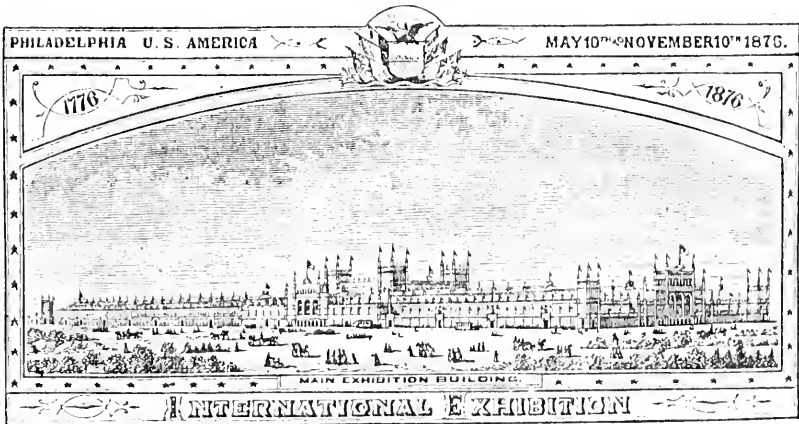
RUPERT is in Montour township, two miles south of Bloomsburg, at the intersection of the Catawissa and the Lackawanna and Bloomsburg railroads, at the mouth of Fishing creek. It has about twenty dwellings, hotel, blacksmith shop, etc. The railroad depots make it a well-known point. BUCKHORN is in Hemlock township, four miles west of Bloomsburg. It has about forty dwellings, two stores, a tavern, blacksmith shop, wheel-wright shop, large three-story school house, and meeting house. JERSEYTOWN is in Madison township, twelve miles west from Bloomsburg. It has about fifty dwellings, meeting house, school house, two taverns, stores, etc., etc. MILVILLE is in Greenwood township, and about twelve miles north-west of Bloomsburg. The township is mainly settled by the Friends. The village has about twenty dwellings, hotel, grist mill, shops, etc., etc. EYER GROVE is also in Greenwood, has twelve or fifteen dwellings, grist mill, meeting house, and shops and stores. ROHRSBURG is also in Greenwood; was laid out about 1825, by Frederick Rohr; has twenty to thirty dwellings, and the usual number of shops, stores, meeting house, and hotel. COLE'S CREEK is in Sugarloaf township, twenty miles north from Bloomsburg, at the confluence of Cole's creek and Big Fishing creek. Has grist mill, post office, store, smith shop, meeting house, etc. BENTON, in township of same name, sixteen miles north from Bloomsburg, has hotel, meeting house, stores, shops, and thirty to fifty dwellings. It is on Big Fishing creek. ORANGEVILLE, in Orange township, was settled before 1785. Clement G. Ricketts opened a store there in 1822. It has sixty to seventy dwellings, two meeting houses, an academy, stores, taverns, grist mill, tannery, foundry, etc., etc. It is also on Big Fishing creek. LIGHT STREET is in Scott township, three miles north of Bloomsburg. It has seventy to eighty dwelling houses, meeting house, stores, school houses, tannery, etc. ESPYTOWN is also in Scott township, three miles east of Bloomsburg. It is about the same size as Light Street, and is one of the depots of the Lackawanna and Bloomsburg railroad. MIFFLINVILLE is a staid village, in Mifflin township, nine miles east of Bloomsburg, on the east bank of the Susquehanna. It contains about seventy dwellings. The North and West Branch railroad will, when built, pass through the village. MAINVILLE, in Main township, six miles south-east from Bloomsburg, has fifteen to twenty dwellings, grist mill, and forge, etc. It is on the Catawissa creek, and a depot of the Catawissa railroad. BEAVER VALLEY, in Beaver township, twelve miles south-east from Bloomsburg, has half a dozen dwellings, and is a depot of Catawissa



railroad. CENTRALIA borough in Conyngham township, twenty miles south-east of Bloomsburg, in the coal mining region, contains several hundred dwellings, Episcopal and Catholic churches, and several denominational meeting houses. SLABTOWN, in Locust township, on Roaring creek, with a dozen dwellings, stores, shops, hotel, etc., eleven miles south-east of Bloomsburg; and NUMBIA, two miles beyond, in same township, of about the same size. GLEN CITY, in Beaver township, twenty miles south-east from Bloomsburg, a mining village, has about twenty dwellings, shops, etc.

TOWNSHIPS AND BOROUGHS.—When Columbia county was organized in 1813, it contained the following twelve townships, viz.: Bloom, Briar Creek, Chillisquaque, Catawissa, Derry, Fishing Creek, Greenwood, Hemlock, Mahoning, Millin, Sugarloaf, and Turbit. The erection of Montour county carried off the following four of these originals, viz.: Chillisquaque, Derry, Mahoning, and Turbit. The townships and boroughs of Columbia county, and date of organization, are as follows:

Bloom . . . . .	Original.	Jackson . . . . .	1838
Briar Creek . . . . .	"	Orange . . . . .	1839
Catawissa . . . . .	"	Franklin . . . . .	1843
Fishing Creek . . . . .	"	Main . . . . .	1844
Greenwood . . . . .	"	Centre . . . . .	1844
Hemlock . . . . .	"	Beaver . . . . .	1845
Millin . . . . .	"	Benton . . . . .	1850
Sugarloaf . . . . .	"	Pine . . . . .	1853
Madison . . . . .	1817	Locust . . . . .	1853
Mount Pleasant . . . . .	1818	Scott . . . . .	1853
Berwick borough . . . . .	1818	Conyngham . . . . .	1856
Roaring Creek . . . . .	1832	Centralia borough . . . . .	1866
Montour . . . . .	1837	The Town of Bloomsburg . .	1870



MAIN EXHIBITION BUILDING—1876.















